





# MMORPG: REBIRTH OF THE LEGENDARY GUARDIAN

BOOK 06

*Flying Alone*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# MMORPG: Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian

(Wǎngyóu zhī zhàn yù tiānxià )

(网游之战御天下)

by

**Flying Alone**

(孤单地飞)

# Synopsis

---

The phoenix is a creature of legends, a wonder of the world, an imagery of life and destruction. This fabled creature signifies the rise of a hero in a virtual world where battles occur for the sake of honor and glory!

Zhang Yang was a professional gamer in the first and most fantastic game that revolutionized the world: God's Miracle. A game where traditional knowledge in RPGs did not matter anymore, players would have to manually target and evade attacks, giving rise to a significant gap in skill between a professional and an amateur gamer.

Zhang Yang's downfall came a little too soon. His girlfriend was snatched, his guild was harassed and disbanded, and he was even driven to commit suicide! Jumping off the top floor of a hotel, Zhang Yang seemed as though he was soaring like a phoenix. Little did he know that the end of his life also signified his rise from the ashes!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 501: Han Ying Xue's Battle Companion

---

The Teleportation Circle was activated. Zhang Yang arrived at the Winst Castle in no time at all.

The moment after he walked right out of the Teleportation Hall, he saw Han Ying Xue running in a hurry towards him. Before he could even open his mouth to ask, he saw that annoying whiner NPC, Messick chasing after her plump buttocks!

He chuckled, amused, "Witchy Snow, why did you simply flirt around and attract weird beings again?"

Zhang Yang appeared to be a savior to Han Ying Xue the moment she laid eyes on him. She quickly ran behind Zhang Yang and used him as her human shield, then she said, "My charm is too great to be ignored! Even NPCs can be seduced by just looking at me! Silly Yu, please save me!"

Messick revealed an impatient expression on his face as he stared at Zhang Yang, "I say you, ugly horse! Stand aside, while a gentleman like myself is pursuing True Love!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Then, he turned around and pulled Han Ying Xue into his arms, "Well, you see, this is my woman, you whiner! Do you want more of Felice's {Fire Missile}?"

Messick could still remember very clearly how 'sweet' the {Fire

Missiles} that Felice had thrown onto him were, so he could not help but to feel a shiver down his spine as he took a few steps back. His facial expression at the moment was truly 'remarkable'! But he instantly shouted back to Zhang Yang after that, " Your woman, you say? I say you, ugly horse! Stop dreaming about! Do you think you are worthy of this lady who is as bedazzling as the sunlight and as noble as the moon? Do you think you can be her man with your ugly face on your ugly horse body?"

Han Ying Xue smiled as raised her face up a little and gave Zhang Yang a kiss on his cheek, "I am your woman?"

Instead of blushing, Zhang Yang rubbed his face in disgust as he said, "Whiner! Are your eyes so blind that they are actually on your butt? Do you seriously think that she's a beauty?"

Well, Han Ying Xue had set up her avatar in the game to look as plain as possible. Although the results were not ugly at all, but she was far from an actual, bedazzling, mesmerizing beauty! Looks like Messick the whiner had not seen a woman for a very long time, and he could no longer differentiate a vegetable from a bunch of meat!

Han Ying Xue was provoked, as she lifted up her leg and trod on Zhang Yang's foot.

The 'flame of justice' in Messick suddenly ignited as he challenged her, "What say you pretty, let go that ugly beast and charge at me!"

Zhang Yang was stung by the pain on his foot and he tightened his teeth, and then he quickly changed the topic, "Why is this NPC after you in the first place?"

"He insisted on becoming my Battle Companion, and he is forcing me to sign the Contract Bond with him!" it seemed that the focus of Han Ying Xue had successfully been diverted to another matter. Now, her focus was fixed on bad-mouthing Messick as she complained about everything to Zhang Yang, "I will definitely not have this perverted, sick, sexual, psycho following me around! It's very annoying!"

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh out loud. He had intended to let either Fatty Han or Endless Starlight to subdue Messick into becoming either one of their Battle Companions. Well, Messick basically has the same 'scent' as those two wretched perverts. In spite of what he never expected was that Han Ying Xue had such great charm, that Messick would come up to her by himself, and beg her to make him her Battle Companion!

After giving some thoughts about it, Zhang Yang told Han Ying Xue, "I think you should just take him in. Despite this NPC loves to speak foul and wretched language, all of his Skills are good. He is a natural-born meatshield that can really protect you well! Think about it."

Han Ying Xue pointed one of her fingers at Messick and said, "I don't think he wants to protect me at all! Look at his face now! All he wants is to swallow me whole!"

Zhang Yang turned his eyes towards Messick and he could only



see Messick drooling at Han Ying Xue, like a hungry wolf. That wretched face of his was beyond saving. Zhang Yang could not help but to let out a breath of sigh, and then he tried to convince Han Ying Xue again, "Well, it would be even more annoying than letting him follow you all over the place, right? Taking him in as your Battle Companion would allow you to keep him in your Battle Companion Slot all the time. You would only summon him out if you ever need him to tank for you!"

Han Ying Xue can be pretty reasonable when it comes to it, so after some pondering, she saw that Zhang Yang did gave a valid point and that it was really a good idea. So she said, "Alright, I shall take you in as my Battle Companion, with half of my heart! Not the whole thing!"

Messick quickly nodded his head like he was shaking up a bunch of onion heads as he took out a piece of [Contract Book].

Initially, players should be the ones purchasing the [Contract Book] and providing it during the signing of the Contract Bond. Nonetheless, Messick really is a wretched NPC! He had actually provided the [Contract Book] and presented it to Han Ying Xue like a slave! What a shameless fellow! Zhang Yang could not help but feel a little ecky around him!

The Contract Bond was identified, and Messick had officially became the Battle Companion of Han Ying Xue. Two streams of white light beamed across each of them, indicating that the Contact has been signed. As Han Ying Xue was only Level 100 at the moment, and because the level of a Battle Companion could not be higher than the level of their owner, the level of Messick

was brought down accordingly.

Zhang Yang asked Han Ying Xue to post out the attributes of Messick.

[Messick] (Humanoid Creature)

Level: 100

HP: 71,200 (Without {Vitality Aura})

Defense: 2,820

Melee Attack: 10,802 - 12,802

Skills:

[Light of Life]: Instantly recovers 10% HP. Cost: 100 Focus Points.  
Cooldown: 1 Minute

[Foul Chatters]: Begins to curse at a target, drawing in a large amount of aggro from the target. Instant activation. Cooldown: 5 seconds.

[Parry]: Parries attacks, high chance of completely negating one attack. Cooldown: 10 seconds.

[Play Dead]: Lies on the floor and play dead. There was a high rate of causing the enemies to ignore the caster. If this skill is triggered successfully, the current aggro would be reduced to zero. Cooldown: 5 minutes.

Note: The Battle Companion of Little Snow.

After becoming a Battle Companion to a player, the HP of Messick had been reduced sharply. The skill {Light of Life} had been greatly depowered as well. However, Han Ying Xue is a Super healer, so healing him up should not be a problem for her at all.

Meanwhile, the Skill {Parry} is a very practical Skill, making Messick a powerful Tank in the game. Also, his Attack power had increased exponentially. That should cover up the loss of his HP and self-healing capabilities. It's actually pretty awesome!

As for the Skill - {Play Dead}, it only showed that this whiner is truly wretched. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue could only assume that Messick would definitely not fight to his death whenever he find himself in a seriously f\*cked up situation! All Battle Companions had a great deal of autonomy. Hence, when the time comes, this whiner would definitely decide to lie down on the ground and play dead.

Han Ying Xue was already very annoyed, so she quickly sent him into her inventory. The world finally went back to peace, as it was before.

"Silly Yu, have you completed your quest?" she asked Zhang Yang

randomly.

"Not yet. But I am about to!"

"Hmm. When you're done, take me up on your [Flying Mount] and help me search for the remaining fragments of my 'Inheritance Quest'!"

"... can't you just ask the little brat to help you? Her [Winged Tiger] is about to gain its flying ability any time from now!"

"Silly Yu, can't you see that I just want to spend some time with you, alone? You dimwitted oaf!"

After leaving the Winst Castle, Zhang Yang headed straight over to the Ancient Stone Peak with Whitey Jr.. About half an hour later, he finally arrived at the deserted mountain land. However, he did not manage to find Aegolous the Gargoyle King, after scouting around in the entire area, together with Whitey Jr..

He circled closer to the area for another two rounds and had failed to find any signs of that boss. Instead of finding the boss, he came across a little cave halfway up the mountain. Logically speaking, that Gargoyle King should be inside that cave!

As Zhang Yang landed by the entrance of the cave with Whitey Jr., he summoned Whitey and let the Serpent rest in his inventory, as the size of the cave is too narrow for the Serpent's large body. So, the man and his bear headed deep into the cave to begin

exploring.

The interior of the cave was surprisingly dark, thus. Zhang Yang had to activate the Appearance Effect of his Titan Armor Set in order to reveal an area of 3 to 4 meters around him with the light illuminating from his armor. The cave was starting to give Zhang Yang the creeps, and he quickened his steps. Despite the area of the cave was small to Whitey Jr., it was still rather large to a human. It had a height of about 3 meters and a width of about 4 to 5 meters. Nonetheless, Zhang Yang and Whitey could actually walk side by side. It was not too cramped up after all.

Not long after, they saw a statue that was beginning to tremble. Countless of stone pebbles were falling from the statue itself, as the statue turned into a Gargoyle in front of Zhang Yang's eyes. It looked a little like a monkey with a pair of bat-like wings. It simply looked hideous, with a face that looked like it wanted to chew off anyone's face!

[Albino Gargoyle] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 115

HP: 1,150,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 8,123 - 9,123

## Skills:

[Gargoyle Strike]: Deals 100% of Physical Damage in the form of a Melee Attack, there is a certain rate to reduce 10% Attack of the target. Lasts for 15 seconds.

[Petrifying]: Petrifies itself and recover 10% HP for every second. The damage received while it is petrified will be reduced by 50%. But, when the Gargoyle is inflicted with Holy Attacks, the damage received will be increased by 100%. Lasts for 5 seconds.

Note: According to legend, these undead creatures came from the Realm of Hell. During the great war among the gods, they followed their master, the God of Darkness and invaded this world. Although the great war had occurred over thousands of years ago, and most of the Gargoyles had returned back to Realm of Hell, a number of them remained in this realm.

"KREEK!" the Gargoyle let out a deafening screech as it began to move the two sharp claws that looked like the arm of a monkey and clawed at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

‘-912!’ Deflected!

‘-103!’ {Molten Armor}!

+30 Rage Points!

Zhang Yang immediately swung his sword right across the body of the Gargoyle and inflicted a damage of 4000+ onto the Gargoyle, boosting his Rage Points up to a total of 65 points. He then activated his {Frost Strike} without any delay!

‘-8,842!’

A layer of frost immediately formed across the body of the Gargoyle, and the monster was frozen in just an instant, entering a 10 seconds duration of freezing! In other words, the monster will be unable to move for 10 seconds as it is frozen!

This skill is awesome!

Time to experiment with the new Skill that Zhang Yang just acquired! Activating the {Glare of the Death God}!

Instantly, the hollow shadow of a person entered the body of the Gargoyle. Shrouds of dark evil mists began to form right over the Gargoyle’s head as they slowly formed the shape of a shrouding dark skull that was cackling evilly!

Zhang Yang and Whitey struck the monster consecutively, trying to trigger the 10% rate of instant death effect on the monster.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds ... 7 seconds, 8 seconds!

Suddenly, right after a slash from Zhang Yang's sword, the dark skull right above the Gargoyle began to expand rapidly as it opened up its dark foul mouth wide and swallowed the Gargoyle whole! The large mouth shook up for a brief moment, then the Gargoyle stumbled straight onto the ground and died!

What... what an incredible Skill!

Zhang Yang and Whitey could only inflict about 100,000 damage onto the monster before the effect of the {Glare of the Death God} kicked in and instantly killed the monster! Although the monster still had about 1,000,000 HP, it was still instantly killed by the effect of the Skill! There's no way one could find any shortcomings about that skill!

Unfortunately, the cooldown of this skill is 60 minutes long!

Slightly regretting the fact that he had used the Skill a little too early, Zhang Yang and Whitey continued to push forward. There was a large number of these Gargoyles along the path of the cave as Zhang Yang went deeper into the cave. They would encounter one of these monsters every time they walked forward for about tens of meters. Without the heavenly powerful {Glare of the Death God} and a powerful DPS like Felice, Zhang Yang and Whitey had to take about 2 minutes or so, just to kill one monster before they could proceed further in.

Well, the cave was indeed dark and eerie, and it continued to pressure Zhang Yang by giving him the creeps. It took 3 days and 3 nights of continuous slashing for Zhang Yang to reach the end of the cave. However, that was not the end of the cave. Right before



Zhang Yang, was a huge palace!

Clearly, this palace did not belong to the human, or the elites, or the Orcs, or the Dwarfs. The palace looked like pure evil, shrouded in the atmosphere of darkness. The walls of the palace were full of Gargoyles that were still in their petrified forms. Well, all of them looked very wretched and scary. They stood guard over every corner of the palace.

Fortunately for Zhang Yang, it had been 3 days ago since he first entered the cave. He could actually summon out Felice by now. Zhang Yang quickly summoned the little lady out, instantly increasing their total firepower by a few notches up.

# Chapter 502: The Gargoyle King

---

"Felice, how do you feel now? Are you alright now?" After summoning the little lady out from the Battle Companion Slot, Zhang Yang asked her, with genuine concern.

Felice shook her head and said, "Nothing is off, big brother!"

Zhang Yang could not help but sulked a little. The little girl seemed to be on some form of heavenly steroids, as she went all out on the black dragon boss! So, logically speaking, she should have experienced some side effect from that kind of rush! The ancient Kung Fu masters who had went all out with their Super Skills and all in crushing their enemies would actually shorten their lives by 10 years or so! This little lady actually recovered after a nap? After everything that she went through? That doesn't even make any sense !

What the hell! The black dragon must have died with its eyes opened!

"Can you remember anything that happened before you passed out?" Zhang Yang asked further.

"Nope!" Felice shook her head and said, "I have no idea what happened as well. I just saw a giant lizard, and I just burst into anger and lost control of myself. I just felt like tearing that big lizard into tiny little pieces!"

Ares once said that the Goddess of War had died at the hands of

Hell's Lord, the God of Vengeance, and the Devastator. Knowing that the Black Dragon Anubask was once the follower of the Hell's Lord, it might be possible that the black dragon had contributed in bringing down the Goddess of War. That was most probably why that black dragon was targeted by Felice as an enemy! That explained why she had a Cosmic Explosion and went all out on the Ethereal boss!

Of course, all that was built, based on the deduction that Felice was Fraybe, the Goddess of Hope, sister of Lachesis, The Goddess of War.

Well, all thoughts aside! Time to clear up some monsters before saying anything further!

With Felice joining in, Zhang Yang could clear up the monster two times faster! But there were more Gargoyles in the palace. Zhang Yang spent about another 6 days just to reach the deepest area of the palace.

It was a very grand and huge palace, with 12 ink-black pillars holding up the entire building. At the lowest level of the palace, there was a large metallic throne right in the middle. However, there is no one sitting on it. On the contrary, by the side of the throne, a Gargoyle squatted beside it while it was still in its petrified state.

This Gargoyle was so much larger than the Elite Tier Gargoyles that Zhang Yang had encountered outside the palace. Its wings had a silver lining by the tips! That indicated that this Gargoyle is very different compared to the other Gargoyles! This Gargoyle is

definitely much grand and extraordinary!

[Aegolous, The Gargoyle King] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 135

HP: 12,500,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 17,310 - 19,310

Skills:

[Gargoyle Strike]: Inflicts the target with 100% Physical Damage as a Melee Attack, there is a certain rate to reduce 10% Attack of the target. Lasts for 15 seconds.

[Petrifying]: Petrifies itself and recovers 10% HP every second. The damage received while it is petrified would be reduced by 50%. But, when the Gargoyle is inflicted with Holy Attacks, the damage received will be increased by 100%. Lasts for 5 seconds.

[Putrefaction Aura]: Putrefies the target, inflicting the target with 3,000 Nature Damage every 3 seconds. Effect area: With the caster as the center point, 20-meter radius in a circular area.

[Gargoyle Screech]: Lets out a screech and damages all targets within the range of 30 meters with 40,000 Physical Attack. Casting time: 0.5 seconds.

[Berserk]: When the HP bar is at 10% and below, Aegolous would enter Berserk Mode. Attack increased by 50%, defense increased by 100%.

Note: Loyal minion of the Lord of Darkness. After being severely wounded by the gods during the great war, it still has not fully recovered yet.

Judging from the looks of it, that throne right in the middle of this palace must have belonged to the late Lord of Darkness! This palace must be the Lord of Darkness's lair! This Gargoyle King must have followed the Lord of Darkness here. Because the Lord of Darkness had fallen too, this palace must have been here ever since that war!

Another Violet-Platinum Tier boss!

Zhang Yang felt a rush of joy in his heart. Well, the reason was mentioned before, the rewards that players earn from killing a high Tier boss for the first time and the second time would be luxurious! The system would drop additional items like [Skill Books]! Not to mention, the current stage of the game only spawns a limited number of Violet-Platinum Tier bosses. Well, Zhang Yang had all the more reason to kill it now!

Nonetheless, only Zhang Yang would be so confident to start

fantasizing about the rewards! For other players, they would be worried sick, thinking of how to survive the boss that they might just lose their hair! Logically speaking, if Zhang Yang did not have a powerful DPS Battle Companion like Felice, Zhang Yang would have to at least try to get a [Forbidden Scroll] in order for him to solo the boss. In other words, Zhang Yang would have needed to use a large amount of money to bury the boss!

The interior of the palace was vast enough for Zhang Yang to summon the Serpent back out. Although both Serpent and Whitey were Yellow-Gold Tier [Mounts], however, the damage output of Spell Type [Mounts] is obviously much higher than the damage output of Physical Type [Mounts]. Furthermore, the Serpent could fly, had ranged attacks, and its {Venom Spat} could be instantly activated whenever the Skill is available, which would not affect the Serpent's superior mobility. The amount of damage output of the Serpent would actually be so much more efficient and higher than Whitey Jr.'s!

Whenever the Serpent could be summoned, Zhang Yang would naturally consider using it as the first choice. As for the [Mythical Turtle]... if the system allowed him to put a pair of rockets on its back to increase its movement speed, Zhang Yang would definitely have used it in every single battle!

Thud! Thud! Thud! Zhang Yang charged towards Aegolous. Entering the range of 30 meters which is his maximum range, Zhang Yang quickly threw a {Spear of Obliteration} as he usually did.

‘-4,198!’

"Kreek!" The Gargoyle King instantly let out a deafening screech as it opened up its large wings and took flight. The moment it fluttered its wings and went airborne, the Gargoyle King began to dive at Zhang Yang.

The boss was deceptively agile! With a single flick of its wings, the Gargoyle King was already in front of Zhang Yang. It raised up the two monkey-claws and slashed at Zhang Yang!

{Block}!

Zhang Yang had no time to think or to make strategies on how to take on the boss. He reacted instinctively by raising his shield up to block the boss's attack! Pang! A large clash was heard across the surroundings as Zhang Yang was sent back by the powerful strike of the boss, 3 to 4 meters away! But at the instance when the two of them made contact, Zhang Yang had swung his sword and landed a hit onto the boss! He did not waste any single possible chance to strike the boss.

With his legs planted firmly on the ground, Zhang Yang stopped the impact that had pushed him backward as he regained his balance. With a powerful kick off the ground, he pushed himself forwards and charged towards the boss again.

Aegolous let out another deafening screech as it began to raise up its monkey-claws. This time, dark air shrouded around the claws! The claws landed on Zhang Yang, as it inflicted damage on him, and not only that, Zhang Yang was inflicted with an additional

Negative Effect, which reduced his Attack by 20%!

{Gargoyle Strike}!

Fortunate for Zhang Yang, he was not the main DPS for this boss battle! As long as Felice's Attack is not restricted or reduced by any means, it would not affect their total damage output much!

Whitey Jr. and Felice were already in their positions. One was spitting greenish venom at the boss, while the other was channeling balls of fire towards the boss, while Zhang Yang was activating his Skills to inflict damage onto the boss with his sword. Flashes of reflected light from his sword shone upon the body of the boss! The scene was magnificent to behold!

Not long after the battle raged on, Aegolous suddenly let out a long and intimidating roar into the sky, as a rapid progression bar appeared right above its head!

{Gargoyle Screech}!

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang immediately activated his {Frost Strike}!

‘-6,822!’

A damage was inflicted on the boss, and the boss started freezing up, its chanting having been interrupted! That was a lucky strike! The additional effect of the {Frost Strike} was triggered, and it was



effective on the boss!

Zhang Yang did not continue to launch his assaults towards the boss, instead, he took out a [Bandage] and began to patch himself up!

The boss would stay frozen for the next 10 seconds, and the duration of using one [Bandage] is also 10 seconds! It was impeccably the same!

These days, Zhang Yang had been battling quite a number of monsters that are Level 120 and above. So, he had gathered quite a number of [Spiritual Cloths] which appeared to be one grade higher than [Inscribed Cloths]. He had made quite a number of [Spiritual Bandages] that could heal 50,000 HP in 10 seconds! Plus, he has the title of 'Physician's Friend', so he could heal himself with an additional 10,000 HP. That is just awesome!

Following the last additional heal of '+10,000' HP, Zhang Yang had restored himself back to full health!

Aegolous roared in rage again and again as it continued to extend its monkey-claws at Zhang Yang! Every single claw attack inflicted Zhang Yang with more than 10,000 damage! The boss did not immediately use the same skill again after its previous chant was interrupted. Instead, the skill had entered a cool-down period.

Therefore, Aegolous only began to chant for its {Gargoyle Screech} again, 30 seconds later. Although Zhang Yang activated his {Crash Magic} onto the Gargoyle, but the word 'Immune'

appeared right above on the head of the boss.

A visible sonic wave came right out of the boss's mouth and radiated into the surroundings. The boom echoed through air, as the shock waves that exploded out of the boss' mouth struck Felice and Whitey Jr. and sent them flying back for a few meters! Both of them took some damage from the impact.

Actually, when Felice is in her Humanoid Form, her {Dragon's Spear Barrage} had the potential of stunning the boss for awhile. However, the rate was too low, and the boss only required 0.5 seconds to chant its spell. So, in order to interrupt the boss in time, she must stand in front of the boss and maintain in her Humanoid Form for 1 second before she can activate her {Dragon's Spear Barrage} to get the 10% rate of interrupting the boss's chanting --- shifting forms would also cause the Skill Sets to enter the shared cool down period of 1 second. So, sacrificing the group's damage output just to attempt to trigger the 10% rate in order to interrupt the boss's chanting was not really worthwhile!

Zhang Yang was using his {Shield Wall} and {Last Vigor} in an orderly manner. If the {Frost Strike} struck and managed to stun the boss, then he would immediate use his [Spiritual Bandage] to heal himself up instead of attacking the boss. Although {Frost Strike} was not a guaranteed countermeasure, it could give him one chance to heal himself up. That was actually a good enough deal!

However, the recovery effect of {Shield Wall} was much lower than the healing effect of using the [Spiritual Bandage]. It was an unfortunate for Zhang Yang, as this is the special effect of the

[Titan Chest Plate]. This chest plate is only a Level 80 equipment, currently 20 levels lower than the level of Zhang Yang. It was losing power drastically. Just like his previous [Dark Enigmatic Sword], when Zhang Yang reached Level 80, the efficiency of the sword's special effect had begun to drop like hell.

Comparing to the rate of efficiency to when Zhang Yang was still below Level 100, the special effect of the [Titan Chest Plate] could heal Zhang Yang by 10% HP every time it kicked in. But now, the special effect of the chest plate could only heal Zhang Yang by 5% HP every time the effect kicks in. That was half of the effect gone!

The reduction in the efficiency of the special effect is a little too harsh!

Still, Zhang Yang took it in stride. If they did not make it so, such a powerful [Titan Chest Plate] could still be used, even if Zhang Yang reaches Level 3000!

Ting! Ting! Ting!

The [Sword of Purging Devourer} slammed into the boss again and again, as sparks sprinkled across the ground. It was as if the body of the boss had suddenly turned into some sort of titanium material. At the same time, terrifying numbers in green began to pop up on top of the boss with each passing second.

‘+312500!’

‘+312500!’

‘+312500!’

The boss had activated its {Petrifying} Skill! Fortunately, Zhang Yang had already struck the boss with his {Destructive Smash} and had reduced the healing capability of Aegolous by 75%! Or else, the boss would have healed itself by as much as 1,250,000 HP, every second! It would have been a disaster for Zhang Yang.

5 seconds later, the Skill was over, and the boss had healed itself by a total amount of 1,560,000 HP. That was an amount that Zhang Yang could still deal with. He could just treat it like an extension of the boss's HP bar.

After Zhang Yang had activated every single life-saving skill of his for one cycle, he began to reduce his damage output on purpose, allowing the aggro value on Felice to exceed the aggro value on him. After a very brief moment, the boss had turned its attention towards Felice! Felice immediately descended down to the ground and transformed to her Humanoid Form as she activated her {Absolute Defense}. Then, she took over the role as Tanker for the boss battle.

Zhang Yang used another [Spiritual Bandage] and healed himself back to full health again. Then, he quickly went back up to the boss and began to attack the boss aggressively.

As the boss also had the ability to be airborne, Zhang Yang could not use his {Shadow of the Void} to clear out the aggro completely,

as that is not a wise move to do so. As the damage of Felice was a little too aggressive and powerful, it was not possible for Zhang Yang to regain the aggro of the boss within two minutes. When Felice transforms herself back into her Dragonhawk Form and flies back into the air, the boss would pursue her and fly into the air as well. There is no way Zhang Yang can miraculously hook the aggro of the boss back onto him with Felice being the primary target of the boss! Felice might even be taken out while tanking the boss in that form!

Therefore, Zhang Yang needed to retain some aggro and wait for the duration of the {Absolute Defense} to be over before he actually resumes tanking.

# Chapter 503: Bewitchment and Disarmament

---

With her {Absolute Defense} activated, Felice became every tank player's envy. Every attack from the boss was like an itch to her.

Aegolous let out a series of thunderous roars as it fluttered its wings, stirring up waves of strong air currents that were so strong, that they almost blew Zhang Yang off his feet! Zhang Yang could feel as if he was a small raft in the middle of a thunderstorm that threatened to capsize him at anytime!

In less than 2 minutes, Zhang Yang recovered his stance and began to increase his damage output towards the boss.

As the DPS of Felice in her Humanoid Form is much weaker than her DPS when she is in her Dragonhawk Form, it became easier for Zhang Yang to retake the aggro of the boss. With some increment in his DPS, Zhang Yang managed to put himself back at the top of the aggro list of the boss in just 5 seconds.

The boss let out another thunderous roar as it began to turn its attention towards Zhang Yang. The Gargoyle King turned its head towards Zhang Yang and reached out with its monkey-claws in an attempt to slash Zhang Yang. At the same instant, Felice's {Absolute Defense} faded off. Without wasting any time, she took the form of a Dragonhawk and began to unleash hell upon the boss with her {Fire Missiles}.

As for Whitey Jr., all it ever needed to do was to spat it's venomous saliva whenever it was able. It would always be the last

on the aggro list of the boss. It was by no means weak in any way, Zhang Yang and Felice were just on a level of their own!

Poor Aegolous, having its fate toyed around by Zhang Yang and Felice.

Well, that is the one disadvantage of being a boss in a game. Although a boss has powerful Skills and terrifying Attack, it must follow the protocol of the Aggro System in the game to decide which target it would hit first. If they had the intelligence to discern situations like how a player could, every boss battle would become insanely difficult as they would naturally wipe out the Healer Classes first of all! With the Healers gone, the Tankers would be living on borrowed time! Bosses would be able to take out players with ease and not get taken down by a bunch of footmen!

The amount of Aegolous's HP started off strong. It had about 10,000,000 HP. With Zhang Yang, Felice and Whitey Jr. working together, 10 minutes would be enough to empty out that amount. Even though the boss could recover its health little by little with its Skill, Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} had caused the healing efficiency of the boss to drop by 75%! Furthermore, that healing Skill of the boss had a cool down period of 5 minutes! The boss simply could not keep up with them.

30%, 20%, 10%!

The boss suddenly let out a deafening screech as a bloody-red light began to beam across the entire body of the boss. The boss had just entered its Berserk form!

Well, the moment that Zhang Yang had been waiting for was finally here!

After the animation of the boss entering the Berserk form passed, Zhang Yang quickly cast the {Glare of the Death God}! A shroud came over the head of the boss and began to form into a dark skull right above its head.

"This! This is the Special Skill of the Hell's Lord!" It seemed that Aegolous recognized the Skill right away as it let out a roar in fear. It made perfect sense though. Aegolous used to be one of the 'fangs' that served the God of Darkness. It doesn't matter if it was an ally or a foe of the gods, Aegolous must have seen the Hell Lord's power and Skills. No wonder Aegolous would tremble in fear the moment it knew that this is one of the Skills of the Hell's Lord!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and proceeded with his assaults. There was no time to lose at all!

With a swing of his one hand, Zhang Yang summoned out his [Devastator] to aid him. At the current stage of the game, this Silver-Tier Servant could no longer provide anything in terms of DPS, however, Zhang Yang had summoned the servant, not because he wanted to increase the total damage output towards the boss! He summoned the servant to increase the number of hits that land on the boss! The rate of triggering the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} is not based on the amount of damage output, but the number of hits that land on the boss! As long as the attacks hit the boss, then the chance to trigger the special effect



would be based on the 10% rate of triggering. Any hits also stand a chance of proccing the 10% rate and triggering the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}! In other words, the more hits they land on the boss, the higher the chance they can trigger the special effect of the Skill!

From that moment onwards, Aegolous was assaulted violently by Zhang Yang, Felice, Whitey Jr., and the [Devastator] from all 4 directions around it.

‘-125,000!’

‘-125,000!’

...

Although 10% was not a high rate, every hit was an additional chance! The special effect was triggered over and over again! By the time the {Glare of the Death God} was over, the boss had lost 1% HP by a total number of 7 times!

Aegolous was left with only 1% HP remaining! It no longer looked intimidating!

"No ---" The Gargoyle King let out it's final roar that shook the heavens as it flapped its wings one last time before it collapsed down to the ground and died. Boom! Dark flames began to ignite on the dead body of the boss. After that, loot dropped right out of the boss as its dead body burned into a pile of ash. Only a few sharp

teeth of the Gargoyle King remained, lying among the loot.

{Glare of the Death God} is just awesome!

Zhang Yang could not help but to feel a rush of joy in his heart. After all, this Skill would only gain more power when used on a tougher enemy! Even if a boss has 100 Billion HP, the {Glare of the Death God} would still function according to its power that reduces 1% HP of the boss, no matter what! The boss would still lose 100 Billion HP! Of course, if Zhang Yang used this on a boss with only 10,000 HP, the boss would only lose 1,000 HP every time the special effect of the Skill triggers.

Skills that work via percentages are really useful as the game progresses! The higher the level of the enemy, the better the effects!

After being amazed at himself for awhile, Zhang Yang quickly went up to pick up the loot. Aegolous had dropped a total of 3 pieces of equipment. One was a long crimson sword, another one was a pale-gray cloak, and last but not least, a dark-green ring. Other than that, there were two [Skill Books] as well. Zhang Yang gazed upon them with joy.

He assumed that the crimson sword would be the best item among all of the equipment he got today, so he decided to look at the other two equipment first, as he loves to save the best for the last to savor it.

So firstly, the pale-green cloak - [Gargoyle Cloak]. It is a Level 120

Yellow-Gold equipment more suited for Physical Attack types. So Zhang Yang shoved it directly into his inventory. It would still contribute to Zhang Yang's finance. Next, the dark-green ring.

[Angelus Ring] (Ring, Violet-Platinum)

Vitality: +212

Strength: +137

Agility: +137

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 270 points.

Equip: Increases 2% damage and 2% healing efficiency.

Equip: Increases 35% Shadow Damage of your weapon.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Note: Angelus is a Haunted Mountain in the realm of Hell. Countless dark souls are intertwined there. This ring is formed from the dark energy that comes from the Angelus Mountain. It has unimaginably evil power.

The ring is truly powerful. The additional Shadow Damage of the ring should reach up to 50% much after being identified! Unfortunately, Zhang Yang had no Shadow Skills, not even one. This ring had been purposely designed for players with the Death Knight Inheritance.

However, Zhang Yang also had the {Frost Strike} that could divert the Physical Attack into Frost Damage. Unfortunately for him, this ring adds Shadow Damage, not Frost Damage. Of course, Zhang Yang would not have equipped the ring as well, even if the ring adds Frost Damage. He would not abandon his Defense ability just to boost the damage of one of his many Skills. That would be short-sighted and foolish!

"Unfortunately, no one has gotten the [Death Knight Inheritance] yet. Or else, people would buy it, even if I put a price of 1 million dollars on it!" Zhang Yang could only let out a sigh. Such was one of the disadvantages of being far too ahead of the game. Just like the current situation, although Zhang Yang could beat the boss and acquire some quite powerful equipment, he would not be able to find any real buyers. He would have to hold on to them for quite a while before people become strong enough to purchase the good stuff from him!

After putting the ring into his inventory, Zhang Yang turned his attention towards the crimson sword.

[Crimson Blazing Sword] (Violet-Platinum, Two-handed Sword, Special Weapon for Battle Companion)

Attack: 5,191 - 6,191

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 1,498

Equip: Increases 10% damage.

Equip: Increases 2% Critical Rate.

Required Level: 120

A special Weapon for Battle Companions!

Compared it to his [Sword of Purging Devourer], Zhang Yang could only weep tears of depression. The Attack of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] is between 2,219 - 2,619. That was not even half of the Attack that this [Crimson Blazing Sword] has!

Zhang Yang threw the [Crimson Blazing Sword] over to Felice and said, "Felice, this is for you!"

Felice took up the sword and had a quick look at it, but she shook her head and said, "But, big brother, this sword is lame! I don't want this."

Zhang Yang staggered for a moment and quickly asked, "Felice, is your lance much powerful than this sword?"

"Of course!" The little lady answered swiftly as she passed her lance over to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang quickly took a closer look at the attributes of the lance. He stared speechless at what he saw, like an innocent child!

[Primordial Dragon Lance] (Mythical, Two-handed Sword, Special Weapon for Battle Companion)

Magic Attack: 5,116 - 6,116

Melee Attack: 6,614 - 7,614

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DpS: 1,872

Equip: Increases 20% Damage.

Equip: Increases 3% Critical Rate.

Required Level: 100

Special: Felice's Personal Specialized Equipment.

Special: Weapon will be upgraded as according to Felice's Level and the number of Seal broken.

No... no wonder this little girl packed such a punch! The damage of the lance itself was already a couple of notches higher than Zhang Yang's total Attack! Furthermore, this equipment would actually improve according to the Level of Felice, growing alongside her! However, for a Lance to be categorized as a Sword Type, it was the main reason why Zhang Yang was struck speechless. Well, that might be the developer's mistake, then.

Zhang Yang looked at Felice as he stared at her from head to toe, looking like a weird, loli-abducting sleazy old man. Felice could not help but to feel self-conscious after being stared at like that. She blushed as she began to wonder out loud, "Big brother, why are you staring at me like that?"

"Little Felice, please take off all your clothes and let me, your big brother, have a good look at them!" Zhang Yang began to laugh in a weird manner.

Felice, "..."

Well, don't misunderstand Zhang Yang for that. He only planned to look at Felice's equipment, nothing more. If the lance is already so powerful, how about the test of the equipment on her? It was obvious that he had only wanted to examine the attributes of the equipment, all of them!

After a series of persuasion and sweet talking, Felice finally

agreed to take off all her equipment and showed it to Zhang Yang. Her face was so flushed that it looked like an apple. She looked so cute and pure as her blush only grew deeper. Her breasts had already grown into quite a large 'scale'! Zhang Yang could not help but stared at her until he almost howled into the sky like a wolf in excitement.

Every single equipment on Felice was of Mythical Tier. Furthermore, just like the [Primordial Dragon Lance], all of her equipment would improve based on Felice's level, and the Tier of her equipment could be improved according to the number of Seals that are unsealed! They would grow as she does!

Zhang Yang could already guess deep down his heart. Although Battle Companions are not labeled with 'Tiers' like how the Pets and Mounts are, the equipment sets on them would define their Strength. The initial equipment on the Battle Companions can level up automatically, but these equipment would only level up without any changes to their 'Tiers'.

Just like Pets.

For instance, Whitey Jr. would have a large improvement in its attributes whenever it levels up. It was as if Whitey Jr. had just switched out a new set of equipment, boosting its attributes. For example, a Pet can only equip Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment when it reaches Level 69. When it reaches Level 70, it would be as if the Pet had automatically switched out the entire set of the Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment on it with a new set of Level 70 equipment. This would be why Pets gained so much level whenever the second digit of their level is a zero.



By comparing Pets with the Battle Companions, the ‘equipment’ of the Pets are hidden, while the equipment of the Battle Companions are shown publicly. The largest distinction is that Pets cannot switch their ‘equipment’ but the Battle Companions can, giving the Battle Companions more space to improve and grow into more powerful beings, just like players! Players might end up worse than Black-Steel Tier Pets after they take out every single piece of equipment on them. Or, they can be much more powerful than a boss if they ever get the chance to equip a full set of Celestial Tier equipment to boost their attributes!

Unfortunately, the equipment on normal Battle Companions would only improve according to the level of the Battle Companions, unlike Felice’s. Felice still had seals to unseal in order to improve the Tier of her equipment! That would only mean that she was capable of improving her equipment from Mythical to Ethereal, moving on to Holy, Ascended, and even going up to the Celestial Tier!

When he gets back, Zhang Yang intended to look upon Han Ying Xue and ask her to summon out Messick that whiner, to confirm his deductions.

Zhang Yang put the [Crimson Blazing Sword] into his inventory as he continued to look at the two [Skill Books].

[Pet’s Skill Book: Bewitchment]

Use: Teaches your pet {Bewitchment}.

Zhang Yang turned around casually as he tapped the book against the Serpent. He now possessed a total of 7 [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll]. He could still retrieve the Pet's Skills if he ever gets a better Pet in the future.

[Bewitchment]: Bewitches the target and get the target confused, restricting the movement of the target. Lasts for 15 seconds. While under the state of 'Bewitched', the target would break free if immediately if the target receives any form of attacks. The rate of successfully applying this effect on bosses is much lower. Casting time: 2 seconds. Range: 30 meters. Consumes: 100 Focus Points. Cool Down: 5 minutes.

This Skill is not bad at all. Another Status Restriction Skill that can work on bosses, at Zhang Yang's disposal. Although the Skill does not have a 100% rate of success, the rate was there. When it triggers, it can interrupt any boss's super skill while the boss is in Berserk mode, reducing the threat of the boss.

Moving on to the next [Skill Book].

[Skill Book: Disarm]

Use: Teaches you {Disarm}.

Required Class: Not Restricted.

Required Level: 100

Oh yes! He knew this one well!

Zhang Yang quickly took up the [Skill Book] and tapped it on himself. A stream of golden light coursed through his entire body as the [Skill Book] entered his body. There, he obtained another new powerful Skill!

[Disarm]: Removes the weapon of the target, the target will not be able to equip any new weapon for a set of duration. Last for 10 seconds. Instant activation. Range: Melee. Cool Down: 2 minutes.

This is one of the best practical Skills for PvP! It doesn't matter if it's Melee Class, Ranged Class, Physical Class or Spellcaster Class, the effect would still be the same!

When {Disarm} is activated, the opponent would temporarily lose their weapons. Physical Classes will definitely become useless against anything, while the Spellcaster Class would not feel good either. Staves could increase Magic Attack by so much that half of the Attack of the player would be removed without the weapon. Without a staff, a Spellcaster would lose half of their attacks!

Unfortunately, this Skill would not work on bosses!

Well, one must not be too greedy after obtaining something this nice. Zhang Yang grinned stupidly on his own for awhile. Just when he was thinking of taking out his [Teleportation Scroll] out from his inventory, he suddenly saw there were a few [Gargoyle Teeth,] shrouded by evil energy, lying on the ground, close to

where the boss had died.

While Felice was disgusted by the looks of those teeth on the ground, Zhang Yang picked one of the teeth up and took a closer look at it.

[Gargoyle's Tooth] (Consumable)

Use: Can be inserted into a Level 3 or better Socket, providing 1% Passive Damage Immunity to players.

Required Level: 100

Zhang Yang widened his eyes for a bit. It is actually a [Gemstone]. [Gemstones] usually only add on to the 5 basic attributes in the game. But this [Gargoyle Tooth] adds a very rare attribute, Passive Damage Immunity! This is actually the best [Gemstone] there is for a Tanker. It would make up for Tankers who are lacking in vitality!

Naturally, Tankers who have not met the requirements to be a primary Tanker should focus on getting their HP amount up as much as possible before considering other attributes like this 'Damage Immunity'.

Unfortunately, the boss only dropped a total of 3 [Gargoyle Tooth]. Zhang Yang had them inserted into the [Titan Chest Plate] and the [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Well, after comparing all his options, these two pieces of equipment would stay longer on him

before he switches them with more powerful equipment.

For that, Zhang Yang had lost about 3,000 HP, but he had boosted up his rate of 'Damage Immunity' to 23%!

After tearing a [Teleportation Scroll], a white light streamed through Zhang Yang's entire body and he was teleported straight back to Morning Town.

# Chapter 504: Nine Head Hydra Geopolo

---

Zhang Yang caught up to Han Ying Xue and forced her to summon the huge pervert, Messick.

The moment the despicable Battle Companion appeared, the perverted young man cried his eyes out and said to Han Ying Xue, "Oh! My mistress! Please punish me! Punish me with your loving whip~!"

"..."

Zhang Yang had the man unequip his weapon. The man was using a Violet-Platinum tier spear. Even though the level of the weapon was lower than the [Crimson Blazing Sword], it also had the power to level up along with Messick. When the big pervert turned Level 120, the spear will also be upgraded to a Level 120 Violet-Platinum spear.

However, only the level would change, not the weapon tier. The tier would always, and forever will be a Violet-Platinum tier. To have something even better, they would have to earn a better weapon, just like players do.

After all, Felice was not only Battle Companion around!

Han Ying Xue unsummoned the pervert. Messick was behaving just like Fatty Han and Endless Starlight. Everything that comes out of his mouth would either be perverted, sickening, or depraved. Zhang Yang could never had handle such a person.

Zhang Yang first went to White Jade Castle to repair all his equipment, restock the Little Merchandise Shop with a bunch of equipment, herbs, and other etc item that he had accumulated so far. Later on, he came back to Morning Town and flew on Whitey Jr. to the Siccory Mountains to search the second boss, Nine Head Hydra Geopolo.

The poor flying serpent was pushed to its limit again when Zhang Yang arrived at the Siccory Mountains. Later on, he went west and arrived in the Valley of Serpents. The place was naturally filled with many reptiles, mainly snakes. Be it on the tree, in the cracks of the mountain, buried in the earth, or even the river, there were many types of snakes coming in the form of all lengths and colors. Most of all, they were elite tiered, ranging from level 110 to Level 119.

If they had been normal tiered monsters, Zhang Yang could have kited them all and kill them with the One Straight Flush technique. Both he and Felice were killing machines. Dealing with a bunch of normal tier monsters would be a walk in the park. However, the elite tiered monsters had skills such as the spitting of venomous saliva that would deal natural damage. One or two would not matter, but if that number reaches a certain number, not even Zhang Yang would be able to tank it all. Still, doing it alone would take too long. Hence, Zhang Yang summoned Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er to help him. At least, having the both of them around would lighten the atmosphere.

The little brat's Winged Tiger had already reached Level 100. No longer the small and innocent little cub, it had grown into a large, 7 to 8 meters long Giant Tiger. The tiger looked rather cool and

flashy whenever it spread out its dragon-like wings. Aesthetics aside, the priority would always be the properties. The Winged Tiger was the same tier as Zhang Yang's Mythical Turtle. Be it attack or HP, both battle mounts were extremely strong.

Han Ying Xue had not yet gotten herself a flying mount, even though she had the Yellow-Gold Crimson Crab that could be used on land and in water. The three of them rode their mounts into the field, along with Felice and Messick as their Battle Companions, forming a decent-sized party.

Most of the snakes and serpents in the valley were capable of flight. They would occasionally fly into the air. Hence, the party did not venture into the airspace to prevent themselves from drawing too much attention. The elite monsters were many, and if they were to draw attention from both land and air, they would be attacked from all directions and things would be rather troublesome or worse, fatal.

The party progressed steadily on. The perverted Messick could not even take few steps without harassing the girls around. He would either hit on Han Ying Xue, or Wei Yan Er, and even Felice! He had the most depraved pickup lines and compliments, ever! Though Felice would not hesitate to stab him with her spear, the perverted Messick would never quit. Still, as a Battle Companion, he was rather strong, even for a Violet-Platinum tier.

Nevertheless, compared to Felice, he was nothing but a small fry. When the little girl turned into a Dragonhawk, her {Fire Missile} 20,000 damage would match or even surpass Wei Yan Er's damage output.



"Woah! Little Felice! You're so strong!" cried Wei Yan Er, her eyes lighting up in admiration.

Zhang Yang laughed and patted the little girl's head, "Little brat, Felice is much older than you are now. You must call her 'big sis'!"

The little girl cocked her head, confused. However, she soon stared down at her own chest and sulked at a corner when she noticed Felice's matured breast was much bigger than hers.

Even though the monsters around here had more than 1,000,000 HP, the party easily managed it with no problem. Each monster around would take the party only half a minute or so to kill, which would provide a luxurious amount of experience points.

"Huhu! What a nice place for grinding levels!" cried Wei Yan Er excitedly.

"But of course! The monsters here are all elite tiers! One elite monster would already be worth 50 to 60 normal tier monsters!" said Han Ying Xue as a matter-of-factly.

In the party, Zhang Yang and Messick acted as tanks. The dirty talking aside, his skill - {Foul Chatters} was rather efficient at provoking monsters. It might even take effect on regular players!

As the name implied, the Valley of Serpents lived up to its name by housing an endless number of serpents. The party dived into

the mindless slaughter for more than 7 or 8 days (of in-game time) and finally reached the deepest portion of the valley. There, minding its own business, was the boss.

[Nine Head Hydra Geopolo] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 12,500,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 17,310 – 19,310

Magic Attack: 9,869 – 11,869

Skills:

[Poison Spit]: Releases a venomous liquid that deals 150% magic Natural damage. Corrupts the target's armor and decreases Defense value by 50%. Lasts for 20 seconds. Effects cannot be stacked. If the main aggro target is located out of Geopolo's melee range, the person within the melee range on the second aggro rank will receive the attack.

[Death Ray]: Geopolo fires a laser beam from its eyes. Deals half of the target's HP as damage. Petrifies the target for 5 seconds. A Petrified player cannot engage in any action or movement.

[Tackle]: Hurls its head around and deals 100% melee physical attack to all targets within melee range.

Note: Servant of the Death God. Possesses part of the Death God's power. After the demise of the God of Death, the Nine Head Hydra refused to return to the Nether Realm and chose to remain in the human world. Believing that the God of Death would return, the Nine Head Hydra had made countless offspring in hopes of creating an army for the God of Death!

The name of the boss was rather straightforward. The boss had nine heads, each one about the size of [Grinding Plate](#). Each head had large horns and fangs, which was terrifying to look at. The beast had a huge body where the heads stuck out from. Somehow, the bodily proportions were that of a peacock. The main body had four limbs, and the heads that stuck out were like the tail feathers of a peacock! In stark contrast to the majestic bird, this hydra was hideous to look at.

Zhang Yang and the party first cleared all the monsters around the boss, before approaching it. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er then moved away from the battle, since the quest had requested that Zhang Yang be the only player to engage the boss. If anyone else enters the battle, the quest would fail automatically! Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were not even able to help, and to remove all unnecessary risks, they could not even get close to it!

Hence, Zhang Yang only got Han Ying Xue to buff him with the skill {Rise Anew} and asked the two of them to get as far away as possible to prevent them from accidentally getting caught in the

battle. Even though the quest had not mentioned anything about permanent failures, a Violet-Platinum boss would take as long as a month to respawn. In real time, that would be close to 10 days! He could not afford to waste that much time!

After analyzing the skills of the boss, the biggest threat would be the {Death Ray}. Zhang Yang could take the other skills on, but he would have to dodge this skill at all costs. Aside from that, the boss should not be a huge problem. As for the {Poison Spit}, it was sure to have a low rate of occurrence during a melee fight. Even though it carried was capable of {Cripple Defense}, Zhang Yang had three separate damage reduction systems, that would be his raw Defense, the Damage Reduction passive in terms of percentages, and lastly, the Damage Absorption from his armor. All in all, reducing his Defense value alone would not cause too much trouble for Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang steeled his mind and rode on Whitey Jr., charging towards the boss.

As expected of the Flying Mount, the boss was only two flaps away from the Flying Serpent's wing. Zhang Yang first struck the boss with a {Spear of Obliteration,} and the flying serpent spat a volley of poisonous saliva. Neither attacks required any slowing down or deviation of flight.

"Hss!" the Nine Head Hydra hissed angrily as Zhang Yang. All nine heads, 18 eyes shot up to the sky and glared at Zhang Yang. One of its heads lashed out at Zhang Yang, while one more suddenly opened its mouth and spoke in a grainy voice. "Mortal! Leave me be, or die with regret!"

Zhang Yang laughed and bellowed back, "Back at you, wretched snake! I'll regret leaving you be if you're not yet dead!"

"Insolent fool!" Another head rose up and struck Zhang Yang bodily. Zhang Yang blocked the first attack, but did not manage to evade the second head. The other head wrapped itself tightly around him, immobilizing him. "Such a waste! You shall be my meal then! It has been a long time since I last tasted human meat! Such nostalgia!"

Even though the boss had nine heads, all the heads shared the same attack interval. This meant that it could only attack with one head at a time. With {Rise Anew} on him, Zhang Yang had nothing to fear and could bravely attack the boss.

"Mortal! You're nothing but a speck of dust in the eyes of the gods! Stop your futile resistance and surrender to the loving embrace of death!" cried out the nine headed Hydra, its voice shaking the air.

Zhang Yang flew to the head that spoke the most and bashed it with his shield. "Enough with your arrogant talk! You're no god. You're but a poor underling left behind by its master!"

"Silence fool! You know nothing! Your impudence shall not go unpunished!" cried the Hydra. Right then, all nine heads, 18 eyes fixed its gaze on Zhang Yang and released black beams of darkness.

{Death Glare}!

Zhang Yang immediately jumped down from Whitey Jr. Even though Zhang Yang had given the name Junior to the flying serpent, it was not small! On the contrary, the size of the flying serpent was so huge that it would never evade the beam in time.

The beam shot through the air, distorting the space and time around it. The poor Whitey Jr. took the beams directly and was turned into a large stone snake, its HP decreasing down to 50%. Luckily, the deducted HP was only 50% and not 100%. Hence, after taking so many beam attacks, the flying serpent's HP finally stopped at 1% and could not be lowered any longer. No matter how many more beams were fired from the Hydra, the snake would not go down!

The game does not take into account decimal values, 1% could never be divided into 0.5%!

Grinding Plate was something that was used to grind tea into fine powders. It could also be used to make soy milk from soybeans.

# Chapter 505: The Last Target, Fire Element King Laguana

---

Like a boy on a Pogo Stick, Zhang Yang hopped about, evading all the laser beams attacks! Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er who were standing a distance away from where Zhang Yang was battling, clapped their hands and cheered him on.

The boss' {Death Ray} attack radius was vast. Luckily, Felice had the battle awareness and intelligence to maneuver around the beam in the air. All the while, the two girls were having a good time cheering for the both of them, but Zhang Yang was too busy to respond.

The time taken for the entire skill to complete was 30 seconds! Even though Zhang Yang had not been struck by the beam attack, he was extremely tired. The 30 seconds of nonstop dodging had cost Zhang Yang mental energy! Be it his awareness or movement speed, he had to constantly react by the millisecond, or he would be struck! If he was even grazed by the beam, he would be petrified in stone and immobilized for 5 seconds. If that happens, a domino effect would occur. His petrified form would only take more and more hits of the beam attack, hacking his HP away till there's only 1 HP left.

After the dark ray beam stopped being fired by the Hydra, Geopolo retracted its heads and initiated a body slam! Sadly, the poor flying serpent only had 1 HP left. It could not endure a single blow from the boss and had turned into a beam of light, flowing into Zhang Yang's inventory. It would take 10 minutes for Zhang Yang to re-summon the serpent once again. Though there was

nothing that Zhang Yang could do at the moment, he had lost a fair bit of firepower!

Zhang Yang sighed. Thank god that he still had Felice in the field to help him. Since most of the damage output came from her, the battle could still go on without being affected much. Soon, the boss' HP had dropped down to 89%.

Not long after, Zhang Yang swung his sword and had managed to cut off one of the Hydra's nine heads. The long, giraffe-like head fell off and struck the ground, oozing out a pool of fresh blood. The Hydra shrieked and wailed in pain, spewing more blood from the dismembered stump of its body, even splashing some blood on Zhang Yang's face.

85%...82%...78%...

Shortly after the first head was sliced off, Felice's incessant {Fire Missile} attacks burned the second head away, sending the Hydra into brief frenzy.

After two of the heads had been dismembered, the boss did not show signs being weakened. Apparently, the number of heads had no correlation to the Hydra's attack power. Still, it does reduce the attack radius of the beam attack, which gave Zhang Yang and Felice an easier time.

"D\*mn you ruffians! I will crush you! I WILL CRUSH YOU!" the Hydra raged on, its distorted voice had turned even deeper and demonic to point that it was just random screeching.



Zhang Yang laughed aloud and said, "I've heard that phrase for many times now. Too bad, I'm still standing, since none of them could actually crush me!"

Even though Zhang Yang had one less attacker in his party, Geopolo the Hydra's HP was hacked away without any pause, since it did not possess any recovery skills. Soon, more of its heads were hacked off, leaving the boss with one last head at 10% HP. At every 11% HP loss, the boss would "drop" one head off. Zhang Yang felt a sense of accomplishment and overwhelming pride. He felt as if he was actually chopping off the heads of a dragon!

When the boss was left with only 10% HP, Zhang Yang had no reason to hold back anymore, and activated {Glare of the Death God}, while summoning Devastator! The bulky machine threw machine gun punches at the Hydra. This time, Zhang Yang was pretty lucky. The {Glare of the Death God} was able to proc for 8 times and the boss was pulverized.

When the massive scaly body of the Nine Head Hydra Geopolo fell to earth and expelled an amount of battle loot, the two money-minded girls, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er waltzed their way to the loot but cried out disgruntledly when they could not pick the loot. Since they had not contributed to the boss fight whatsoever, they did not have the players'"qualification" to loot.

The two ladies had been holding down their urges to pick the loot. That much Zhang Yang was sure, and no amount of persuasion could pacify them. So, he decided to ignore the ladies and went on to loot all the items.

Geopolo, the Nine Head Hydra was far kinder than Aegolous, the Gargoyle King. It dropped a total of four equipment and one red leather-bound skill book. What a shame! There's no way for an equipment to match up to a skill book! To make things worse, among the four equipment drops, three of them were Yellow-Gold tier and only one was Violet-Platinum tier, which was an emerald-green long spear. The spear's head was wavy, like the body of a serpent, which reminded Zhang Yang of the weapon that Mang Zhang Fei of the Romance of the Three Kingdom had used, an 18 Zhang Viper Spear (roughly 2.14 meters long).

[Viper Lord's Spear] (Violet-Platinum, Two Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 3,684 – 4,284

Attack Interval: 3.4 seconds

DPS: 1,048

Equip Effect: Increases attack power by 7%

Equip Effect: On attack, grants a 1% chance to inflict {Poisoned}, deals 3,500 Natural damage.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

Sadly, the attack interval was 3.4 seconds instead of 3.8 seconds. By Violet-Platinum standards, this spear was mediocre. Still, compared to other Yellow-Gold and Gray-Silver tier weapon, the Viper Lord's Spear was several times stronger. Many would still pay a large sum to own it in the Little Merchandise Shop!

Zhang Yang tucked the spear into his bag and picked up the skill book next.

[Skill Book: Aqua Guard]

Use: Teaches you {Aqua Guard}.

Class Requirement: Priest, Spellcaster, Knight.

Level Requirement: 100

Zhang Yang tossed the skill book to Han Ying Xue and grunted, "It's yours."

Han Ying Xue snorted and helped herself to the book without saying anything in return. She patted the book against her oversized chest and gained a new skill in her skill tree.

[Aqua Guard]: Summons 10 water orbs to surround you. Restores 50 MP every 3 seconds. Upon each attack received, one water orb will be destroyed and grants you 500 MP. The water orbs will last

for 10 minutes, or until all orbs are destroyed. Instant Cast.  
Cooldown: 10 minutes.

Han Yang Xue grinned happily and immediately tried the skill out. With a magical flash, 10 blue softball-sized orbs of water appeared in the air and orbited around Han Ying Xue. The water orbs were crystal clear and gave Han Ying Xue an angelic visage.

"Not bad. Looks like our Healer can last much longer in battle!" said Zhang Yang.

Han Ying Xue smirked wider. Bosses at Zhang Yang stages had plenty of AoE attacks. With each attack landing on Han Ying Xue, she could instantly regain a portion of her MP pool. With the slow recovery of MP that occurs every three seconds, it was a good boost to her endurance in a boss fight. If they encounter a boss with a DoT aura, she could restore a 5,000 MP in one go, by simply activating the skill! All in all, having more skills would never hurt!

After collecting all the battle loots, Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er teleported to Morning town. It has been few days since they had last restocked. They would need to return to town to repair their equipment. As for Zhang Yang, he needed to concoct potions to restock his own supply of top tiered potions. After everything is ready, they could proceed to Laguana and obtain the God of War Inheritance!

Zhang Yang was so excited at the thought of him actually obtaining the Inheritance! In his previous life, the King Kong Inheritance that he obtained was merely B class. That alone had him running from east to west, north, and south! There was hardly

the need to fight strong foes! Imagine the strength he would acquire after obtaining the God of War, S class Inheritance!

After concocting a bunch of potions and repairing his equipment, Zhang Yang returned to Morning Town from White Jade Castle and headed to the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster. The Searing Peak was located in the eastern direction of the flatlands. The entire mountain was red and the peak of it was shining brilliantly, even in daylight, as if it had been lit up by a raging forest fire.

Zhang Yang circled around the peak and found the boss without much problem. He then descended down and landed near a giant altar. At the center of the altar, there were five fire elementals lined up in order. At the center of them was a larger and more prominent fire elemental. The fire elementals here were vastly different compared to what he had fought when he was only Level 10. They had fiery humanoid bodies, and the one in the center wielded a hammer in its right hand and a shield in his left and was at least 20 meters tall. The other four elementals were smaller, but still stood as tall as 3 or 4 meters, and were equipped in a similar manner.

Without a doubt, the larger guy had to be the boss.

[Fire Element King, Laguana] (Violet-Platinum, Elemental Being)

Level: 125

HP: 12,500,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 17,310 – 19,310 (Physical Attack with Fire Attribute)

Skills:

[Flaming Cleanse]: Slams the earth and unleashes a powerful fire wave that will deal 20,00 Fire damage to all targets, 40 meters around the caster.

[Burning Aura]: Causes 5,000 Fire damage every 3 seconds, to all targets 30 meters around the caster. Similar aura effect cannot be stacked.

[Summon Servant: Fire Elemental]: Summons Fire Elementals, double of the number of players in the aggro list. While the Fire Elemental Servants are active, Laguana will enter a hibernation state. In the hibernation state, Laguana cannot attack and cannot be attacked. After 2 minutes, Laguana will awaken and will absorb all the remaining HP from the remaining Fire Elementals, healing himself.

[Fire Constitution]: Restores itself when struck by any and all Fire element attacks.

Note: Loyal follower of the God of Fire. After the fall of the Fire God, Laguana had been searching for the Soul of the Fire God, in hopes of becoming the second God of Fire.

The other 4 Fire elementals were nothing compared to the boss. They were all Level 115 elite tier monsters, with HPs as high as 1,150,000. All of them had a weaker form of the {Burning Aura}; dealing 3,000 Fire damage every 3 seconds. However, they shared a similar trait. Their attacks had Fire attributes which could ignore all Defense, and had an immunity to Fire based attack. However, unlike the boss, Fire attacks would not restore their HP.

Zhang Yang strategy was to kill the monsters before the boss. However, all 5 entities were standing close to each other. No matter how Zhang Yang goes in to attack, all 5 of them would surely be attracted at the same time. In that case, Zhang Yang would have to use the "Aggro Separation" technique.

Under normal circumstances, this technique can only be used by classes who have aggro clearing skills like a Hunter's {Fake Death} and a Thief's {Vanish}. Zhang Yang was able to use this technique since he had the skill {Shadow of the Void} to leave the battlefield at will.

Just before he was able to activate {Charge}, he felt a sudden distortion in the air around him. Due to his vast experience of battling, he was 100% sure that there was a Thief around him!

Zhang Yang stopped his movement and concentrated hard. Was it a monster...or a player?

No...it cannot be. A monster would never remain invisible for long, since they would automatically break out of their stealth the

moment a player is around.

Zhang Yang knew something was wrong. He then pretended to walk in a circle, as if he was deep in thought and walked in a wider circle to increase his "sensing" radius. When he had circled around for the fourth time, he pulled out his sword in a split second and slashed the air before him!

Pak!

Fresh blood was spilled in the air and a shadowy figure that belonged to a SMEXY blonde-haired chick puffed out into visibility!

Dusk Phoenix! The European top tiered Thief class player!



# Chapter 506: One More Round with Dusk Phoenix

---

Since when did this chick get to Level 100?!

But then again, if Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were able to discover the main story quest, others would be able to. There are many wonders and mysteries in 'God's Miracle'. Things like how did Dusk Phoenix being Level 100 wouldn't be that much of a surprise. The real question was, why was Dusk Phoenix here with him?

It would really be a 1 in a million chance that Dusk Phoenix would be there because of a quest! If that was really the case, she should be here Zhang Yang! It was likely, as Zhang Yang had embarrassed the hell out of her in the Land of the Sacred Glory. So, how did she even find him?

Both of them were not exactly friends, so they were not on each other's friend lists. In the game, the system would only give away the location of a friend. Even if Dusk Phoenix had managed to slip past Hundred Shots and got into Lone Desert Smoke, she would only able to have his general map name and not his exact position. Only a party member could do that. Would Han Ying Xue or Wei Yan Er leak the information instead? That would be impossible.

So back to the to the question. How did she find him!?

With the million-dollar question in his head, he lowered his sword to his side and smiled at her. "Duck Phoenix, how did you

find me?"

"My name is Dusk Phoenix!" cried Dusk Phoenix in anger as he had deliberate mispronounced her name. She jumped back and only relaxed when she was 14 to 15 meters away from Zhang Yang. At that distance, she would not get hit by Zhang Yang's {Charge}. In anger and rage, she glared at him, "I've said it before. I will have my revenge!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Ah. I remembered that. But, I seem to recall something I said in return as well. The next time I see you, I'd smack that bum bum real good!" With that, Zhang Yang deliberately made a show of craning his head over to gaze at her curvy butt. The woman was a fine specimen. Her peach-shaped butt was so luscious and thick that all men would be drawn in just to smack'em good!

"You bastard! Eyes up here!" The woman was enraged, but she did give in to her emotions and charge in blindly. Instead, she withdrew even further, before entering stealth mode. With invisibility, she would gain the battle advantage and could fully bring out the potential of a Thief. Her intention was to catch Zhang Yang when he least expects it and slit his throat open. At least, that's what she had in mind.

Zhang Yang was as calm and as cool as a cucumber. Both of them were players from different regions. The Chinese region and European region were natural-born enemies. There was no way that they would find a peaceful resolution. In any case, Zhang Yang could not simply leave her to be in the area, since this quest had specifically mentioned that interference in the battle would result

in failure. He would have to eliminate any possible threat!

{Spear of Obliteration}!

Shoom!

A white projectile was fired off and struck Dusk Phoenix.

"Scoundrel! I dare you to fight me fairly! As a Guardian, you have the class advantage against a Thief! How could you not let me enter stealth! Where is the pride of winning in that?! And you dare call yourself China's number 1 tank!" Dusk Phoenix hissed.

Zhang Yang smirked. Did she really think that he would be so easily provoked by her taunts? Zhang Yang ignored her and commanded Whitey Jr. to attack her from the skies. Felice had also joined in the fray by firing a {Fire Missile}.

"Hey, Ducky, don't forget that I actually caught you while you were in stealth. It's not me who's being an \*sshole. It's you who is weak! I suggest that you train a little more before you come after me again." Whitey Jr. had spat a {Poison Spit} at her while carrying Zhang Yang on its back.

Splat! Boom!

Felice's {Fire Missile} had also struck her, dealing more than 20,000 damage, hacking away close to one-third of her HP. The woman was shocked, her face turning ashen pale. Felice's attack

was so much stronger than Wei Yan Er's or Sun Xin Yu's, after all!

With Felice backing Zhang Yang up, Zhang Yang could have stood idle and still defeat the Thief. With his Defense power, Dusk Phoenix would have died first, and Zhang Yang would remain standing with around 20,000 HP.

"Bastard!" cried Dusk Phoenix. She quickly consumed a bottle of healing potion and restored the 20,000 HP instantly. Zhang Yang was slightly surprised. When everyone else had been spamming [Level 4 Healing Potions] that could only heal 10,000 HP at a time, she had restored 20,000 HP with a single gulp! Perhaps, she had Transmuted grade potions like Zhang Yang?

That was just one of the possibilities. She could have learned some skill which granted her 100% bonus healing power. Zhang Yang had heard of such skill before, but had never encountered it in his life or the previous one.

So be it. With Felice and Whitey Jr. combining their attack, how long would 60,000 HP last?

{Blur}! {Shadow Cloak}!

Dusk Phoenix was already forced to use her emergency skills, a sign that she was in trouble. With a quick wave of her left hand, her character turned into a translucent, fading into the shadows, gaining 50% evasion rate. The {Shadow Cloak}'s effect was to give the caster a 90% chance of being immune to a magic spell.

The woman had finally closed the distance to Zhang Yang and was dancing around him ever-so-agilely.

‘-1,671!’

‘-439!’

‘-5,567!’

In just one second, Zhang Yang had taken 3 strikes that had inflicted him with two different debuffs. One maimed him, while the other was a {Fatal Coat} which dealt 1,000 natural damage every 3 seconds, lasting for 15 seconds and stackable up to 5 layers.

Zhang Yang immediately narrowed his gaze. The woman’s attack was much higher than he had anticipated. Her secondary weapon was able to deal 400 damage! One possible explanation for that would be the skill {Eagle Eye}. Perhaps, the woman had the same skill as him. She could have even maxed out the skill already!

He raised his guard up, treating her with more respect. Even though he may be the only person in China to take all the First Clear Achievement of all the dungeons so far, there could be someone like him who had done the exact same thing in other regions and had gained more than enough skill points!

Dusk Phoenix may have activated her ulti skill, but her semi-invulnerability would only last for 10 seconds. How could anyone kill a well-equipped Guardian in 10 seconds?!

Zhang Yang laughed at the idea and raised his shield. After a successful block, Zhang Yang forcefully bashed the opponent and sent her flying! If he cannot use his skills on her, so be it, but a Supporting Attack did not count as a skill, would not miss!

Dusk Phoenix leaped to her feet like a furious feline. Her cheeks were dyed in a deep pinkish hue. In fury and rage, she screamed in a shrill voice, "Shameless! Pervert! I'll kill you!"

She brandished her daggers rushed over like a Berserker.

Zhang Yang was baffled, but after reexamining his actions, Zhang Yang understood why she had acted that way. Dusk Phoenix and he were merely enemies from different regions. He did not harbor any particular form of enmity towards her or whatsoever, or even disliked her as a person. That was why he had pulled his punches and had not smashed his shield into her face, as he usually does. After all, his opponent was a woman, and he had lowered the swing of his shield and went for her body. Instead, he had "accidentally" smacked her breasts instead!

From her point of view, she had been blatantly taken advantage off! How would she not feel angry?

Faced with such an aggressive opponent, Zhang Yang had chosen to mount Whitey Jr. and had attacked from the sky instead. He decided to wait until her skills expired so that he could hit her with more certainty. Zhang Yang steeled his mind. He should not allow the opponent to affect his judgment. Both of them were natural

enemies and in a battle, gender does not matter.

Dusk Phoenix bore so much hatred towards Zhang Yang and had decided to pull out her trump card. She summoned out a large sky-blue mythical bird. She hopped on it and chased after Zhang Yang.

Woah! She has a flying mount as well? Zhang Yang was becoming more impressed with every passing moment. Still, he still had the means of fighting it. Without a flying mount, she would not have been able to chase after him! Even though a Thief could turn invisible, she would never have gotten past so many high-level monsters on the ground. Moving through a nest of monsters that outleveled a player would be extremely risky.

"Schmuck! Prick!" cried Dusk Phoenix. The woman forced her bashful expression off her face and commanded the blue bird to attack. The bird opened its beak up and accumulated a ball of blue energy that formed into a Frost Arrow which flew at a high speed towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I'm sorry! It was a mistake! I mean, you don't have to be that agitated about that! We're just playing a game! It's not like I'm touching you at all! Besides... what's there to lose? It's not like they would blow up! Or...do they actually contain explosives?"

If only he had kept his mouth shut, Dusk Phoenix would not have been any angrier than she had ever been in her entire life. With rage, the woman pulled the reins of the bird and shot down from the sky. If her rage could take actual form, she would be a ball of fiery meteor, with the sole purpose of obliterating Zhang Yang.

What she failed to realize was that her skill was about to expire. No longer pseudo-invincible, Dusk Phoenix's character returned to her regular status. Her semi-transparent appearance ended, and her entire character solidified.

Felice and Whitey Jr. Had been prepared for that and when her skill had ended, a ball of fire and a wad of poison landed on Dusk Phoenix.

Dusk Phoenix could have endured longer and fight on par with Zhang Yang if Zhang Yang had only summoned Whitey Jr. out. However, Felice's attack was so strong even Zhang Yang would have trouble standing up against her, even with all his emergency skills! What chance did Dusk Phoenix have!

The woman was not the reckless type. Even with her rage and embarrassment, her sense of judgment had remained as clear as daylight. When she knew that she would not endure the combined attack from all his allies, she tugged on the reins and tried to escape.

She was a Thief, an Assassin. A silent killer born from the shadows. The way of the Assassin was quite different compared to the other types of players. An Assassin should be able to kill their opponents in one attempt. If they fail to do so, they must withdraw from the frontlines and find another chance to strike. Since players could not help but to kill monsters, a Thief could wait until the opponent had used all of their ulti, or wait until their HP is low before striking. A Thief has to be cunning. If Thieves were to fight fairly and squarely, that would defeat their purpose. As they say,



there is no honor among Thief.

As for Zhang Yang, he had never allowed any Thief to get close enough to him before, ever! No matter what chances she had, the main priority is to create a safe space and prevent anyone from interfering with his fight against the boss! That was why he has to kill her!

Whitey Jr. flew in the air and chased after Dusk Phoenix while spewing out more poison. Its {Poison Spit} was an instant-cast skill which did not require any casting animation. Hence, even while mid-flight, the flying serpent did not need to stop flying to cast the skill, it was a perfect tool for use during a pursuit!

Dusk Phoenix was rather a good rider. She stopped soaring upwards and had descended down sharply to try and reverse their positions. However, Zhang Yang was a far experienced fighter, so there was no way that he would fall for that!

Dusk Phoenix gritted her teeth. There was no way that she was going to let all the hard-earned experience points to drop down to 0. She then turned around and shouted at him, "Zhan Yu! You have no honor! Is this how Chinese men treat their ladies?"

Zhang Yang laughed at her comment and said, "Well, we definitely do not have the luxury of doing it mid-air, or while on flying creatures. Also, there's no way I'm letting you escape! I'm killing you! That's final!"

Dusk Phoenix clenched her fists tightly. She had never seen such

a ruthless man who would not pull his punches against a woman! She was very well aware that she would never escape from Zhang Yang. Still, it would be a huge disgrace if she fails to shake him off! She would be killed in mid-air by the flying serpent's poison spit!

With a quick command, the bluebird descended down to the earth. The moment she was 10 meters above the ground, she leaped off the bird. The woman did not have the skill {Beast Taming}. Hence, when she got off the bird, it disappeared after two seconds. Before the bird was unsummoned, Dusk Phoenix had ran beneath the bird's shadow and had entered stealth. When the bird vanished from the air, so did she.

Zhang Yang had been following her closely and had immediately realized what she had done. Smiling confidently, he called out, "Burn the ground, Felice!"

Felice breathed fire down at where Dusk Phoenix had vanished from sight burning a large patch of the ground.

‘-3,000!’

Close to where the AoE effect ended, a damage text ticked out, and Dusk Phoenix was forcefully revealed. She quickly ran out of the {Pulverizing Flame} AoE. With so much frustration bottled up, she would have jumped into the sky and bitten off his nose.

Zhang Yang activated {Charge} in midair and flew through the air after he had jumped off the flying serpent. Like a bullet, Zhang Yang plummeted into Dusk Phoenix. The sword in his hands

gleamed and started slicing her up.

Dusk Phoenix hummed quietly. After taking a few hits, Zhang Yang noticed a glint in her eyes. A fiery dragon burst out her necklace and came for Zhang Yang.

This was the same skill that Zhang Yang had nearly taken, back at the Land of the Sacred Glory. Zhang Yang had been prepared for it. He immediately activated {Shield Wall} and at the same time, he swung his shield at Dusk Phoenix, casting {Crash Magic} on her.

"Uumph...Zhan Yu--!" This time, Dusk Phoenix was so mad that her face was as red as a tomato! It seemed that Zhang Yang's shield had struck her again in her bosoms. It's really a wonder that her bouncy peaks had not yet been flattened by Zhang Yang. Finally giving in to her anger, the poor woman had charge upfront and attacked Zhang Yang at a ferocious speed.

However, with Felice and Whitey Jr attacking her at the same time, even if she had consumed all of her potions, she would not have survived. Rapidly, her HP bar was hacked away and she fell to the ground, lifeless.

With one death, her current experience bar was emptied down to zero. The woman lost it there and then. Right after she revived, she had thrown herself at Zhang Yang and attacked like a savage, abandoning all the principles of a true Assassin.

Zhang Yang then killed her for a total of seven times. After the eighth time, she still bore the same hatred towards Zhang Yang

and had charged at him relentlessly. Zhang Yang finally had enough of it. He then commanded Felice and the flying serpent to stop their attacks. When she got up for the ninth time, he smacked her titties with all his might, sending those mighty mounds bouncing up and down, left and right.

Since the woman was mostly enraged due to his accidental smacking, he shall smack her till kingdom comes. Let's see how would she be, after a thousand passionate smacks!

# Chapter 507: Completed Quest

---

Hmm. Such bounce, so wow. Very hypnotizing...

It was indeed, mesmerizing to look at!

However, there is always a limit to everything. When something gets far too large, it loses the sex appeal, it would turn into a horror movie!

With Zhang Yang continuous smacking, Dusk Phoenix's swollen breasts could make 99% of all girls envious and 100% of men to have the urge to bury their heads in those peaks! The problem was that, when her breasts swelled up even further, they became so large that they started sagging.

"Zhan Yu! I'll never forgive you!" Dusk Phoenix literally had tears flowing down her pretty face. She had abandoned her daggers and appeared to have no desire of fighting on. Such a torturous session had left her with a mental scar!

Pew!

Felice blasted a {Fire Missile} and killed the mentally broken woman, ending her suffering or rather, stopping Zhang Yang from further embarrassing her. The next second, Dusk Phoenix's lifeless corpse dissipated from the realm. She must have selected to revive at the graveyard itself, since it would take a while to run from the graveyard to revive yourself.

Having taken such intense punishment, the woman must have finally learned her lesson...for now. That was what Zhang Yang thought, but he did not lower his guard. Instead, he waited at the same spot for 30 minutes or so, just to make sure. It's hard to tell if Dusk Phoenix had really given up on her revenge. Zhang Yang felt that it would be better to just to be a little more patient, perhaps, she could really be hiding somewhere among the bushes.

When it comes to patience, Thieves should be the best among all class out there. Since they weren't particularly good in single combat, their sneaking ability would have to be raised to the maximum. Only god or a GM knows when and from where a Thief would suddenly jump on you and hump your brains out!

After some time, Zhang Yang grew tired of waiting and decided to start the boss fight.

On normal occasions, players who had taken up the Thief class should have the patience to be able to stand at one place for hours, or even days just to hide and kill players. It's even normal for a Thief to stand guard for more than 2 days! Things would last much longer if the Thief user uses a Gaming Capsule! It would even possible to stand guard for as long as a month! That being said, such method would get old and tedious over time.

Zhang Yang had Felice stay far away from the boss as he attacked one of the Fire Elementals near the boss with a {Spear of Obliteration}. In unison, all 5 targets let out their battle cries and lumbered towards Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang withdrew hastily and calculated the precise moment to use {Shadow of the Void} and

escape the battle. Now that all 5 targets had lost their aggro target, the elite tiered Fire Elemental that had taken the damage was the last to return to its original position, while the four who had followed had already returned. The last Fire Elemental that had not yet returned managed to get into Felice's aggro range and attacked her instead, leaving the other four undisturbed.

Zhang Yang then burst out of {Shadow of the Void} and came back into the battlefield. Before the Fire Elemental had managed to land a hit on Felice, he cast {Provoke} on it and drew its attention to himself.

"H-Hu-mans D-ie—" Its voice was extremely deep and low, making it rather to discern the words in its mumbles. Not that it mattered in the first place anyway. The Fire Elemental paced quickly towards Zhang Yang heaved its hammer towards Zhang Yang.

With a quick block and a bash, Zhang Yang retaliated. Since the Fire Elemental had the Fire Immunity passive skill, Felice was forced to remain in her human form to attack with her lance. Sadly, even in her human form, her {Blazing Dragon's Spear} was imbued with Fire damage. Under normal circumstances, the attacks would ignore a target's Defense, reducing the damage reduction value. However, in this case, while fighting a target with Fire Immunity, it would be a waste. With her physical attack alone, Felice's DPS rate had dropped down to a staggering 4,000, which closer to Zhang Yang's level. The little young lady was so saddened by her weakened performance and had repeatedly apologized to Zhang Yang. "I'm so sorry big brother. I'm useless! I'm no good!"

Such a wonderful little lady...if only the devilish Wei Yan Er would behave like her! Zhang Yang sighed heavily at the thought of it. How wonderful would this world be, if the little brat behaved just a little better...

Even though Felice's attack had been greatly reduced, the overall DPS rate was still solid. The Fire Elemental was killed in no less than 2 minutes and dropped a few piles of Amber Ash. They were but ETC items which could be sold to the NPC for a few coins. Perhaps, even a few copper coins would be hard...

After the battle ended, Zhang Yang waited for 10 minutes for the {Shadow of the Void} to be ready. He then repeated the same process again and successfully killed a second Fire Elemental. For the third attempt, Zhang Yang was careless and had unintentionally drawn in the boss as well. Luckily, Felice and Whitey Jr. were able to fly into the sky to leave the battlefield.

During the fourth attempt, Zhang Yang paid more attention and kited two Fire Elementals at the same time. After spending more than twice the time, he killed all Fire Elementals and left the final target, Laguana alone in the field.

Even after fighting for close to 50 minutes, Zhang Yang still could not let go of the uneasiness he had in his heart. He was still bothered by the possibility of being ambushed by Dusk Phoenix. After contemplating for some time, Zhang Yang had flown around the area with the flying serpent and thoroughly looked under every stone in the entire area for traces of Dusk Phoenix. It was not easy. To search for an invisible Thief hidden in the wilderness was an impossible task!



After one unsuccessful round, Zhang Yang groaned like a madman and decided to start working on the boss. He could not wait any longer! If his quest really gets disrupted by the sexy European chick, he will spend the next few days hunting her down and smashing those boobies inwards! He would show her the vengeful side of men as well!

"Alright, let's go, Felice!" Zhang Yang drew his sword, calling out to the still solemn little lady.

"Alright, big brother!"

{Spear of Obliteration}!

Laguana's voice was different, compared to the other Fire Elementals. His groans were as thunderous as a volcanic eruption. Moving its massive fiery body about, it stomped the earth and smashed its blazing hammer at Zhang Yang. "Since when would a weakling human dare to challenge a god! Do you really think that you are one of us?"

{Charge}!

Wham!

The hammer dropped down from the sky at such speed that Zhang Yang's stance was met with immense pressure. The sheer power had forced him downward, pushing Zhang Yang deep into

the earth! His greaves were buried halfway into the scorching land! His bones felt like they were on the verge of breaking! Zhang Yang readjusted his stance, opening his legs wider and forcefully pushed the shield back up, shoving the hammer off him.

"Fufufu! Such a weak human. I barely used any force in that strike!" Laguana lifted his hammer from the crater that it had made with Zhang Yang and slammed it down again.

This time, Zhang Yang's {Block} was still under a cooldown. Yet, he still assumed a similar defensive stance with his shield held up high. He took 12,942 damage. Thanks to the boss' special attack attribute, all his Defense value was just for show.

Zhang Yang snorted. The damage was not that bad.

"Don't get carried away, match stick! Witness how I extinguish your flame!" Zhang Yang traveled with the momentum of the hammer and threw himself into the air. Deftly weaving about the body of the larger entity, Zhang Yang laid down his attacks. Felice quickly joined in, as well as the flying serpent.

Laguana laughed manically and bellowed, "Arroagant human! Foolish human! You will never know why the gods have always looked down on all of you! Witness the power of Fire! Let it cleanse your corrupted soul!"

Voosh!

The boss smashed the earth in front of him and spewed out a sea of flames that spread out in all directions. Zhang Yang took 13,772 damage from it. Felice reacted quickly and morphed into her Dragonhawk form, but still took 15,520 damage. Since Felice had 4,480 magic defenses in her Dragonhawk form, the damage she would receive in her human form would have been higher.

Even though Felice had over 100,000 HP, the boss's {Burning Aura} was causing her quite an amount of damage, since it would deal 5,000 Fire damage in every 3 seconds. However, if Felice chooses to maintain her Dragonhawk form, the damage she would take on every tick would be lowered down to only 520 damage. The problem was that her Dragonhawk form would not be able to ditch out much damage, due to most of her Dragonhawk skills being Fire based. She might even end up healing the boss!

30 seconds into the fight, Felice slowly being force out of the battle. She had to fly elsewhere and heal herself with [Bandages] and Transmuted Grade 10 Healing Potion before rejoining the fight. This is the biggest advantage of a Battle Companion. Like a player, they could consume potions, use [Bandages,], and even sit down to eat recovery snacks to restore their HP! Naturally, they would have to leave the combat before doing so.

Zhang Yang cycled through all his attacking skills and hacked the boss to 80%. The King of Fire Elementals retracted his hammer and roared to the high heavens. "Come forth! My brethren! Your King requests your assistance!"

Shush! Shush!

Two elite Fire Elementals appeared in the field. The boss then knelt down and froze himself in time. The flickering flames on his body stopped moving, as if time had stopped for him. However, his burning status remained the same!

{Summoned Servant: Fire Elemental}!

{Fire Elemental Servant Form] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 110

HP: 330,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 7,594 – 9,594 (Physical Attack with Fire attribute)

Skills:

[Flame Bash]: Deals 100% melee Fire damage, stunning the target for 3 seconds.

Luckily, the summoned Fire Elementals were not strong and had little HP at only 330,000. Two of these Fire Elementals were weaker than one of the Fire Elementals from before! Furthermore,

these servants were not immune to Fire damage!

Felice morphed into her Dragonhawk form and started blasting {Fire Missiles}. Zhang Yang rode on Whitey Jr. and charged at the other Fire Elemental Servant. In 40 seconds and less, both of the targets were killed off!

The battle had ended so soon that the boss still had more than 1 minute to return to the battle!

Zhang Yang took the time to heal himself with a [Bandage]. During that time, {Berserker's Heal} and {Shield Wall} were almost ready once again!

Zhang Yang smirked. The boss's {Summoned Servant} skill must be a skill that would be boosted or weakened, according to the number of players in the field. The skill would be useful against a large number of players. The elite Fire Elementals had weak HPs, but were still tough to defeat. If players are not prepared enough, the summoned elementals could instantly wipe out all the DPSer and Healers in the field.

As for Zhang Yang, it would be a sad case of try-hard for the boss. Not only could Zhang Yang breeze through the ordeal like it was child's play, it had even given him a luxurious amount of time to heal! Among all the three bosses that the quest had required him to kill, this Fire Elemental King would be the easiest.

2 minutes later, Laguana returned back to the battlefield and had immediately spouted a long speech about killing humanity and

experiencing his rage. However, when the boss activated the skill to absorb the HPs of the Fire Elemental Servants, a green healing text popped out, saying: "+o!"

Zhang Yang laughed and continued on with his slice and dice.

In the fight, the scripted "intelligence" of the boss was shown to the world. It was already a fact that the skill {Summoned Servant: Fire Elemental} would be useless in the fight, but Laguana would never fail to use the skill at every 20% HP loss. Zhang Yang had taken advantage of the boss' skill and had easily hacked the boss down to his last 10%. Right then, he used {Glare of the Death God}, but it failed with a word "Resist!"

Oh well, might as well just slice and dice all the way through...

Zhang Yang then activated {Dance of Heaven and Earth}, and {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} to save him some time. After some minor hacking, the boss' form retracted into the burning hammer upon his death. There was a pile of battle loot close by. Before heading over to claim his prize, Zhang Yang opened the quest log and saw that the quest "The Last Hurdle" had already been completed.

Hell yell! God of War Inheritance, GETZ!

# Chapter 508: The God of War Inheritance

---

Zhang Yang rushed over with great speed to finish up the quest. In his haste, Zhang Yang did not even bother to review the loots and just swept them all into his inventory. He then rode Whitey Jr. and rushed over to the Camarro Islands. Zhang Yang allowed the flying serpent to take the wheel as he reviewed the drops.

Laguana had dropped a total of 3 equipment, a Yellow-Gold bow, a Yellow-Gold Cloth Armor Pants, and a Violet-Platinum Shield which was rather strong.

[Molten Lava Shield] (Violet-Platinum, Shield)

Defense: +2,016

Vitality: +1,411

Equip Effect: Absorbs 688 damage upon attack.

Equip Effect: Upon receiving an attack, grants a 10% chance to counterattack with a flamethrower, deals 700 fire damage.

Equip Effect: Increases 2,800 Maximum HP.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

The shield would be a hot sale in the auction house. The shield's properties were strong and could even damage the attacker to further generate a tank's aggro on a monster. Compared to Zhang Yang's own shield, this Molten Lava Shield was actually pretty cool!

Besides the equipment, the boss had also dropped one Alchemy Recipe [Fire Breather Potion] and a skill book [Unleashed Demon].

[Fire Breather Potion] (Usable)

Use: Imbues your body with the power of flames. After landing a successful attack, grants a 10% chance to breathe fire on the target, dealing 1,000 Fire damage. Effects last for 1 hour. Cooldown: 2 minutes.

Level Requirement: 100

This potion was rather useful. It was somewhat equivalent to granting the user 100 Fire damage on every strike (Average of 1,000 damage in 10 strikes). It would be extremely effective when used by Thieves since they had the highest attack speed. Be it PvP or PvE fights, it would come in truly handle.

The journey of a thousand miles begins with a single step. In this situation, the best way of putting it in words would be "the journey to 1,000 damage begins with 10 strikes!"



{Unleashed Demon} was a universal skill, unrestricted by classes. However, Zhang Yang chose to keep it instead with the intention of passing it over to Han Ying Xue or Sun Xin Yu, because he knew that skill's prowess.

The skill would release one demon to entrap one target, making the target unable to attack while being invincible itself. In a situation where there are 4 to 5 Elite monsters around, this skill can be used as a crowd control skill to reduce the load on the party members.

Since he was the main tank, the skill's 3 seconds of casting animation would greatly reduce his efficiency in a fight. It was still best to let someone else like Han Ying Xue learn it.

Compared to the other two bosses, Laguana was the weakest. Zhang Yang could not help but to think that the servants of gods had different levels amongst themselves. Honestly, Laguana's prowess was truly weak when compared to the other two.

After several hours of flying, Zhang Yang entered the cave where Ares lay. When he entered the cave, the guy was stretching as if he had just woken up.

"Huh. Not bad, for a mere human!" Ares snorted. "Back then, I would only have needed one finger to kill them easily, even if those three douchebags were thousands of kilometers apart!"

Oh, really now?

Zhang Yang chuckled and said, "God of War, I have proven myself worthy to inherit your power!"

Ares chuckled as well. "Geh geh geh. Indeed, you have. Very well, little human. I shall bestow on you a portion of my power! However, you must continue your journey to absolute strength. The current you is still weak to receive all of my power!" said Ares, with a stern expression.

"I understand".

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: The Last Hurdle. Obtained 10,000,000 Experience Points!’

"Close your eyes, and concentrate only on receiving my powers!" Area placed his fingers on Zhang Yang's forehead and unleashed a bright radiating light.

Woah! Is that the legendary Martial World's [Abhisheka](#) technique! Zhang Yang thought about it while waiting for the process to end.

‘Ding! You have obtained the Inheritance, God of War. Inheritance Class: S! Due to the Uniqueness of the Inheritance, you can no longer accept other Inheritances nor discard the God of War Inheritance!’

‘Ding! With the guidance of the God of War, you may now equip any Two-Handed Weapons in your main hand and a Shield in your secondary hand. You have gained access to Guardian’s and Berserker’s skill trees. Skills can only be learned through Skill Books and cannot be obtained from Class Instructors!’.

‘Ding! You have learned a new skill: God of War’s Rage!’

‘Ding! You have learned a new skill: God of War’s Shield!’

‘Ding! You have learned a new skill: God of War Transformation!’

‘Ding! You have learned a new skill: Radiance of the God of War!’

‘Ding! You have learned a new skill: God of War’s Crushing Strike!’

‘Ding! Congratulations on becoming the first player to obtain a Class Inheritance. The system has awarded you with Luck +2!’

After many bell dings ringed in his ears, Ares retracted his finger from Zhang Yang’s head and sat back down. "There. I have given you a portion of my power. Until the day you become stronger, train with all your might. Come back to me when you are stronger, and I shall bestow upon you more skills." After he ended his speech, Ares returned to his deep slumber.

‘Server Announcement: A player has obtained the first

Inheritance Class! The system will conduct a server restart in 5 minutes! Please make preparations for the server restart!’

Right after the system notification flashed, the server was sent into a major chaos.

Zhang Yang was excited. When he had already gained the skills, Zhang Yang was not paying attention to the NPC and was already examining the new skills.

In truth, there were six skills. The God of War inheritance had given a permanent upgrade to the player, allowing the player to equip a Two-Handed Weapon in their main hands!

[God of War’s Rage] (Passive): Increases 50% attack power.

[God of War’s Shield]: Summons the God of War to protect oneself. Gains 20% passive damage reduction that last for 10 minutes. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Not bad. A permanent damage boost and an active Defensive skill. What power!

[God of War Transformation]: Calls upon the God of War and transform oneself into his image. Increases your maximum HP by 4000%, Defense by 500%, Attack Power by 500% and gains a 90% chance to nullify all magical attacks inflicted on you. Gains the power of flight. In the God of War Form, you will gain 1 point of God of War [Energy Point](#) every 10 seconds. The Energy Points can

be used to activate many special skills in the God of War Form. Lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

Like a god!

Based on his current stats, if Zhang Yang activates his God of War Transformation, he would have 3,785,600 HP, 11,600 Defense, and 26,552 – 29,152 Attack Power. Perhaps his HP was a little on the low side, or else he would have completely overtaken a Violet-Platinum boss itself!

No wonder the late-game bosses required thousands or even ten thousands of players to fight. If the later bosses were designed based on the standard difficulty graph, the bosses were nothing but tofu for players with Transformation abilities!

Now that he had the God of War Transformation in hand, he could kill an Ethereal tier boss all by himself!

It was a waste that the transformation skill could not be saved up for later uses. A 2 hour long active duration and a 72 hour cooldown period was just too precious to be wasted on random bosses.

Zhang Yang laughed at his own greediness and continued to examine the other skills.

[Radiance of the God of War]: Absorbs the light of victory and mends all wounds on the body, restoring all of your HP. Cost: 100%

Rage Points. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Wait a minute? A 30 minutes cooldown {Berserker's Heal}? That's too weak! How could he use it?!

"F\*ck!"

Zhang Yang cried in agony as he had just been reminded of something extremely important. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had never encountered such a skill like {Berserker's Heal} and {Sacred Heal}, but he had heard words from older players, talking about how they missed the days where they could use the skills!

Right now, Zhang Yang finally understood what they meant! Those skills would be removed in the upcoming patch! The skills had already been removed in his past life when the someone else had obtained the first Inheritance!

Now that he thought about it, if the developers did not remove the all-recovery skills, players with Transformation Inheritance would be even more OP. Players who were Warriors and Knights would be completely broken. After transforming and gaining a massive boost in stats, they could simply depend on {Berserker's Heal} to maintain a god-like mode! As long as they put in an effort of staying alive every 2 minutes, they could defeat a boss within 2 hours and still grind their hearts out without the need to worry about survivability! The dignity of a boss would be non-existent!

Sigh...As the saying goes, the sun will set and the moon will rise; if the developers wants to remove the skill, there nothing that a

player can do!

[God of War's Crushing Strike]: Strikes the earth with the power of a God and attacks all targets within an area of 100x100 meters mercilessly. Chaos Damage will be dealt, based on 1000% of the Strength attribute. Cost: 3 God of War Energy Points.

The skill {Radiance of the God of War} could be used in any form. However, since Ep would only regenerate in the God of War form, the skill {God of War's Crushing Strike} would only be available during a transformation.

Zhang Yang's current Strength attribute was 1,332. 10 times of that would mean 13,320 Chaos Damage to all targets within 100x100 meters! The skill would be a major damage dealer in a war since it could be used once every 30 seconds! The skill had a lot of potential for improvement, due to the fact that it depended on an Attribute. The attack power was not fixed, and would depend on a player's ever-growing Strength.

Zhang Yang let out an elated sigh. He had not only gained the Inheritance skills, but also a strong Guardian and the bloodlusted Berserker! However, the skills of God of War could only be received from Ares, and the Guardian and Berserker skills can only be obtained from skill books. But now, he could finally equip a Two-Handed Weapon in his main hand! All he needed then was to prepare himself a full set of equipment that is focused on DPS!

First and foremost, he would change the weapon! Even though a Two-Handed Weapon and a One-Handed Weapon had roughly the same Weapon Attack, the difference in damage output when using

a skill would be the difference between heaven and earth!

It's a pity that he would need to put aside the Sword of Purging Devourer. He still had not broken two seals. Since he could already equip a better and stronger Two-Handed Weapon, he would not have to keep on using the One-Handed Weapon. However, if the Sword of Purging Devourer had its second seal unlock, and consumes a Two-Handed Weapon's special effect, turning into a Two-Handed Sword...

Zhang Yang shook his head from the dreamy thought. Even if there was such a feature in the game, the possibilities of discovering one would be too low.

Just then, the system had shut down the system and forcefully kicked all the players out of the game.

"Noob tank! Sister's calling for us. The server is down. Let's go out and eat!" cried Wei Yan Er's voice from outside his door.

Please...the server is restarting. It would only take as long as a few minutes to complete! If they wanted free food, just say it out loud. It's not like he's as stingy as they are. What a sad excuse...

1. Abhisheka – A technique where a master will perform a sacred rite of transferring power, martial technique, and even knowledge.
2. Energy Point will be shortened to just EP in future chapters.



# Chapter 509: Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu

---

Having obtained the God of War Inheritance, Zhang Yang was in high spirits and decided that it was good cause for a big celebration. He had invited Fatty Han to join him for dinner together with them at a high-class hotel restaurant. The entire "family" soon gathered up and sat down happily.

Zhang Yang took the opportunity to talk about the Inheritance, starting all the way from the passive stat boosts, to the amazing transformation skill. At that point, everyone had gasped in surprise and shock. Names like pervert, wretch, hypocrite flew in his face.

Zhang Yang blinked in surprise.

"Come on. It's a transformation skill! It's not like I would go faking my identity."

"It's not that. Transforming as in changing your gender. Changing your gender just for the sake of power is so perverted! Tut~tut~tut~ You're such an air-head!" Wei Yan Er patted Zhang Yang's shoulder like she was an elder sibling.

Zhang Yang gave up trying to reason with her and ignore the incessant giggles of the tiresome ladies.

"Hey! Little Yang! When are you going get me an S class Hunter Inheritance?!" cried the Fatty, glaring at Zhang Yang with excitement.

"Huh? Fatty bro, are trying to be a pervert as well? I don't think you'd need one, since everyone knows that you're one!" Wei Yan Er laughed.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Fatty, I think you should just get yourself a B class Inheritance. Even a C class would be acceptable. You're all about the transformation, right?" said Zhang Yang. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had obtained a King Kong Inheritance which was a B class. Having cleared the quest line for the S class God of War Inheritance, he truly believed, judging from Fatty Han's capabilities as a player, that even getting a B class Inheritance would be barely possible.

Fatty Han snorted and blinked, "Little Yang. Are you looking down on your Fatty bro? I'm not saying that I'm a pro, but that sort of difficulty would be a cake's walk! Hell, I can even finish it with my cock!"

Saying that, every waitress who had been around the table glared at him in disgust and incredulity. His girlfriend, Xiao Wei had smacked his bulging belly with all her might, causing the poor Fatty Han to cringe in pain.

"Hmph! I'd say, noobie tank is selfish! Selfish, I'm telling you! How could you leave us alone in the dark as you go around getting yourself the best S class Inheritance!" said Wei Yan Er, disgruntled. Both her hands were placed on her hips as she pouted.

Zhang Yang chuckled awkwardly and pretended to ignore the

question. Such a statement was extremely difficult to refute. Might as well just eat up and get drunk.

Everyone had never been happier for Zhang Yang, and had even ordered many alcoholic beverages to toast for his future, many times over. As they drank, other than Zhang Yang and Fatty Han who were heavy drinkers, most of the females around could not hold their drinks after a few glasses. Xiao Wei was around to send Fatty Han home, but Zhang Yang was ferrying five passengers, himself included. The sports car that he had brought along only had room for four. Even though their small bodies would not make that a problem, it would be against the law, and they could be fined heavily. In the end, Zhang Yang got them 5 rooms to spend the night.

The four beauty queens were so intoxicated and they would not even walk straight. Zhang Yang did not want the male hotel crew to take advantage of them, so he carefully supported them, each and every one of them to their own rooms.

The last to be escorted to her room was Han Ying Xue. Just when Zhang Yang had tucked her into bed, the sly witch had slithered her arms around Zhang Yang's neck, pulling him close and planted a hot, passionate kiss on Zhang Yang's lips. Zhang Yang was shocked but was not all too surprised, for it was totally within her characteristics to pull off such a stunt. He pulled himself away and asked, "Are you drunk? Or were you just faking it...?"

"Of course I'm faking it! Haha! I wanted to let that cold-hearted b\*tch lose it really hard!" Han Ying Xue laughed like a seductive succubus. During dinner, she had purposely poured more alcohol

in Sun Xin Yu's cup and forced everyone else to drink until their heads started spinning. Zhang Yang would have never known that Han Ying Xue could put up such a convincing act of being drunk! Poor Sun Xin Yu should probably be cursing to the high heavens in the washroom at that moment, puking her guts out!

Zhang Yang frowned, biting his lower lip. "I'm warning you, I did drink a lot back there. I might just lose it here! Don't play with fire, or you'll get yourself burnt! If you push me, I might actually do it!" said Zhang Yang. Even as the last of those words left his mouth, Zhang Yang swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

"Hmph. We're past that. Now, who is going to do who~~" Han Ying Xue murmured. She pulled him down even further and pressed her jugs against Zhang Yang's chest. She started applying pressure, only to relax, kneading her breasts against his hard body in a slow, hypnotic rhythm. It was summer. Zhang Yang only had a thin, muscle T-shirt on, and Han Ying Xue was wearing a low-cut dress. It was made clear that she had no bra on!

"F\*ck. F\*ck. F\*ck. F\*ck. F\*ck. F\*ck. F\*ck. F\*ck." The same words were racing in Zhang Yang's mind as he tried his best to control himself. Even as he tried to take his mind elsewhere, Zhang Yang could clearly feel a pair of hardening nipples piercing through the garment and scratching against his chest. He could feel the ragged, hot breath coming from her open lips. Her warm lips met his neck and slowly traced down. Worse of all, the ultimate kryptonite to Zhang Yang's resistance were her dazed, dreamy eyes. Her open mouth, and her soft, pink tongue that peeked out from their midst. She craved for a man. She craved for love. Hot, burning, passionate love.

"B\*tch! You asked for it!" Zhang Yang could not hold it in any longer. With one explosive motion, Zhang Yang pinned Han Ying Xue on the bed, his hands around her wrists, holding them above her body. He allowed his weight to rest on her softness, his knee resting just below her crotch, between her amazing, thick thighs. The mounds of wonder were squashed out so forcefully that they started spilling out over her sides. They became a hot, twisted, mess of intertwined limbs. Suddenly, Han Ying Xue grabbed him by the shoulders and pushed him up. She gazed into his face with half-opened eyes, a glimpse of her white teeth between her parted lips.

"I want it—" The woman moaned, her hands drifting down to unbuckle that which kept Zhang Yang's lower half chambered and contained.

"Calm down, you god d\*mn swine! I can't believe you!" Zhang Yang would admit on any day that he is a horny, dirty bastard, but he had never expected a woman like Han Ying Xue to surpass even him in that aspect.

"Oh please. Why would I need to constraint myself in the presence of the man I love? I don't need to hide anything. This is my true self!" Han Ying Xue winked. Her hands rummaged around, groping and feeling about, but Zhang Yang pants remained intact. It was her first time, and she was having trouble unbuckling his leather belt, and it was beginning to frustrate her. The combination of her pent up anticipation, along with that frustration had made her so moist that fabric beneath her, and the mattress were getting drenched in her lovely lady's juice.

"Mm. Hm. Let me," grunted Zhang Yang. He had mistakenly believed that Han Ying Xue was still teasing him and got slightly annoyed. Her hands had brushed against his bulging, rock-hard asset, and it was getting close to torture. He gently pushed away her hands and unbuckled his own pants.

After all manner of fabric and garment had been removed, the two of them locked each other up in a tight embrace. Zhang Yang allowed her to get up top. He was being far gentler, compared to his first time with Yu Li. It was Han Ying Xue's first experience, and based on his experience, he ought to be extremely gentle to maximize the comfort and pleasure, while minimizing the pain. After all, Han Ying Xue was one fine, fine creature. Her first experience should be of pleasure, not pain!

"Why are you being so gentle! That's so not you! Rough me up! Dominate me! Harder!" said Han Ying Xue. She pushed herself up and bit down on his shoulder. "You know...the time when I first fell for you, was when I met you for the first time at my apartment, when you dominated the ice queen so nicely, against the wall, just like that! Yes, I may be a b\*tch. But I like my men hard and strong! I need a brute to keep me around! You think you have what it takes to keep this hot piece of \*ss around?"

"Have what it takes?" Zhang Yang grinned. "B\*tch, you asked for this. Don't start crying later, for once I go hard, there's no turning back!"

"Boy. Stop talking. Do you make love with your mouth!?"

Since the bloody woman was being so provocative, there was no

reason to hold back any longer. With the alcohol in his bloodstream, and the amount of frustration build up, and the sense of accomplishment having obtained the God of War Inheritance, Zhang Yang had so much pent up in that one month of hardship. He then grabbed hold of Han Ying Xue by her hair, dragging her further onto the bed as he pinned her down. His 'weapon' had been teased, tormented, and enraged so extensively that it twitched in anticipation, rearing to plunge itself deep in Han Ying Xue.

"Mmmhhh~~" Even though she was practically begging to be thoroughly ravaged, Han Ying Xue is still a virgin. She may be taking in something far too large, too powerful for her ripe, unplucked fruit. She knit her graceful, lovely eyebrows together, and her eyelids slid over her dazed eyes. The expression on her face intensified his burning lust, sending Zhang Yang's soul into purgatory. Zhang Yang leaned back, allowed the power to accumulate in his body, before thrusting his hips with great force, ramming into her with the brutal might of a warrior. God of War!

"AHH--!" Both their voices were raised at the same time. The woman was a brute herself. She had wanted him to taste the pain of blood with her. Pulling herself closer to Zhang Yang, her nails digging into his back, she opened her mouth and chomped down into Zhang Yang's shoulder muscle. The pain was so sudden and unexpected that Zhang Yang almost roared like a hungry lion. Zhang Yang winced a little and retaliated. He started to brutally smash the attractive, gentle elf like a savage orc. Blood quickly mixed up with other clearer, warmer liquids as they churned about. The pistoning had started off with great vigor, but it quickly became clear that there was a lot more room before the redline.

Han Ying Xue had gotten used to it in a surprisingly short period of time. Her vulgar grunts were slowly turning into melodic, beautiful utterances. The painful moment for her ended quickly, and was replaced with pleasure. She loosened up a little, allowing Zhang Yang to delve even deeper. Her long, white legs wrapped around him with great desire, urging him to increase his speed for her own pleasure.

If Zhang Yang had not been reborn, he would not have gained a cheat code full of experience in this activity. Without it, he might end up as a scrawny little man after Han Ying Xue is finally satisfied.

Han Ying Xue's lovely, melodic voice permeated all over the room. It bounced off the walls, echoing out of the balcony. They were at it for more than half an hour before Han Ying Xue finally called it a night. When Zhang Yang had been with Yu Li, they could go at it for hours. However, foreplay alone usually took up more than two-thirds of the overall duration. As for Han Ying Xue, since she had asked for the brutal side of him, Zhang Yang had gone all out, continuously, for more than half an hour. The poor man was so tired and he had to lie next to her, panting in exhaustion. If she had asked for more, even Zhang Yang would end up with an IV Drip in his body when the whole ordeal is over.

THUD! THUD! THUD! THUD!

Just when Zhang Yang finally recovered enough to sit up, the hard rapping of the door burst out in the silence. Zhang Yang frowned. Who could it be? If it was a service crew member, they would have used the doorbell, instead of physically knocking. Plus,



the knock was strong...and rude, it came off way too strong and impatient. Nothing like that of a service crew! In that case...it could only be...

Zhang Yang had never been so terrified in his life. He wrapped the blanket around his lower half and made his way to the eye hole of the door. He almost let out a yelp when the person on the opposite side was none other than the harbinger. Sun Xin Yu!

Zhang Yang felt immense guilt rising up in his chest. The sort of feeling that you get when caught cheating on another woman. Zhang Yang returned to Han Ying Xue's side with a solemn face.

Han Ying Xue raised an eyebrow and smirked when she studied Zhang Yang's reaction. "Is it the ice queen?"

"Yes...."

THUD! THUD! THUD! THUD! THUD!

The knocking had turned into the solid bangs of a battering ram. The door might not hold up any longer.

Zhang Yang frantically looked to the left and right for a place to hide. "Go, go and tame that beast, I gotta hide!"

Han Ying Xue sighed. She then picked up a blanket and held it against her chest. "Men..."

Han Ying Xue waltzed lazily to the door and unlocked it casually. She was smart. When she unlocked the door, she had quickly taken a step back. Lo and behold, the door practically flew open. Sun Xin Yu's moist, intoxicated face glowed with a crimson hue. Perhaps there was more rage than anything there. She staggered into the room and started looking around, her head whipping her partially undone hair about. At one point, she had almost fell to her feet.

"ahem This is MY room. You mind explaining yourself?" said, Han Ying Xue, as she slowly pushed the door close with her jade-white legs.

"Where hick. Where is he?" rasped Sun Xin Yu. Her voice was cracking and there was an intense anger burning in her eyes. Her cheeks were dyed in red.

"Who?" Han Ying Xue played dumb.

"You sow! Don't play coy with me! Don't you dare say that you did not lay with him!" Sun Xin Yu burst with anger.

"Yeah. I did. So what are you going to do? Bite me?" Han Ying Xue crossed her arms. "I'm more than capable of making it worth his while! Unlike you, flatty!"

In truth, Sun Xin Yu's chest was nowhere close to being flat. In fact, no one in their right mind would even associate her to that word. Still, when compared to Han Ying Xue, a lady who was so well-endowed, even Sun Xin Yu would appear average.

"Sow! Brag all you want! Your fat lumps will sag down like a potato sack!" Sun Xin Yu shot back.

"Hmph! At least it's better than having a flat chest! Sigh! Look at them! Those sad little things. Is it just me, or is one of them caved in deeper than the other?" Han Ying Xue shrugged bemusedly.

Woah! #burn

When it comes to a battle of words, no one would really be on par with the demoness. Sun Xin Yu may not be able to hold her own in a battle of words, but in a fist fight, perhaps only Zhang Yang would be able to keep up.

Sensing impending disaster, Zhang Yang quickly popped out of toilet. Awkwardly, Zhang Yang scratched the back of his head and said, "What a beautiful night, isn't it ladies?"

"It's raining!" Sun Xin Yu bashfully replied.

Han Ying Xue pouted her lips and said, "Hey, flat chest. There's your man. Now, are you satisfied? You can leave now. We're about to start round two soon."

Sun Xin Yu snorted and proceeded to undress herself.

Zhang Yang jumped in horror. He was genuinely shocked at her

sudden, abrupt behavior and cried out, "What are you doing!?"

"If she can do it, I can do it better!" Sun Xin Yu glared at Han Ying Xue. "I'll never lose to her! I'll rather die than admit defeat!"

As expected of alcohol, they revealed the true minds of women.

"Please...Like yours can compete with mine!" Han Ying Xue boldly dropped the blanket she was holding up and pridefully squashed her naked body against Sun Xin Yu's bare flesh. The two of them continued to press their assets against each other until it became clear that there would be no winner. Puffing and huffing, one with arrogance, the other with persistence, neither side wanted to lose! After an intense glaring contest, both of them turned to Zhang Yang, making him jump in horror. He knew that he was going to be the victim but was hoping to get away from this...

Oh crap...

...

The night went by in a torrent of rage and violence, that when the sun's ray pierced through the curtain gaps, it was dissipated by the thick, heavy atmosphere of the steamy hot room.

Zhang Yang had both his hands wide open like a crucified man. They were both used as head pillows for the two vixens in his bed. He had just woken up and was lost in troubled thoughts,

wondering if it was morally right to accept two world class super models in his arms like this.

Both Sun and Han had always been at each other's throats and the presence of alcohol had blown all restraints off their hinges. The night before was extremely brutal, for Zhang Yang at least. Whenever he was done climbing the steep mountain of pacifying one creature, the other would jump in and demand for it.

In truth, it was every man's dream to hear a woman crying for it, but even the greatest men have limits! In Zhang Yang's case, both of them had taken turns, crying for more! At one point, no amount of Red Bull was enough to get him back to his feet.

Sun Xin Yu's long fair legs twitched a little. When she opened her eyes, her entire body sprung up so swiftly that Zhang Yang could have mistaken her for a spring board. Her eyes were wide open and she was beginning to realize her position. She hugged herself and trembled at the fact of what that had happened last night. Her face turned red, and she was at the verge of crying.

At first, his erect missile had been rearing to go once again, but when Zhang Yang saw Sun Xin Yu's broken expression, he felt remorse and tried to console her. "Erhm...Are you only trying to reserve yourself now? I mean, you were a little ahem, last night."

Sun Xin Yu shot a death glare at Zhang Yang and turned away to grabbed her clothing, but her legs gave out due to the pain between her thighs. She let out a painful groan and almost fell over. She quickly supported herself with her hands and made her way back to the bed.

Right then, Zhang Yang had a sudden urge to solve the conflict. Compared to the risks of being "swallowed whole" by the two vixens again, he was more concerned about the future of the two ladies. He wanted to take this chance to fix the conflict between the two of them and hoped that they would make peace with each other. Zhang Yang sat up, his eyes unintentionally raking over Sun Xin Yu's extremely slender and toned waist line. The woman had such a sleek waist and toned abs that had no traces of any excess fat! But even so, she could be as soft as a feather when she chose to, or tense up when she needed a burst of power to kick someone's butt. Last night, Zhang Yang had experienced the best of both worlds when Sun Xin Yu was riding on him like a female knight, carrying herself with such noble dignity, even as ecstasy dictated for her to gallop harder to the peak!

Zhang Yang smile lightly and said, "If you're hurt, it's best for you to stay put and rest."

"I'm an officer of the law. Such a wound is nothing!" said Sun Xin Yu coldly. Looks like she had returned to her usual behavior.

Zhang Yang chuckled at her stubbornness.

"Groans It's morning...why are you making so much noise..." Han Ying Xue stretched her body and sat up straight while leaning her back against the wooden plank at the head of the bed. The silky blanket slid off, revealing a great deal of her body. No matter how soft the blanket was, it could not properly plaster itself between Han Ying Xue's deep cleavage. Her chest was so extravagant that they could even hold up the blanket like a hanger!

Even though Sun Xin Yu's stubbornness was world class, she could not help but to admit that Han Ying Xue was truly a beauty. Her perfection could even entice the likes of women! Sun Xin Yu scoffed and said, "Sly fox, what do you want?"

Han Ying Xue slid her legs off the bed. But when she wanted to get off the bed, she lazily lay back down and tugged one of Zhang Yang's arms over, using it as a pillow. Still a little sleepy, she rubbed her face against Zhang Yang's warm bicep, which only made Sun Xin Yu angrier.

In a blurry voice, Han Ying Xue said, "Little Sun, you best treat your elder sister with respect!"

"What...? Elder sister?" Sun Xin Yu coldly snapped.

"Yes. Elder sister. I was Zhang Yang's before you. So, technically, I am the elder!" said Han Ying Xue as she buried herself into Zhang Yang's embrace like a lazy cat.

"Hmph. That's was just in bed. You're not really Zhang Yang's wife yet!" said Sun Xin Yu.

Wife...? Oh no...

"Haha! What a shame. Still, I'll always be one step ahead of you!"

Zhang Yang had mixed feelings about it. Firstly, he was quite satisfied with how things had turned out. At first, he was extremely worried that he would never make them accept each other. But, it seemed that they had already skipped the major confrontation and it was now the first wife argument. How efficient could they be...

Zhang Yang accidentally forgot his place and comforted both women by gently caressing them at their slender fair backs, slightly above their curvy buttocks. "There, there. No need to argue about this and that. We are all one happy family. Let's keep it that way!"

Perhaps Zhang Yang was honest to a fault. Failing to hide his greed only earned the ire of both women.



## Chapter 510: Class Balancing

---

Now that they have already reached this bridge, why not cross it? Perhaps, two little Zhang Yangs were already forming in each of their wombs.

Before allowing the women to leave the room, Zhang Yang held the door shut and got into a heated argument with the both of them. His authoritative aura was finally of some use. Eventually, both of them agreed to take a step back and acknowledge that each other would be with Zhang Yang from now on. However, there was one problem that he simply couldn't address, both of them wanted his hand in marriages, and the other woman to be the side-chick.

In truth, no normal woman would be willing to accept such an arrangement. However, both Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu were not exactly normal women. Both of them have had rather unorthodox upbringings. Hence, they had broader mindsets. Han Ying Xue had been brought up in a family of riches, and in her circle of society, having a lover or two was not out of the norm, especially for those with a mountain of fortune. On the other hand, despite being an officer of the law, Sun Xin Yu was born into a family of politicians, such a situation was normal for her as well.

Hence, with their own backgrounds, they would not need to worry much about seeking safe havens with Zhang Yang. Yet, they were still at each other's throats. They had known each other for more than a year now. Be it hostility or enmity, they have grown to know each other pretty well. As much as they hated it, they grudgingly agreed to share their lover.

Zhang Yang could only nod in silence. He patted his crotch and sigh heavily. In the near future, he would have to rely on the magnum to pacify the women. After a few sessions of pacification, he might be able to soften their feelings for each other and perhaps attain peace.

Sun Xin Yu was a tough girl. She had been through numerous years of vigorous training in order to become an officer. When she said that she could take it, she meant every word of it. Biting down the pain of losing her first night, she quickly got up and drove to work. On the other end, Han Ying Xue was a princess, a little twitch or two would have made her scream with pain and agony. Even going to the loo was enough to make her scream for Zhang Yang.

Now that Sun Xin Yu had left, Zhang Yang's car was just right for four. After they had their breakfast at the fancy hotel, Zhang Yang drove them all back to their villa.

For once in her lifetime, Han Ying Xue was finally thanking Zhang Yang. Her original sweet and glamorous complexion was made even prominent after the night. Both Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were so envious that they had to ask what kind of cosmetic products she was using to make herself so beautiful. They've no experience in any of the big bam boom, hence they would have never known that it was Zhang Yang who had spent a whole night grinding and drilling her up!

Back at home, everyone got comfortable and logged into the game.

When Zhang Yang went online, he was in the cave of Ares. He quickly opened up the patch notes and found out that the update was not exactly what he remembered it to be. Unexpectedly, it was a major nerf fest for all class.

{Berserker's Heal}, and {Sacred Heal} had been removed. In fact, the only job capable of healing HP was Priest and Sacred Knight. That or a class Inheritance, Warrior of Light. Luckily, the Lifestealing effects of Rune Stones had not been removed. Passive abilities like Zhang Yang's Titan Chest Plate that added a healing effect to his {Shield Wall} remained.

In other news, the healing capabilities of all healers had been nerfed greatly. Before the update, it would have taken only one healer to fully support on tank player. After the update, under the similar circumstances, it was no longer possible to do so.

The officials' explanation was:

1. As Tank type players obtain Inheritances, the strength of the tanks has increased dramatically. To maintain a status quo between player and the boss, the healer class has been nerfed accordingly.

2. Healer type players are too strong in the PvP Battle Arena. It is impossible for a battle to end if both sides have Healers in the party. Unless the healer has used up their MP, the battle can never end. Records showed that majority of battles has been dragged for over 2 hours.

The first explanation was completely unacceptable. The ability to fight a boss did not depend on the quality of the healer. However, Zhang Yang could understand the reasoning behind the second note. Since group battles would always include a healer, both sides would only need to have 1 DPS and 1 Healer, or 1 Tank and 1 Healer to win. The battle could be dragged for as long as needed. The winners would usually be determined by the amount of MP the healer has.

Zhang Yang opened the skill window and found that the skill {Berserker's Heal} was indeed removed. Furthermore, he had also noticed that the skill that came with Herbalism, {Blood of Life} had also been nerfed greatly. The cooldown had been extended from 2 minutes to 10 minutes!

After sighing for god knows how many times, Zhang Yang gave up trying to find a proper reason to justify the nerf fest. Even though many would protest the great change, other classes such as Hunter, Thief, and Spellcasters would cheer. That was due to the high winning rates of Tanks and Healers in PvP fights.

What cunning gaming developers! Whenever they nerfed any particular class, the other unaffected classes would rejoice. Even if they start taking fire in the forums, there would be "reinforcements," called keyboard warriors, to help in shifting the blame. The next trend would be to nerf the "unaffected" class to make it a proper class balancing arrangement.

Zhang Yang took out his Sword of Purging Devourer, aware that he should get himself a Two-Handed Weapon as soon as possible. It

would be a disgrace to his Inheritance if he does not do so! However, he had been hunting and farming for good Two-Handed Violet-Platinum weapons, but was never able to find any with a Level Requirement lower than 120. Until he reaches Level 120, they would remain in his inventory. Talk about a carrot hanging by the end of the stick!

While hunting for Two-Handed weapons, he had also hoped that the Sword of Purging Devourer would turn into a Two-Handed Sword after absorbing a Two-Handed weapon ability! If that happens to be the case, it would solve his problem, since the sword was a one of a kind weapon!

After getting over the sad thought of possibly having to part with it, Zhang Yang summoned Whitey Jr. and flew to Gunma Volcanic Island to obtain one of the materials in order to break the seal on the Sword of Purging Devourer. The "Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang".

"OH F\*\*\*\*\*!" Just then, the furious, heartbroken cries of Han Ying Xue blasted through the party channel. "My god! My healing powers have been reduced! At least 1/3 of my original power has been taken away! Awwww~"

Seems like the woman had finally read the change log.

Zhang Yang switched to the party chat and consoled her. "It's ok. You're F-cup, aren't you? Even if we take 1/3 of it away, you'd still have D cups! Fret not! It's still standing out!"

Han Ying Xue did not reply to him. Perhaps she was so angry or preoccupied that she had not noticed his chat.

That did not matter since her healing power would be greatly boosted when she obtains the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance! Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder how things would turn out for her when she activates the Transformation skill of the Milkmaid Deity...Would she actually gain cup size or...Fu fu fu...

Wei Yan Er stepped up to be the heroine of the day and helped Han Ying Xue searched for the remaining pieces of the Inheritance. Zhang Yang was delighted to have her take over his supposed role. After a short while, Whitey Jr. reached Gunma Volcanic Island.

There was a live volcano located at the center of the island. Blackened smoke rose up into the sky, expelling all the smoke and ash into the clouds, darkening the skyline. That unstable, volatile scene made the island seem extremely unsafe to live in, especially when the volcano looked like it would spew out hot molten lava at any time. At the bottom of the mountain was a small town. Since volcanic soil is extremely fertile for crops, the town was rather densely populated. There were many races living there like humans, Orcs, Elves, Dwarfs, Gnomes, and other races that Zhang Yang had never seen before. Other than the hostile Spectre and Demons, it would be safe to say that this town was filled with all races throughout the world.

Since the quest had revealed the location of the [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang] in his map, it would not take much time for Zhang Yang to search for it in the small town. There was a high chance of finding the [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang] through a quest given

by one of the NPCs in the town.

Zhang Yang flew downwards to the entrance of the town and unsummoned Whitey Jr. Only Zhang Yang and Felice walked into the town.

In the game, only quest-giving NPCs have special names unlike common guards, NPCs, or random pedestrians. Most of the occupants of the town had the generic-looking name "Citizen of Loyas Town". If you were to talk to any of those NPCs with the name tag, their lines would be blunt, repetitive, and non-beneficial to Zhang Yang's quest.

He then pulled one of the NPCs over and started a conversation to try his luck. However, all he got from them was the history of Loyas. As for news about [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang] there was nothing but shrugs and "I don't know".

Zhang Yang circled through the town and found one sad looking dwarf sitting by the end of the town with a face bleeding from a fresh wound.

[Dodothi Wildhammer] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 17,800

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,103 – 6,103

Note: World's most "honest and trustworthy" merchant.

Zhang Yang narrowed his eyebrows when he saw the double quotation mark.

Zhang Yang walked to the NPC and asked, "Dwarf, what happened to you?"

"Sigh..." Dodothi sighed heavily and raised his head to Zhang Yang. After glancing for a second, Dodothi lowered his head.

Zhang Yang voice out again, "Perhaps, I could be of service?"

"You?" Dodothi finally looked into Zhang Yang eyes and shook his head as if he was greatly disappointed. "Please keep your arrogance to yourself, human. There's no way for you to solve my problems."

"Hah. But what if I can?" Zhang Yang smirked.

Dodothi raised his right eyebrow, intrigued by Zhang Yang's bold question. "Alright then, you may try. It won't matter to me if you die anyway!"

Zhang Yang frowned. If it was not for a quest, Zhang Yang would



have already beheaded the NPC.

"Just when I had restocked some fine goods for sale, I was ambushed by a group of Jackalmen! They killed all my hired guards and took away all of my wares! Those damned Jackalmen! I had lost a great deal of my investment! It cost me a lot of gold! Argh!" Dodothi punched the wall beside him and cried out in pain.

...

How did this useless dwarf survive when all his guards were killed?

Dodothi turned to Zhang Yang while rubbing his wounded fist. "Human, if you can retrieve my goods, I shall reward you with 400—300—wait, 100 gold coins! Mm. Yes. 100 gold coins should be enough for you to hire 10 strong slaves!"

The red beard dwarf had glanced at Felice with disdain. He had assumed that Felice was extremely weak due to her slender and beautiful looks.

‘Ding! Dodothi Wildhammer has a quest for you: Retrieve the Goods. Will you accept it?’

It was not mentioned, but perhaps there was a chance that the [Magical Fruits of Ying and Yang] would be among the goods! Since there were no other leads for the item, Zhang Yang felt that it was better to take the quest and complete it.

## [Retrieving the Goods] (Difficulty Level: C)

Description: Dodothi's goods have been robbed by a bunch of daredevil Jackalmen! Warrior! Go and slay the devious Jackalmen and get back their stolen booty!

Completion: Retrieve Dodothi Wildhammer's Goods 0/1

(1): Apparently, there's a Chinese culture saying that after the first night in bed, a woman would become more beautiful, and after getting pregnant, she would be seen even prettier. In this case, it was not mentioned whether or not Han Ying Xue is pregnant.

# Chapter 511: The God of War Transformation

---

After accepting the quest, Zhang Yang summoned Whitey Jr. and flew along with Felice to the place, called Jackalmen's Ridge.

The ridge was too short to be called a ridge, to begin with. It was close to only 200 to 300 meters in length. Due to the thick, blackened clouds in the sky, Whitey Jr. was unable to get much altitude and only flew about 10 or more meters over the ground. At this altitude, the monsters in the ground were capable of attacking with their ranged attacks. Zhang Yang had no idea where the goods were and felt that kiting so many monsters would be a bad idea. Still, it was a good chance for Zhang Yang to grind some levels. Since they could not fly up high, Zhang Yang decided to walk on foot and hike the mountain with Felice.

"Ayyheeheehee! Fresh meat!" The laughter of a Jackalman could be heard not far. Zhang Yang traced the voice and saw the source of the annoying laughter. It was a male Jackalman, wearing only a pair of short red leather pants, equipped with a short yet sharp dagger. He was similar to the height of a grey wolf rearing up on its hind legs. The Jackalman was laughing hysterically, saliva dripping from his fangs.

[Hysterical Jackalman] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 17,800

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,103-6,103

Skills:

[Stab]: Plunges the blade into a target and deals 150% melee damage.

[Pebble Throw]: Hurls a rock towards the target, dealing 100% melee damage. Range: 3 – 30 meters.

Note: Legend has it that a certain Werewolf had once forced itself upon a female Jackal beast, creating a generation of humanoid, savage, and cruel Jackalmen, capable of sentient, conscious thinking.

Zhang Yang leaped forth and laid down the first attack, dealing more than 6,000 damage. His attacks had been boosted by the passive skill obtained from the God of War Inheritance.

Oh well, 6,000 damage was pretty decent. Since it was dealt by a One-Handed Weapon, the damage output from a Two-Handed Weapon would definitely be greater!

Felice had decided the situation did not require her to be in Dragonhawk form. She leaped over Zhang Yang's shoulders before

he had even reset his stance and cut the Jackalman down, killing him immediately with a single strike that dealt 17,567 damage.

Since he had time to spare, Zhang Yang summoned the Herb Foraging Familiar and allowed the little critter to forage the rare herbs around the area. Zhang Yang and Felice then moved forward, effortlessly killing their way through the normal tiered Jackalmen.

Not long after the first kill, the number of scattered monsters got lesser and lesser. Now all that remained were the small clumps of groups made up of 10 or so monsters.

Even though Zhang Yang had lost the OP healing skill - {Berserker's Heal}, Zhang Yang's passive damage reduction and absorption were still present. For Zhang Yang, 10 or more normal tiered Jackalmen were nothing but food for him.

After hiking halfway up to the peak, the monsters started getting stronger. The monsters around were all elite tiered.

[Jackalman Captain] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 1,200,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,532-10,352

Skills:

[Bloodlust Shriek]: Screams with a high-pitched cry, grants a 20% increase to attack power of all allies 10 meters around.

[Gust Slash]: Cleaves a target and deals 100% melee attack. Has a 40% chance to land 2 hits, 30% chance to land 3 hits, 20% chance to land 4 hits, and 10% chance to land 5 hits.

Zhang Yang was surprised to see the skill {Gush Slash} on a monster. It was a skill that a player may have by finding the corresponding skill book. Perhaps, there would be a chance for the Jackalman Captain to drop him one.

"Fresh meat?! Marvelous!" laughed the Jackalman Captain as he salivated and lunged at Zhang Yang with his blade.

Zhang Yang could not help but think that all Jackalman were embodiments of gluttony! Ever since his first Jackalman encounter, all of them had the same lolling tongues, the same puddle of saliva around their feet.

After a short round of exchanging blows, the monsters were all wiped out.

"Wow~ Big brother! You're so strong now!" Felice clapped her hands while admiring Zhang Yang with her wide, beautiful eyes.

Zhang Yang laughed and patted the little girl's head. He felt a little touched and happy to see her earnest reaction.

The duo proceeded on and had found more monsters. Perhaps, a little more than there should be. No wonder the monsters here were so hungry! Food was scarce and there were too many mouths to feed.

Since there were no guides or clues on where Dodothi's goods had been taken to, Zhang Yang had to travel around the entire mountain ridge. After roaming around, killing more and more Jackalmen, he arrived at a small encampment. The camp was filled with plenty of wooden sheds that were crudely built, only to provide roofs to sleep under. There were many sheds around, and if one shed was built for one Jackalman, there should be roughly 300 to 400 Jackalmen around.

The problem was that the Jackalmen here were all elite tier, and if he simply barges in, he would be swarmed up by them. It would be a fatal mistake, but if he had activated the God of War Transformation, it would be an easy kill. His Defense would be as high as 10,000, which could completely suppress the attack of the Jackalmen. He could then use {Crushing Strike} to mass kill all of them. With Felice's {Pulverizing Flame}, both of them would clear all the monsters within 2 hours which was how long the transformation would last.

Still, to use the transformation skill just to kill elite monsters

would be a waste. The 72 hours long cooldown skill was meant for super bosses! Without {Berserker's Heal}, Zhang Yang had lost a powerful recovery skill. He could no longer fight a boss alone and would have to rely on the God of War Transformation.

Zhang Yang had Felice transform into her Dragonhawk form to observe the area from the sky. After a while, she came back from her scouting and reported, "Big brother, there is a merchant's wagon to the west of here!"

"Oh yes! That's a good girl, Felice!" Zhang Yang praised her and patted her head again. Apparently, the little girl loved getting patted on the head. She blushed a little and smiled bashfully, averting her gaze.

Now that he had a clear direction to travel, Zhang Yang, Felice, the Whitey Jr flew towards the west of the encampment, killing their way effortlessly.

After close to 1 hour, Zhang Yang saw the silhouette of the wagon. The wagon was filled with goods, covered with a piece of huge canvas. The wagon was left abandoned there without any signs of horses nearby. Then again, it was expected to be, since the Jackalmen were salivating like deranged perverts looking at a naked woman. It would have been even odder if the horses were still left alive.

As Zhang Yang got closer to the wagon and spotted guards surrounding the wagon. Those sentries were far stronger than the regular elites. Other than the 12 elite monsters, there was one, larger figure that clearly was a Violet-Platinum tier boss. It was



twice as big and taller than the elite Jackalmen, which made it stand out from afar.

[Chiraha, King of Jackalmen] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 13,000,000

Defense: 3,540

Melee Attack: 18,739 – 20,739

Skills:

[Bloodlust Shriek]: Scream with a high-pitched cry, increases 30% attack power of all allies 10 meters around it.

[Gust Slash]: Cleaves a target and deals 100% melee attack. Has a 40% chance to land 2 hits, 30% chance to land 3 hits, 20% chance to land 4 hits, and 10% chance to land 5 hits.

The boss' skills were similar to that of an elite Jackalman. The only difference was the [Bloodlust Shriek] which had 10% bonus attack damage. Another troubling skill was the {Gust Slash}. There were no fixed attack hits in the first place. If the boss manages to trigger 5 hits, it would be an instant death, since each hit would deal over 20,000 damage!

Without {Berserker's Heal}, Zhang Yang has lost the path of the lone killer. Just as he thought of summoning Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, a sudden urge to use the God of War Transformation popped up. It would have been a waste to do so earlier on, as there were only elite monsters about. But now, he had a boss to kill. Might as well use it, just to try it out.

{God of War Transformation}!

Shush! Shush! Shing!

A radiant light started beaming out of Zhang Yang's body. The light then enveloped his character, and a pair of glowing wings burst out from his back. Upon a single mental command, Zhang Yang flapped his newfound wings and flew upwards.

Beneath the Rage gauge, another gauge appeared, with a similar MAXIMUM of 100 points. Since it would take 10 seconds to gain 1 point, the gauge was still empty at that moment.

"Mm. Felice! Let's start the bloodbath! Hah!" Zhang Yang bellowed with great power and charged at the boss. His maximum HP was at 3,780,000, allowing him to fight the boss head on!

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘-27,234!’

A short light beam struck the boss, dealing great damage. The boss cried in agony, forcing him to let out a deafening battle cry. All 13 Jackalmen let out a shriek, followed by the sounds of their sword flying out of their scabbards.

"Hmph!"

Zhang Yang grunted as he charged at the boss.

With an unstoppable force pushing him forward, Zhang Yang crashed into the boss, cleaving him for 26,321 damage.

A fresh stream of blood was released into the air as Zhang Yang gracefully planted a clean cleave.

"Food! Bad food! Bastard!" cried Chiraha as it retaliated with its gigantic cleaver.

{Block}!

‘-7,419’ {Block} reflect damage.

D\*mn. Even {Block’s} reflect damage was truly massive.

Zhang Yang laughed and raised his shield up, bashing the beast

on his head with {Shield Bash}.

Pang!

‘-33,393!’

"Fresh meat!"

The other 12 elite Jackalmen were all oblivious to Zhang Yang's current power level and charged towards him, still thinking that they could kill and eat him.

‘-0!’

‘-0!’

‘-0!’

‘-0!’

‘-4,218!’

Other than the boss, the other 12 monsters were not even able to deal 1 damage to him! With 11,600 Defense points, the elite monsters were completely powerless. Only the boss was able to scratch at Zhang Yang a little.

As expected of an S class Inheritance! It's powerful!

Zhang Yang chuckled and blasted out a {Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-56,921!’

‘-53,478!’

‘-112,198!’

...

A sea of 50,000 damage texts popped out, with a few 100,000 critical strike hits. That alone showed the extreme prowess of the God of War Transformation skill.

It was literally a bloodbath. Fresh blood turned the air around them misty red. Felice did not falter, she morphed into her Dragonhawk form and attack continuously. Every time the skill {Pulverizing Flame} was ready to be used, she would immediately use it, spreading a sea of flames that would burn everything to ash!

30 seconds into the fight, Zhang Yang finally gathered 3 God of War [EP](#) and used {God of War Crushing Strike}!

Zhang Yang shot down from the sky like a meteor and pummeled the earth with his fist. Instantly, a crater measuring over 100 meters wide in radius formed around him. Cracks spread out, and

the light started to burst out through the cracks. Any target within the skill range received 13,320 damage.

(1) EP – Energy Points.

# Chapter 512: Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang

---

In terms of individual damage, {Crushing Strike} was far weaker than {Horizontal Sweep}.

However, the attack range of the skill was ginormous! The skill's effective range was as large as 100 meters around Zhang Yang. Be it the boss, or his 12 little brothers, the attack had even managed to attack the monsters who were resting in the wooden sheds of the encampment! Rudely interrupted, the Jackalmen had rushed out of their wooden sheds to attack Zhang Yang.

In his transformed form, these new arrivals were like ants to him. All it would take is just a simple punch to kill them all.! He did not even need to move around, adjust angles, or lift a foot! With his now boosted armor, be it a hundred or a thousand, he would not lose a single drop of health!

Such an awesome feeling!

Back before he had the Inheritance, Zhang Yang could already fight a boss alone. But that was when he was weaker and had to remain extremely cautious of his every move, his HP, the boss' attack, his skills, and all of the tiny details that would endanger his life! If he had made any small mistakes, any at all, he could have been killed and waste hours of his time!

Right then, after obtaining the God of War Transformation skill, Zhang Yang was like a lion entering a farm, slaying and eating any poor life stock at will! The feeling of awesomeness was not

something you can get by any normal means! But, isn't that what playing games were for? Furthermore, Zhang Yang's God of War Transformation was like a hack program! A god mode hack that was obtained after hours of hard work! It was a special kind of pleasure that only Zhang Yang could feel!

At the corner of his AoE, a single Jackalman was still staggering about with only 20% HP, Zhang Yang targeted him and used a {Killing Cleave} while at full Rage points.

‘-327,865!’

Oh f\*ck.

Zhang Yang himself was astonished by his own attack. He quickly opened the battle log and found that the attack was a Lucky strike that had multiplied his normal attack by 3 times, dealing more than 300,000!

His Luck attribute points then were 22 points, granting him a 2.2% chance of dealing a Lucky strike. On average, it would take 50 attacks to deal one Lucky strike. That sort of proc rate was strong! After all, it could dish out 300% the original power. Furthermore, it could be stacked with a Critical strike, dealing 600% power!

When the day comes when he could finally equip [Agos, the Destroyer's Blade] that had a damage boost passive, the chance to proc the blade's active skill, coupled with the 600% Critical and Lucky strike damage boost would be earth shaking! However, the chances of that happening would be the same as winning the Power



Ball!

The battle continued on with Zhang Yang's test run of AoE attack skills. With the God of War transformation granting Zhang Yang a 500% damage boost, it would be more sensible for him to use AoE skills. It was a pity that only {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave} could trigger the copied effect of the Sword of Purging Devourer. Still, it was good enough for him to blast all the monsters to kingdom come.

If players had not paid attention to the monster's properties, they might have assumed that Zhang Yang was just equipping a pair of wings that could grant him flight, battling normal tiered monsters. That would be more feasible, for, under normal circumstances, there was no way any player would wipe out monsters like weeds in a field!

Just 5 minutes after Zhang Yang had started the fight, the boss was now left with 3% HP. Zhang Yang laid down his final sword swing and killed the boss.

"Fre—sh Me---at—" said the boss as a last parting speech, leaving the world with a smile on its face.

Perhaps, the boss had shared the same jubilant emotion that Zhang Yang had felt, that was way too much fun!

Right then, in the God of War transformation form, a Violet-Platinum boss was not even worth fighting anymore. For Zhang Yang to feel any bit of challenge, he would have to fight a Mythical

tier boss! Perhaps, only an Ethereal boss would give him a real sense of danger! Sadly, after using the God of War Transformation for only 6 minutes, he had already killed the boss. The rest of its active time was a complete waste!

Zhang Yang then gathered all the boss drops and headed to the wagon. With a single touch, Zhang Yang was shocked to find that he had taken the entire wagon into his inventory! Zhang Yang felt a little weirded out. What was his inventory made off? A super high-tech 5th-dimensional pocket that could fit in futuristic gadgets? Zhang Yang opened his quest log and found that he had completed the requirements for finishing the quest. All that was left to do was to return to Dodothi and obtain his reward.

But then again, now that he had already activated the God of War Transformation, he might as well use it to its full extent! Zhang Yang flapped his own wings and shot towards the sky. He then proceeded to circle around the mountain and killed every last Jackalman that he could find in the map and collected a large sum of experience points.

Even though he did gain a massive boost of attack power, it was merely 500%. It was not as if he could slay the heavens and conquer hell. After clearing roughly 20% of all the monsters in the Ridge, the God of War Transformation ended. The power left Zhang Yang with a bright glow, and Zhang Yang reverted back to his normal form. At the same time, Zhang Yang had gained a level and reached Level 104.

Zhang Yang rode Whitey Jr. back to Royas Town. Along the way, Zhang Yang took his time to examine the loot that he had obtained

from the boss. He had obtained a pair of Violet-Platinum Leather boots, a Yellow-Gold Cloth hat, and a pair of Yellow-Gold gauntlets. Besides that, the boss had also dropped a skill book. A skill book that Zhang Yang could really make use of – {Indiscriminate}!

{Indiscriminate} was a Berserker-only class skill that would turn all attacks into critical strikes for 10 seconds. Zhang Yang could not learn the skill before, but now he could, since the God of War Inheritance had given Zhang Yang access to both Berserker's and Guardian's skills, though the only way he could learn additional skills would be via skill books.

[Indiscriminate]: Upon activation, all attacks with your weapon will be a critical strike. Lasts for 10 seconds and can only be used on a target with HP less than 20%. Cooldown: 60 minutes.

The skill was perfect but there was one flaw, and that was the weapon requirement. Skills like {Thunder Strike} and {Dance of Heaven and Earth} would not be affected by {Indiscriminate}.

With haste, Whitey Jr. flew to Royas and landed close to the entrance. Zhang Yang walked the remaining distance and reached the sighing dwarf.

"Dwarf!" cried Zhang Yang as he stood in front of Dodothi.

"Tsk. I hate those who are taller than I am!" said Dodothi with dissatisfaction in his voice. "Call me Mr. Dodothi or Lord Dodothi from now on!"

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly and said, "Taller than you? In that case, I think you will be hating 90% of the world's population! Hmph. I have brought you the wagon that you lost."

Zhang Yang opened his inventory and tapped on the icon. Like magic, the wagon expanded and miraculously returned to its original size.

"Hahaha! Wonderful! Splendid! Woohoo! My money! My gold!" Dodothi jumped around happily as he patted and examines the goods beneath the canvas. After some time of celebrating all by himself, he coughed a little when he noticed that Zhang Yang was still there, patiently waiting. "Alright then. Warrior, you have proven yourself to be useful. Here, just as promised."

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Retrieving the Goods. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points!’

‘Ding! You have obtained a reward: 10 gold coins!’

10 gold coins? The NPC had agreed to pay Zhang Yang 100! As usual, all dwarves cannot be trusted with anything! They are all natural-born liars! But then again, the race was too bipolar in a way that if they were honest, they would be too gullible and could be cheated by a pig! If they are the lying types, they could lie to the Death God and have him grant them immortality!

"Hey! Dwarf! Didn't you promise 100 gold coins?!" cried Felice in a straightforward manner. She was not the kind that would tolerate swindlers. She held up her lance and pointed it at him, her intentions to kill as clear as day.

Dodothi was greatly surprised and cowered behind Zhang Yang. "Control your slave, Warrior!" He had left out the 100 gold coins topic.

Zhang Yang wanted to strangle the f\*cker, but instead, he drew a deep breath and consoled Felice by patting her head. Only then, did she lower her lance.

"Warrior, how about another job?" asked Dodothi vehemently.

Zhang Yang sighed. "Sure, let's hear it!"

"In the mountainous regions, there is a mythical item known as the Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang. Fortunately, I have the location of it! Unfortunately, it's guarded by a bloody monkey! Warrior, if you can help me get the fruit from him, I will give you 100 gold coins!"

'Ding! Dodothi Wildhammer has a quest for you: The Search for the Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang. Will you accept it?"

Accept! But not for the sake of Dodothi of course! When Zhang Yang acquires the fruit, he would just run off to Margery to unseal

the sword! There was no good reason for him to return to Dodothi!

When Zhang Yang nodded his head, the dwarf sensed that something was off and quickly added, "Hey, don't be having any funny ideas there, warrior! The Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang is worthless to anyone. Even if you try to sell it off, it would only be worth less than a copper! I simply want to have it added to own personal collection!"

Haha! What a sucky liar!

Zhang Yang flew off into the sky without any further conversation. Based on the quest's description, the [Magic Fruit of Ying and Yang] should be at the western area of the ridge. There should be a waterfall there and a powerful boss. Based on what Dodothi had told him, it should be the Monkey King.

With speed matching that of an airplane, Whitey Jr. reached the western side of the ridge and found a large waterfall. There, Zhang Yang rode Whitey Jr. and searched thoroughly for anything that resembled the fruit. However, since he had no idea on what the fruit might look like, he decided to search for the boss instead. As long as he finds the boss, he should be able to find the fruit, since it should be closer to where the boss was.

Zhang Yang descended down further, and by the time he was close to the bottom, he found the boss. It was a giant monkey with a full coat of golden fur. It was as tall as two men and was pacing around on a flat plane of rock. He had a pair of golden, fiery eyes and was glaring at anything that moved. He had a large pole in his hands that he swung about absentmindedly. Perhaps, if he did not

possess a pair of large wings behind his back, he could have posed as the great Chinese saint, Sun Wu Kong!

[Winged Monkey King Chakra] (Ethereal, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 37,500,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 30,157 – 34,157

Skills:

[Cloud Piercer]: Strikes the head of a target for 150% melee physical damage, stunning the target for 5 seconds.

[Radiant Eyes of the Clairvoyant]: Spots the weak points of the target and strikes it with the might of the earth. Deals 300% melee physical damage. Attack cannot be dodged or blocked. Casting time: 2 seconds.

[Thunder Summoning Jutsu]: Summons a nimbus cloud that will strike the target and anyone else 10 meters around the initial target for 40,000 Natural damage.

Special: Capable of flight.

With such a strong weapon attack, Zhang Yang feared that he might not be able to survive without the help of the God of War Transformation. Even then, he was without the {Berserker's Heal}. With {Shield Wall} and {Last Vigor}, he might. But the two skills were not as powerful as {Berserker's Heal}. {Shield Wall} had 2.5 minutes of cooldown, while {Last Vigor} had 5 minutes. It was not possible for him to cycle through the skills.

As a conclusion, it was impossible for Zhang Yang to fight him alone. He had to call Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er to help out.

"AIYAYA! Noob tank! Help us! Use the party order now, quick!"

"DUMMY! THERE'S SOMEONE TRYING TO KILL US! HURRY UP AND SUMMON US!"

Just when Zhang Yang had taken out the [Party Summon Order], both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were crying out hysterically for his help. Without wasting another second, Zhang Yang activated the order and the two of them were teleported to his side. They had only less than 30% HP left.

Worriedly, Zhang Yang frowned. "What's going on?"

"There's a party searching for the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragments. They tracked us down and wanted to kill us. There were six of them! We had to call for your help!" said Han Ying Xue,



with a shocked expression on her face

Zhang Yang did not understand why and how that could have happened. He was sure that no one else had managed to get hold of the S class Inheritance in his previous lifetime.

But...then again...it might be...

Since the name Milkmaid Deity was a little weird for an S class inheritance, the players who had obtained the inheritance might have refused to share any information about the inheritance. However, based on the timing, this would be around the same time when the first S class Inheritance surfaced in his previous life!

"Who are they?"

"I think they were all one big family or friends or some sort. All of them had the name "Hell" in their name tags. Hell's Knight, Hell's Warrior, Hell's Hunter... all in all, there were 6 classes in total!" said Han Ying Xue as she shrugged. "All of them were well-equipped and two of them had Battle Companions!"

Zhang Yang chuckled. "If there were only 6 of them, you should have put on the Lover's Charm and summoned me there! Since they had the S class Inheritance Fragment, we could have killed them and obtained the fragments! It's a Unique item that only one player could acquire!"

Han Ying Xue calmed down and smiled seductively. "Mm. Mm.

We were already being beaten around like dogs! We were almost killed there! How could I have thought of a counterattack? That's said, it was 6 v 3! I don't want to lose the 5th Fragment!"

Zhang Yang then thought over it for a while and said, "Well then, in that case, I want you to stop searching for the rest of the Fragments. It does not matter if you're missing a piece or five pieces. We could wait until they hunt for all the pieces and come for you! By then, we will be the ones killing them! And taking their loot! Like killing a boss! Haha!"

"Woah~~ Noobie tank! You're such a scoundrel! I can't say I don't like the sound of that!" Wei Yan Er laughed manically.

# Chapter 513: Winged Monkey King Chakra

---

"Enough with that. I intended to call you here for a boss anyway!" said Zhang Yang as he pointed at the direction of the golden monkey. "That's him!".

"Eh!? That's... That's a Mythical tier boss!" the two females gasped.

After the Chaos Realm threshold, many of bosses that they had encountered were mostly Violet-Platinum. The only Mythical boss ever encountered was the black dragon that Zhang Yang had killed. None of the ladies had ever seen any Mythical tier boss.

"Dummy...Can you really hold up against that?" said Han Ying Xue with a bit of concern.

There was a reason behind her sudden doubt. Usually, Han Ying Xue would never have doubted Zhang Yang's capability, even when only the two of them were present. The reason was that Han Ying Xue's healing powers were nerfed by at least 1/3. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had already lost the super-OP healing skill {Berserker's Heal}. Also, none of them had upgraded their equipment. There's little to no hope of defeating this powerful boss with just the three of them.

Zhang Yang chuckled and gave Han Ying Xue an evil grin, saying, "You should know better! It's not like you haven't seen my power, it even has a copious amount of agility and endurance thrown into the mix."

Han Ying Xue was a naïve woman, though not to the level of the little brat. However, she knew very well what he was talking about, having tasted the brutal strength of his shaft. Plus, she was the kind of beauty that men would die for, the kind of woman would never be ashamed of public displays of affection. When she made sure that Zhang Yang was looking, she licked her lips seductively and said, "Honey~ I want more!"

Zhang Yang coughed violently when he heard that. Last night, he was nearly driven to a point of no return by the women, one was drunk, and the other was trying to make a statement. After the "merry" night, Zhang Yang was traumatized. Every time he heard the word, "one more time", or "Again!" he would twitch.

"Sis...Noobie tank...What are you guys chattering about!?" groaned the little girl as she was bored and annoyed at losing in the scissor, paper, stone game with Felice. While Felice was getting more cheerful with each passing moment, the little girl was left sulking.

"It's nothing. Kids shouldn't meddle with the affairs of adults!" Zhang Yang snapped. Zhang Yang had lost his composure for a minute there and had to regather himself for a while before getting ready for the boss.

"Let's go. Don't stay too close to me. Or each other, for that matter. The cloud summoning skill is an AoE. Remember to get away from me when he uses the skill. Especially you! Stupid little girl!"

"Tsk! Please. You reek of sweat! I won't get near you even if you ask me to!" Wei Yan Er scoffed.

Felice, on the other hand, was the epitome of what you could call as an innocent little girl. She quickly interrupted the conversation and defended Zhang Yang, "Big brother does not reek of sweat! You cannot insult big brother so callously!"

Zhang Yang laughed and patted Felice's head. "Keep calm, little Felice. The little girl is being a little girl. She has yet to be a mature woman. Leave the little rascal be."

"Okay!" Felice blushed.

"KYAAAA!" Wei Yan Er was furious. Just before she was about to vent her anger on Zhang Yang, he had left to start the fight while atop Whitey Jr.'s back. The red hot chilli pepper then ran towards the boss and unleashed her anger there instead.

"Ki! Ki! Wu Wu! Ak Ak!"

When the large monkey noticed Zhang Yang approaching him, he brandished his long pole. With one decisive swing into the air, he entered his battle stance, the sheer momentum of which had created a distortion in the air around them and blew off many dried leaves off their branches.

"KI!" The monkey jumped towards Zhang Yang, attempting to smash him on the head. Naturally, Zhang Yang's first action was to

block the attack. Both of them were midair, hence, when the monkey's pole struck Zhang Yang's metal shield, the power had smashed Zhang Yang and the flying serpent down from the sky like a meteor, creating a crater after they landed on the ground.

"Owphh!" Zhang Yang coughed out a mouthful of blood and spit them away. Bosses would never intentionally use Supporting Attacks, the sheer force of the blow had coincidentally resulted in a Supporting Attack. That was how the discovery of Supporting Attack was stumbled upon in the first place. There was once when a player found himself being beaten to a pulp by the boss, but did not receive additional HP damage. After the player tried it out himself and further developed the attacks, thus granting fame as the founder of Supporting Attacks.

Zhang Yang got up to his feet and picked up his fallen shield and sword. He is a tank. No matter what the situation or scenario is, he would have to be quick. Especially when he has to be the first person on the aggro list! If he failed to do so, the little girl would die at the hands of the boss. The little girl had taken his solid, consistent performance for granted. She would always rush into fights without waiting for Zhang Yang. Then again, Zhang Yang had never failed to draw the boss' attention.

‘-1,439!’

Zhang Yang landed a {Cripple Defense} before anything else. This was especially important since the boss had 5,200 Defense. If he had not, Wei Yan Er attacks would only cause less than 50% of her original attack despite wielding a Two-Handed Axe. Unlike others, Wei Yan Er was particularly good at syncing with Zhang Yang at

this particular stage of the battle. Zhang Yang would land the first {Cripple Defense} while she would land the next one. After a few well-timed cycle when the two of them took turns swinging, five layers of {Cripple Defense} would be applied to the boss in less than 2 to 3 seconds. Right then, the boss would be left with 2,600 Defense. For Zhang Yang, the boss was practically naked, since he had his {Eagle Eye}.

Zhang Yang landed a clean hit and dealt 6,682 damage. Both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er blinked in surprise at that. No matter how many times they've heard of the prowess of the God of War Inheritance, this was the first time they've seen it firsthand.

Wei Yan Er cried out, "Woah! Noob tank! I can only deal around 8,000 damage per hit! Don't think that I'll stop calling you a noob tank!"

Zhang Yang laughed, "Call me anything you want. I had but only a 50% increase in attack via a passive skill. The one you should be paying attention to is Felice. Take a look."

Felice was not paying attention to their conversation and was busy conjuring {Fire Missiles} to blast the boss. Her attacks would always be above 20,000 damage as long as the target has no Fire resistance.

The poor Wei Yan Er was greatly saddened when she had noticed that Felice's attacks were so many times stronger than hers. In the party, Wei Yan Er's position was shaky, being first, second, and the third place. When compared to individual strikes, Wei Yan Er's damage should be the highest, since she was wielding a Two-

Handed Axe. She had always taken pride in having the strongest hits per strike. She immediately got jealous when she saw that Felice's attack could reach up to 20,000 damage with each fire blast.

"Grr! Now I see. You can be so strong if you change sexes! Noob tank! I want an Inheritance too! I want to change too!"

Zhang Yang could not help but frown.

"Right now, I have two Inheritance Fragments with me. There's a B class Vampire Inheritance and a random one, called the Monk of Flame."

Wei Yan Er sulked. "Stingy! You're being stingy! How could you hand me B class Inheritances! I'm your little sister-in-law! I've heard people saying that a man owns half of his sister-in-law! That means I am half your woman! Hah! How could you be stingy with your own woman! If you can't get me an S class, get me an A class!"

Zhang Yang cringed so hard that he became distracted from the fight. Luckily, Felice was still blasting on and on so, that the boss could not shift its target to Han Ying Xue or Wei Yan Er. While Zhang Yang was thinking hard on how to fix Wei Yan Er's deranged thinking, Han Ying Xue was already rolling on the floor, laughing her \*ss off. Only Wei Yan Er cocked her head, confused at her cousin's mad laughter. Zhang Yang gave up and decided to leave it at that.

"Focus on the fight, please!" said Zhang Yang.



Just when Zhang Yang turned back to the boss, the pole struck his head hard, glowing with a golden light. Zhang Yang immediately knew that the attack was a skill.

{Cloud Piercer}!

‘-25,056!’

Zhang Yang would have instantaneously raised his shield to block the attack, but his skill was on cooldown. It would be useless to use the shield to block an attack without {Block} in effect. However, it could still be used to protect oneself from being smashed till one’s head bleeds. That, or to prevent the attack from destroying a player’s throat, which would prevent the player from consuming any potions!

Han Ying Xue quickly cast a series of healing skills on Zhang Yang and patted her chest in relief. "Hmph...Silly Yu, lucky for you that you have the extra 20% damage reduction skill or else I could have really lost you there!"

Zhang Yang nodded in agreement. While healers were being nerf greatly, the boss’ prowess had been left untouched. Naturally, the healers would be in tight spot. If Zhang Yang had not obtained the God of War as his Inheritance, he would not have gained the 20% additional damage reduction passive which would give Han Ying Xue serious trouble. It would be useless even if she had unlimited

MP, since the HP lost does not match the HP gain.

Technically, if he had not obtained the Inheritance in the first place, the update would have never happened! {Berserker's Heal}, and other healing skills would not have been nerfed. Still, it was only a matter of time before other players obtain any other form of Inheritances.

The monkey king's attack was as ferocious as a storm and as fast as lighting. Each swing of his metal pole would send blades of wind out that would slice through trees, raising up a cloud of dust and booms and flying birds in the nearby surroundings. Even the waterfall seemed to defy gravity at that moment!

"Noob tank. Don't you have the skill {Beast Taming}? Try and catch this boss as a pet! Haha! Or perhaps even a disciple! You can name him Sun and you would be Tang the monk! Mm. Whitey Jr could be Bailong! Haha!" said Wei Yan Er. It's truly a mystery to how the little girl thinks. She could just cough out random gibberish during an intense fight!

Still, Zhang Yang was amused. "If I were to be Tang the monk, both of you could be Zhu Bajie and Sha Wujing! Fu fu! Little girl, you can be Zhu Bajie then!"

"That's awesome!" cried the little girl happily. With a straight face, she said, "I've always wanted to sleep and eat all the long! A lazy life is what I want!"

Zhang Yang frowned at the unexpected answer. "Isn't that your

current lifestyle?"

Wei Yan Er straightened up suddenly and fell silent, her face flushed with vermillion the color of carnal shame!

Zhang Yang smirked, "Then again, if I were to become a Tang the monk, someone would be greatly aggravated."

"Tsk!" Han Ying Xue self-consciously replied, "Don't think that a woman needs a man to do it."

"Ou?" the monkey king noticed that the three players were not being serious with the fight and got irritated. With a loud cry, his golden eyes flared up with flames and blasted two light beams at Zhang Yang.

The light rays made contact with Zhang Yang but did not deal any damage. On the other hand, there was a progress bar appearing on top of the boss' character. 2 seconds was all it would take to complete his skill.

It was the {Radiant Eyes of the Clairvoyant}! A 300% damage skill!

Zhang Yang rushed to it and dealt {Frost Strike}.

‘-13,289!’

‘Resist!’

The boss had taken damage, but had resisted the freeze effect! The progress bar was still filling up!

Felice then shot down to the ground and morphed back to her human form. She thrust out her lance and used {Dragon Spear Barrage}!

‘-24,586!’

Unfortunately, the {Dragon's Spear Barrage} stunning rate was too low, and even if the skill had proc-ed, the boss would still have resisted it. After all, their target was an Mythical tier boss! The strongest boss that they had ever fought in the map!

With no options left on the table, Zhang Yang braced himself to take the hit.

Noticing the situation, Han Ying Xue quickly cast {Holy Shield} on Zhang Yang. The skill could not heal, hence, it had not been nerfed. It could absorb damage equivalent to 200% of the caster's Magic Attack. Han Ying Xue's magic attack at that moment was 6,687, so the shield could absorb 13,000 damage!

However, even though the skill effect was not nerfed, the cooldown had been made longer by 60 seconds. It was still a form of degradation!

Zhang Yang still had over 70,000 HP. He then decided not to activate {Shield Wall}. Since he had {Holy Shield} in effect, the incoming attack would have only caused him to lose most, but not all of his HP. It was more than enough.

# Chapter 514: Battle Against the Winged Monkey

---

‘-40512!’

The Winged Monkey had completed the chanting for the {Radiant Eyes of the Clairvoyant}! The quarterstaff of the Winged Monkey King swung towards the chest of Zhang Yang at lightning speed, as it struck him in the middle of his chest, causing some damage. If it wasn't for the {Holy Shield} that had been cast him earlier on, this strike would have inflicted Zhang Yang with more than 50,000 damage!

That was not all. The impact of this swing was so freaking powerful that it sent Zhang Yang flying, along with Whitey Jr. who was beneath him, tens of meters back!

Zhang Yang could taste his own blood in his throat as a small amount of blood was forced out from his mouth! If he had hurriedly attempted to gulp down a [Healing Potion] at that moment, he would have spat the [Healing Potion] out from his mouth, together with his blood. That would have wasted one bottle of [Healing Potion] and one chance for taking a [Potion]!

"Ga Ga!" the Winged Monkey King was pleased with itself. It let out a series of bawls and squalls before it began to launch its attacks again. With the wings on its back opened wide, the Winged Monkey King launched itself through the air, straight at Zhang Yang! The boss raised its metallic quarterstaff and attempted to crack Zhang Yang's skull open!

What the hell!

Zhang Yang quickly raised his shield to block that attack! The impact was really heavy, and Zhang Yang was once again sent flying!

Wei Yan Er laughed heartlessly when she saw Zhang Yang's pathetic floundering. She furrowed her alluring eyebrows and said, "Hey, wild monkey! Where did you get a stick like that?"

Zhang Yang also frowned as he said, "Yeah, why didn't you ask the boss why is it not wearing any pants and showing off those red buttocks? Why didn't you ask the boss about the secret treasures it has hidden in the area?"

"Oh right! Where does the monster keep the money? Well, if we know the whereabouts of the money, we can just take the money and run, without having to fight it! Just take, and go!" the little brat had completely failed to detect Zhang Yang's sarcasm.

Zhang Yang could not help but to frown again as he lost his smile. He thought about asking Han Ying Xue to help him out. However, that witch is no better than the little brat. The two of them only had eyes for money!

As expected, birds of a feather flock together!

"Ji! Ji!" the Winged Monkey raised a hand and made a waving

gesture. Instantly, a thundercloud appeared right on top of Wei Yan Er's head, and lightning was seen surging within the thundercloud! Without any warning, a blinding thunderbolt struck down upon Wei Yan Er, splat on the top of her head.

"Argh ---" Wei Yan Er let out a miserable scream as she took a damage of 40,000 points. She was now a humongous, walking piece of coal. Only her shiny eyes remained distinguishable!

That was the super Skill - {Thunder Summoning Jutsu} of the boss, the skill that strikes the target and all enemies within 10 meters of the target's surrounding with 40,000 Nature Damage! Fortunately for them, there were only three of them, and the size of the boss is massive. Even though Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er are both Melee Class players, but with one at the front of the boss while the other at the rear of the boss, the two of them could still manage to pull a 10-meter gap between themselves.

The little brat also has a Violet-Platinum [Flying Mount]. With her [Winged Tiger] and the effect of {Vitality Aura} that Zhang Yang provided, she had more than 130,000 HP. Her amount of HP was definitely comparable to Zhang Yang's total HP atop his Yellow-Gold [Flying Mount]! Therefore, although a total of 40,000 Nature Damage may seem high, it is still far away from being capable of killing off the little brat in one hit.

After engaging the boss for a little while, Zhang Yang suddenly felt that there was something missing. So he quickly asked, "Wait a minute... Witchy Snow, where is your Battle Companion?"

"Ah!" Han Ying Xue seemed to just realize it as well, then she said,



"That whiner tried to play dead when we were battling the hellish family, I've totally forgotten about him!"

She quickly summoned Messick out with a wave of her hand.

The moment that whiner appeared, he flashed her what he considered to be a charming smile, and stood right before Han Ying Xue. Then he began to speak, "My queen, there's no need to worry. Any enemy who intends to hurt you would have to step over my dead body!"

"You better get lost, then! Countless people have already stepped over your 'dead body'! So much for you protecting me!" Han Ying Xue commanded her [Red Gold Crab] through her mind and the [Red Gold Crab] extended one of its legs out and kicked Messick right into the battlefield.

What an unreliable tank! He would be the last to enter the battle and the first to leave. His {Play Dead} is so much more realistic than the {Fake Death} of the Hunters! Well, Zhang Yang had been there to witness its realism himself! Even he was tricked by the convincing appearance of his 'death'!

Although the party only had 3 players in it, with the support from their [Mounts] and Battle Companions, their total damage output was extremely powerful. Their DPS had already exceeded 40,000 damage! Even though the boss had an HP bar that comes near to a total of 40,000,000 HP, it would only take Zhang Yang and his party about 1,000 seconds to empty the entire HP bar out. 40,000,000 HP isn't that much, in the grand scale of things.

However, the Winged Monkey King is a Mythical Tier boss after all. Even though Zhang Yang had his Passive Damage Immunity increased by 20%, he was still having a tough time tanking against the boss! {Shield Wall}, {Last Vigor}, {Blood of Life}, [Potions]! He activated every single skill and consumed the [Potions] that were at his disposal! Zhang Yang did not even consider being thrifty about it! However, after he activated his {Rearm} once, he only managed to tank against the boss for another 10 minutes. Han Ying Xue could not keep up with the rate that Zhang Yang was losing his HP anymore!

After all, the Healer Class was hugely underpowered at the moment, and the equipment of Zhang Yang and his party were all one Tier lower than the Mythical Tier boss!

10 minutes later, the duration of the {God of War's Shield} was over. The Passive Damage Immunity of Zhang Yang was dropped by 20%, making the situation even worse for him!

Zhang Yang quickly asked for help, "Felice! Relief me for a little while!"

"Alright, big brother!" Felice was not hesitant and lazy like that whiner Messick. She immediately descended to the ground and transformed into her Humanoid Form, charging up to the boss. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang waited for the right timing before he activated his {Shadow of the Void} and disengaged himself from the battle with the boss. Then, he went aside and used his [Bandages] to recover his HP as soon as he was able to.

On the other hand, Felice activated her {Absolute Defense} as she began to tank against the boss, undaunted by its heavy blows.

Another 10 minutes passed, and the battle raged on. Although the attack of Zhang Yang was now a lot higher, it was simply not possible for him to regain the aggro within a mere 2-minutes! Even if he keeps Felice back to his Battle Companion Slot, Wei Yan Er would become the primary target of the boss. Zhang Yang would only be able to stay ahead of Han Ying Xue at most.

However, it is not impossible to take down the boss within such a short amount of time either. Zhang Yang has the {Glare of the Death God}. He could do some massive damage to the boss!

Time to slaughter!

With {Absolute Defense} activated, Felice did not require any healing attention at all. Han Ying Xue only had to give her a {Regeneration} to maintain Felice's HP bar at full state. Han Ying Xue could not help but to feel relieved and happy, "Silly Yu, when can you become as strong as Felice? Things will become easier for me!"

Zhang Yang could not help but to smile like a pervert as he said, "Am I not 'strong' enough for you?"

Han Ying Xue looked at Zhang Yang with a tender passion in her eyes as she suddenly thought of something, turning slightly red. She was most likely reliving the events of last night where she was 'strongly' subdued by Zhang Yang.

When the duration of {Absolute Defense} that Felice activated was left with 10 seconds remaining, the HP bar of the boss was finally reduced down to 20%!

Zhang Yang possessed the ‘Slaughtering’ Skill at the moment. So, he activated his {Indiscriminate} before he started throwing his assaults onto the boss aggressively. Within the next 10 seconds, every single hit from his weapon became a Critical Attack!

{Ragelust Slaughter}!

‘-52,892!’

A high value of number appeared right above its head!

Wei Yan Er could not stand being a bystander, and neither was she willing to lose to Zhang Yang. She also activated her {Indiscriminate}, followed by her {Ragelust Slaughter}!

‘-71,889!’

Because the little brat was using a two-handed weapon, even Zhang Yang’s 50% additional increase in his attack was unable to make up for it! Especially when her attacks ignore Defense, she was unleashing the full potential of her two-handed weapon, in terms

of Attack!

Furthermore, the equipment that Zhang Yang had on him was geared for Defense, and all the [Gemstones] that he had placed into the sockets were [Vitality Gemstones]. So, his Strength was still far behind the Strength of Wei Yan Er. Other than that, the equipment set that boosted DpS also had an additional increase in their Damage Effect, based by percentages. That made the difference between Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er even larger!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-27,886!’

{Destructive Smash}!

‘-26,880!’

Because the Attack power of the boss was unimaginably high, Zhang Yang need not have to worry about having not enough Rage Points at his disposal. He could use his skills as much as he wanted to!

{Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}! {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had already gulped down their [Power Potions] in order to increase their damage output to the maximum!

In just a brief 10 seconds, the HP bar of the boss had dropped rapidly like an avalanche!

The {Absolute Defense} ended!

Felice did not transform into the Dragonhawk Form as she maintained in her Humanoid Form to tank against the boss head on. Although her Defense had reached up to 4,480, the Defense wasn't really doing her any justice when she had to face the 30,000 normal damage of the boss. Each attack from the boss damaged Felice by about 25,000 points! Even Han Ying Xue was terrified by the amount of HP that she needed to heal back!

{Frost Strike}!

‘-12,333!’

After the boss took damage from the strike, the Winged Monkey King was suddenly frozen solid, as it entered a 10-second period of complete immobility!

"Finally! Something really great has happened!" Han Ying Xue finally found a moment to breathe properly. She took advantage of the moment and healed Felice up as much as she could, while Felice used a [Bandage] to heal herself up as well. The priority of this little lady at the moment was not to increase damage output, but to stay alive!

"Ji! Ji ji ---" The Winged Monkey King broke out of the frost after 10 seconds. Then, the boss began to charge at Felice with its quarterstaff as it launched its assaults on her aggressively.

Even though Felice had about 130,000 HP, she still could not handle the unimaginably powerful Attack of the boss! Her HP was reducing rapidly from 100,000 to 80,000, then from 80,000 to 50,000... No matter how much Han Ying Xue tried to heal her up, she could not maintain the HP level of Felice, at all!

However, they managed to hold on for another 1 minute. The HP bar of the Winged Monkey King was reduced down to 12%!

{Glare of the Death God}!

A shroud of dark mist began to form into a dark skull, right above the head of the boss. The skull tore open its mouth wide as it began to reveal a terrifying and wretched smile! The mouth was so dark, that it looked like a black hole!

‘-375,000!’

Zhang Yang swung his sword across the body of the boss and triggered the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}! That took 1% of the boss's HP bar right off!

This Skill would affect stronger enemies better. The stronger the monsters are, the better the special effects of the Skill. This amount of damage was not just a merely 3,700, or even 37,000. It

was a total of 370,000 damage that we are talking about here!

However, although the damage that this Skill could cause on the boss is terrifying, it did nothing to help Zhang Yang regain his aggro. The amount of the boss's aggro on Zhang Yang only increased slightly. Well, after giving it some thoughts, it made sense as well. If anyone got so lucky that every single hit this person lands on the boss triggers the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}, surely the person would not be able to handle the boss after becoming the primary target of the boss, even if the person is a powerful Tanker!

‘-375,000!’

‘-375,000!’

...

In just mere 6 seconds, the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} was already triggered for 10 times, and the dark skull right above the boss's head disappeared right after the 10th occurrence. Now, the boss was left only with 2% HP!

"We can do this! Slay the boss!"



1%!

0%!

"Rawgh---" The Winged Monkey King let out a miserably scream right before it died. The massive body of the boss slammed down onto the ground. The metallic quarterstaff fell out of the hands of the boss and clanged onto the solid rock by its side. The clanging discharged some sparks across the surroundings.

This is actually the first Mythical boss that Zhang Yang and his party had slain with their own hands! At that moment, the three of them cheered together.

# Chapter 515: Heaven Shaker

---

Zhang Yang scouted around the [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang], while Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er went up to the loot dropped from the boss, full of joy and expectations.

The Winged Monkey King dropped four pieces of equipment in total. One was a pitch black, huge, metallic quarterstaff. One end of it was heavier than the other, ending in a huge, non-reflective crown, so it should work as a bludgeoning weapon, something like a maul, or a hammer. The second equipment was a pair of greaves that was also purely black in color, looking rather bulky. The third one was a fine piece of jewelry, an alluring, dark blue necklace that sparkled brilliantly, making itself look pricey. Last but not least, was an exquisite long gown in the color of creamy white.

Zhang Yang was still searching around for his fruit. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er picked up the gown and put it by herself, trying to see if it fit her, and she asked, "Snow, do I look pretty in this?"

"Not at all!" Han Ying Xue replied, so certain of herself, without any pause.

Zhang Yang overheard them and frowned in frustration. He turned his head back to them and snapped, "Oh please! You should judge it by its attributes!"

[Winged Phoenix Gown] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16

Vitality: +857

Intelligence: +548

Spirit: +242

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 1,100 points.

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 2%.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Well, the equipment is fine, but it could only be worn after reaching Level 120. By then, they would definitely be loaded with Mythical Tier equipment already. This gown was not likely to be used in the future. However, Han Ying Xue took the gown, regardless of that. If they really are unfortunate enough not to have acquired any Mythical Tier Cloth Armor by then, at least she could still equip this gown.

The little brat picked up the heavy pair of greaves and laughed, "I have a feeling that this is mine! It should be!"

[Mysterious Metallic Greaves] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +1,778

Strength: +841

Agility: +363

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 3,500 points.

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 3.5%

Equip: Absorbs 358 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: Decreases 20 levels of Required Level to equip.

The attributes of this pair of greaves are truly something. The three of them were stunned for a moment!

"Noob tank, is this a Defensive type armor, or an Offensive type armor, then?" Wei Yan Er blinked her eyes and she asked, "We

can't call this a defensive armor, what's with the damage increase attributes? And if we say that this is an Offensive type, it actually has a Damage Absorption attribute! What a confusing armor this is!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Let's just say that we have been fortunate enough to have picked up an awesome piece of armor! This piece of armor enhances both DPS and Defense! It most probably would only drop on the first kill of a boss! So, the next time when others slay this boss again, the equipment that drops might only have DPS or Defense, one way or another!"

"Wow! There's actually such a good benefit for getting the first kill of a boss?" Wei Yan Er gave it some thought, then she threw the greaves over to Zhang Yang, "Alright, since you have not gotten yourself any offensive type armors, you should just keep it. I'll only want purely offensive armor!"

Well, what a pleasant surprise. This little brat is actually quite generous for once!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "This equipment is an awesome piece of equipment for both DPS and Tank players! Look at it this way. If you can ever gather a full set of this type of armor, you will become a DPS player that resemblance to a Defense of a tanker! When you fight in the arena with this type of armor, your opponent would definitely have a tough time battling you!

Wei Yan Er quickly covered her ears with her hands and said, "Stinky noob tank! If you try to draw me in, I am going to snatch those pants back!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he placed the [Mysterious Metallic Greaves] into his inventory. Well, the rate of triggering the Special Effect of the 8-Piece Titan Armor Set was extremely low. On the other hand, the Special Effect of the 5-Piece Titan Armor Set is the actual Special Effect that had been giving Zhang Yang the advantage, all this while. A free {Shield Bash} and a 'Double damage'! As for the the Special Effect of the 3-Piece Titan Armor Set that adds 10,000 HP, it had gradually been losing effectiveness as players started to get more and more powerful.

Wei Yan Er picked up the necklace.

[Blue Jade Necklace] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +212

Intelligence: +137

Spirit: +137

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 270 points.

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 2%.

Equip: Reduces the cooldown period of {Holy Shield} by 7 seconds.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

This is also a powerful necklace for Priests! Unfortunately, this equipment can only be equipped when the player reaches Level 120. Han Ying Xue had no choice but to keep it deep in her inventory for the moment.

The final piece would be the pitch-black, huge metallic quarterstaff with a lopsided end.

[Heaven Shaker] (Mythical, Two-handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 5,275 - 6,675

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 1,572

Equip: Increases damage by 1%.

Equip: After striking a target, there is a small rate of breaking heaven's floor and summoning a punishment straight from the heavens, inflicting 7,000 Fire Damage to the target.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: Reduces 20 levels from the required level.

Wei Yan Er was feeling confused, "This is clearly a quarterstaff! How can it be a hammer?"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, then he began to explain, "Well, in {{God's Miracle}}, other than the dagger, sword, hammer, and axe, all weapons that can stab are categorized as Sword type. For example, lance, spear, and other weapons that inflict damage via blunt force trauma are all categorized as Hammer types. So, this quarterstaff is categorized as a Hammer. As for those weapons that cut and slash, they are all axes and swords!"

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er rolled their eyes at Zhang Yang. What kind of explanation is this? They were not one bit convinced!

But whatever it is, this two-handed hammer is definitely one of a kind at the current stage of the game! First of all, it was a Mythical Tier weapon, which were extremely valuable and rare. Then there was also the 20 levels reduction of the Required Level, giving players 'early access' to the weapon before they even reach Level 120! That alone would be a powerful reason for anyone to fight for it!

"Little brat, do you want this Hammer, then?" Although Zhang Yang was tempted to take it, he had already taken one equipment from the loots, so he felt that he had to let others pick it first, "If



you want this Hammer, give me the axe that you are using right now!"

Wei Yan Er gave it some thought, and then she shook her head and said, "I'll pass. I prefer to use an Axe more. The sensation of plunging it into enemies is kind of addictive! Other than that, I believe that you haven't had the chance to enjoy using a two-handed weapon before, right? Here's your chance to have it!"

"Wow, why are you so generous today? Are you having a fever?" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Pui! You're the one with the fever!"

Other than the four equipment, the boss had also dropped a [Skill Book] with a blue hardcover. The name of the Skill on that [Skill Book] is {Thunder blade}. This skill is limited only to Thieves, Warriors, and Knights.

"Well, well, well, 'Thunder Blade'!" Zhang Yang nodded at Wei Yan Er and said, "Little brat, this is quite an extraordinary Skill we have here. It is actually the enhanced version of your {Tornado Cleave}! You're so lucky!"

Of course, Wei Yan Er took up the book without being polite and all, as usual. She tapped the [Skill Book] against herself, and a stream of golden light flashed across her entire body. After that, she had acquired another new Skill.

[Thunder Blade]: By repeatedly swinging the weapon, inflicts 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damages all targets within the melee range of the user. Lasts for 6 seconds. Within that time, you can move around, but you cannot do any other actions. You will not be affected by any Status Restriction Effects. Required: Melee Weapon. Consumes: 100 Rage Points. Cool down period: 3 minutes.

Wei Yan Er could not stop jumping giddily about the power of this new skill. She was so eager, that she ran into the surroundings to locate a monster for her to try out her new Skill.

Zhang Yang also found his [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang,] finally! He managed to find it among one of the bushes in the surroundings.

This was one hell of a strange looking fruit. The shape of it was in the shape of a strawberry, and the half of it was white in color, while the other half was black in color. The color of this fruit was just like the name of the fruit, 'Ying and Yang'. However, there was only one fruit among the bushes. It was a one-of-a-kind. So, Zhang Yang had to forget about earning additional Experience Points from the quest by delivering more of these fruits.

Right after they were done 'harvesting' the loots, Zhang Yang and the ladies headed back to town.

Zhang Yang had two equipment that needed identifying. Since he was in a hurry, the moment he set foot on the Morning Town, he quickly used the Teleportation Circle and teleported straight back to the White Jade Castle. He then summoned Whitey Jr. and flew straight to the Identifying Shop to get the job done.

"1,000 gold coins!" the dim-sighted old Identifier raised one of his fingers up and showed it to Zhang Yang.

What a greedy old man!

After paying the cost, a stream of golden light flashed across the weapon, and the mysterious attributes of the [Mysterious Metallic Greaves] came to light!

[Mysterious Metallic Greaves] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +2,540

Strength: +1,201

Agility: +518

{Level 4 Socket 1}

{Level 4 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 5,000 points.

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 5%.

Equip: Absorbs 512 damage when being hit.

Required Level: 120

Special: Reduces 20 levels on the Required Level.

Comparing this new piece of equipment to his current one, the [Titan Greaves] only adds 80 Defense, 806 Vitality, 230 Strength and 115 Agility attributes. Additionally, he only gets to absorb 232 Damage while he is being hit! Clearly, the [Titan Greaves] are totally no match for the [Mysterious Metallic Greaves]!

After switching it on, the total amount of Zhang Yang's HP increased from 94,000, straight up to a total of 120,000! What a tremendous boost!

Then, he took out the [Heaven Shaker] and placed it on the table, "There's another one."

A player was standing right beside Zhang Yang when he took out the pitch black quarterstaff-shaped hammer. As the player saw that Mythical weapon looked just like a piece of charred, black quarterstaff, he could not help but to laugh out loud, "Brother, you must be joking! Black-Steel Tier equipment does not require identification! Speaking of which, your level must be very low, so low to be able to still acquire Black-Steel equipment! Haha! Well, online games these days define a player by the player's level! So

you will have to pick up all the hand-me-downs from the forerunners, if your level is too low! Well, it's not that I like to tease people, but you should just focus on leveling up and stop wasting time on picking up remaining loot on the ground! Oh my god... White Piglet! Come and have a look at this! This fellow actually took a Black-Steel weapon to be identified! I can't hold it in much longer, I'll die laughing! Haha!"

This player did not just come in trying to act familiar with Zhang Yang, he also tried to 'teach' Zhang Yang a lesson by giving 'advice' to Zhang Yang with 'compassion'. And that was not it, he had also called one of his friends to join in. The two of them were already laughing hard when they saw that the Identifier was beginning to look closer at the [Heaven Shaker]. However, the thoughts that did not cross their minds was that, why would an Identifier look at a piece of Black-Steel weapon, if the system already indicates that Black-Steel equipment does not require to be identified?

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh along and shook his head for awhile. Naturally, he had no intention to argue with these two imbeciles. Firstly, it would only waste his own precious time. Secondly, well, he would not likely see these idiots again. So, why stir unnecessary things up when he can just ignore them and walk away like a real grown-up man?

"5,000 gold coins!" The Identifier adjusted his old-man glasses, as he raised up all five fingers and showed it to Zhang Yang.

What a 'merciless' old man!

"What? 5,000 gold coins?" The 'friendly' player who had tried to

‘teach’ Zhang Yang a lesson could not believe what he heard and saw as he quickly turned to his friend, "What the hell! There is a bug in the system! Why does identifying a Black-Steel weapon needs 5,000 gold? This is insane!"

"Sharp Wolf, I think you must be mistaken. It doesn't look like a Black-Steel equipment at all!" the friend was slightly brighter as he finally realized that something was off.

Zhang Yang paid the 5,000 gold coins, and a stream of golden light flashed across the [Heaven Shaker]. However, the appearance of the weapon remained as a pitch black, huge metallic quarterstaff with a lopsided end.

However, the attributes of this equipment are astounding!

[Heaven Shaker] (Mythical, Two-handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 7,536 - 9,536

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 2,246

{Level 4 Socket 1}

{Level 4 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases damage by 20%.

Equip: After hitting a target, there is a small rate of breaking through heaven's floor and sanctioning a punishment straight from the heaven, inflicting 10,000 Fire Damage to the target.

Required Level: 120

Special: Reduces 20 levels for the Required Level.

"Hey, brother. What exactly is that equipment of yours? Can you share a link of its attributes, so that we can have a look?" that annoying player could no longer keep himself from prying, so he went up to Zhang Yang with his thick face and asked Zhang Yang to show them.

Zhang Yang felt that he had nothing to lose, so he took a screenshot of the [Heaven Shaker]'s attributes and sent it to the player via chat.

When both of them saw the attributes of the weapon, they drew in a breath of cold air.

A Mythical Tier equipment! Level 120! And a reduction of 20 levels for the Required Level!

What exactly are they looking at now! They could not believe their own eyes!

Zhang Yang switched his [Sword of Purging Devourer] with the newly obtained [Heaven Shaker]. Lord's heaven! His Attack shot up so much that he could not believe his own eyes! Zhang Yang's basic Attack had reached up to the range of 21,947 - 25,447 [(12,541 - 14,514) \*1.75, 50% {God of War's Rage}, 20% boost on Weapon, 5% additional boost on [Mysterious Metallic Greaves]]

His Defense was far stronger than the Defense of a Super Tanker, and his Attack can even match the Attack power of the top Tiered Berserkers!

Thanks to the support of the [God of War Inheritance], Zhang Yang had attained the perfect combination of 'immovable defense' and 'unstoppable offense'!

Zhang Yang walked out of the Identifying Shop, deciding to take a look at the Auction House.

"Huh?" the two imbeciles stared at the back of Zhang Yang, feeling that something was off. One of them said, "Judging by the shield on his back, he should be a Guardian. That hammer is a two-handed weapon. So, how can he equip a two-handed weapon?"

"That shield is most probably for aesthetic purposes!"

Zhang Yang took a walk around the Auction House, but he did not come across anything that would get his attention. So, he went on over to the Bank, withdrew 4 [Level 4 Gemstones] and inserted them all into his Greaves and Weapon to boost their attributes



even further. Although his HP has been reduced by 1,500 points, his Strength had increased by 320 points (The socket [Gemstones] increased Strength by 60%).

Zhang Yang had planned it out in advance. For all Defense type equipment, he would just insert all [Vitality Gemstones] into their sockets. As for Weapon types, Offense type equipment or equipment that boosted both offense and defense, he would just insert [Power Gemstones] into their sockets.

After finishing things up, Zhang Yang once again arrived at Morning Town.

Although he already possessed a two-handed weapon, Zhang Yang still has his mind set on unsealing the remaining seals on his [Sword of Purging Devourer] because he was very curious to see how powerful the sword could turn out to be! After all, the [Sword of Purging Devourer] had a special effect that could replicate Skills. That is one ability that can allow Zhang Yang to use AoE attacks, not something that the high damage output of a two-handed weapon could easily replace.

Within these two days, Sun Xin Yu, Hundred Shots, Lost Dream and the others had finally reached Level 100. Then they were all summoned by Zhang Yang over to Morning Town. Following the increasing number of players in the Chaos Realm, Zhang Yang could foresee a chaotic war among the eight servers looming ahead!

After Fatty Han entered the Chaos Realm, he had made up his mind, and knowing that he was not exactly the most skilled of

players, had asked Zhang Yang to give him the fragment of [Vampire Inheritance]. He only intended to get a Class B Inheritance, it would be enough to fulfill his needs.

He had been a brother to Zhang Yang. So, Zhang Yang put aside his quest on unsealing the second seal on his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and took Fatty Han on his 'ride' as both of them went on a journey in search of the remaining 5 pieces of fragments for the [Vampire Inheritance]. Because Class B Inheritances were not so unique that only one of each can be found in the entire game, even if someone else has already acquired such an inheritance, they would still be able to acquire one of their own.

Fatty Han had quite some luck kicking about in his belly. As they were trying to locate the fourth piece of [Vampire Inheritance], they accidentally stumbled across a gigantic moth. So, Fatty Han grabbed the opportunity and captured the month. There, Fatty Han had got his own [Flying Mount]!

The number of players who had already entered the Chaos Realm were not very numerous yet. Henceforth, it was the best time for players who are already in the realm to capture [Flying Mounts] for themselves. When more players enter the Chaos Realm, there will be much more players capturing [Flying Mounts] for themselves. The competition for getting a good [Flying Mount] would rise intensely as players will be swarming up around the good [Flying Mounts], the moment they are spawned! It would become so much more difficult later to capture [Flying Mounts]!

Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream and the others had also ventured out to capture their own [Flying Mounts]. Although most

of them only had Yellow-Gold Tier [Flying Mounts], it was already enough to allow all of them to fly freely through the maps. As for their attempts at getting higher Tiered [Flying Mounts], they would have to wait until they can enter higher leveled maps.

## Chapter 516: The Japan-Korea Region's Counterattack

---

The first steps of collecting the fragments of an Inheritance are understandably annoying. However, if a player could even get one piece of the fragments, it would just be a matter of time before the player can locate the remaining pieces. So in just 7 days, Fatty Han had already gathered the six pieces of the [Vampire Inheritance] fragments and put them together to form the Inheritance Keepsake of the [Vampire Inheritance]. With that Inheritance Keepsake in his hands, Fatty Han succeeded in activating the Linking Quest for the [Vampire Inheritance].

The first few quests had only required players to run around and kill some weaker monsters. Even with his current level and skills, Fatty Han could have handled things by himself with ease --- despite his controls were not at the level of a professional player, he could still crush every monster that the quests required him to kill without any problem at all!

Furthermore, even if he is no match to the monsters, Fatty Han could still activate his 'holy' Skill {Fake Death}. So, there was no need to worry about him being tortured to death by the monsters.

Zhang Yang could finally stop worrying about Fatty Han. Since this fatty already has a [Flying Mount] as well, he should be able to travel around conveniently. Hence, the 'flying service' that Zhang Yang had been providing Fatty Han was no longer needed. Other than that, two men huddling together on the back of a [Flying Mount], well, it could be easily misinterpreted. You know, gay. Meanwhile, Whitey Jr. Was not pleased with Fatty Han's weight.

If the system would even allow the Serpent do it, Whitey Jr. would have spat on Fatty Han's face multiple times!

Meanwhile, outside the game, Silky Soft Holdings was finally regaining its standing and prestige. Be it the 'Set Meal' that Silky Soft Holdings had presented while collaborating with Crimson Cosmetic Holdings, or the main products that the company had introduced to the markets, everything that they did these days packed a punch in the flow of the market. The results of their performance were blooming like sesame flowers, with each flower growing higher than the last that bloomed! In other words, they were attaining a higher standard in the marketplace, each time they made a move!

Previously after the 'scandal', the salesmen of Silky Soft Holdings would need to fall on their knees and beg all hypermarkets to put the products from Silky Soft Holdings on their shelves. However, now, their roles had been reversed, the hypermarkets have become the ones begging the salesmen from Silky Soft Holdings to supply them the goods!

Some of the hypermarkets were proposing to pay in advance for the goods. Unlike the previous encounters, they had actually asked for the goods to be distributed over to their storehouse, before they start providing a small share of their sales! With more financial holdings to be liquidated, the company is now in a better position to expand further. Well, Silky Soft Holdings is advancing by massive strides. As long as the person is not blind, anyone can clearly see the bright prospect of the future that lay before Silky Soft Holdings.

Zhang Yang could not help but let out a breath of sigh. In his previous life, Sky and Ocean Electronics was just a small company with only tens of million dollars of assets. Just because of One Sword Stroke, and because the Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team was dominating the game with their unstoppable skills, they had managed to make a name out of themselves and had advertised their company through the game, to great effect. In just 5 years time, the Sky and Ocean Electronics had expanded into a large scale company that had assets worth hundreds of billion dollars! It seemed that the power of ‘idols’ really did the trick well!

With waves of benefits and tons of earnings gushing towards her, of course, Snow Seeker would be happy to see Zhang Yang. She invited Zhang Yang and the high-ranking officers of Silky Soft Holdings over to her Crimson Cosmetic Holdings as their ‘VIP’ guests. Perfumed Water and the other flirtatious women were trying their very best to tease Zhang Yang, saying that they would definitely thank him for ‘providing’ beautiful models who would be willing to spend a night with him. They even guaranteed that he would be very pleased when he comes.

What a bunch of thick faced whores!

At the current stage of the game, the casual players had also reached Level 95 and above. There would be a very small portion of players entering the Chaos Realm in the near future. Sooner or later, the Chaos Realm is going to become very lively with the ‘passenger flow’ soon to hit its peak!

‘Ding! The Winst Castle is under siege!’

Zhang Yang was on his way to the Flatlands of the Man-Eating Monster, with his mind set on searching for the second quest item - [Zinc Alloy] to unseal the second seal of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] --- he was bound to encounter a boss. Bosses would mean additional income to Zhang Yang.

However, not long after he flew, Zhang Yang received a System Notification.

Only the Baron of Territories would receive such alarming messages. Be it the soldiers of the Territory, the town folks, or the buildings, as long as anyone or anything that belongs to Territory is attacked by enemy forces, the system would notify the Baron with such alarming messages. Of course, players can choose to mute such notifications.

Well, it was no surprise that Winst Castle would be under attack. Since the players of Japan-Korea server would enter the Chaos Realm only to realize that their Territory Gateway had already been conquered by a player from the China server, well, it makes perfect sense for them to feel unimaginable rage. Of course they would attack Winst Castle!

Even though Zhang Yang had not spent a large sum of money on building facilities, but the basic defenses were a must! Basic defensive facilities such as [Magic Cannon], Soldiers, and even the [Mechanical Servants]! Zhang Yang had brought some [Allsparks] over to the Chaos Realm and made quite a number of [Mechanical Servant]. Although they were just Level 85 monsters, but they were still Elites!

Furthermore, the Level Gap Suppression' function of the game had been increased up to 30 levels. So, an army of Level 85 elites could still give Level 100 players a hard time, and they would greatly outnumber!

With 100 [Mechanical Servants] charging out, one or two players with powerful equipment would still be wiped out instantly --- unless they have 'Transformation Skill' of an Inheritance!

Therefore, although Winst Castle was also under the attack from the players from Japan-Korea server, they were all taken out by the [Mechanical Servants]. They did not even have to use the [Magic Cannon]! One shot from the [Magic Cannon] costs 100,000 gold coins! Using a [Magic Cannon] to kill one player is an act of overkill! It would be like using a cannon to blow away a mosquito! To spend money like that, it is no longer the act of a pompous, filthy-rich snot, it would be an unforgivable sin!

At first, Zhang Yang did not think much about it. He believed that the invaders would be swiftly taken care of by his army of [Mechanical Servants]. However, for the next few minutes, Zhang Yang was still receiving notifications about the attacks on his Territory. He could not help but to frown a little in annoyance as he directed the Serpent to land.

Could it be, that those people of the Japan-Korea server were about to launch a large-scale assault on his Winst Castle?

Zhang Yang could not stop wondering as he took out his [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it up. In just a manner of seconds, he was teleported back to Morning Town. Then he quickly used



the Teleportation Circle in the town to travel back to Winst Castle.

After that, he jumped straight onto Whitey Jr. and flew over the top of the castle, together with Felice. He began to survey the area, trying to locate the attackers. It did not take long before Zhang Yang spotted them.

100 [Mechanical Servants] and 100 Castle Guards had been dispatched to engage the invaders. Other than the [Magic Cannons] these two armies were all who defended Winst Castle. There were a total of 20 players. Four Tankers were tanking everything in front of them, while the DPS players were channeling their damage output towards their enemies as furiously as they could. Meanwhile, there were also 5 healers healing up the Tankers from a safe distance.

The battle was halfway through, as the remaining number of the [Mechanical Servants] was only about a quarter. Not even half of the army of Castle Guard were remained on the battlefield! The enemies must have activated some powerful Skills such as Paired Skills like {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} in order to kill so many Elites in such a short period of time!

Of course, although [Mechanical Servants] and the Castle Guards were all elite Tier, they were still no match to the elite Tier monsters in the Chaos Realm. Each of these [Mechanical Servant] only had a total HP of 150,000, and the Castle Guards were only slightly stronger. These Castle Guards only had a total of 250,000 HP! That was why they are not up to the task of holding back these powerful opposition players! Well, strictly speaking, these NPC soldiers were merely half that of an elite Tier!

Looking at the situation from above, Zhang Yang could see that these players are quite skillful and capable. They were capable of forming a human wall with 4 Tankers as vanguards. That way, they could firmly hold back the NPCs and hook on to the NPCs' aggro while allowing the DpS players behind them to channel their damage output towards the NPCs without any interruptions! That would really maximize the efficiency of their damage output!

Well, it was also not very surprising to see such skilled players in the Chaos Realm. Well, players who can enter the Chaos Realm in the first place must be the top players of their respective servers in the first place. So it makes sense that it would not really that hard for these players to take on this bunch of 'half elite' NPCs.

Zhang Yang looked closer with his eyes opened wider. These 20 players were not from the same guild. They had to be the best players that different guilds could offer! A few days ago, there were only a few players at a time who were attempting to attack the Winst Castle. They were slaughtered by the NPCs like goats instead. Now, they have finally sent their high-tiered players, and had even teamed up together!

With a command through his mind, Zhang Yang ordered Whitey Jr. to descend down to the ground.

At the same instant, the battle on the ground was about to end. Although there were still a number of NPCs remaining, their HPs were already at critical levels. After another wave of powerful assaults, almost all of the NPCs were killed.

The moment when Zhang Yang touched down on the ground, the last 7 NPCs who were still standing took the final hits before they collapsed onto the ground. Now, only Zhang Yang was standing before the 20 players.

Zhang Yang sat on the back of Whitey Jr., looking mighty, while Felice stood next to him with her lance in her hand with pride. The little lady had a cold expression on her face, ready to kill.

"Zhan Yu?" one of the Tankers on the opposition side suddenly blurted out. He actually took a few, calculated steps back when he saw Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang felt a chill down his spine, knowing nothing about this guy. How did he know about him? But after giving it some thoughts about it, he was rather famous himself. He was currently the Number One Tanker in the entire China server. Countless high Tiered players would try to study and learn his tactics and skills! It was comprehensible that many players would recognize him.

The facial expression of Zhang Yang at that moment was as if he did not give a damn about anything. However, as he scanned the surroundings with his eyes, he realized that the 20 players had quietly flanked him from all directions, except for the direction from above. Zhang Yang felt like laughing hard after seeing what was going on. Well, he has a [Flying Mount]. Surrounding him up would not do any good for them at all. If he ever wanted to leave, who could have stopped him, anyway?

However, it wasn't their fault, as they were still new to the Chaos Realm. They were not used to the idea of Air Combat, yet. They

must have gotten used to rounding enemies up after years of practice. Well, no one can blame them for acting 'rationally' according to the situation. One can only say that these players have not caught up to the game's current development.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely as he began to 'welcome' them, "Fellow players, it must have been tiring to travel a great distance just to arrive here. Come, have a rest in the castle."

Rest? F\*ck you!

The Japan-Korea players were scolding and cursing him in within their hearts. This Territory Gateway should belong to the Japan-Korea server in the first place! And now, they are being treated like guests in their own Territory-was-to-be? Well, there is a limit to humiliating others!

Apparently, the first Tanker who spoke up was called 'Ode to the Grim Reaper', and he too, was a Guardian. He stood out from the party and said, "Our experts in Korea have been studying your ancestors, and we are very sure that your ancestors were refugees who fled from Korea many years ago! So you are not Chinese, you have the blood of our noble Korea flowing beneath your skin! Come back to our noble Korea! Only then, can you ensure the best possible paths for your future!"

The rage rushed up to Zhang Yang's head in an instant!

Zhang Yang went all 'Sparta' the moment he heard what the Ode to the Grim Reaper said. The ability of that fellow to talk nonsense

with his eyes closed is truly amazing! Spectacular! They didn't even know his surname! It is amazing how they claimed to have 'discovered' Zhang Yang's heritage and all!

However, it made sense when the Koreans believe that the entire universe is created by them! To them, Zhang Yang would naturally be a Korean as well! What a joke!

When players first connect to the {{God's Miracle}}. the system will automatically spawn the players in one of the eight main cities based on the location that the players are at. No changes will be made after that. So, even if Zhang Yang travels over to America and signs in from there, the system will still recognize him as a player from China, a player from White Jade Castle.

However, players could apply to change their servers if they ever feel like it. But, they must undergo some annoying steps and pay a substantial sum of money.

Therefore, traitors from China, Korea, Japan, or America do exist in this game. Well, it mattered not, be it Zhang Yang's previous life or this life, there would always be high-Tiered players who lacked such morality, to the point that they would turn their backs against their own people, their own countries. They would just join other servers and go up against their own kin with a snap of their fingers.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "That's right. If you say so, I should be an esteemed Korean by now. My deeds should have spoken for themselves. So, you Korean youngsters should just call me supreme leader, or master would do!"

# Chapter 517: An Easy Obliteration

---

"Zhan Yu!" Ode to the Grim Reaper was enraged. He raised up his sword and shield and pointed the sharp tip of the blade at Zhang Yang, "You dare to insult me?"

So, this imbecile claimed Zhang Yang's nationality to be Korean, but felt humiliated when Zhang Yang claimed himself to be their supreme leader? Now, who is the joke, now?

"What are we waiting for? Stop with the bullsh\*t and get rid of him already!" one of the Spellcasters with the name of 'Ancient House Prince' said. It was pretty obvious that he was not very fond of Ode to the Grim Reaper. He pointed his staff at Zhang Yang, and started chanting for his spell.

A Japanese player, perhaps?

Zhang Yang revealed a sinister smile on his face and said, "Felice, let's go and kill that 'Shorty Japan'!"

Felice wouldn't understand the term 'Shorty Japan', but since Zhang Yang was pointing at the Ancient House Prince, she nodded immediately and leaped and transformed into her Dragonhawk Form. She flew into the air and began to chant the spell for her {Fire Missile} as she targeted the Spellcaster.

"Kill him!"

The battle erupted suddenly, thanks to Ancient House Prince. His action was like the trigger that ignited a barrel of explosives! The 20 players launched their assaults towards Zhang Yang, almost at the same instant!

Although a [Flying Mount] is convenient, it had a fatal weakness when it comes to battling players. The body mass of a [Flying Mount] is too large! It would make a fine target for the enemies to aim at! Zhang Yang had the {God of War Transformation} on hand, so he was confident of holding his own, here. He activated the {God of War's Shield} as a start, acquiring an additional 20% Passive Damage Immunity. Then, he jumped down from the back of Whitey Jr. and activated {Charge,} as he charged towards Ancient House Prince.

‘-23,895!’

Zhang Yang swung his quarterstaff-hammer and landed a solid hit on the neck of the Ancient House Prince. It did not just take away two-fifths of the HP bar of the player, that strike had also broken the neck of Ancient House Prince to the point that it was crooked at a weird angle! The chanting was interrupted instantly!

With the strike, the Rage Points that Zhang Yang has was instantly boosted up to a total of 120 points! The Rage Bar was full! He laughed, as he proceeded to activate his {Destructive Smash} on the Spellcaster.

‘-49,122!’

"Argh!" Ancient House Prince let out a miserable cry as he was sent straight to the Graveyard. Although those were two different strikes that Zhang Yang slammed at almost the same instant on the Ancient House Prince, there was no Global Cool Down for the two strikes, as one was merely a normal attack while the other was a Skill attack. Ancient House Prince was struck so swiftly that he did not even have time to activate his {Ice Barrier} or {Apparate}!

"Holy mother of god!"

After witnessing the terrifying damage that Zhang Yang had brought upon the Ancient House Prince, everyone on the scene was shocked to core. A few of them even rubbed their eyes as they could not believe the truth that they had just witnessed!

What the hell was that? Could a Guardian really do so much damage?

However, these were the top players in their region, after all. They managed to recover from the shock in an instant. The Spellcasters carried on with their chanting while the other players started moving around in a tactical formation. But, because they had locked on to the Serpent, so most of their attacks were launched at Whitey Jr. instead of Zhang Yang.

As Zhang Yang had instantly killed the player that Felice targeted, Felice was interrupted in the chanting of her {Fire Missile} and she decided to use {Pulverizing Flame} instead, torching up the place, creating a sea of flames beneath her.



However, players are not as dumb as the monsters in the game. They would not just stand there and let the flames scorch their asses. All of them immediately fled from that area as they ran like wild geese! With them running around wildly, trying to avoid themselves from being burned alive, it gave Zhang Yang another opportunity to attack. Zhang Yang went on with a {Heroic Leap} and landed by the spot where the Healers were standing. He stunned all 5 Healers at once!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-47,120!’

‘-48,902!’

‘-95,032!’

‘-49,902!’

4 damage values popped right on top of the 4 healers' heads, and one of them was a Critical Damage! That Critical Hit sent a Holy Knight straight to the Graveyard! Unfortunately, these Healers were standing quite far away from each other. Although Zhang Yang had managed to strike the 5 Healers with his {Heroic Leap}, his {Horizontal Strike} could not cover that much ground and he had only managed to hit 4 of them!

Well, it was still a productive outcome. The other 3 Healers were left with only a little amount of HP on them. They quickly retreated and started healing themselves up.

Meanwhile, there were no longer any available targets within the range attack of Felice's {Pulverizing Flame}. Naturally, Felice did not waste any more time in herding the players. She dove down from the sky in high speed. While she was at it, she transformed into her Humanoid Form before she reached the ground. She landed right beside Zhang Yang. As the 1-second Global Cool Down period was over, she immediately raised her lance and struck it straight towards a Priest.

‘-17,880!’

With that strike, the Priest died on the spot! Felice was being very intimidating as she continued to activate her {Blazing Dragon's Spear} on another target. Another damage of ‘-18,067’ popped up on top of one of the healers, and the third healer was killed as well!

Everything was happening so lightning fast! 4 players were already dead!

Ode to the Grim Reaper was feeling angry and shocked at the same time, and he informed one of his teammates, "Pika, go and restrict the Battle Companion!"

"Roger!" the Thief nodded and reached out with his hands as he made a gesture that suggested that he was pressing his palms against Felice, remotely. A stream of light gushed towards Felice and turned into a ball-shaped barrier the moment it reached Felice! Felice was suddenly caught in a barrier!

Felice let out a roar with rage as she attempted to break the barrier. However, everything that she did could not even give a scratch. She began to panic and started screaming for help, "Big brother! I'm stuck! Help!"

This Skill should be similar to the "Banishment" effect. Although it could restrict the movement of Felice for a short moment, but it would also make Felice immune to all damage at the same time! Zhang Yang comforted her as she looked genuinely terrified, "Don't worry, Felice. I can handle all these clowns by myself! It will be just like dancing with a bunch of clowns!"

‘-2093!’

‘-O!’

‘-1025!’

‘-5052!’

...

The attacks of Ode to the Grim Reaper and his party members had finally landed on Zhang Yang! But they could only inflict Zhang Yang with approximately 5,000 damage, each. So they had only managed to damage Zhang Yang by approximately 10,000 to 20,000 damage. Well, dual-weapon wielders like Thief Class players could not even break through Zhang Yang’s Defense to even damage him!

It cannot be helped because Zhang Yang currently had a total Defense of 2,400 points, 40% Damage Immunity, and also a total of 2,606 Damage Absorption! Zhang Yang is the only player to have an Inheritance at the current stage of the game. It also happened to be the strongest class, Class S! If he is unable to oppress these players who were at such a disadvantage, then Zhang Yang should be ashamed of himself!

Truth to be told, Zhang Yang did not really care about the

damage he receives. He cared more about the Status Restriction Effects that are being used on him! However, ever since he has the [God of War Inheritance], his resistance against Status Restriction Effects has greatly increased. At least, none of the Status Restriction Effects that he had encountered so far would have any effect on him!

Well, such is the power of an [Inheritance], on players without [Inheritances]!

Furthermore, even if he really is affected by a Status Restriction Effect, Zhang Yang still has {Warrior's Will}, [Heart of the Death Knight] and [Mobility Potion] to free himself from the effect. That should be enough for him to unleash hell upon all his enemies!

‘-45228!’

‘-23982!’

The [Heaven Shaker] was just like the golden cudgel, the weapon that was used by the Monkey King who made a mess in the heavens! Every touch from it hurt, every strike from it killed!

At the current stage of the game, even players who are not Tankers would only have approximately 80,000 HP when they are mounted on a Yellow-Gold Tier [Mount]. Taking damage from Skills that inflict 200% Melee Attack of Damage such as {Frost

Strike}, {Horizontal Strike} and {Destructive Smash} would cause any player to lose at least 40,000HP. If there are any Critical Hits among these attacks, the player would be instantly killed!

Furthermore, even if {Cripple Defense} is just a Skill that players use to decrease the Defense of their opponents, but even so, if it comes from Zhang Yang, it would deal upwards of 10,000 damage, which also meant that Zhang Yang could cause at least 50,000 damage to a player by using Skills that inflict 200% Melee Attack of Damage, such as {Frost Strike}, {Horizontal Strike} and {Destructive Smash}! The {Cripple Defense} would serve as a great boost in filling up his Rage Bar, giving him a higher capability of inflicting even more terrifying amount of damage!

"Stop him! Restrict his movement, or do something!" Under the tactical arrangement of Ode to the Grim Reaper, the four Tankers came from 4 different directions, trying to box Zhang Yang in attempting to stop him from making his way over to the remaining Healer and the DpS players. Although the attacks of Zhang Yang were oppressively powerful, but Tankers would always give him a headache, as they could sustain much more damage than players of other Classes!

Zhang Yang let out a loud laugh, and then he used the {Glare of the Death God} on Ode to the Grim Reaper.

With another wave of his hand, Zhang Yang summoned out [Devastator] onto the battlefield and commanded [Devastator] to attack Ode to the Grim Reaper as aggressively as possible. Well, on the other hand, Ode to the Grim Reaper was not really having good luck either. The first hit from the [Devastator] had actually

triggered the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}! Zhang Yang rushed in with a stomp on the ground as he activated his {Thunder Strike}, giving a fatal blow to Ode to the Grim Reaper, that instantly killed him!

There was no doubt that the equipment set of Ode to the Grim Reaper was the best among the other Tankers. However, to see Ode to the Grim Reaper being instantly killed by a mere Level 88 Silver-Tier Servant was just unaccountable! How could anyone stand being killed by such a low Tier Servant! Furthermore, because Ode to the Grim Reaper had died so swiftly, none of them were able to see the description of the negative effect that was inflicted upon him!

The more they did not understand the situation, the more they lost the will to battle, and the more they feared. The three Tankers could not help but to retreat, one step at a time. Their faces were indistinguishable from the faces of albinos!

Zhang Yang felt very satisfied with the current situation. He could already torture them so brutally without even activating his {God of War Transformation}! If he did activate his {God of War Transformation}, would he actually be able to kill all of them instantly?

When a player with an [Inheritance] engages a player without an [Inheritance], the advantage that the player with [Inheritance] has over the player without an [Inheritance] is really oppressive! Although Zhang Yang had not activated his {God of War Transformation}, he still had a 50% damage increment and 20 additional Damage Immunity, pulling him far ahead of players

without an [Inheritance]!

Zhang Yang saw the opportunity, so he grabbed it! He charged out of the box formation as swiftly as he could. By swinging his [Heaven Shaker] around consecutively, Zhang Yang oppressively crushed the players of the Japan-Korea region, like a tiger among a herd of sheep! Although it was just him alone, he had crushed the opposition party to the point that they could not even fight back! It was a total wipeout!

The Thief that was still restricting Felice with his 'Spell' saw that Zhang Yang was charging at him aggressively, as if he was ready to bite off his nose. He was so terrified that he stopped using his Spell and activated his {Vanish}, entering Stealth Mode. He did not want to die so horribly!

Felice was finally freed from the 'restriction barrier' that had held her for quite a while. She rejoined the battle and worked together with Zhang Yang in order to taken down everyone else on the opposing side. The two of them were like god slayers! Anyone who stood in their way would only be slaughtered!

After killing eight of them, Zhang Yang only had about 30,000HP left. Without panicking, he activated his {Last Vigor} before activating his {Shield Wall}. His HP bar instantly recovered completely! But, why did Zhang Yang activate his {Last Vigor}? Because, this Skill gives a temporary boost of 30% on his Maximum HP amount, and {Shield Wall}, while under the Special Effect of the [Titan Wall], could recover his HP based on a fixed percentage. That would mean that, if he has a higher amount of Maximum HP, he would be able to recover more health!



After witnessing the HP bar that they taken so much effort to reduce beginning to fill it self up, the remaining 12 players of the Japan-Korea region considered giving up immediately. They actually thought that without the {Berserker's heal}, Zhang Yang would not be able to hold up his HP for long, as every player only has one HP bar! Furthermore, Zhang Yang was not some sort of God of War that is all powerful! So sooner or later, even Zhang Yang could be brought down to his knees!

However, they had never expected Zhang Yang to possess the powerful relic - [Titan Wall]! Zhang Yang could actually recover his HP bar, just by activating his {Shield Wall}!

Fortunately for them, they did not have to find out that Zhang Yang still had another trump card that could recover his HP back to the full state, in an instant! Or else, they could simply drop their weapons in surrender!

Another minute had passed. From 12, only 5 players remained! The 5 players looked at each other hopelessly. Then, they began to hop on to their [Mounts] and made their escapes. The 5 of them headed towards 5 different directions! They were trying not to give Zhang Yang the chance to catch them all in one draft!

Zhang Yang laughed as he mounted himself onto Whitey Jr.. The movement speed of a [Flying Mount] was extremely fast, and Zhang Yang caught up with 3 of the players with ease. He attempted to kill them one by one, however, two of them got away in the end.

## Chapter 518: Aiding Fatty Han

---

Nevertheless, Zhang Yang was pleased with the outcome of the battle. He had just crippled a party made up of Top Tier players, from a large region and more importantly, he had taken them out all by himself without any other party members around him! That itself was already an impressive achievement. It does not matter even if he fails to capture all of them.

Unfortunately, such days will not remain for long. When other players begin to acquire [Inheritances] for themselves, the advantage that Zhang Yang has right now would diminish, or even be gone! But, the [God of War Inheritance] is the best top-tier S-Class [Inheritance] in the game. Only 6 players would be able to obtain this Class. Ergo, Zhang Yang would still have some advantages over the other players. But, the advantages he holds shall not be as great as before.

The Chaos Realm had been quite merry for the passing days. The server would notify about some Territories being refreshed, and some Territories being conquered by players. In only less than a week, all eight Territory Gateways have acquired their own Barons.

Indubitably, because Zhang Yang had occupied the Territory Gateway in Winst Castle that should supposedly belong to the Japan-Korea region, the Japan-Korea region had taken a slap on their 'shorty' faces. It hurt them so much, having to travel all the way from the Teleportation point in the Ten Barren Seas to enter the Chaos Realm. Zhang Yang's handy work had greatly inconvenienced them, making them take up so much time just to travel to the Chaos Realm!

Furthermore, because Winst Castle is right in the middle of the only path that led deeper into the Chaos Realm, the players from Japan-Korea region are forced to grind only in one-fifth of the Grandu Ice Ridge map! Players with [Flying Mounts] could bypass the castle by flying over it. But the others without a [Flying Mount] would have to forcefully break through the Winst Castle in order to enter the Chaos Realm!

What makes them more depressed is that every time after they have returned to their main city, they will have to repeat the exact same process just to enter the wider part of the Chaos Realm. Zhang Yang's handy work simply gave them too much trouble!

When the number of players who reaches Level 100 increases, the Winst Castle would no longer be able to block the flow of the players from Japan-Korea region. As long as they come in a large group, they would have no problems at all in breaking through the Winst Castle. Although the Winst Castle would no longer be capable of holding the fort against the large group of Japan-Korea players, the place could still prevent smaller group of players. The situation was truly depressing and frustrating for the players of the Japan-Korea region. They would have to mobilize a large number of players every time they wanted to venture further into the Chaos Realm! If they do not do so, they would just be giving their enemies free kills!

Inconvenient! Very inconvenient!

However, without the [Territory Conquest Order], it would be pointless for them to level Winst Castle to the ground! The Baron

of the Winst Castle would still be Zhang Yang. As long as he was willing to pay the repairing fees, he can just rebuild the castle as many time as he wants and continue keeping the players of the Japan-Korea region out!

In fact. he had been putting that strategy into practice! Every time after the army of Japan-Korea region leveled Winst Castle to the ground, Zhang Yang would rebuild Winst Castle by spending some money in order to collect the heads of the Japan-Korea players and get his revenge back!

He only loses a portion of his money by doing so, while wasting the time of the Japan-Korea players when they could have spent so much more time grinding up their levels! The most important thing in an online game is player's level. Without meeting the level requirement, a player will never be eligible to enter any higher leveled region, and they would also not be able to defeat high-level bosses, resulting in them not being able to acquire any high-level equipment!

With such an obstacle before them, the Japan-Korea region would definitely fall behind the rest of the game!

Currently, they were busting their asses, killing the bosses available in their area, over and over again in an attempt to acquire a [Territory Conquest Order]! They were determined to get back that which was supposed to be theirs, Winst Castle!

However, an item as rare as the [Territory Conquest Order] would only drop on the First Clear of a dungeon. All bosses located among the maps lower than Level 100 have been slain for so many

times that anyone would have lost count by now! Hence, how was it possible for a [Territory Conquest Order] to still drop from the bosses, then?

Because of that, there was almost an in-fighting among the Japan-Korea players as they were arguing about the misuse of the [Territory Conquest Orders] that they had back then. Henceforth, they could only stare at Winst Castle until their eyes dry up!

Since it was no longer possible for them to obtain the [Territory Conquest Order] within their own region, the Japan-Korea players could put their hopes in the wider area of the Chaos Realm. After they managed to break through the Winst Castle, they would just have to search and slay bosses as much as they could just to attempt to get the order. Despite their efforts, a [Territory Conquest Order] would not drop so easily. It seems that they would have to keep on repeating this mundane task for a little while longer.

Well, the Japan-Korea region has become the laughing stock for the players all around the world as they are talked about in the official forums. While the players from other regions were enjoying the drama, the players from Japan-Korea region hated Zhang Yang so much that they would suck him dry and hang his meat and bones up, in front of their doorsteps! However, the players from the China region were respecting Zhang Yang more than they ever could for his handiwork. Teenagers of 16 to 17 years old viewed him as an idol.

Dungeons upwards of level 100 are designed for a much larger scale, in this case they would accommodate up to 50 players at a

time. At the current stage of the game, most large-scale guilds have begun challenging those dungeons. They would get themselves familiar with the boss Skills and the attack patterns of the boss by clearing the Normal Mode and Hard Mode of the dungeons to familiarize themselves with the patterns of the boss.

In the past, the 'First Clear' achievements for the Hardcore Mode of dungeons had remained unique and individual to their respective regions. The eight big regions of the game would produce eight 'First Clears', for the same dungeon! Eight regions led to the possibility of eight 'First Clears'! However, only one party would be able to acquire the 'First Clear' of a dungeon after all players from all eight main regions have entered the Chaos Realm!

Therefore, the Level 100 dungeon - Dragon Throat Fortress was currently being targeted to be taken down at all costs, by all high profile guilds from all eight main regions! Whoever who manages to take down the Hardcore Mode of this dungeon first shall claim the first and only 'First Clear' in the Chaos Realm!

Securing the 'First Clear' of such a scale is what any guild would want. It is the highest form of glory that any guild would kill for!

This is really the defining moment to be number one, in the entire world! Which guild wouldn't want such a title bestowed upon themselves?

Therefore, even if they do not have enough members for it, they would still march into the dungeon to try on the boss! Although the Skills of the boss are clearly stated in the database, to read and

come up with theories and to do it were two very different things. Seeing the others doing well is one thing, but when it is one's turn to engage, any form of unforeseen circumstance and errors might just pop right up in the face. Some things must be practiced to perfection in order to get a pass!

Although several more players have been flitting into the Chaos Realm along the passage of time, each guild would only be able to fork out a few representatives at the moment. In Lone Desert Smoke's case, they only had about 30 members capable of traveling into the Chaos Realm for the moment. Due to Mountain Mover's level being ineligible to enter the Chaos Realm, Zhang Yang could only allow Hundred Shots to lead the party over to the Dragon Throat Fortress dungeon to familiarize themselves with the attack pattern and Skills of the boss. Meanwhile, players who have not reached the required levels yet could only watch the video recordings of those who went to challenge the boss and failed badly. They could only learn from the mistakes that those players made through the videos.

The other guilds were also doing the same thing. In a nutshell, this is the first time that all guilds from all eight regions are fighting over this 'First Clear' title. The competition is even more intense than anyone could imagine. The discussions on the official forums were blazing up, as players from all eight regions were supporting the best guilds in their own regions, as they believed that their top guilds would be the ones who prevail. The servers of the official forums had crashed several times, because of the overflowing comments from the players from all eight regions. That just goes to show how intense the arguments on the forums were!

However, the total number of bosses in Dragon Throat Fortress has reached up to 15 bosses! The first 5 bosses were pushovers, giving out equipment to the players for free. However, the next 5 bosses were slightly harder. 50% of the parties could no longer progress any further into the dungeon. The final 5 bosses were the really challenging ones that are worthy of being called bosses in the Hard Mode of the dungeon. Basically, 90% of the parties could no longer progress any further as the bosses were too damn hard for them to take on! Some of them could not even catch their breaths!

The Normal Mode of the dungeon was simple enough, but the Hard Mode of the dungeon was a good 'entry examination' that separated the wheat from the chaff. Plus, none of the parties were complete yet. The Dungeon Expedition Force of the Lone Desert Smoke only managed to take down 11 bosses of the dungeon before the dungeon reset. The Dungeon Reset Time for a 50-player scale dungeon is 10 days (In-game Time), but truth to be told, the Dungeon Expedition Force of the Lone Desert Smoke only took two days to defeat 10 bosses. It took approximately 8 days for them to slay the 11th boss!

Furthermore, the final 5 bosses are expected to be increasing in difficulty, and that is just the Hard Mode of the dungeon! How hard would it really be when it comes to the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon then?

Naturally, the higher the difficulty, the better the rewards!

The bosses in Hard Mode would only drop Yellow-Gold Tier equipment, while the bosses in Hardcore Mode would have higher



tendencies of dropping Violet-Platinum Tier equipment! So if the difficulty of the dungeon in Hardcore Mode does not meet a certain standard, then everyone will stand a chance of getting Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, and the entire game would be full of players with Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, totally defeating the purpose of equipment tiers!

Zhang Yang had thought about using his {God of War Transformation} to end the boss immediately. However, the cooldown period for the {God of War Transformation} is 3 days long! If he uses it to kill one boss at a time, then Zhang Yang could only kill 4 bosses before the dungeon resets. After the dungeon is being reset, Zhang Yang would have to repeat killing the bosses all over again!

Well, shortcuts are not meant for long-term solutions. Increasing the base skill and strength of the party is the best way to do it. After all, there are still countless of dungeons to be cleared in the future, and the bosses would only get even more difficult in the future. So, it would be impossible for Zhang Yang to always rely on his {God of War Transformation} skill.

According to the ‘history’ of Zhang Yang’s previous life, it took more than 3 months (Real Time) to completely clear the dungeon, starting with the first boss in the Normal Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress to the final boss Dragon Throat Orc Lord Basseula in the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. It was like hell broke loose, as people and monsters were roaring in misery and death!

Therefore, Zhang Yang had no need to worry about other parties

snatching the 'First Clear' of the dungeon away. He could just focus on aiding his core players in acquiring their own [Inheritances]. By having [Inheritance], the power level of a player is totally different than before, for the better, of course!

"Little Yang, I've almost completed it all!" the panting sound of Fatty Han was heard loud and clear through the party channel, "Come and help me handle the final boss!"

"Alright, I'll be there in just a second!"

Zhang Yang agreed to help Fatty Han. He brought up his world map to check on the location of that fatty. Then he rode on Whitey Jr. and headed straight towards the location of Fatty Han. Fatty Han was currently in the Hidayat Wilderness map, at where the Antioch Forest was. It is a Level 120 - 150 Grinding Map. Therefore, there were no signs of any players on that map. Unless there are special quests requiring players to go to that map, players would only proceed in an orderly way. So, there is no way that they would suddenly come to a high leveled map to grind their levels.

When he arrived at the scene, Zhang Yang saw that fatty Han was hiding in the bushes by a manor. Fatty Han was acting extremely nervous, as he would look around very carefully like a stealthy criminal who had just committed a crime.

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh as he landed the ground, "Fatty, why are you looking all shady over there? Is someone trying to poke your ass or what?"

"Oh my mother of god!" Fatty Han was instantly scared shitless as he jumped straight out from the bushes, "What the hell, little Yang! Don't scare me like this! And lower your voice down! The area before us is filled with Vampires, and they are all elite Tier! I almost died trying to fight them off!"

Zhang Yang came down from the back of Whitey Jr., "The boss that you need to slay is in there?"

"That's right. The description of the quest states that this is an S-Rank quest. So I immediately thought of you!" Fatty Han tapped on Zhang Yang's shoulder, "This should be a Mythical Tier boss, right?"

Zhang Yang shook his head, as the quest for the [Vampire Inheritance] is just a B-Rank quest. It's difficulty was just like the [King Kong Inheritance] that he had cleared in his previous life. So, the final boss of the quest should be the same Tier as the King Kong boss as well. This boss should be a Level 150 Ethereal boss.

Of course, there would still be some differences between the bosses, even though they are all in the same Tier. For example, the Ethereal Tier boss Black Dragon Anubask had an HP bar that was 10 times longer than the HP bar of a normal Ethereal Tier boss! If Felice had not gone crazy on the boss, Zhang Yang would not have completed his quest so soon, and it would have taken him a unimaginably long time to complete the quest!

"Let me summon the witch, little brat and the remaining of our party members over before we charge in!" Zhang Yang equipped his [Party Summon Order].

"Little Yang, oh my little Yang. You've 'tasted' that big breasted Snow already, have you?" Fatty Han suddenly interrupted Zhang Yang as he looked at Zhang Yang with a sleazy look.

Zhang Yang shrugged and said, "Why do you ask?"

"What the hell! Just look at her! That witch is always revealing her flirtatious face at you every single time she sees you. It's like she haven't write the words saying she had been ... 'moisturized' by someone! If you are saying that it wasn't you, then this 'someone' will be as good as dead!" Fatty Han looked at Zhang Yang with an ambiguous expression on his face.

"... er... we should start discussing the boss!" Zhang Yang was determined to ignore this annoying fatty and he activated the [Party Summon Order]. In less than 10 seconds, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the rest of his party members arrived.

He observed her intently, and it was as Fatty Han said, Han Ying Xue was indeed emitting her flirtatious aura all over the place, as every single gesture she made suggested something sexual. It's like she had been awoken to a new world of passion and love, and she was unconsciously letting it show! While Zhang Yang found it highly distracting, even Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream would go blind if they had to watch her a little longer.

Zhang Yang would have never expected that the witch would actually bring in her her new awakening into the game. Worst of all, Fatty Han could see it as clear as day! Let's just hope that that

fatty can keep his mouth shut!

"Brother Fatty! I'm really having a hard time imagining a fat bat flying in midair!" Endless Starlight started to tease Fatty Han about his body size.

"Haha! Little Starlight, there is no need to be envious of me! Rest assured, when I have obtained the [Vampire Inheritance], I shall help you get a C-Class [Inheritance]! At least you can also 'transform' yourself that way!" Fatty Han laughed out loud.

"Fine. Enough with the chatters! Let's hurry up and get things started. We'll get over with it sooner! Move out!" Zhang Yang waved his [Heaven Shaker] around and walked straight towards the manor.

"Who goes there? How dare you trespass into the private property of Count Ferra!" a middle-aged man in the manor shouted. This man was wearing a ceremonial robe of sorts, and looked like a noble aristocrat.

[Vampiric Familiar] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 140

HP: 1,400,000

Defense: 2,440

Attack Power: 9,868 - 11,868

Skills:

[Blood Drain]: Drains the blood of the target, inflicting 10,000 Shadow Damage to the target, while recovering the same amount of HP, based on the damage done to the target.

[Claw Skewer]: Tears open the target with sharp claws, inflicting 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage.

Note: The Vampiric Familiar that serves The Vampire Count Ferra, loyal to the master, brutal to the enemies.

"What the hell! This is an elite monster? The damage is already as high as a Yellow-Gold boss!" after reading the attributes of the monster, Endless Starlight let out a high pitched scream.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Well, you are in a higher leveled map now, of course the elites here would be much more powerful! If you ever get to the Level 300 map, the attacks of the elite monsters over there should be even more powerful than the attacks of a Holy Tier boss! The damage of this elite monster is not the main concern. The main thing, is that the monster's level is 30 levels higher than us, so there is a Level Gap Suppression!"

"However, the Level Gap Suppression function of the game is only annoying when it comes to boss battles. The elite monsters

won't give us that much trouble, yet!" Zhang Yang activated his {Charge} and threw himself into the monster, followed by a powerful swing of his [Heaven Shaker] that bashed the monster in the head.

‘-7,097!’

Huh? That damage is really low!

Under the boost of Wei Yan Er's {Strength Aura}, Zhang Yang's attack should have reached up to the range of 22,820 - 26,320. Even if the monster has 2,440 Defense, Zhang Yang's {Eagle Eye} could ignore 65% of the monster's Defense! So, he should be able to cause about 21,966 - 25,466 damage to the monster.

This is the doing of the Level Gap Suppression function! Zhang Yang's damage has greatly suffered because of it!

# Chapter 519: The Vampire Count Ferra

---

In 'God's Miracle', when it comes to the Level Gap Suppression' feature of the game, there is a 10% rate of players inflicting only 10% of the damage that they can cause to monsters. Then, there is a 20% rate for players to only inflict 20% of their initial damage. This follows with a 30% rate for players to only inflict 30% of their initial damage. Last but not least, there is a 40% rate for players to only inflict 50% of their initial damage.

In other words, players would never have the chance to inflict more than 50% of their normal damage when the Level Gap Suppression' function of the game is activated, due to the large gap between the level of players and the level of monsters. The strike that Zhang Yang landed on the monster was only 20% of his normal damage.

On the contrary, the Level Gap Suppression' function of the game would give the monster an advantage over the players. The monsters would have a 10% rate of causing damage 5 times higher than their normal damage, 20% rate of causing a damage 4 times higher than their normal damage, 30% rate of causing a damage 3 times higher of their normal damage, and a 40% rate of causing damage 2 times higher!

Therefore, it is not an easy task to fight way above their levels, especially when it comes to engaging a boss that has a higher level than you.

The situation was exactly like Zhang Yang's previous encounter with the Black Dragon, Anubask. Without Felice's explosive



madness, even if Zhang Yang had brought 10,000 Level 100 players along with him, the boss would have ‘eaten’ them like an evening snack! There was not even the slightest chance of Zhang Yang slaying that boss!

To carry out an Excessive Level Challenge on bosses with a higher level than the players, especially on an insanely powerful boss like the Black Dragon Anubask, players must have enough number of [Forbidden Scrolls] at their disposal. Players must willing to use them like tissue papers, without having to care about the cost. As Zhang Yang had already obtained the {God of War Transformation}, he had finally acquired the strength that would make it possible for him to go up against the Black Dragon Anubask! However, the insanely long HP bar of the boss would still pose a question on whether Zhang Yang could put down the boss within two hours. The possibility of that lay within the efficiency of his damage output. Since the moment Zhang Yang’s {God of War Trasnformation} period is over would be the moment where the boss instantly kills him!

Shoof!

The Vampiric Familiar swung one of his hands as blood began to ooze out of the Zhang Yang’s chest. A red number popped right on top of Zhang Yang’s head.

‘-21,063!’

"My goodness! Are we battling an elite monster or a boss?" Endless Starlight let out a shocked scream.

"The Level Gap Suppression system is pretty awesome. The monster scored a triple damage!" Hundred Shots had certain understanding towards the data and statistics about the game, "If the monster can cause 5 times of it's average damage, then the damage on us would have been even greater!"

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly activated their healing Skills on Zhang Yang to begin healing his HP bar back up. The HP bar of Zhang Yang was recovering swiftly.

Although there is a Level Gap Suppression on the party that causes the firepower of the party to reduce steeply, there is a saying - 'An elephant can be killed by a large number of mosquitoes'!. In less than 40 seconds, the Vampiric Familiar collapsed to the ground and died. Well, at least the monster dropped a couple of coins and a few pieces of [Spiritual Cloth].

"Killing one elite monster here is so tiring!" Daffodil Daydream complained as she looked at the countless Vampiric Familiars wandering around every corner of the manor.

"Let's do this!"

The party charged into the manor. Although the Level Gap Suppression was still in place, the monsters in the manor did not give the party much difficulty. After all, this party is possibly the best party in the entire world, at the current stage of the game. Even while their fire power is being restricted by the system, it only took them about 3 to 4 hours to slash all their way into the

deepest area of the manor. The boss 'Vampire Count Ferra' that they were required to slay was located in a small garden.

[Vampire Count Ferra] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 145

HP: 43,500,000

Defense: 9,410

Melee Attack: 53,216 - 61,216

Skills:

[Talon's Seduction]: every time when hitting the target, 10% of damage dealt would be turned into HP points.

[Heal]: The vampires have extraordinary healing abilities, heals 10,000 HP every 3 seconds.

[Vampiric Blood Drain]: Transforms into little bats, each bat has 500,000 HP. The number of bats is based on the number of players engaged in the battle, multiplied by 2. Every player will receive the {Vampiric Blood Drain} from 2 little bats. Players will not receive any damage during the duration of this Skill. However, as long as one of the bats is still alive, the players will lose HP and die instantly on the moment when the duration of the Skill ends. Each

player's death will contribute to 1% HP recovery of Ferra. The {Vampiric Blood Drain} will last for 30 seconds.

[Bat's Voyage]: Transforms into a bat. Can fly in the air.

Note: The Vampire Count Ferra is said to be one of the oldest ancient Vampires. He is the progenitor of the Vampires' Strength!

After reading the description of {Vampiric Blood Drain}, everyone frowned intensely on the spot.

To empty out a total of 1,000,000 HP within 30 seconds, each of them must maintain their DPS at 33,000 damage! Putting the Level Gap Suppression aside, for now, even if they were battling monsters of equivalent levels at the moment, it would not be possible for them to reach such a high amount of DPS! Each of them could only reach 7,000 to 8,000, at most! Of course, everyone could also gather around and use their AoE Skills to clear the bats out, but the fact that each of the bats had a total of 500.000 HP would be quite the headache!

"Little Yang, why is this boss so insanely powerful?" Fatty Han was flabbergasted. Just as he was about to finish the final quest of his Inheritance Linking Quest, it had just only struck him that it is not possible for him to slay the final boss! Of course, he would feel frustrated and emotional!

This is an Ethereal boss, so it would not be an easy battle at all!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "This boss is Level 145. That means the developers had considered only letting players come and challenge this boss when they are at least Level 115. Players should get a whole set of Mythical Tier equipment first, before doing this! Under such consideration, it is only fair that each player only gets 30 seconds to empty out a total of 500,000 HP!"

After all, the game company had put this Level Suppression system in place to prevent players from going out of bounds. If players started getting too far ahead by themselves, the number of high level bosses would reduce very rapidly, and that would reduce the 'lifespan' of the game as well!

"So... are we still... doing this?" Fatty Han was asking, with a weak voice.

"Of course we are! Didn't you see that this is an Ethereal Tier boss? If we take him down, we can get another 'First Clear' title!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud, "So when the boss uses {Vampiric Blood Drain} later, we'll just gather around and use our AoE Skills at the same time. It would still be possible to clear out those bats within the time frame!"

"Let's try it out now!" Zhang Yang waved his [Heaven Shaker] around to loosen up his joints, and then he activated his {God of War Transformation} and activated his {God of War's Shield}. As two divine wings sprouted out of his back, Zhang Yang looked like a god that has just descended from the heavens. As he began to charge at the boss, he threw out his {Spear of Obliteration,} as usual.

‘-44,520!’

After activating his {God of War Transformation}, Zhang Yang had a total of 575% additional damage. Theoretically, he should be able to cause approximately 90,000 damage to the boss. However, because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, Zhang Yang could only cause 50% of his initial damage. Although the amount of damage that he dealt was still terrifying, Zhang Yang was still unhappy about the significant weakening of his power!

"Hahaha! Live creatures setting foot in my territory! Are you those Dragon Slayers or the Master of Justice who are trying to become famous by killing me?" This Count looked noble and dignified. He was dressed in a pale, gold tux. He had that handsome, nobleman vibe to his appearance. His fingers were fine and dainty.

With a leap, the Count leaped midair and he transformed into a giant bat, gliding towards Zhang Yang. He reached out with his right hand. All of a sudden, all five of his fingernails shot out, like 5 blood-coated switchblades. It was a horrific scene!

"What a handsome boss!"

"Agreed! What a manly man!"

"If this man can ride on a white horse, then he can really be a Prince Charming!"

Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and Fantasy Sweetheart instantly started gossiping as they began to talk about how handsome and attractive the boss was.

Wei Yan Er stared at the boss for a brief moment, and then she suddenly said, "I know why the boss does not have a white horse to ride! Because he has sucked the white horse dry! Hahaha!" After that, she began to laugh on. The little brat had a terrible sense of dry humor, and started rolling on the floor, laughing. But after seeing that no one was laughing with her, she stopped and frowned, and then she said, "What a bunch of boring people!"

‘-10429!’

‘+10429!’

As the boss' claws raked through his flesh, Zhang Yang received a horrifying amount of damage, while the effect of {Talon's Seduction} kicked in and healed the boss by more than 10,000 HP!

"Oh my lord! Zhang Yang already has more than 10,000 Defense when he is transformed, and he also has a 40% Passive Damage Immunity! So if the damage of one hit from the boss is that high, wouldn't regular Zhang Yang be dead already?" Lost Dream could not help but to scream in shock.

Indeed, even after Zhang Yang activated his {Vitality Aura}, he

would still only have a total amount of 118,720 HP. If Zhang Yang did not have the 20% additional Passive Damage Immunity that the {God of War's Shield} provided, even with a full bar of health, he would still be instantly killed by the boss! Furthermore, that particular strike had only been buffed up by 3 layers of the game's damage oppression system, due to their differences in levels. If the boss had been lucky enough to roll 4 layers, or even 5 layers of the Damage Oppression buff, the damage would have been even more ridiculous!

Right after he hooked the boss's aggro onto him, everyone began to channel their damage output on the boss as they activated their powerful skills on the boss.

With their current healing capabilities, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart need not worry about whether they would waste mana on unnecessary healing, such as overhealing someone beyond their maximum hit points. This was because the attack of the boss is so powerful, that one strike from the boss would already inflict more than 60,000 damage! The highest damage that the boss could deal would be about 180,000 damage! It would be impossible for the two of them to overheal anyone or anything! The two of them could let loose on their healings!

Fortunately, the Skill {Block} could negate one third of the boss's damage. The stronger the attack of the boss, the more damage that {Block} would protect the player from! This has largely increased Zhang Yang's survival capability in a battle.

Generally speaking, the normal attack of the boss could cause about 100,000 damage. So, by excluding the effect of {Block} once



in every 6 seconds, the DpS of the boss would reach up to 30,000 damage. On the other hand, the healing capabilities of Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart have been weakened by the Level Gap Suppression of the game. The HP that they could heal every second only reached up to about 10,000 HP.

In other words, Zhang Yang was losing roughly 23,000HP every passing second!

The {God of War Transformation} has raised the Maximum HP by 40 times! However, even though Zhang Yang has over 4,748,800 HP at the moment while constantly using [Level 10 Potions] to heal himself while the healers are healing him, it would still be not enough at all to keep up with the boss! Now, the best and most powerful Skill would be the special effect of the [Titan Chest Plate]! By activating the {Shield Wall}, he could gain back 10% of his HP for every second!

Although the effect had already been nerfed, Zhang Yang still had a 50% rate of recovery. Plus, the effect of the [Titan Wall] extended the duration of the {Shield Wall} by 5 seconds! So, he can recover a total of 75% HP over 150 seconds. That would already cover back the gap that Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart could not heal!

Therefore, theoretically speaking, Zhang Yang should be able to hold his own the boss!

Obviously, that would only be true if the attacks of the boss stayed consistent at the rate of causing 3 times its initial damage. But, if the boss suddenly hits the jackpot and inflicts a damage 5

times harder than the boss initially does, the outcome would be totally different. Furthermore, Zhang Yang's {God of War Shield} would only last for 10 minutes. After that, he would lose 20% of his Passive Damage Immunity!

Of course, Zhang Yang still had the {Radiance of the God of War} which he could use once in every 30 minutes. He would barely be able to make up for the 20% Passive Damage Immunity that he loses, after the effect of the {God of War Shield} fades.

# Chapter 520: A Fierce Battle with an Ethereal Boss

---

Zhang Yang acted without hesitation as he threw the {Glare of the Death God} on the boss.

For every passing second, his mind only thought of whether the 2-hour 'transformation' duration was enough for him to make his plan work. The cooldown period for the {Glare of the Death God} was only 60 minutes. So, he can actually use the Skill twice two times while he is still in his 'transformed' form. Henceforth, he would use {Glare of the Death God} immediately! Well, who knows whether he could really time it right by then. If he can throw a third {Glare of the Death God} on the boss in between that one split second before the 2-hour long {God of War Transformation} Skill is over, while the boss only has 10% HP remaining on him, then Zhang Yang might stand a better chance at slaying the boss!

Zhang Yang was really lucky this time. The {Glare of the Death God} could not be resisted by the boss. A large dark skull appeared right on top of the boss's head in just an instant!

Although this was the first time many of them had witnessed this Skill, they had already heard from Zhang Yang himself about how powerful this Skill is. Within the 10-second period of time, everyone no longer tried to hit as hard as they could, instead, they were hitting as fast as they could, in order to increase the number of hits on the boss. The main reason was that everyone understood how the {Glare of the Death God} works. They just wanted to increase the rate of triggering the special effect of the Skill, by increasing their attack rate!

‘-450,000!’

‘-450,000!’

...

The eight DPS players with a bunch of [Pets], 4 powerful Battle Companions (The other two belonging to Lost Dream and Daffodil Daydream, however, the initial Tiers of their Battle Companions are only Yellow-Gold Tier), and 7 [Servants] were all trying hard to hit the boss as frequently as possible, without thinking about their damage output! Their attack rate was really off the charts, causing the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} to trigger consecutively! All 10 chances of triggering the special effect were used up within 5 seconds!

"You bastard! How is it possible that you know the Special Skill of the Hell's Lord!" Ferra let out a raging roar as he launched his assaults madly towards Zhang Yang with his 10 finger nails, looking like 'blades of hell'.

"Hahaha! I am the representative of the Hell's Lord in this realm. Little Vampire Ferra, surrender yourself and pledge your allegiance to me!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he swung his 'hammer' at the boss.

"Impossible! The Hell's Lord has already fallen! Human, give me the secret Skill of the Hell's Lord. Then, I shall consider turning you into one of my undead familiars, instead of turning you into a dried corpse!" the boss threatened Zhang Yang.

Fatty Han could not help but to feel shocked. After thinking about it, he said, "Little Yang, if only we could all get this Skill and take our turns to use it on a boss, they would all be dead in no time!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I am guessing that this Skill only drops once in the entire game. If everyone could farm for this Skill and learn it, then all boss battles will become too easy!"

The moment when the {Glare of the Death God} ended, the damage output of the party went back to normal again. The boss had over 10,000 defense. Even if they used 5 layers of {Cripple Defense} on him, he would still have about 5,000 Defense. Furthermore, Zhang Yang and his party members had been weakened by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, making the total damage output of the whole party so poor that it was painful to look at! Their total DpS was only about 10,000 damage. Furthermore, the boss also had two HP recovery Skills, {Talon's Seduction} and {Heal}, making the boss even more difficult to kill! The HP bar of the boss was reducing extremely gradually!

"Haha! You utterly useless beings, are no match for me!" Ferra let out a series of words that trembled as he extended his claws out even further. He slashed at the shield of Zhang Yang and sent Zhang Yang flying in the opposite direction. It was fortunate that

Zhang Yang gains the ability to fly when he transforms himself into the form of the {God of War Transformation}. So, he instantly flew straight back up to the boss and continued to battle the boss.

The Level Gap Suppression function of the game is really extremely annoying!

Even though the {God of War Transformation} is a very powerful Skill, but Zhang Yang still felt that he was being oppressed by the boss! Back in his life, Zhang Yang had once taken out a Violet-Platinum boss, together with hundreds of its minions when he first transformed as a King Kong. It really felt awesome of him to feel so powerful for the first time!

However, standing before an Ethereal boss made him feel weak again, as if he was being 'shrunk' back to his previous power level!

Well, this is what happens to players when they do not heed the warnings and go on doing an Exceed Level Challenge! Players should be at least Level 115 before challenging Vampire Count Ferra. But, Zhang Yang and his party had insisted on challenging the boss now. Well, who are you kidding? Of course this boss battle is not going to be easy!

"Living beings, tremble before my shadows!" Ferra suddenly turned into a blur, and his body was transformed into 20 little bats, These bats then swarmed up towards the 10 players.

[Ferra's Incarnation] (Normal, Special Creature)

Level: 145

HP: 500,000

Defense: 0

Attack: 0

Skills:

[Blood Drain]: Drains the blood of the target, will die after 30 seconds and recovers 1% health for Ferra.

These bats were basically unstoppable. All of them charged at everyone as they started to bite at their necks, faces, wrists and other spots that were not covered and protected by equipment.

Without the need to inform them, everyone stood together in one same spot and activated their AoE Skills.

{Horizontal Sweep}

‘-98221!’

‘-56860!’

‘-37984!’

‘-20304!’

.....

The 20 little bats were receiving different amount of damages at same time. However, the amount of the damages were that were inflicted upon the bats differed greatly.

Zhang Yang let out a gentle humph. With a golden light gushing out of his entire body, Zhang Yang struck out with his {God Of War’s Crushing Strike}!

‘-28,970!’



‘-28,970!’

...

He initially has about 1,000 points of Strength attribute. But after he switched up to the [Mysterious Metallic Greaves], he had acquired an additional of 1,201 Strength attribute. And after he added the power of 4 [Gemstones] onto his equipment, together with the 10% increment on his Strength that Wei Yan Er’s {Strength Aura} provided, Zhang Yang’s Strength attribute had reached up to a total of 2,897 points!

Unfortunately, the damage of {God of War’s Crushing Strike} would not be affected by any additional damage effects that are added to the player. However, the Chaos Damage that is 10 times of the Strength Attributes would not be affected by Armor Defense and Magic Defense of the target, not even the Level Gap Suppression effect. The Skill will perform as it always would, without any loss of power!

Although Zhang Yang could only accumulate 1 point of ‘God of War Energy Point’ every 10 seconds, allowing the {God of War Crushing Strike} to be available for dispatching every 30 seconds, but Zhang Yang did not have any other Skills that would require the usage of the ‘God of war Energy Point’. So, after battling the boss for another 5 minutes, he had succeeded in accumulating a

total of 30 'God of War Energy Points'. That amount of Energy Points would be enough for Zhang Yang to activate the {God of war Crushing Strike} 10 times!

After the 1-second Global Cool Down Period, Zhang Yang activated another {God of War Crushing Strike} once again, and caused about 30,000 damage to all the bats within his Skill's attack range!

"Wow! What sorcery is this? A player can become so bloody powerful after using a 'Transformation' Skill!" Endless Starlight was looking at Zhang Yang in admiration, and then he said, "Boss, help me get the Class S Inheritance for Knights! I too, want to feel the rush of a 'Transformation' Skill!"

"Endless Starlight, you can stop thinking about the 'Transformation' part, you're already a pervert in transformation form! It's more practical that way!" Fatty Han laughed out loud.

Zhang Yang activated his {God of War Crushing Strike} 9 consecutive times, and after he was done with the skill, his {Horizontal Sweep} had also cooled down. So, he struck with his {Horizontal Sweep} and caused another wave of damage onto the bats! Unfortunately for Zhang Yang, now that he did not possess the special effect of his [Sword of Purging Devourer], the damage values only popped out on top of the bats, once.

However, the impact of the {God of War Crushing Strike} was amazing! After 10 consecutive times of activation, the 'God of War Energy Points' of Zhang Yang was depleted. But at the same time, every monster around him was inflicted with about 300,000

damage! Meanwhile, Felice spat her flames from midair. After her 10-second {Pulverizing Flame}, she had also caused about 10,000 damage to every one of the bats. However, the {Pulverizing Flame} had a cool down period of 30 seconds. So, Felice could only attack one enemy at a time!

After about 15 seconds later, all the bats were left with only about 100,000 HP! However, the {God of War Crushing Strike} was not available at the moment. So the damage that Zhang Yang could deal to the bats had sharply reduced!

"Dummy, should we use our {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}?" Han Ying Xue asked.

The paired skills {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} did Chaos Damage, so they would not be affected by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game. They should be able to deal 5,000 damage for every second and inflict a total damage of 75,000 to each of the little bats in the remaining 15 seconds. With other party members supporting them with their attacks as well, they should be able to clear out the bats with ease!

Zhang Yang shook his head immediately. The boss battle was only beginning. Having no idea on how many time the boss might use his {Vampiric Blood Drain}, if they really used up their paired skills this early in the battle, then how are they going to survive the next round of such attacks? Their paired skills had a cool down period of 72 hours!

Everyone was trying their best at maximizing their damage output as they gulped down bottles of [Power Potions] whenever

they could!

On the 20th second, Zhang Yang activated another {Horizontal Sweep} with his long, quarterstaff-like hammer, striking out the best AOE attack skill that he had. Instantly, another wave of damage values popped out on top of the bats, at the same time! A few of them were killed by the attack wave!

{Thunder Strike}!

In his transformed mode, even the {Thunder Strike} could reach up to 20,000 basic damage. But unfortunately, because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, the {Thunder Strike} could not reach the expected amount of damage. The bats only received about 10,000 damage, a small number of them was only inflicted with about 2,000 damage!

However, the remaining HP bar of the bats were already rather low. Under the aggressive assault of Zhang Yang's party, quite a number of them were falling off from the body of Zhang Yang's party members as they died.

25 seconds, 7 bats remaining!

26 seconds, 5 bats remaining!

27 seconds, 3 bats remaining!

28 seconds, 1 bat remaining!

On the 29th second, the last bat had finally fallen off the body of Endless Starlight!

After the 30th second, the bats that were on the ground suddenly came back to life as they flew up and reformed back into the middle-age gentleman. Ferra let out a deafening roar, and then he dashed towards Zhang Yang, aiming at his neck.

They had succeeded in surviving one of the deadly skills of the boss!

Everyone let out a breath of relief as their confidence increased! Zhang Yang currently had more than 4,000,000 amount of HP, giving him a much larger margin of error. The two healers could even close their eyes and simply focus on healing Zhang Yang without the need to worry about inefficient healing. They also need not worry about the fact that any slight delay of their healing skills might cause Zhang Yang to be instantly killed!

It was very hard to judge whether this battle was a tough one or an easy one. As long as they can kill all the bats within the time frame of 30 seconds, they should be able to empty out the total amount of 45,000,000 HP of the boss within two hours!

Well, killing the bats within the time frame is interrelated to emptying out the long HP bar of the boss! Because if any of the players cannot kill the bats within the time frame, they would die, and contribute in healing the HP of the boss back up! If that happens, Zhang Yang and his party member would not stand a

chance at slaying the boss within the limited time period!

10 minutes, 20 minutes, 50 minutes!

The boss had already used his {Vampiric Blood Drain} for more than 10 times, but the party had managed to kill all the little bats within the time frame! They managed to do that all, thanks to the {God of War's Crushing Strike} that Zhang Yang has. The impact of the strikes really do pack a punch. The damage that the Skill can cause took up half of the total damage output of the party! Han Ying Xue and the rest of the party members saw the potential of having an [Inheritance], and were even more motivated to get their own Inheritances!

60 minutes!

The cool down period of the {Glare of the Death God} was finally over, Zhang Yang activated the Skill once more.

‘Ineffective!’

But Zhang Yang was out of luck this time. The moment when the Skill was thrown onto the boss, a large word popped up right above the head of Count Ferra.

"Sun of the beach!"

"Bad luck I guess!"

"This is outrageous!"

Fatty Han and the others immediately complained the moment they saw the letters!

The boss still had 52% HP at that current moment!

# Chapter 521: 'First Clear' of Ethereal Tier Boss

---

Truth be told, out of the 48% HP that they had taken off, 10% of it was the additional 'bonus' provided by the {Glare of the Death God}. This would indirectly mean that Zhang Yang and his party members were only capable of reducing 38% of the boss's HP bar in an hour! Based on their current performance, the boss would still have 14% HP remained on him when Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation} wears off!

By then, Zhang Yang should be able to use another {Glare of the Death God}. As long as it takes effect, they should still stand a chance at bringing the HP bar of the boss down to 4%.

Still, 4% of such an HP of such magnitude is still a ridiculously large sum. According to the current total DPS of Zhang Yang and his party members, they would still need to go all out for 6 minutes, before they could empty out that hypothetical 4%. Without the {God of War Transformation}, it begs the question of whether Zhang Yang and gang would even survive for 30 seconds. So a duration of 6 minutes is really a long time for them!

Furthermore, what happens if the {Glare of the Death God} does not work? What then?

Battling super powerful bosses are heavily luck-based ventures! For instance, if the second {Glare of the death God} manages to take effect, then the boss should only have 4% HP remaining on him when Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation} fades away. The [Zombie Potions] should be able to take care of the remaining



4%!

If not, they would really be in big trouble!

Although they still had their super Skills {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, 100,000 damage would only scratch the boss!

Going all out!

Zhang Yang and his gang did not have the luxury to even think about saving cost, or weighing the pros and cons of anything! They took all sorts of [Potions] like there was no tomorrow! Within the 2-hour time frame of the {God of War Transformation}, they continuously spammed the skills over again and again --- immediately right after the cool down period, they would just activate their Skills in an attempt to maximize their damage output as efficiently as possible! Every single one of them understood, that if they failed this time, they would have to wait for another 3 days before they can challenge this boss again!

--- without the support of the {God of War Transformation}, they would merely be insects cowering before the boss!

10 minutes before the {God of War Transformation} ended, the HP of the boss dropped down to the remaining 20%.

Under the effects of [Power Potions], everyone decided that it was the right moment to activate their super Skills. They chose the right timing to do so, and began to channel their damage towards

the boss at the very last moment.

{Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

‘-14,000’

‘-14,000’

...

Other than Fantasy Sweetheart, the other nine members in the party activated their {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}! Zhang Yang had also activated his {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} to boost the damage output of the entire party! However, the damage that {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} could deal had been greatly diminished, due to the Level Gap Suppression function of the game. {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} inflicts Chaos Damage while {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} inflicts Nature damage. {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} performed much poorer than {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} in this case!

10 seconds later, the boss had lost about 1,500,000 HP.

16% HP remaining!

Without having a second thought, Zhang Yang activated all of his remaining powerful Skills on the boss. Since his Rage Bar would always be filled to the brim, Zhang Yang had no worries about having not enough Rage Points to use.

‘-401988!’ {Killing Cleave}

‘-94212!’ {Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-198422!’ {Destructive Smash}!

‘-48222!’ {Frost Strike}!

Even though Zhang Yang had landed quite a number of Critical Attacks, his damage output was still affected by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, making it impossible to reach his maximum damage output. But, his current damage was already pretty satisfying, especially his {Killing Cleave}! An attack that could reach up to a 400,000 damage could really leave people

stunned with their jaws hanging wide open!

This is the power of an [Inheritance]!

Everyone was amazed by it! Fatty Han was anxious and worried at the same time. He was beginning to imagine the glory on him after he gets his [Inheritance]. But at the same time, he was worried that all of their efforts might go to waste if they fail to take down this super boss!

15%, 14%, 13%!

The {God of War Transformation} was nearing its end!

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang activated {Shield Wall} the moment the {God of War Transformation} was over.

‘-58,417!’

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. He had still received so much damage with his {Shield Wall} active! Without the {Shield Wall}, this strike would have definitely dealt over 200,000 damage! He would have been instantly killed!

After tanking the boss for another 14 seconds, the cooldown period for {Glare of the Death God} was finally over. Zhang Yang prayed deep down his heart as he threw another {Glare of the Death God} onto the boss! If this takes effect, they still had a chance of finishing this! Or else, they would have to die and come

back again after 3 days!

Shoof! A shrouding dark skull began to form on top of the boss!

It was a success!

Everyone was cheering in joy, as they now stood a chance at bringing down the boss!

‘-450000!’

‘-450000!’

...

The HP bar of the boss started dropping rapidly, 1% at a time.

"You bastard! It's that skill again!" Ferra let out a raging roar into the sky. He was so furious that his very face itself started twisting up into a knot, "I shall exterminate you! Exterminate every one of you tiny little insects! To actually push me this far, you all must

die!"

"Hey witch! Come! It's time to use our paired Skills!" Zhang Yang quickly shouted to Han Ying Xue.

Han Ying Xue nodded, and she directed her Flying Mount [Bumblebee] towards Zhang Yang. She jumped off her [Mount] and stood by Zhang Yang's side.

The two of them held their hands together as they activated their {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew}!

‘Immune’! ‘Immune’!

The word ‘Immune’ kept popping out on the top of Zhang Yang's head as the boss continuously raked at Zhang Yang with its claws. On the other side of things, the boss was receiving a steady stream of 5,000 Chaos Damage numbers!

30 seconds passed, and the bombardment of the {Blizzard Sky} and {Luna's Dew} finally stopped. The boss reached out with his claws and gave Zhang Yang two powerful slashes! The first hit caused 100,000 damage, while the second hit caused 240,000 damage, killing Zhang Yang in an instant!

However, a white holy light flashed across Zhang Yang's entire body, and he got back on his feet immediately --- {Rise Anew}!

However, without the support of the {God of War

Transformation}, Zhang Yang was like a piece of wet paper standing right before the boss! The boss killed him again with another strike that caused 250,000 damage! Still, it was not over, and Zhang Yang got back to his feet for the second time --- the [Zombie Potion]!

Although the [Zombie Potion] allows players to continue fighting for the next 30 seconds after they die, players would no longer be able to retain the aggro of the boss. The boss immediately turned away, turning himself into a bat, and arrived right on Felice in just a blink of an eye. His claws penetrade all the way through her chest.

‘-248,128!’

‘+24,812!’

Blood oozed out from the chest wound of Felice as she turned into a white ball of light and flew back into the Battle Companion Slot within Zhang Yang’s inventory. At the same time, she dropped a level back to Level 103. She remained curled up in a fetal position as she lay quietly in the Battle Companion Slot. Zhang Yang would have to wait for another 10 minutes before he could summon Felice again.

"Haha! A bunch of weak imbeciles! I’m bored!" Ferra was finally beginning to display the power of an Ethereal boss! He started going on a killing spree as one after the other falls.

Wei Yan Er, Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream... every single one of them did not stand a chance at all. They were instantly killed by the boss! Fortunately, all of them had already taken a [Zombie Potion] prior to the battle! So, they were able to continue fighting for another 30 seconds after dying. The best part about this 30-second extension was that they would all be invincible for 30 seconds!

At that moment, the boss only had 1% HP remaining! That was only a total of 260,000 HP!

250,000, 240,000... 190,000! The effect of the [Zombie Potion] faded, and Zhang Yang was the first to collapse onto the ground. This time, he lay on the ground for good!

180,000!

150,000!

140,000!

Wei Yan Er sunk to the ground dead.

130,000!

110,000!

90,000!



Sun Xin Yu collapsed!

"Damage output! Damage output! We can finish this!" the gang shouted encouragements to each other as they started the sprint to the finish!

70,000!

50,000!

30,000!

10,000!

8,272!

3,711!

One by one, they hit the ground in dramatic fashion, as one by one, their [Zombie Potion] effects faded! The only one left standing was Fantasy Sweetheart!

{Punishment Ray}!

‘-2,311!’

"We are so close!"

"Go, go, Sweetheart!"

Fantasy Sweetheart swung her arms with all her might, trying her best to cast another {Punishment Ray}! That was literally the final thing she could do in that boss battle! Her own [Zombie Potion] ran out of time, and she too joined her comrades in death.

‘-2,212!’

"Argh ---" the boss let out a deafening roar to the skies as his slender body began to fall. As his body hit the ground heavily, the dust on the ground flew up.

"We did it! We really did it!"

Everyone was cheering through the party channel.

‘Ding! Congratulations for being the First Party of the server to slay an Ethereal Tier Boss, your glorious deeds shall be remembered forever in the Historical Lists of the world. As the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your party name shall be published on the Historical List, allowing the world to praise you!’

This kill has finally been recognized by the system! Thank god! Praise the lord!

Zhang Yang quickly entered the habitual 'Advertisement Slogan', and the Server started to repeat the announcement over again and again. In just a few seconds, Snow Seeker and Sky Shaman, followed by other players from other guilds began to congratulate Zhang Yang. At that moment, Zhang Yang could not even see anything in front of him, because the new messages kept on popping up right before his face.

"Haha! Everyone, quickly! We must get back to our dead bodies and resurrect ourselves first! Loot, don't forget the loot!" Zhang Yang laughed madly as he selected the option to release his soul. The, he began to sprint all the way back to his dead body!

While running back to his dead body, Zhang Yang could not help but to let out a sigh. He could not help but to think that, even though he already has the [God of War Inheritance], he had still struggled against such powerful bosses! If he had not come across the divinely powerful skill {Glare of the Death God}, it would have been impossible to slay the boss with just the 10 of them!

Well, it was very tiring indeed to do an Exceed Level Challenge in slaying a boss. Furthermore, this Vampire Count was not really that powerful. He did have the {Vampiric Blood Drain}, a rather considerable AoE attack. But, this Skill was rather unique, as it was basically a ticking time bomb! As long as players slay all the monsters within the given time frame, the party would not be harmed in any way, and they would also get a 30-second window to regroup!

The King Kong boss that Zhang Yang had slain in his previous life was even more annoying and harder to deal with. The boss would randomly shake the ground and throw rocks at the players without any sign of warning! If it is up for Zhang Yang to judge, he would say that the difficulty of this boss battle would be about as difficult as getting a Class C [Inheritance].

7 minutes later, all 10 of them had managed to resurrect themselves. All of them sat down and started taking some [Snacks] to recover. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er was the first to go up to the boss to check on the loot.

Although this was a legitimate 'First Clear', the boss had been ridiculously stingy. Only a total of two equipment were found on the ground. One was a violet necklace, while the other one was a dark-gray leather helmet. Everyone was soon feeling depressed and disappointed.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "This is probably the system's way of telling us not to simply go through an Exceed Level Challenge! Still, it doesn't really matter if loot is measly. We can always get more of them in the future. The most important thing about 'First Clears' are the additional rewards like [Skill Books]!"

"Hehe, noob tank sure is sharp as always! You got me!" Wei Yan Er took out two [Skill Books] and said, "There are two of these [Skill Books] and three [Middle-Tier Aura Stones]!"

"Yan Er, stop being such a tease! Just show us their attributes

already!"

Wei Yan Er giggled. After picking up all the coins, she picked up the dark-violet necklace and said, "Can you guess what Tier this equipment is? A Mythical, or an Ethereal?"

[Violet Coral Necklace] (Ethereal, Necklace)

Vitality: +1,089

Intelligence: +373

Spirit: +373

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 2,000 points.

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 740 points.

Equip: Absorbs 321 damage when struck.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces 20 levels of the Required Level.

"Wow! This is one awesome piece of equipment that we have here!" Fatty Han's eyes were popping out, "A Level 140 equipment that can be equipped when player reaches Level 120! You know how amazing that is? Furthermore, this equipment boosts both HP and MP, while also boosting damage and it even giving players the ability to absorb damage! This necklace has basically covered all aspects of combat!"

"Indeed!" Zhang Yang nodded. It would indeed be a major advantage if a Level 120 player can equip a Level 140 equipment. The player that equips this equipment would no doubt have the upper hand over other players of the same Level (Level 120)! This is one of the 'First Clear' rewards, so it makes sense that such a powerful equipment would be dropped. Well, for the moment, there is no other better equipment that boosts both the offense and defense of players!

Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and Fantasy Sweetheart automatically rolled dices, as if it was a daily ritual. Ironically, they knew each other so well that there was no need for pleasantries anymore. By the end of it, Fantasy Sweetheart was the one who got lucky and she acquired the amazing necklace.

The next equipment was the dark-gray leather helmet.

[Blackhawk Leather Helmet] (Ethereal, Leather Armor)

Defense: +192

Vitality: +4,356

Strength: +645

Agility: +1,490

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 8,700 points.

Equip: Increases damage and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Absorbs 641 damage when being hit.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 140

Special: Reduces 20 levels of the Required Level.

"What the hell! Is this a Leather Armor or a Heavy Armor!" Endless Starlight was so shocked that his voice had turned squeaky, "My Violet-Platinum Heavy Armor only gives me an additional 80 Defense! This piece of Leather Armor is too much! It actually adds 192 Defense! If my eyes aren't playing tricks with me, it also adds vitality points by more than 4,000 points! No, it's actually more than 4,000 HP!"

"This is an Ethereal Tier equipment, my friend!" Daffodil Daydream smiled, "Actually, it should give more than 6,000 vitality points after identification! One piece of such equipment would already provide about 60,000 HP... that amount is actually much higher than my current amount of HP!"

"That is why, people say that Levels and Equipment are keys to becoming successful in any online game!" Zhang Yang took the leather helmet over and said, "There are two Thief Classes and two Hunter Classes here, so, the four of you roll for it! Let's see who gets to keep this masterpiece! Forget the Ethereal Tier, the main point is that this equipment can be equipped, 20 levels earlier! That is more than just awesome already!"

Everyone had no reason to be polite to each other, as they had been party-mates since the beginning! So, the four of them rolled for it. By the end of it, Fatty Han was the one who struck the 'jackpot'! He had succeeded in acquiring the equipment!

However, it requires approximately 10 days or so just to level up once, after the Level 100 bracket. So, when Fatty Han reaches Level 120, it should be another 6 to 7 months in the future. Therefore, it would really be boring and frustrating to do an Exceed Level Challenge on higher level maps. They needed to pay for a bigger price, such as more effort needed to get things done, and they would also have to wait for a much longer time before they can equip any equipment they earn from doing so. After all, it is truly torturous to see a powerful piece of equipment lying quietly in your inventory, within your reach, but also out of your reach at the same time!



# Chapter 522: The Vampire Inheritance

---

However, the last two [Skill Books] that the little brat picked up were much less capable of such torture.

Wei Yan Er took out the first [Skill Book] and pasted the name of the book onto the party channel. The Skill on the [Skill Book] is called {Vampiric Touch}. It is a Skill that was not limited to Classes. Everyone stands a chance to learn it.

Everyone rolled for it. The little brat was the one who got the [Skill Book]. After she learned the Skill and revealed the description for the Skill, Wei Yan Er posted the description of the Skill onto the party channel immediately.

[Vampiric Touch]: Touches the target with the power of a Vampire! Lasts for 30 minutes. During the effective period, whenever the target receives any attack from the caster, 5% of the damage dealt by the caster would heal the caster's own party members (5 members at most). The caster can only place the spell on one target at a time. Furthermore, the healing effect of the {Vampiric Touch} would not generate additional aggro. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 60 seconds.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh, and he said, "If only I knew the details about this skill, I would have learned it himself. Or maybe, Sun Xin Yu should have learned it. It's such a waste to give this to the little brat!"

Wei Yan Er was enraged and yelled at Zhang Yang, "Noob tank!

I'm also a powerful DPS myself, you know it!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "What power are you talking about? The power of your poor chest? I can't seem to see any power whatsoever!"

"You!" Wei Yan Er was so angry that she kept stomping the ground, "That's because I haven't hit puberty yet! My mum's chest was ginormous! Just like my aunt's! If you don't believe it, you can ask sister Snow! Humph! Humph! I have inherited excellent genes! You shall regret the day you underestimated me! I shall grow a pair of boobs that are larger than sister Snow's! Just wait and see!"

Everyone could only try their best not to laugh. Well, most of them were covering their mouths and faces, physically stopping themselves from laughing.

Zhang Yang looked at her and nodded, "Little brat, just forget about that unrealistic fantasy of yours and accept the truth!"

"Pui! You bastard!" Wei Yan Er decided to huff off the loot. Then, she picked the other [Skill Book] up and pasted the name of the book onto the party channel.

[Skill Book: Destroyer's Madness]

Use: Teaches you the {Destroyer's Madness}.

Required Class: None

Required Level: 100

‘Huh? Another [Skill Book] that does not have any required Class?’ Everyone was curious and confused a little at the same time. Ever since they had entered the Chaos Realm, they had come across numerous [Skill Books] that did not have Class Requirements. Does this mean that every [Skill Book] in the Chaos Realm could be learned by anyone, blurring the lines between the Classes in the game?

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Well, this Skill can support those with [Inheritances] below Class C. So, this Skill will only serve its purpose until you guys get your [Inheritances]. I suggest that you guys get a Class B [Inheritance,] at the very least. So, concerning this Skill, since it wouldn't really matter much, let's roll and see who gets it."

"Silly Yu, what does this Skill do?" Han Ying Xue asked out of curiosity.

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely at her and said, "Whoever learns this, just post it up on our party channel later for everyone to see!"

The little brat got it again. The little brat was so full of herself that she threw a supercilious look at Zhang Yang. After learning the Skill, the little brat posted the description up on the party channel.

[Destroyer's Madness]: Upon activating the Skill, additional 50%

increase in Attack. Lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours. This skill shares the same Global Cool Down with 'Inheritance Transformation'.

"Only Class S, Class A, Class B and Class C have the 'Inheritance Transformation'. So this {Destroyer's Madness} here is designed to cover the disadvantages of the [Inheritance] Classes that are lower than Class C!" Zhang Yang explained.

Fatty Han had already acquired the quest items that he needed to complete his quest. Right after distributing the 3 pieces of [Middle-tier Aura Stones] among themselves, they tore their [Teleportation Scrolls] and traveled back to Morning Town. All of them agreed on one thing, that they will never repeat something as idiotic thing as performing an Exceed Level Challenge! It was suffering that they did not need in the first place!

Well, by doing an Exceed Level Challenge to kill a boss that is of much more higher level than you will earn the 'First Clear' title for the dungeon, or for slaying the boss. Other than that, you get nothing else. Firstly, you might not prevail. Even if you manage to slay the boss and get your hands on some pretty powerful equipment, you would still need to wait until your level is high enough to equip them! Finally, an Exceed Level Challenge is just too d\*mn difficult! Zhang Yang and his party had only managed to slay the Vampire Count Ferra because they were lucky. According to the system of the game, when players engages a boss that has Level Gap Suppression over them, rate of Spell type Skills affecting the bosses would be as low as only 10%! However, out of three times, the effect of {Glare of the Death God} got triggered twice! Zhang Yang had been ridiculously lucky, back there! So, counting on such luck would not be reliable, either! As it is, nobody should

be fighting above their weight class in this game!

However, the 'First Clear' for this boss had rewarded every single one of them with an additional Luck Attribute Point. Currently, Zhang Yang has accumulated up to a total of 23 Luck Attribute Points. No doubt, that amount was otherworldly.

Fatty Han did not get the [Vampire Inheritance] right away after slaying the boss. He still had some leftover quests to take care of before he can actually complete the entire Linking Quest. But they were all simple quests, so it wasn't really a big deal for him.

Endless Starlight, on the other hand, had witnessed how powerful a player becomes after obtaining a high-class [Inheritance]. He could uphold the 'oath' that he took previously, and begged Zhang Yang to aid him in getting a battle-type [Inheritance] for him. Well, according to Endless Starlight himself, he wasn't asking for much, he only wanted a Class B [Inheritance]!

Zhang Yang could not help but frown intensely. Fine, Class S [Inheritances] was definitely out of the picture, as there were only 6 of them in the entire game. Meanwhile, all Class A [Inheritances] was as well hidden as Class S [Inheritances], which would be very difficult to obtain. Even Zhang Yang had no idea on how to obtain any of the Class A [Inheritances]!

That would leave the Class B [Inheritance] as the last option then!

But truth to be told, in Zhang Yang's previous life, the most popular and prevalent [Inheritances] were the Class B

[Inheritances]. But to assume that Class B [Inheritance] are easy to acquire, would be total bullsh\*t! Although Class B [Inheritances] are not one-of-a-kind, each fragment of the [Inheritance] is unique. For example, if the first player acquires a piece of the fragment in Morning Town, Morning Town will never spawn a second fragment of the same piece!

In other words, other players cannot acquire the fragment from the same location, or the same quest, or the same monster. So, players cannot repeat the steps taken by the first player. Or else, everyone would be able to obtain the same [Inheritance], and Class B [Inheritances] would all become valueless!

As he gazed into the idiotic face of Endless Starlight, Zhang Yang started telling him the method of obtaining the [Kong Inheritance]. With Endless Starlight's current level of skills, Zhang Yang believed that Endless Starlight would still manage it without many problems --- of course, other than battling that terrifyingly powerful boss, the King Kong Lord!

Zhang Yang was also having doubts about himself. Even the with {God of War's Transformation}, because of the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, he would still be unable to defeat the boss! To acquire the [Kong Inheritance], it would be better for them to reach Level 120 first.

Initially, if Zhang Yang did not have the knowledge of his previous life, he might end up obtaining his first Fragment of an [Inheritance] three months later. With all the preliminary quests before the final quest that required players to battle the boss, players should be able to reach Level 110. By then, players should

be able to remove the Level Gap Suppression function of the game.

After Zhang Yang took care of the Vampire Count Ferra, the remaining 'errand' quests of Fatty Han's [Inheritance] Linking Quest were not difficult at all. In just two days time, the fatty had stepped up the figurative podium, triumphantly declaring that he has officially obtained the [Vampire Inheritance]!

On the spot, he posted the series of Skills that he had acquired from his new [Vampire Inheritance]. All members of the gang, other than Zhang Yang were drooling at the Skills.

[Bloodthirst]: Increases 40% damage dealt.

[Immortal Constitution]: Transforms into an immortal subject, providing 5% additional Passive Damage Immunity. Recover 1% of HP in every 10 seconds. Lasts for 10 minutes. Cool down: 60 minutes.

[Vampire Transformation]: Transforms into a Vampire. Increases initial Maximum HP by a multiplier of 20 times. Increases initial Defense by a multiplier of 3 times. There is a 70% rate to be immune to Magic Damage. Increases initial Attack by a multiplier of 3 times. When you are in the {Vampire Transformation} form, you will acquire 1 Vampire Energy Point every 10 seconds. Some of your Special Skills would require Vampire Energy Points to be used. The {Vampire Transformation} lasts for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Bat Form]: Disperses yourself into 10 little bats. These bats will

then approach and stick themselves onto targets and begin draining their blood. Recovers 1% HP every second. These blood-sucking little bats can fly. However, they are very weak, and can easily be killed. Reintegrating yourself would allow you to recover additional HP depending on the amount of blood that the bats manage to drain. {Bat Form} requires Vampire Energy Points to operate, 1 Vampire Energy Point can prolong the duration by 1 second. The {Bat Form} will be over when the Vampire Energy Bar is depleted, or when all of the little bats have been killed. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

Currently, Fatty Han only had 4 [Vampire Inheritance] Skills. Of course, his [Inheritance] was no match for Zhang Yang's [God of War Inheritance], however, it was enough for Fatty Han to brag about! The wretched fatty went straight to the arena as he pulled Endless Starlight and Lost Dream along. He then tested out the transformation on the first opponent in the first match they got into, subjecting the poor soul through great! Well, at least he was having fun.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at that fatty. What a ridiculous joke! The {Vampire Transformation} can only be used once in every three days! This fatty had actually used it to show off in the arena during a duel! Zhang Yang was truly struck speechless.

But even without the {Vampire Transformation}, Fatty Han had attained another level in terms of DPS. With just the additional Skill {Bloodthirst}, Fatty Han's damage had gone way up --- and because the Vampire Count Ferra had a very high amount of Defense, the 40% increase in Fatty Han's attack wasn't exactly 40%! In other words, the damage output of Fatty Han would definitely be much higher on players, monsters, and other bosses,



besides Vampire Count Ferra.

Therefore, Zhang Yang kicked Fatty Han straight over to the Dungeon Expedition Force of Lone Desert Smoke to explore the Dragon Throat Fortress together with Hundred Shots.

Dragon Throat Fortress was a Level 100 Dungeon, and only a few final bosses in the dungeon were Level 110. Without the Level Gap Suppression to suppress the damage output of players, even Fatty Han could saunter around like a boss. Him joining the Dungeon Expedition Force had solved the damage output shortage problem they were having. With Fatty Han leading the Dungeon Expedition Force, they managed to take out the 12th boss in the Hard Mode. Three days after, Fatty Han had engaged with the 13th boss in his {Vampire Transformation} form. To battle against this boss, players must have the extremely powerful equipment to survive the battle long enough to slay the boss! With his {Vampire Transformation} kicking in, the Dungeon Exploration party of the Lone Desert Smoke finally broke through the boss and went on to the 14th boss.

By that act, many of the young, pretty female players in the guild greatly admired Fatty Han. Many of them were blinking at him flirtatiously. Unfortunately, this fatty already has someone back in his place. He would even need to 'report' to her whenever he goes out. So, as he 'engaged' with a bunch of flirtatious girls in conversation, Fatty Han would only dare to 'cheat' in his mind, entertaining them with his own cheesy lines.

Without even knowing it, Summer break ended, and it was now time to go back to school!

Wei Yan Er was now a University Freshman. So, her first time entering the university was a huge affair. Zhang Yang purchased an MPV (Multi-Purpose-Vehicle) for her as a gift. The main purpose of the MPV was to allow Wei Yan Er to load and transport her items, such as her 'toys', her clothes, and of course, her perfumes. Even Sun Xin Yu took a day's leave just to send Wei Yan Er off to her campus.

Zhang Yang did not think of it as such a big deal. Wei Yan Er would not be far from home. It wasn't like she was leaving town to study in another state, or in some overseas country. The Zhou Su University was just in the city. It was just 20 kilometers away from where Zhang Yang lived. So there was no need for all the fuzz.

However, the little brat had immediately shot down his complaints, even to his shock, "You can't imagine having a thief living in your own house!" It cannot be helped, that the little brat did not trust the witch that goes by the name of Snow. She had been taking the little brat's items for her own use. Even before she had finished piling her grievances on Zhang Yang, they saw that very witch walking out from the little brat's room, with a lot of items in her hands as she made her way back to her room like a sneaky rodent!

...

So, Zhang Yang sent Wei Yan Er to the front gate of Zhou Su University. Because the new MPV that Zhang Yang had bought was only to allow Wei Yan Er to transport her stuff, Zhang Yang had not really invested much in it. The moment his low-end MPV

entered the campus area, quite a number of people were laughing at them. Of course, Zhang Yang did not mind it at all. He had just graduated from this place about a year ago. He was more nostalgic than anything at that moment.

## Chapter 523: Wei Yan Er goes to University!

---

Not only was Wei Yan Er a local in Zhou Su, she was also on the Board of Directors of her company. Her assets were worth hundreds of millions. The university knew this, and were treating her like royalty! They had already sent her all the necessary information. Her enrollment process was ready-made for her. Now, all she needed to do was to turn up in person at the location and move her things into the hostel.

So, when Zhang Yang drove the little brat over to the front of the hostel building, the area was already flooded with cars. Quite a number of people were busy unloading their luggage from their cars. These students should be Zhou Su locals or from the towns or cities beside Zhou Su. So, it made sense for them to drive there by themselves.

Wei Yan Er made a call, and almost immediately, the three pretty siblings, Zhao Bin, Zhao Yu and Zhao Xue ran out from the hostel towards Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er. After all, these 3 sisters have met Wei Yan Er once and they appeared to instantly click. So, it made perfect sense for these three pretty girls to come out and welcome Wei Yan Er with open arms on her first day in university!

With the three of them taking care of the little brat, Zhang Yang felt so much more relieved. They got down from the MPV and unloaded Wei Yan Er's stuff.

The area wasn't just filled with the girls who occupied, or were bound to occupy the hostels, it was also filled parents, boyfriends, and even 'sugar-daddies'. The moment everyone in the area saw

that another pretty lady coming out from the MPV, they were shocked!

Besides the flirtatious, buxom looks of Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu was a cool beauty in her own right. Her face shared some of the softness that the three 'Zhao' sisters had. Some of the male creatures might have been 'triggered' into thinking about something 'evil'. Needless to say, several 'sugar-daddies' had walked up to them like bosses and acted as if they were the friendliest people on earth, as they attempted to invite the ladies for a 'tea session' with them in a nearby hotel. They also 'accidentally' revealed that they were quite rich, letting slip some sensitive topics such as 'Millionaire Assets' and 'Party Secretaries'.

Eventually, Wei Yan Er blew up and scolded the 'sugar-daddies', forcing them to retreat.

But would they give up so easily when they are so rich, or powerful? Some of them might even be rich and powerful at the same time! Also, Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue happened to be the prettiest things they have ever laid eyes on, not to mention the fact that they had just been 'rejuvenated' with a touch of 'moisture' by Zhang Yang, making them look even more gorgeous and attractive than ever! Even a noble man would feel his heart rate rising! So, what about this bunch of dirty, lecherous, old goats? The answer was obvious!

Well, so much for Wei Yan Er's peaceful university life.

She had brought along so many items that two-thirds of the entire dorm was already occupied by her items! Even so, this

mountain of things had already been filtered through, over and over again! Or else, 3 dorms would not even be enough to accommodate all of her items!

Fortunately, this little brat knew how to butter up others with her sweet tongue. She endured her 'pain' as she brought a lot of nice food and nice games to share with the other three of her roommates. As a result, they did not say a word about her overbearing presence.

To create a good bond between the little brat and her new roommates, Zhang Yang decided to treat the 3 girls to a meal in a nearby hotel after they were done with their packing.

Upon seeing Zhang Yang's ride, the three girls did not hide their disdain. They even looked down on Zhang Yang and the ladies who were with him. Things changed a little after they arrived at the hotel. The hotel seemed to be 'up to their standards', so girls began to ease up. Zhang Yang could not help but to let out a breath of sigh, disappointed with how materialistic people were nowadays.

The 11 of them stepped into the hotel. These 11 were made up of Zhang Yang and his 4 ladies, the three Zhao Sisters, and Wei Yan Er's three new roommates. Although Zhang Yang was filthy rich, he was no in a mood to spend his money like one. So, he simply ordered a few moderate dishes and wine. The expense was lower than 2,000 dollars. Though 2,000 dollars was not 'cheap' at all, they could not really get anything that matched their taste buds in this hotel.

So naturally, the three girls weren't happy about it. They would

glance at Zhang Yang out of the corners of their eyes in disdain.

Zhang Yang was feeling confused. Weren't these college students supposed to simply accept anything that comes their way? It was not as if he was treating them to noodles by the roadside! A table of dishes that amounts up to 2,000 dollars is already the amount of salaries of a few people altogether for an entire month! Why would they be unhappy about this?

These three girls were Ma Yun Na, Zhang Yan Ni, and Li Yi Yue. Although they were not that pretty, they had youth on their side, with figures that had been well taken care of. With their make up on, they were 70% close to actual 'goddesses' among girls. However, without that thick make-up, that fact would have a hard time retaining itself.

After they ate for a short while, Ma Yun Na's phone went off. She did not walk away to take the call, but picked the phone up as if she owned the table, "Stepdad... hmm, I'm having my lunch... no, no. When did I ever have a boyfriend before? Don't you know that my heart is only yours to take? Well, I'm just having lunch with some dorm mates. Well, the food is mediocre, shabby... how could they possibly order food at your level! You're a big boss with assets worth tens of millions... ah, you're also around the hotel? Good, good. I'll be waiting for you to come over! Hmm, give me a kiss! Give me another kill!"

After she hung up her phone, Ma Yun Na said, "My stepdad is coming now! You guys are in luck today! My stepdad is a very generous person, and he is going to treat you all to a meal of high standard seafood meal!"

After witnessing how she ‘stepdad’ed her way here and there on her phone, Zhang Yang and the ladies could already guess that this ‘Stepdad’ has already ‘stepped’ her flat! What a ruthless sugar-daddy!

However, to each person, his or her own way of getting by, so Zhang Yang did not get too hung up about such a trivial matter. Society nowadays laughs at the poor instead of the prostitutes. So instead of being angry at these girls for their questionable morals, Zhang Yang could only smile at them lightly.

--- Sun Xin Yu was wealthy as well. Zhang Yang only found out about it after knowing her for quite a while. Although her father is a powerful official, her mother is a CEO of a company in the market. The company was actually larger in scale compared to a weakened Silky Soft Holdings, back when it was struggling!

For them, a sugar-daddy, or as Ma Yun Na had put it, a ‘stepdad’, who was only worth tens of millions was a small fry to them. Zhang Yan and Sun Xin Yu only exchanged knowing smiles. It was not worth their time reciprocating to her show of wealth. But, Zhang Yan Ni and Li Yi Yue seemed to be very interested in Ma Yun Na’s stepdad. They were clearly very eager to get into his pockets as well.

After about 10 minutes, someone knocked on the door, and Ma Yun Na opened the door. An elderly man who was in his sixties walked right in. Although this old man was well-dressed and adorned from head to toe in branded products, his large belly bulged out, killing off the look he was going for. He had a bald



patch on the back of his head, and a stern, serious face. However, his lewd, perverted eyes gave his true heart away.

"Allow me to introduce to you guys, my stepdad. His surname is Chang, full name is Chang Yue Lai, so let's just call him Chang Yue. He is the boss of a large company, worth tens of millions!" Ma Yun Na twitted on like a bird talking about the owner of her cage, without a care for what others thought of her. She was declaring that this old man belonged to her and only her. It was like a warning to the other women and ladies that they shouldn't try anything 'funny' with her stepdad.

Chang Yue Lai swept his eyes across the room and his radar immediately picked up the three beautiful ladies, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er. His initially serious face immediately vanished, his heart unable to stop itself from jumping up! These 3 ladies were basically on a 'disastrous' level of pretty and attractive! Though Wei Yan Er was rather flat, that pure and innocent look of hers would always send wolves howling and drooling over themselves!

"Stepdad! Stepdad ---" Ma Yun Na was a little bit unhappy about that, as she kept trying to pull and prod the old man back to this realm. After a few attempts, the old man finally came back to his senses.

"Haha, what a fine bunch of young people. It seems that this old man has arrived at an inappropriate time!" Chang Yue Lai tried to amuse them with his joke.

"That's not true! You're still young and strong! I know so!" Ma

Yun Na threw a flirtatious wink at him. It sounded as if she was implying something.

Chang Yue Lai cracked a sleazy grin as his right hand moved around the curvy butt of Ma Yun Na. He urged Ma Yun Na to have a sit. After calling the waitress, they cleared the table out and switched the dishes with a new series of seafood dishes. From the looks of it, this meal should cost at least 10,000 to 20,000 dollars!

Ma Yun Na repeatedly praised the old man for his generosity, a proud look on her face. Meanwhile, Chang Yue Lai soaked in her praise and flattery like a round sponge, and even added his own spice to her statements, talking about how large his hypermarkets were, and how much they earned him. Although Han Ying Xue and her gang of ladies were not interested at all, Zhang Yan Ni and Li Yi Yue were doing all they could to appear interested, more eager than ever to be taken under him.

With so many high standard dishes, who else would still be interested in regular dishes? At first, Chang Yue Lai was casually chatting with Ma Yun Na, but after the seafood arrived on the table, he had switched his full attention towards Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue, trying to seduce them with money and power. Ma Yun Na could not help but to feel threatened. She was enviously enraged to the point that her legs quivered uncontrollably. At that point, the looks she threw at them were nothing but friendly!

Zhang Yang sighed dejectedly. His initial intentions were to help the little brat build a good relationship with her new roommates. However, he had made things worse now. Ma Yun Na would turn

into an embittered enemy!

Chang Yue Lai was more of a conman than a businessman, but he had clearly been successful in his field. As he continued hammering hard on Zhang Yang's pride like a boss, Chang Yue Lai was also trying to win over Zhang Yang's ladies. He kept spouting promises to convince the ladies to enter the Entertainment Circle, and that they would definitely succeed in doing so, with their gorgeous looks! He claimed that he knew a few famous directors in that field. With some 'packaging' and 'training', the ladies would definitely do well in that line of work.

From his point of view, young girls nowadays only wanted money and fame. Based on these two factors, any girl would take off their pants for him! Well, it can't be helped, for in his case, evidence spoke up for itself. Such simple principles had never been wrong before. Just look at MaYun Na, she had given her body up to this old perverted man without sparing a thought! Only god knows how many more stepdaughters like Ma Yun Na had been 'slaughtered' by this old man already!

Annoyingly, however, these ladies that he was trying to 'buy' over at this moment did not seem to have any interest at all, instead, they were looking at him with disgusted faces! Wei Yan Er was practically fuming! She was just a step away from throwing a punch to the old man's face! Tsk! Well, when he gets his hands on her, it would be all the more delightful. The sensation of pressing his old body against the naked, ripe body of such a youthful girl was irreplaceable!

If the girl becomes a 'stepdaughter' to him, the girl would be

moaning and calling out for her 'daddy' again and again. That would surely satisfy that sick mind of his.

Ma Yun Na was only getting more and more frustrated as she read his face. She now hated Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er even more than ever! If Wei Yan Er did not have to move in at such a time, if Zhang Yang did not treat them to a meal in this hotel, they wouldn't be in such a situation at all!

From her point of view, no woman will be able to resist the seduction of money and fame. She was certain that they would definitely become 'stepdaughters' of Chang Yue Lai after this meal! She would have to share the 'love' with them after that! Meanwhile, these ladies are so impeccably pretty and attractive! She was bound to be banished into the cold storage, sooner or later!

After Chang Yue Lai boasted about a little while, his phone suddenly rang. After seeing the number on his phone, Chang Yue Lai frowned for a brief moment as he picked up the call, "Director Lee, great to hear from you... yes... yes... Oh, you're sending your daughter to school now? ... ah.... that's right, I'm on the 9th floor. Yes, it's the Penny Pavillion Lounge!"

After hanging up the phone, he reverted back to his serious face. But everyone had seen his unease when he spoke on the phone. This Director Lee had to be someone above him.

After a short while, another group of people entered the lounge, and one of them was actually someone Zhang Yang knew --- Gu Jun! He was the Deputy of the Police Department that Sun Xin Yu

worked under! Gu Jun looks more dignified than ever, for he was about to become the secretary ... the secretary of the state party committee. Basically, he had managed to do it all, thanks to Sun Xin Yu's connections. He was close to becoming an important figure. He had been doing great in his line of work. Rumors have been spreading about the top position that he is about to secure. Things are going extremely well for him, so of course, he would be greatly pleased!

## Chapter 524: Please, Save My Son!

---

"Hey, Mr.Chang!" a middle-aged man in his mid-40s came right up and said, "Come, allow me to introduce! This is Deputy Chief Gu Jun Gu, and we are here to celebrate his impending promotion! This is Department Chief Mr.Liu of the District Publicity Division..."

Chang Yue Lai was delighted.

In order to do business nowadays, a businessman must have good connections with the ranking officers from up high! He would need as much support as possible from the officers if he ever wants to expand his business. Back in his day, Chang Yue Lai had managed to get in bed with a small Director of the Business Administration Department, shoving tens of thousands of 'gratitude' money over to the Director, causing his competitors to close down. After that, he monopolized the marketplace like a boss and earned a substantial sum of money.

Well, that was merely a very low ranking Director, not something that would match up to a Deputy! If he actually manages to get along with an actual Chief....

Chang Yue Lai's mind soared to the galaxies. He started fantasizing about the possibilities of him becoming far richer, earning assets worth hundreds of millions of dollars, and countless pretty women feeling him up. He quickly put on his best manners towards Gu Jun and the other officers. Chang Yue Lai looked like a totally different person as he tried to butter up the officers. Zhang Yang tore his eyes away from the scene. The word 'money' really is

the root of all evil. It turned men into great actors and women into harlots!

Although Chang Yue Lai was making a great show of courtesy, Gu Jun did not have the interest or time for him. He simply exchanged some pleasantries with the man. In his current position, Gu Jun would not really be interested in entertaining this small time businessman. Furthermore, Gu Jun was about to ascend even higher up, to the same height with the secretary of the state party committee. With such a bright path ahead of him, of course, he would look at a higher place.

Zhang Yang let out a sigh, then he said, "Let's leave!"

His initial intention to bring Wei Yan Er and her new roommates closer together had failed terribly. The situation was escalated to Chang Yue Lai serving a bunch of officers right in the middle of their 'lunch session'! Furthermore, Zhang Yang did not want to be misunderstood by Gu Jun. The last thing he would want was to be mistaken as an acquaintance of the perverted Chang Yue Lai! He would not want to unintentionally help the old sly achieve his goals!

"Hey, you people! How can you be so rude !" Director Lee, who seemed to be a friend of Chang Yue Lai suddenly jumped up as he tried to butter Gu Jun up as much as he could. As he saw that Zhang Yang and the ladies did not show any necessary 'respect' to Gu Jun, he thought that it was a good opportunity to 'express' himself.

At first, Gu Jun did not realize that Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu

were just beside him, but after hearing Director Lee shouting out, he turned his eyes over and saw Sun Xin Yu. That was the one moment that he felt a chill down his spine, and he almost fell face first on the ground!

She was the reason why he is where he is, today! He could not have made it this far without her!

Although he never actually found anything out about Sun Xin Yu, he did know that the Secretary of provincial Party Committee cared very much for this little policewoman, to the point where her breach of conduct, her wrongdoings would all be overlooked! Gu Jun understood that Sun Xin Yu had great power guarding her back, but she had not given him any chance of tackling her, so Gu Jun did not take any initiative to even try. He did not want to risk getting rejected, only to make things worse for himself.

Therefore, he would only cooperate with Sun Xin Yu in the police station without stepping out of boundaries.

Gu Jun quickly walked up to Zhang Yang and extended a warm hand over to Zhang Yang, "It's Mr.Zhang! Haha! When you became the CEO of the Silky Soft Holdings, I was outstation. Sorry for not being able to congratulate you personally! Please, forgive me!"

Well, this would be the definition of saving a person by twisted means!

Gu Jun is very well sophisticated in reading body languages. Of course, he could see the 'relationship' between Zhang Yang and



Sun Xin Yu. To butter up to a girl like Sun Xin Yu would be very simple. All you have to do is to be nice to the man she likes. It would definitely be much more effective than praising her a hundred times or a thousand times over!

Well, Gu Jun was greeting him with so much warmth and sincerity that Zhang Yang had no reason to turn away from him. It would be rude if he does that. So he reached out to shake Gu Jun's hand, and smiled, "Deputy Chief, you shouldn't be so courteous towards me! You're serving the people, while I am just an evil capitalist. How can I accept your good will! I'm not worthy at all!"

"What are you talking about! As you said, we are serving the people! Are you saying you are not one of the people I serve?" Gu Jun laughed out loud as he brought Zhang Yang over to have a seat with him. He ignored everyone else who had come along with him, especially the old businessman.

Chang Yue Lai, Director Lee and the others were very shocked to see what just happened. A powerful Deputy Chief of Police Department was treating Zhang Yang so politely! They could not help but wonder if Zhang Yang was related to some powerful officer from other provinces or districts.

Since that Gu Jun was so absorbed in entertaining Zhang Yang, the others could not help but to sit down together in silence. Even though they did not know who Zhang Yang really was, they did not dare to interrupt the very animated and lively Gu Jun. So, they sat down together and sipped on their wine glasses in silence.

As the place was a little cramped, they had another table brought

in to make sure that everyone in the lounge was comfortable. After all, they were not spending their own money for this.

Zhang Yang could not reject the goodwill of Gu Jun, so he could only let the girls and the ladies sit at another table as he went on entertaining the bunch of 'booze addicts' with all the alcoholic drinks on the table. It was indeed a trial of 'alcohol' in this era!

As things had escalated to such an extent, Chang Yue Lai no longer had any room to shine. All he could do was to laugh along as they spoke. He did not even get the chance to pour them any drinks. However, at the end of it all, the bill would still fall into his hands!

Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue did not appreciate being 'scanned' by Chang Yue Lai's filthy eyes, so they opened their mouth like lions and began to order far more expensive dishes like bird's nest and shark's fin soup. A few bottles of [Maotai](#) and red wine cost so much that even a filthy rich old man like Chang Yue Lai would feel 'slaughtered.' He lost his breath for a moment when he saw the vengeful girls ordering their mouths off.

However, he did not dare to reveal his feelings about that matter. Although he was worth tens of millions, it would still be a simple task for these highly-ranked officers to 'take care' of him and his business. It would just be a matter of seconds! He had been 'collaborating' with Director Lee to get rid of all his competitors back in the day. That was how he managed to be so successful today!

If one Director Lee was already capable of such things, what

would more powerful officers be like?!

Back on the other table, Ma Yun Na and the other two ‘gold diggers’ were stunned.

They finally found out that Zhang Yang was actually the real ‘Buddha’ among the saints! They looked at each other in shocked realization! That was why there were so many beautiful ladies around him! Well, Zhang Yang is rich. He could buy these ladies over, and he could even take in tens or hundreds more of such ladies, if he wanted to!

Unfortunate for them, Sun Xin Yu and the ladies were simply too pretty. Ma Yun Na and the two ‘gold diggers’ did not even have the courage to attempt seducing Zhang Yang, worried that he might simply turn his head away as if they were nothing! However, now that they were using their heads for once, Zhang Yang had treated them a meal to get Wei Yan Er closer to her soon-to-be dorm mates. He simply wanted her to have a happy experience. So the key to pleasing Zhang Yang would be Wei Yan Er!

The three of them suddenly changed their attitudes and began to be very polite and nice to Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang happened to see that, and sighed internally. However things had turned out to be, Zhang Yang had achieved his goal, nevertheless. At ease now, he turned to chat with Gu Jun. After all, he was also the second-highest ranked officer in the Police Department of the district. Being close to someone of that level would also be a good thing.

Finally, they had a good time in the lounge. The only person who did not share their sentiments was Chang Yue Lai. His heart ached deeply as he read the bill of this 'session'! If this bill was put on Gu Jun's tab, it wouldn't actually be any problem. But, he had been a listener for the entire night. He had to pay for his first-class seat. With no way of knowing if Gu Jun could even remember his name, he felt a piece of his heart being torn out, as his credit card parted from his hand! The money could possibly be spent for absolutely nothing!

After the ladies were back in the car, they couldn't stop going on about the facial expression of Chang Yue Lai the moment he saw the amount on the bill. They were all giggling over it. The three Zhao sisters were looking at Zhang Yang with glittering eyes, as they have never thought that Zhang Yang would be a CEO in real life. A CEO who also happened to be the best professional gamer ever to pop up in the decade.

Han Ying Xue sensed their gazes and pinched Zhang Yang in the waist, and said in a hushed voice, "You hoodlum, are you planning to have more than one wife? Maybe like the emperor with 72 wives?"

After sending Wei Yan Er back to her dorm, it was time for Zhang Yang and his 'remaining' ladies to travel back in their car. Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were really reluctant to leave each other, as they were reduced to sobbing piles of mess. Zhang Yang frowned intensely at them, "Oh come on, the little brat is just 20 kilometers away from home, and that is just a 30-minute drive from home! Don't make it like it's the last time you two are seeing each other!"

Eventually, he had to wrestle the two ladies off each other, literally. Before Zhang Yang and the ladies had left the place, they already heard Wei Yan Er giggling at a joke the Zhao sisters said. The four of them were already laughing like lifelong best friends. Han Ying Xue was so furious at her lightning-fast change of heart.

Back home, now that the playful little brat was no longer in the house, the large house had actually turned quiet and cold. A big piece was missing in the house.

Zhang Yang logged back into the game. As he had been helping Fatty Han with his [Vampire Inheritance], Zhang Yang had not yet worked on getting the [Zinc Alloy] and [Light of Miracle] to unseal the second seal of his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. Although he already has the [Heaven Shaker] and no longer had any urgent need of a much more powerful weapon for the moment, he was counting on the fact that he would inadvertently stumble upon new bosses as he searches around for the two quest items.

Players were beginning to congregate in the Chaos Realm. The level range gap for every map in the Chaos Realm was far larger than that of pre-Chaos Realm content. The system had been designed to encourage players by rewarding them with better ‘initiatives’. The initial drops from bosses as they are slain for the first time and the next couple of times would have both the attributes of offense and defense and a 20 level reduction on Required Level. They would definitely be among the best equipment at the current stage of the game.

Well, such powerful equipment will not be dropping from the

bosses each time they are slain. They would only drop from the first three kills on the bosses. In other words, if a player kills a boss for the fourth time, then the boss will no longer drop such equipment anymore.

Therefore, it would be best for players to move up maps and bosses in the Chaos Realm. The main priority would be to switch to a full set of Mythical Tier equipment.

Even though Zhang Yang had the advantage of his previous life's experience, he could not remember every single spawn point of every single boss in the Chaos Realm. So, he would have to locate them based on the descriptions and hints in quest journals. That would be the only way to do it.

After riding on Whitey Jr. for a while, Zhang Yang found himself at the Flatlands of the Man Eating Monster. According to the 'terrain' of the world map, this should be one of the main maps of the Indian Region. The Territory Gateway of the Indian Region was somewhere in the map. As Zhang Yang traveled through the map, he could see quite a number of Indian players.

Although regions would be enemy factions by default, players wouldn't simply jump down from their 'planes' and kill players from other Regions. Of course, if an enemy player from another Region appeared in one of their grinding maps, they would understandably try to repel the 'invader'. How else would they be able to grind and hunt bosses in their own lands peacefully?

After flying for a while, Zhang Yang arrived at the Skeletal Spirit Mining Cave. The [Zinc Alloy] would be lying somewhere in the

mining cave.

The area is actually the territory of the Harpy monsters. There were countless of these sexy, winged creatures roaming around the entire area. A Harpy has the upper body of humans, but their legs were those of eagles, ending in their deadly, sharp talons. They were well capable of flying.

Although these creatures could fly in the sky, they evidently loved setting up their nests in dark, creepy caves. In this particular game, the Harpies seemed to be limited solely to the female gender. Unlike Wei Yan Er, Zhang Yang did not waste unnecessary cognitive bandwidth on trivial matters like reproduction and survival of the race.

He patted Whitey Jr. and landed near the cave. Almost immediately, he spotted a green-named NPC close to the entrance of that cave.

[The Old Man Kadejah] (Normal, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 110

HP: 17,600

Note: A craftsman from Slurping Stallion Town, quick-witted and nimble-fingered.

It was a frail, plain-looking old man. He looked to be least 70 to

80 years old. He looked anxious and worried.

A quest should be available here.

Zhang Yang leaped off the back of Whitey Jr. and approached the old man together with Felice, "Hello, sir. Why are you here? There are many dangerous Harpies around this area. They are man-eaters, you shouldn't be here!"

"Young man, of course, I'm aware of that! But my son has been taken by these god d\*mned birds. I, I must save him!" Kadejah steeled himself and gazed into the darkness of the cave. He rolled up his sleeves and got ready to charge in.

Zhang Yang quickly stopped the old man, "Sir, you will only get yourself killed if you charge in blindly like this! Let's put it this way. I am an Adventurer, so let me help get your son back. How does that sound?" He doesn't have a rat's \*ss to give if this NPC dies, but before he gets himself killed, he should at least give him the freaking quest first!

Kadejah who was barely hanging on by a thread, quickly grabbed hold of Zhang Yang's hands and said, "Thank you so much, brave Adventurer, you have a good heart. You will definitely be blessed by the gods! Please bring my son back to me. Oh my! He's only 5 years old! He must be terrified now!"

Zhang Yang took a look at the old man, whose face was covered with wrinkles and white whiskers, and asked, "Sir, your son is... 5 years old?"



"Hey, warrior! Although I am really old, but I'm not so muddled that I've actually forgotten my son's age!" Kadejah was a little pissed. Well, that's not the point.

Zhang Yang could not stop admiring this old man. This old man must be really strong to actually 'produce' a 5 year-old boy at his age! He deserved a medal for that! Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Sir, rest assured that I am going to get your son back to you, in one piece!"

"Warrior, please be quick! These god d\*mned birds might eat him alive! Oh, my poor boy ---" Kadejah could not hold his feelings back any longer and he began to cry.

'Ding! The Old Man Kadejah has given you a quest: Please Save My Son, accept or decline?'

Accept.

[Please Save My Son!] (Difficulty: B-rank)

Description: Please save my son! I was taking my son up the hill to get some dry wood, but unexpectedly, we encountered a few Harpies and they took my son away! Warrior, please save him! My poor Chionocpi!

Completion: Save Chionocpi 0/1

Although the quest did not seem to have any relations with his search for the [Zinc Alloy], Zhang Yang was not bothered by it. Since he is already entering the cave, he might as well complete another quest at the same time while looking for the [Zinc Alloy], earning extra experience points, while killing two birds with one stone!

He walked into the cave with quick steps and threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at one of the Harpies that was the closest to him.

‘-23,532!’

The Harpy let out a miserable screech and came straight down from the air, crashing into the ground, breaking its neck. The Harpy died immediately after that. A Level 115 normal monster only had a total of 17,800 HP. Now that Zhang Yang was capable of dealing far more damage than before, one hit was enough to kill the Harpy!

"Big brother, you are getting more powerful!" Felice has always been so cute, and the way she looked at Zhang Yang with her dazzling eyes this time was no different. Well, that completely gratified Zhang Yang's ego.

"Hahaha!" Zhang Yang picked up the few [Inscribed Cloths] that the monster dropped, and ventured deeper in.

The cave was creepy and dark for some reason. Zhang Yang could not see the end of the cave on his map. When he brought up his world map, he realized that the endless turns and twisting passages

of the cave could really mess one's mind up! Zhang Yang was too lazy to even remember the topography of the area. He bulldozed blindly on, turning away from dead ends, believing that he would eventually find the exit of the cave.

Zhang Yang only encountered normal Tier monsters all the way. The monsters were no match for Zhang Yang's new level of attack power. With just a simple swings from his [Heaven Shaker], he could already kill the monsters. But the cave was deep and extensive, Zhang Yang walked without any stopping for two hours before he finally saw two elite Tier Harpies guarding over a little boy.

1. Maotai: Maotai is arguably the most famous Chinese liquor, produced and named after a town named Maotai.

# Chapter 525: Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order

---

Compared to the normal Tier Harpies, the elite Tier Harpies were large in size, and their wings were definitely far more vibrant. They held long spears, and by the way, the spearheads glinted in the light, the spears had to be extremely sharp! The wooden shafts of the spears were stained with dry blood, suggesting that they had been used to kill before, and that goes to show that the Harpies are bloodthirsty militants!

[Raging Harpy] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 110

HP: 1,100,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 7,594 - 9,594

Skills:

[Screech of Despair]: Makes enemies run in despair, the target will not be able to do anything for 5 seconds.

[Force Strike]: Performs a powerful strike on the target, dealing 100% of Melee Damage with a 10% chance of triggering an additional attack.

Note: Loyal Servants to the Harpy Queen Yaniboque. They exist to fulfill the desire of the Harpy Queen. The entire Harpy race hunts for preys only to serve their Queen!

Although these Harpies were half-bird, half-human creatures, the human part of them were beautiful to look at. They had eyes, ears, nose, mouth, eyes brows and other features that a human would have! Even their boobs were fairly huge! They had nothing to cover their torsos except for crude, low-cut leather sash around their chests. Right between their legs, they wore metallic spats that ended right below their buttocks. Zhang Yang could see a few strands of golden hair protruding out from the bottom of those spats, and started wondering if those are bird feathers or a specific type of hair.

The only thing that was keeping this place from becoming a sacred ground for the 'Otakus' were the deadly talons that these creatures had!

Zhang Yang turned his attention to the little boy. He could not help but to give the name of the boy a double take.

[Chionocpi] (Normal, Puppet)

Level: 5

HP: 250

Note: He used to be a puppet. He was crafted by Kadejah with all his love and skill. Because he accidentally fell into 'Fountain of Life', he acquired a special but strange life force. Chionocpi is a fantastic child. His nose will extend whenever he lies.

Oh my freaking god!

At first, he thought that the Old Man Kadejah was still 'strong' at his age, but now, Zhang Yang saw the truth! Chionocpi, Pinocchio! He should have guessed it, earlier on!

The boy was huddled in a corner, shivering in cold and fear. A Treasure Chest lay right beside the boy. Zhang Yang eyed the Chest with greed --- it had been a long time since he last popped open a Treasure Chest!

Although there were two elite Tier monsters in the area, Zhang Yang had no fear. As the cave was rather narrow, he had brought Whitey along instead of Whitey Jr. He let out a cry and charged towards the monsters, together with Felice and Whitey. With a shoof, he flung a {Spear of Obliteration} straight at one of the elite Harpies.

"Rawgh ---" the two Harpies immediately let out deafening screeches and came at Zhang Yang with their spears.

Qiang! Qiang!

Zhang Yang raised his shield over his head and blocked the

attacks of the monsters from above him. Then, he moved his shield behind him and crouched down, ready to make a leap. With all his power focused on his glutes, thighs and his leg muscles, Zhang Yang shot to the air! He then reached out his left hand which was now free, and caught hold of one of the Harpies by the claw the moment it attempted to gain more height, having dove down to use its spear. With a mighty tug, he forcefully brought the Harpy to the ground!

Bam! That Harpy smashed into the ground with such force that the area was clouded up with dust. It had been dazed by the fall! Even though that was not a skill, but that ruthless slam had stunned the monster for almost one whole second!

The game had its share of realism. However, such maneuvers are not stated in the game manual, leaving players to discover them on their own! Furthermore, the effectiveness of such moves would be decided by the skills and controls of the players themselves, and the reactions of their victims-to-be!

A professional like Zhang Yang would have the sense to prevent their head from taking a hit. Even if he gets hit in the head, he could and would use his strong willpower to recover from that hit almost immediately. As it was not a Status Restriction Skill with a set duration of stun, players would be able to recover, based on their own willpower and the toughness of their bodies.

"Stupid bird! Where are you looking at!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud, swinging his [Heaven Shaker] straight at the head of the Harpy, even while he was still in the air!

"Rawgh ---" the Harpy that fell on the ground got back up defiantly. It raised its spear up and directed it towards Zhang Yang's chest. The Harpy that was still in flight had also let out a screech of its own as it charged at Zhang Yang, trying to work in tandem with its downed friend.

"{Dragon's Spear Barrage}!" Felice let out a loud cry as she picked her lance up and shoved it straight at the still-flying Harpy. Her swift movements churned the air current so much that dust was trailing after the movements of the lance!

‘-22458!’

Zhang Yang swung his [Heaven Shaker] hard at the Harpy before him and caused a terrifying amount of damage to the monster. At the same time, his rage bar was instantly filled! So, he went on and activated his three skills - {Horizontal Sweep}, {Destructive Smash}, and {Frost Strike} one after another, inflicting the monster with an additional 200% Melee damage!

‘-47890!’

‘-90566!’

‘-48500!’



Very good! The {Destructive Smash} was a Critical Attack!

In just 10 seconds, the Harpy had lost more than 200,000 HP! Zhang Yang would have never imagined that he would do so much damage to anything, even with his {Inheritance}! Even if he activates his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth}, he would only cause about 150,000 damage!

A two-handed weapon really does so much better than a one-handed weapon when activating skills! The difference was tremendous!

Although he has lived two lives, Zhang Yang was still a newbie when it comes to using a two-handed weapon. So whenever he sees the super high damage values popping up on monsters after each attack, he was greatly content and pleased with himself. That sensation would be exactly like the sensation he felt as he stared into the lustful, lost, tender faces of Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. Back then he had satisfied them so much that they were close to losing their senses, and had even pushed the two of them to their climaxes! He would always feel proud of achieving such a feat.

Whenever he thought about Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang could not help but to scratch his head, realizing how much trouble they gave him.

An unspoken battle of wills often occurred around Zhang Yang. The girls were not exactly allies, or comrades, but as the saying goes, If you know the enemy and know yourself, you need not fear

the result of a hundred battles. Whatever they were, they knew each other so well that words need not be spoken. They would just stare at Zhang Yang at the same time, or just stare at each other at the same time, silently wrestling each other for Zhang Yang. Or, they would simply go up against Zhang Yang at the same time, sandwiching Zhang Yang until his eyes roll up, as if he was out of oxygen.

In bed, it was another battlefield. Well, men are not women, after all. Men are considered to be a 'one-time' product. Although some men can still go for a few more rounds after the act, they are not machines. The two ladies would also be fighting in this battlefield, keeping count on each other! One of them would ask for two rounds, while the other would ask for three! Zhang Yang could no longer tell if his days are considered heavenly or hellish!

But, he could not help but to wonder, why would they still be quarreling after they had grudgingly accepted each other in bed with him, at the same time?

Recently, looking at them, Zhang Yang noticed that they have been 'moisturized' to the extent that their beauty, mannerisms, and everything had been amplified several times over! Their skins 'glittered,' as if there was a translucent barrier over them! Daffodil Daydream and Wei Yan Er could only admire them more than ever, without ever finding out their secret skincare product!

Well, there's a chinese proverb that goes, no amount of plowing would destroy the land, only the cattle who did the plowing themselves would suffer! Women will never tire, ever, unlike the finite stamina of men, when it comes to the affairs of the bedroom!

Huh? Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. How did he even end up thinking about all this!

The attack power of the elite Tier monsters still packed a solid amount of punch, but they should be able to actually land their attacks in order to prove it! Zhang Yang went all out with a flurry of strikes, swinging his [Heaven Shaker] around like a black dragon. The two monsters were hit in basically all directions, unable to even regain their balance. They could not even cause any damage to Zhang Yang, but could only repay him with more Rage points in an endless synergy!

In less than 2 minutes, the two Harpies fell to the ground, leaving some loot behind.

Felice knew that Zhang Yang was not fond of picking up ‘cheap’ items, so she ran forward and picked up the loot for Zhang Yang. It greatly pleased him! How nice would it be to have a girl doing that for him in real life?

Zhang Yang went up to the boy and said, "Chionocpi, don't be scared. Your father sent me here to get you home."

"I, I, I'm not afraid!" the little boy tried to act tough, but his nose suddenly grew by a few inches!

What a pitiful being, if this were to happen to someone in real life, Zhang Yang was certain that poor soul would have committed suicide! Human truly love to lie, be it for good or bad reasons, well,

everyone should have lied at least once in their lives!

It is alright to lie sometimes, but to have a 'detector' that exposes you whenever you lie? That would just make you sad and pathetic!

Zhang Yang walked up to the Treasure Chest. He was glad to see that it was a Violet-Platinum Tier Treasure Chest, and it was not locked! As he was opening up the chest, he turned to the boy and said, "It is very normal to be afraid when you are in such a situation. Come on, I am sending you to your father right away!"

"Thank you, brother!" the nose of that little boy shrunk back to its normal size the moment he spoke again. He nodded and said, "Brother, I promise that I will not wander around and make my father worry again! There won't be a next time!"

His nose suddenly extended out again.

Zhang Yang could only shake his head again and again, but when he heard the 'click', he turned his attention back to the Treasure Chest.

Treasure Chests and bosses are basically similar. Good equipment and items would come out of them only when they are being opened up for the first few times. After being opened up several times more, the same Treasure Chests of the map will no longer drop good equipment or items. Logically speaking, this location should still remain undiscovered for now. It should be the Chest's first uncovering.

Zhang Yang looked around in the chest and discovered that there are three things in it. One of the items was a heavy, black parchment of [Order], another was a crystal clear green [Gemstone], and the last one was an aquamarine-colored robe.

Could this be another [Territory Conquest Order]?

He quickly picked up the [Order] to examine it. However, it did not turn out to be a [Territory Conquest Order], but a [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order]!

Now, that's a pleasant surprise! Well, it's also great news for Zhang Yang, as he had no use for a [Territory Conquest Order] now, anyway. Not long ago, he could have conquered as many Territory Gateways as he desired. All Territory Gateways across all eight Main Region in the Chaos Realm were all his to pick as he was the only one in the entire Chaos Realm. Because he did not want to create too many enemies for China Region, he had only taken down the Territory Gateway of the Japan-Korea Region.

A [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order] would increase the maximum capacity of players' number in Lone Desert Smoke by up to a total of 40,000, providing every single member of Lone Desert Smoke with an additional 40% experience points! Normally, it would take up about 10 days just to level up once. But with an additional 40% experience points, a player would save about 3 to 4 days for each level!

After all, the Lone Desert Smoke were at the maximum capacity of their Level 3 experience bar. So, Zhang Yang used the [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order] immediately. The next thing that happened

was the sweet voice of the server's notification system. After Zhang Yang made some confirmation with the system, the Lone Desert Smoke Guild had officially been elevated up to Level 4!

The server announcement informed the players of Lone Desert Smoke, and as usual, for the next 3 days, every single member of Lone Desert Smoke would enjoy the additional experience points, along with a 50% discount on all equipment and weapon repairs!

Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince and other guildmasters started asking Zhang Yang about the where and how concerning the [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order]. They were guildmasters who ran their own guilds afterall, so was completely understandable for them to be so interested. Unfortunately, no two openings of a Treasure Chest, even if it is the same Chest, would ever be the same. So there is no way of telling if the next person, or the person after the next will ever come across another [Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order] again. Treasure Chests would never be a reliable source of obtaining such rare items.

After convincing them about the unpredictable nature of Treasure Chests, they finally left him alone. Then, he continued to look at the remaining two items.

The green [Gemstone] was actually a [Level 4 Dexterity Gemstone], something that Zhang Yang had no personal need for. So, Zhang Yang placed it into his inventory, keeping in mind that he could just hand it over to Sun Xin Yu, Fatty Han or other members who relied on the Agility Attribute. The robe was a Violet-Platinum equipment. It could already be equipped upon reaching Level 100. Zhang Yang widened his eyes, not because of

its power, but because he could see the monetary value of it!

# Chapter 526: Land of Savages

---

Clak clak clak!

A series of noisy footsteps was heard from afar, and a party of players had approached them. The party was consisted of multiple races of players, and were wearing different kinds of weird outfits. The group spotted Chionocpi and cried out "There!"

At the same time, they spotted Zhang Yang, but remained calm and neutral.

Zhang Yang examined each of their properties.

Savage Lord, Level 100, Guardian, Male Beastman, "Land of Savages", India Region.

King Kong Wrath, Level 100, Sacred Knight, Male Dwarf, "Land of Savages", India Region.

King King Arcane, Level 100, Assassin, Male Elf, "Land of Savages", India Region.

Hourglass Figure, Level 101, Sniper, Female Elf, "Land of Savages", India Region.

Bloodbath Apocalypse, Level 100, Pyromancer, "Land of Savages", India Region.



Woah, finally! The famous players of the India region! The core members of the S class Professional League battle team - "Steely Dangs Battle Team"! If Zhang Yang remembered it correctly, Hourglass Figure was the one who had obtained the S class Hunter's Inheritance, the Shadow Striker. That woman was also the young mistress of the Steely Dangs Group, in reality. Her background was no joke. Furthermore, the lady was a beauty and was once voted as the most beautiful girl in all of India. Inadvertently, such a woman would have had her hand requested in marriage many times over. The girl was uncannily similar to Snow Seeker of China, being both skillful in the game, while also being rich and capable of running businesses in real life.

Her most famous feat was when she defended India from being invaded by the European army. She had led a small team and had managed to hold the invaders back until reinforcements arrived. Her actions had protected the entire map of the Indian region from being taken over by any players from the European region. That feat was soon dubbed as the Ninth Miracle in the history of 'God's Miracle'!

It could not be helped. Men would definitely have her in their minds as they beat their meat about.

Even so, she was capable of such a feat due to her S class Inheritance. Right then, all 5 of them had not obtained any Inheritances yet. They were nothing but scraps to Zhang Yang.

"Chionocpi, let's go. We need to find your father." Zhang Yang ignored the Indians and lightheartedly spoke to the little boy.

"Alright!" the little boy cheered happily. He was nothing but a story plot character. He had no knowledge of the tension between players of different nations. In his heart, there was only one thought, and that was to meet his father.

"Hold!" said Savage Lord as he approached Zhang Yang. "Leave the NPC behind and we will spare your life."

"Guild master. This man has entered our region. Why are you being so courteous to him! Take his head and be done with it," said King Kong Arcane with a deep hatred in his voice. He then disappeared in a puff of smoke and headed towards Zhang Yang. If Savage Lord had given the order, King Kong Arcane would drop the man dead in the blink of an eye.

Even though Zhang Yang had hidden his character profile information, his character was marked with a red name tag, revealing that he was an enemy of their region. That sort of red color marked for players of a regional enemy would be even deeper, with a tinge of light violet and black.

Zhang Yang smirked, "Chaos Realm belongs to no one. Since when did you guys own any part of the land?! I found this NPC and killed the two monsters that were guarding him. Yet, you're here, trying to grab what I've rightfully won over. Can anyone tolerate such an act?"

After Zhang Yang had finished with his speech, four of the Indians were pissed off. Only one of them, Hourglass Figure had

chuckled delightfully, as if she was being given a cool drink after a hot, boring day. She placed her hands on her graceful hips and cat-walked towards Zhang Yang. Her slender waist, coupled with her rich and voluptuous chest could truly be a wonder of India.

She flashed her white, even teeth and said, "You are...Zhan Yu, I presume?"

What!?

The other four Indians were shocked, or rather, highly envious of Zhang Yang. Still, they did not lower their guards. Even though Zhang Yang was only one man, they could not be overly relaxed when facing China's strongest player! As professional players, they had the utmost confidence of winning over their opponents, yet none of them would ever underestimate anything or anyone. It a mindset that true professionals would practice.

For Zhang Yang, however, he was greatly dismayed at Hourglass Figure's reaction. He had wanted to lay low and avoid attracting too much attention. But, like the sun in the sky, no matter where he goes, sunflowers would be staring at it.

Zhang Yang could not help but think of Fatty Han and his catchphrase back in his previous life. Zhang Yang smirked confidently and said, "Aye. That's me!"

"Hmph!" Bloodbath Apocalypse swung his magic staff and stabbed the ground. "He is a professional, so is he mocking us for being nobodies?! Our guild master was courteous enough to give

you a chance to surrender. Now that you blatantly rejected it, no more talk! A bloodbath it shall be, then!"

Savage Lord lifted his hands and stopped Bloodbath Apocalypse from screaming any further. "Zhan Yu, this is the main battleground for players of the India region. I'll have you know that you have my respect and profound admiration. Hence, I do not wish to have to kill you now. We shall fight, but I hope that it will be in the battle arena, a few months from now in the World Championship final rounds. Until then..."

"That sounds extremely implausible. But I accept your invitation! We're done here, beat it!" said Zhang Yang arrogantly, as he flung his hands about as if he was chasing away flies.

His rude gesture was the limit. All four of the Indians were greatly offended and came at him. Hourglass Figure had taken a few steps back, one hand below her chin, its elbow resting on the other hand that was around her waist, her mouth parted in delight. In the field, only 3 of them were visible, as King Kong Arcane had entered stealth mode. Zhang Yang could not discern his location, but he was still able to predict where the Thief would come in from, judging by the positions of this teammates.

While facing players with no Inheritance, Zhang Yang was unstoppable!

Zhang Yang smiled widely and yelled, "Felice, let's dispose of these Indians!"

Felice did not know the meaning of Japanese, Korean, nor Indian, all she knew was that those three were Zhang Yang's enemy, which made them targets for her to kill! The cheerful little girl then turned serious. She morphed into her Dragonhawk form and shot into the sky to obtain air superiority, allowing her to target any player at will.

Those who would want to target Felice would have to be ranged attackers since it was impossible to ride mounts in a cave! Zhang Yang grinned and spun around with his Heaven's Shaker.

Splat!

Blood spewed out in the air from out of nowhere, and King Kong Arcane was knocked out of his stealth mode. His face was heavily bruised, and several of his teeth were on the ground.

"How did you find me!?" cried King Kong Arcane, dazed. The man had been in stealth for a good amount of time. He had been standing behind Zhang Yang all the time and had the other three of his comrades draw attention away from him. Technically, there was no way that Zhang Yang could trace his position.

"Lucky guess," said Zhang Yang, shrugging. He then lifted his hammer and struck King Kong Arcane with {Destructive Smash}.

{Blur}!

The hit from before had taken more than 20,000 HP from King

Kong Arcane's HP bar. Knowing Zhang Yang strength, he had activated the anti-physical attack skill {Blur} to invoke a 50% chance of dodging an attack. King Kong Arcane had even leveled up the skill to max, which made him gaining 95% evasion rate!

Shush!

Zhang Yang's hammer went through him like air!

Zhang Yang scoffed and left King Kong Arcane alone, heading straight for Bloodbath Apocalypse. Inheritance in hand or not, magic class players were Zhang Yang's greatest threat. However, with the God of War Transformation skill, he would gain a 90% chance to nullify all magic attacks!

"Oh, please do keep looking down on us!" cried Savage Lord and he glided through the ground and rushed towards Zhang Yang with {Charge}.

Just when Savage Lord was 0.1 seconds from hitting Zhang Yang, Savage Lord saw a glimpse of Zhang Yang's grin. Before he knew it, a large bear's claw was 1mm away from his face.

{Wild Charge}!

Zhang Yang laughed loudly and rushed towards Bloodbath Apocalypse.

All 5 of the India region players were stunned by what they had

just witnessed.

The skill had no casting time, or unique postures to telegraph the coming of the attack. The time span for players to react would be less than 0,1 seconds! Yet, Zhang Yang was still able to react within such a time span and had even managed to capture Savage Lord in the middle of his high speed {Charge}!

Everyone believed that either it was pure coincidence or ...

Bloodbath Apocalypse was good. After all, he was a member of an S class battle team for the Professional League. Just when Zhang Yang had activated his skill, Bloodbath Apocalypse had {Apparated} already and teleported away towards the left. Just as he took a step, he saw that his movement speed had already been greatly reduced! It was then when he noticed that he was struck with the skill - {Thunder Strike}, a Guardian AoE attack skill that could induce a 5 seconds slowing effect!

Bloodbath Apocalypse was stumped. He had paid so much attention trying to run away from Zhang Yang and had not noticed when he applied the effect of {Thunder Strike} on him.

Zhang Yang glided towards Bloodbath Apocalypse.

"Bastard!" King Kong Arcane cried out, enraged. He was right behind Zhang Yang, tailing him closely, but was affected by the {Thunder Strike} attack and had been forced out of invisibility once again.

Pew!

Felice's {Fire Missile} shot out and headed towards King Kong Arcane.

Wham!

‘-20,874!’

All the time, no one had paid any attention to the Battle Companion in the sky. Even though King Kong Arcane knew that Felice was targeting him when he was removed from stealth mode, he did not intend to use {Shadow Cloak} for regular Battle Companions weren't very powerful in the first place! The blast itself had given him the shock of his life!

What the actual f\*ck!? How could a Guardian produce damage stronger than a Berserker and a Battle Companion possess magic attack far superior to a Pyromancer!? Just who are these people!

Since Bloodbath Apocalypse was inflicted with the slow effect, he knew that it would be impossible for him to escape from Zhang Yang. Infuriated, the man started to think back of the initial situation. They could have simply walked away and taken him by surprise at a later venture! Too late for that now. Bloodbath Apocalypse refused to run away, he activated {Heart of Flame} and consumed a bottle of {Power Potion} and started to chant the most powerful spell, the {Explosive Flame}.



10 meters wasn't far. A player could cover that distance by sprinting with all their might within a second. Zhang Yang let out a shout, flying across the ground, and struck him with a normal attack and a {Horizontal Sweep}.

‘-22,439!’

‘-47,882!’

"Umph!" Bloodbath Apocalypse fell with a grunt. His head was brutally bashed open, his brain juice was splattered all over the cave, leaving his skull empty, along with his lifeless body.

Zhang Yang was flabbergasted. He had not expected the hammer to have such a gory effect on his victims. The next second, he stomped the ground hard to push himself around and charge towards King Kong Wrath.

"Holy crap!" Savage Lord recovered from his stun and screamed in horror. He had not expected Bloodbath Apocalypse to be killed instantly without leaving a split-second reaction for him to use {Ice Barrier}. But then again, Zhang Yang had the Inheritance class' 50% attack boost passive and the weapon's 20% attack boost effect. Combined with the 3.8 seconds weapon attack interval, Zhang Yang's attack could rival that of a Mythical tier boss. For him to insta-kill a Spellcaster should not be a mystery!

# Chapter 527: Slaughtering the Indians

---

Savage Lord was enraged. Or he was trying to be. In truth, he was more confused than anything. There were five of them and one of Zhang Yang, yet he was already picking them off in the opening seconds of the battle! They did not even get the opportunity to use any life-saving skills!

"GRAH!" he bellowed, almost puking his guts out. All skills, including the ones that he had reserved for the boss, was unleashed. The man swung his axe and shot out a ray of silvery light. The light then morphed and formed itself into a white fiery bird that flew directly into Zhang Yang's chest.

Eh?

Zhang Yang narrowed his eyes and decided to only use {Last Vigor}. The skill would push his maximum HP to over 140,000. With the 20% passive damage reduction skill, it would take a damage value of over 180,000 to kill Zhang Yang instantly.

Zhang Yang maintained his pace and charged towards King Kong's Wrath.

‘-5,394!’

As the bird seeped into Zhang Yang's body, he had taken that one tick of damage. Zhang Yang then hypothesized that the skill that Savage Lord had just used was similar to that of {Dance of Heaven and Earth}, a skill that could deal 10,000 fixed damage (depending

on damage attribute) every second, for 10 seconds.

King Kong's Wrath rushed over to Savage Lord. As a good healer, one must rush over to the tank to heal instead of running amok all over the place.

{Heroic Leap}!

Zhang Yang leaped into the air like a god towards King Kong's Wrath.

{Heroic Leap}!

This time, Savage Lord took the opportunity to feed Zhang Yang his own medicine. Savage Lord had been stunned in the middle of his {Charge} animation. Even though it was the bear who had did it, it was still under the control of Zhang Yang. He wanted to stun Zhang Yang in the middle of his own skill as revenge.

Zhang Yang grinned evilly. Just then Savage Lord was about to crash into him, He timed the location and position perfectly and activated {Brutal Smash} to stun the poor fellow for 4 seconds.

Like a paper plane that had struck a wall, Savage Lord fell from the sky.

King Kong's Wrath panicked and quickly activated {Terror Shriek} the moment Zhang Yang landed at him.

"Good reaction!" Zhang Yang had to compliment the man's skills. Zhang Yang then countered the {Terror Shriek} effect with {Warrior's Will}. Sadly, his attack interval was as long as 3.8 seconds. He would need to wait for another 2 seconds or so to launch another strike. Hence, even though {Brutal Smash} was about to deal damage, it shared a 1 second global cooldown which required him to wait for 0.5 seconds before any skills could be activated.

Since there was nothing he could do at the moment, Zhang Yang just stood there and waited. However, instead of attacking as he normally would, Zhang Yang swung his shield into King Kong's Wrath's face, knocking him off his feet and sent him crashing into the ground, his face digging up a new drain in the ground. It only grew in length as he slid further along, his legs angled to the sky.

"ZHAN YU--!" Savage Lord screamed in agony. He then used {Warrior's Will} to dispel the stun effect on him and charged towards Zhang Yang. At the same time, he flicked his fingers and cast {Sacrifice} to protect King Kong's Wrath.

Wham!

Zhang Yang had whacked the poor fellow who had just gotten back up to his feet. Once he was on the ground again, Zhang Yang stepped on the player's back and laughed at Savage Lord, "No need to get so aggravated. Though I feel the need to tell you that I don't swing that way. I prefer good, old-fashioned pussies and boobies instead of d\*cks and buttholes."

"Bastard!" Savage Lord lost it. With quick movements, the Guardian swung his hands and threw a beam of light at Zhang Yang. The {Spear of Obliteration} was weak. He was no Zhang Yang. His damage on Zhang Yang was only over 3,000 damage, since he was wielding a One-Handed Weapon.

‘-5,394!’

The fiery bird skill was still damaging Zhang Yang which had drained him by only 5,394 HP per second. 10 of them would be over 54,000, and that could drain half of Zhang Yang’s HP bar.

"Just die!" King Kong Arcane had revealed himself in front of Zhang Yang. He had activated {Shadow Cloak} which granted him immunity to Felice’s attack and had dispelled the slow effect of {Thunder Strike}. The blades struck the air, followed by a burst of light from the middle of his palm, which King Kong Arcane directed it towards the center of Zhang Yang’s chest.

Mm. Mm. Zhang Yang chuckled. He had forced the opponent to expend all of their ulti skills. With a wide malicious grin, Zhang Yang activated {Shield Wall}. After the 1 second global cooldown ended, Zhang Yang struck Savage Lord with {Frost Strike}.

‘-36,450!’

Savage Lord was struck with a heavy damage and icy bricks started forming around him, which then grew upwards to encase his entire character in ice. Since the ice was slightly transparent, Zhang Yang could see the disgruntled expression on Savage Lord’s

face. He had already used {Warrior's Will} to dispel the {Heroic Leap} stun effect and could only sit there and wait until the frozen effect wears off over time.

Thud!

Zhang Yang lifted a leg and sent King Kong's Wrath flying away.

"GRAH!" The diminutive King Kong's Wrath was almost at the brink of madness. He had never known that PvP would involve such maneuvers where he could be treated like a sandbag by Zhang Yang. Even though the attack had not dealt a single damage, it had made him lose his temper, focus, and most importantly, his dignity.

{Sacred Protection}!

King Kong Wrath could not take it anymore and immediately entered an invincible state. No matter how much rage had clouded his senses, the responsibility of being a healer had never left his judgment. He did not blindly charge at Zhang Yang, but went towards Savage Lord to heal him.

Zhang Yang chuckled. Heal? Really? Right when healers had been so greatly depowered that their powers were as good as smacking a band-aid down the bleeding stump of a severed limb. Could his heal really keep up with the attack combination of Zhang Yang and Felice?!

That aside, be it buffed or nerf, Zhang Yang still had his {Destructive Smash} that reduced healing effectiveness by 75%. Even if he had not used the skill to debuff Savage Lord, it would take four more King Kong's Wrath to fully negate the HP loss dealt by Zhang Yang and Felice.

Wham! Bam!

As one, Zhang Yang and Felice moved on to Savage Lord who was still encased in ice. Even though he was a class that was meant to take damage head on, his long HP and Defense were completely useless, they were emptied out like a broken aquarium! However, Savage Lord responded accordingly. Even though he was restricted from moving, he could still activate {Shield Wall}. The skill's greatest advantage was that it could be used anytime, anywhere, and in any situation, except {Silence} and {Disarmed}.

All three Indian players were safe, but only temporarily. Their invincible protection would only last for 10 seconds. During that time, there was nothing that they could do but to cower and hope for some miracle to save them from being humiliated! The shame of calling themselves professional players, and yet, they could not even defeat a single player and his Battle Companion.

10 seconds passed on quickly and the protection skills had expired. Felice shot down from the sky in her human form and crashed down majestically to the earth, leaving a small crater. With lightning speed, she swung her lance downward and did a quick thrust. After activating Dragon's Spear Barrage, she sent out a normal attack that followed almost instantly!

‘-17,822!’

‘-27,168!’

King Kong’s Wrath was horrified. His maximum HP was only as much as 50,000. The 40,000 over damage by Felice was so strong that it had left King Kong’s Wrath with only more than 10,000 HP left. Since he could not use a mount to flee from the cave, there was no place for him to escape. One more pebble falling from the ceiling of the cave would kill him off. {Berserker’s Heal} and {Sacred Heal} had already been removed from the game, and since he had already used {Sacred Protection}, there were no other skills left to protect himself. All he could do was to leave his fate in the hands of his teammates.

{Blind}!

King Kong Arcane grabbed a handful of sand and tossed them towards Zhang Yang’s eyes, causing a momentary blindness and inflicted the {Confusion} debuff.

Zhang Yang immediately counter the debuff with [Heart of the Death Knight] accessory skill and aimed his hammer at King Kong’s Wrath. With all the muscles tensing up in his forearm, Zhang Yang forcefully heaved down the hammer with the might of a God of War!

‘-98,774!’ {Destructive Smash}, Critical .



Pak!

King Kong's Wrath's head blew up, as if there was a bomb planted in his skull, splattering all his brain juice and other gory stuff around the cave and even on Zhang Yang's metallic armor.

Zhang Yang felt like throwing up. The scene was too brutal for any normal human to handle. No wonder Tang the monk had always expressed his disdain towards Sun Wukong. The old monkey would always use his magical pole to smash open the enemy to pieces. How would one feel safe with such a brutal creature that is capable of doing such an act, and actually guide him to the west?

"No!" cried Savage Lord and King Kong's Wrath in horror. They were India region S class Professional League Battle Team! If word got out that an entire battle team was "raped" by a single man in the wilderness, they would have no places to hide their faces.

Zhang Yang scoffed. With {Shield Wall} active, Zhang Yang's HP was constantly recovering. The best thing was that {Rearm} was ready to be used at anytime! He also had {Dance of Heaven and Earth} and {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}! {Glare of the Death God} too! There were still many trump cards that he had not used! Yet the opponent already seemed to have their wills broken. What else could they use against him?

Heaven's Shaker was swung around, bashing his opponents like a sledgehammer smashing into bricks. At the same time, Zhang Yang had been using kicks, hooks, trips, shoves, sweeps, and many other "Supporting Attack" to torture both Savage Lord and King

Kong's Arcane to the point that they could not even get into their stances!

Wham!

In less than 10 seconds after the second death, King Kong's Arcane had fallen. 15 seconds after that, Savage Lord had entered the spectral realm.

From the moment Zhang Yang had started the fight and until the last opponent was killed, the entire process had only taken a minute or more, even though so much had taken place in between those times. That was the ferocious power of Zhang Yang and Felice. Besides the split second {Wild Charge} to catch Savage Lord, the white bear had done nothing at all, it had been running up and down the field, trying to catch players as if they were floating butterflies, to no avail!

Claps

From a corner of the cave, Hourglass Figure was leaning against the cave wall and clapped her hands slowly and gracefully. Her expression was unexpectedly calm and somewhat delighted. Perhaps, its fortunate that the four fallen Indians had already released their souls to be revived again, or else, they would be completely annoyed at her actions.

During the entire battle with the four men, Zhang Yang had always kept an eye out for the woman. Not once he had let her out of his sight. She was, after all, one of the top players in the world

that had obtained the S class Inheritance, and was hailed as the best hunter in the world. Even though when Hundred Shots obtained the Dragon pet, she was still able to step above him in every way possible.

Even though she had not yet obtained the Shadow Striker Inheritance, Zhang Yang dared not to lower his guard around her. He had not activated the God of War Transformation and had his HP and Defense were at their natural values. It would be rather unfortunate if he were to receive a sneaky attack when his HP is low.

Still, all her actions were incomprehensible. She was just standing there, watching Zhang Yang slay all her teammates and had done nothing to stop it. What was she thinking then? Still, if she had joined in at the moment when Zhang Yang had made any careless mistakes, Zhang Yang could still turn the table around with {Dance of Heaven and Earth}, {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current}, and also {Glare of the Death God}. With so much power in hand, if he was still at disadvantage, he could activate the God of War Transformation at any time to butcher them all.

Before other 5 S class Inheritance makes their appearances, Zhang Yang would remain undefeatable.

"Hmm. Mm. Not bad. I expected no less from the man I've heard so much about. Well done, Zhan Yu." Hourglass Figure placed her one hand on her hip and cat walked towards him. She smiled seductively and said, "I'll give you a chance to join my guild. Think about it carefully."

Zhang Yang smiled and pointed at the dead bodies and said, "Let's say I accept, would you not be afraid of offending these guys?"

Hourglass Figure laughed with her rich voice and bent over. Her peaks bounced about wildly. Zhang Yang stared at the peaks rather boldly and compared them to Sun Xin Yu. Hourglass Figure does have a wonderful pair of boobs, perhaps she was on the same level as Sun Xin Yu. However, even Sun Xin Yu's toned abs could not match up to her waistline. They were indeed slender and made her boobs stand out even more prominently.

Hourglass Figure gestured at them casually and said, "They are just a bunch of nobodies with a major superiority complex. Zhan Yu, join the India region. Together, we can conquer the world! Or perhaps, conquer me~"

Zhang Yang could not hold in his laughter and said, "In that case, how about I invite you to join China? I don't mind having more partners in bed!"

Hourglass Figure widened her gaze and laughed loudly. "Zhan Yu, my dear. You, do know who I am, don't you? I'm about to own Steely Dangs Holdings! Right now, I own 7% of the total share of Steely Dangs, worth more than 7,800,000,000 USD. Are you sure that you want me to be your lover?"

Crap...he could never allow himself to lose his honor! What's more, he was technically representing China against India! How could he allow himself to lose! Even if it was in terms of financial fortune!

He quickly thought of a way to switch the topic and said, "Hmm. What do you want? Money or man?"

Hourglass Figure cocked her head and crossed her arm to lift her breasts higher up to Zhang Yang. "I know that you are wealthy. It's expected. However, I can offer you a good deal."

She then lifted her index finger.

"1 million?" said Zhang Yang disgruntledly.

"Tsk tsk tsk." She shook her head. "You're either being too humble or looking down on me," said the smexy indian chick. "100 million, in USD."

!" Zhang Yang was thrown away. The women had balls bigger than he did! Even though 'God's Miracle' was already famous throughout the globe, but it was still one year away from reaching its peak! Yet, this woman would take 100 million right then to coax him over. Zhang Yang could not decide whether is she had such foresight or was just too lonely...

Still, Zhang Yang had already amassed more than 100 million worth of fortune himself. Zhang Yang felt that after that amount, anything more or less would be nothing but numbers. He would not be tempted by Hourglass Figure's offer.

Zhang Yang smirked and said, "I stand by what I said. I don't

mind have Miss Hourglass Figure in my bed. Come to China and I'll welcome you with open arms."

Hourglass Figure widened her eyes. She was genuinely shocked by his response and shook her head. "What a shame." She turned around without saying anything else and disappeared from Zhang Yang's sight.

"Won't you want to have revenge for your fallen teammates?"

Hourglass Figure stopped midstride, angling her hips and turned her head around, "Right now, I'm not your opponent! That said, you are the first player to obtain an Inheritance, aren't you? You defeated those four idiots without the need to use the transformation skill. For now, I should at least find myself a stronger Inheritance, and come back for you when I do. I shall see you in the world championship Professional League!"

Hourglass Figure turned around after she was finished with her speech. In no time at all, she turned around a corner and disappeared.

# Chapter 528: The Hidden Properties of a Battle Companion

---

Zhang Yang did not stay to guard the dead bodies. Instead, he led Chionocpi out of the cave. The cave was too large and if he had no quest guiding assistants, he would never be able to search for the [Zinc Alloy] when he does not even know what it looked like.

As they walked on, Zhang Yang casually asked, "Chionocpi, did the harpies do anything to you?"

"N-No!" cried Chionocpi. His nose then grew longer. Nervous, Chionocpi quickly added, "There's this weird lady harpy that was always asking me to place my face in front of her. She would make me repeat and lie and then a truth in turn and then repeat it over and over again. I don't know what she wanted me to do, but she made my nose all sticky and wet! What a weird harpy, asking me to use my nose to poke her insides. She knows very well that my nose is made of wood, moisture isn't exactly good for it! She seemed to cry out each time it grew longer and shorter. How scary."

Zhang Yang stopped for a good moment and facepalmed hard. The developer who designed this quest must have been a dry f\*ck...

That being said, he turned to Chionocpi and took note of his nose and limbs. If he too had such an ability, he could have already dominated Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue! It's not that his magnum was lacking in any aspect. In fact, Zhang Yang could proudly say that he was superior to most men! It was the fact that the two girls were always at each other's throats, always demanding more and more from him, even as they shot death gazes at each other. When

he was done with one, the other would want it, and the cycle would continue until Zhang Yang's golden sack was completely shriveled up!

If he had a single finger that could be controlled like Chionocpi's nose, he should have already pacified both women with ease.

As he sighed heavily, Zhang Yang and Chionocpi made their way of the cave. The old man Kadejah was waiting anxiously. When he saw the silhouette of Kadejah, the little boy was overjoyed and ran over to the old man with tears in his eyes. The old man bent down and embraced the boy with his arms. "Chionocpi, my boy!"

"Father!" cried Chionocpi as he hugged his father.

After the emotional reunion, Kadehaj lifted his head and thanked Zhang Yang. "Brave adventurer, I can't thank you enough for saving my son!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Please Save My Son! Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

Zhang Yang smiled and replied, "Chionocpi is a good kid. No one in their right mind would not get in between him and the mouth of a monster."

Kaedah nodded his head and wiped away his tears. "Adventurer, I do not know whether this piece of news would be useful to you but, I've heard the ironsmith in the town had mentioned about a



rare mineral that could be found in the cave. The mineral is expensive and can be sold for a large fortune. Rumors say that the harpies are fond of the mineral and had hidden it away in some chest. The key to the chest is with the harpy leader, the Harpy Queen Yaniboque. If you can defeat her and obtain the key to the chest, you could sell the minerals for a large sum of gold coins!"

...

Eh? No quest notification?

Zhang Yang stuttered a little and said, "I-I thank you for the news. Old man, if I do get rich, I will come back and have a drink with you!"

Kadejah smiled and chuckled, "Thank you. I bid you farewell, adventurer. We shall take our leave now."

As the man turned around, Kadejah looked down to Chionocpi and said, "You must listen to me, and never run around again!"

"Yes, father!" Chionocpi nodded his head, and his nose grew a little. What a prick!

Zhang Yang turned back to the cave and headed to the place where he had rescued Chionocpi in the first place. He wanted to take the opportunity to rush in, since the monsters that he had killed had yet to spawn. Even though the monsters were not difficult to kill, it would still be a little troublesome. Halfway

through, Zhang Yang had bumped into the group of four Indians that he had killed not too long ago.

Their face turned pale, but they came at him anyway, thinking that he was as unprepared as they were.

Zhang Yang laughed at their stupidity. He had not used any strong skills when he had first defeated them. So, killing them now would not make any difference. In fact, it would only be easier, since he now knew how they fought. With Felice joining his attack, the two of them had sent the four Indians to their graves again. It was all too simple for him, since Zhang Yang had the S class Inheritance, while Felice was a Battle Companion equipped with a complete set of Mythical equipment. With the two of them, they could completely crush any players right there and then. Come four or five, even 40, or 400, no one would not stand a chance when Zhang Yang activates his God of War Transformation! It would be a walk in the park for him to kill both normal and professional players. The difference in power when he is in Transformation mode was like heaven and earth, with no gray areas in between the two!

Not long after the fight, Zhang Yang came to the place where he first found Chionocpi. The cave was huge, and the routes were as complex as a spider's web. He would usually walk with one hand against a wall at all times when in such caves. However, this cave had circular routes. If he had done so, he would be circling around endlessly.

Zhang Yang enlarged the minimap and found a large cavern that was even bigger than the entire cave! Though it was not clearly

specified, bosses usually reside in a large area. Hence, it would be sensible for him to start there first.

After memorizing the pathway, he then proceeded to head in the general direction of the cave. Not long after, the monsters around had gained a tier, turning from normals to elites. Even though they could not cause Zhang Yang much trouble, it would still be time-consuming for him to kill them all. Besides, the four Indians might come back for his head anytime.

Zhang Yang then decided to use {Shadow of the Void} and {Burrow} to sneak past the monsters and moved deeper into the cave, unhindered. There was no way for Savage Lord and his mates to trace his pathway.

Even though the pathway to the boss' room was clear-cut and simple, the way to it was completely filled with monsters. When {Shadow of the Void} and {Burrow} expired, he had to start killing his way through. It was a good haul as he had gained many pieces of equipment. Despite being barely dressed, the harpies had dropped a total of over 50 Gray-Silver equipment and 13 Yellow-Gold equipment. Zhang Yang was on the verge of filling up his inventory.

"Little Yang! The official site had released information about the tiers of Battle Companions. Check out little Felice's grade. How many stars is she?" said Fatty Han through the voice comm just when Zhang Yang was starting to get annoyed at picking up equipment.

"Oh," said Zhang Yang as he nodded unconsciously. "What was it

again?"

Fatty Han laughed and explained.

Battle Companions were unlike pets or mount. That had already been clearly established. It was true that there were Black-Steel, Yellow-Gold, or Violet-Platinums, but players had found out that Battle Companion had more than those grades. Felice was just too special to be even graded in the first place, but Han Ying Xue's Battle Companion Messick, and the little girl's Battle Companion "The Artist", Reina were too far apart in terms of their prowess. Messick's HP was at least seven times that of Reina!

Even though Battle Companions could equip armor or weapons to increase their strength, there was no way to tell if the Battle Companion they had was strong or weak, which left players greatly confused. Hence, when countless of players threw in an endless amount of inquiries to the officials, the developers had gotten sick of explaining and decided to release some information about the Battle Companions.

According to the officials of 'God's Miracle', they had intended to allow players to slowly discover the capabilities of the Battle Companion and find one that suits their own specific play style.

For tanks, they would wish to have DPS type Battle Companions, so that they could help kill monsters faster. That, or a Healer-type to allow oneself to last longer in battle. Inversely, DPS class players would want to have tanker Battle Companions since it would keep them from getting overwhelmed. Naturally, healing types would be effective as well. Supporters are always a welcome sight.

That being said, those categories would branch out into various subcategories under each class of Battle Companions. For example, under the tank class, there were single target or multiple target aggro control. For DPS type, there were magic attack and physical types, ranged, melee, AoE, single target, and many other branches. Theoretically, there was no strongest Battle Companion, only the best suited for each player.

Hence, the official had never released information about Battle Companions, until now, in hopes that they could prevent the game from being too linear where players would end up having the same "strongest" Battle Companions.

Zhang Yang had guessed correctly that each Battle Companion had an original grade which depended on their default equipment tier. For example, Felice would be a Mythical tier, according to her equipment. If he had not unlocked the seals on her, she would only gain levels without gaining tiers.

However, the equipment alone does not determine the prowess of a Battle Companion. If a player could farm or obtain the special equipment meant for their own Battle Companion, an originally Black-Steel tier Battle Companion could be upgraded to a Celestial superman! They could even kill a Battle Companion who started off as Holy tier!

Battle Companion had a specific growth rate which was a hidden attribute. It could be described in such a way. When a special equipment with 100 bonus Strength is worn by a Battle Companion, the effect of the Strength bonus could go down to 10

or even shoot up to 150, depending on the wearer.

For Strength type Battle Companions, equipping a Strength equipment would be beneficial for them. For Dexterity type or magic attack type, the amount of Strength they gain from the equipment would be minimal.

The system had even used a Star grading system to determine the growth rate of each attribute. The lowest was 1 star and the best was 15 stars. 1 star would only provide 10% bonus and 15 stars would be 150% attribute bonus. This was not limited to only equipment. It was the overall stat bonus. For example, when a [Vitality Magic Scroll] is used to provide 100 bonus Vitality, a 15-star Vitality Battle Companion would gain a 150 Vitality points boost, while a 1-star Vitality Battle Companion would only gain 10 Vitality points, even if the original effect was 100 points.

Normally, like players, a magic attack type Battle Companion would have higher stars for their Intelligence and Spirit attributes and lower stars for Strength and Dexterity. It would be as simple as equipping armors and weapons to see the changes. A tank type Battle Companion would have better Vitality star points, while physical attack type Battle Companions would have higher Strength and Dexterity stars.

"Little Yang! What are Felice's attribute star points?" asked Fatty Han excitedly. "My Napolita has 8 stars in Intelligence, 7 stars in Spirit, but her Vitality only has 6 stars."

Napolita was Fatty Han's Battle Companion that he had obtained just a few days ago. She was a busty, blonde chick. Hmm...the

important factor was indeed her bust.

Zhang Yang wavered a little. "Didn't you say that 15 stars was the best? Are you already that satisfied with her?"

"F\*ck! Where can you find a Battle Companion with 10 stars in any of their attributes? Just look at the official database! Anything with 7 stars is already pretty good!" said Fatty Han as he defended his big hooters. I mean, his busty Battle Companion.

"Hey! I asked you to check Felice's star count!"

## Chapter 529: Attribute Growth Star Points

---

Zhang Yang finished off the harpies around him and then opened the character window. Compared to when he first started the game, Zhang Yang now had three tabs of windows to browse through, two of them having been added over time. The first, being his own character profile, the second was the summoned pet and battle pet and the last one was the Battle Companion window, where he could look up Felice's stats.

As expected, beside the five basic attribute points, the attack and defense properties, there was a string of stars behind each of the five main attribute points, indicating the level of growth Felice had.

Vitality, 10 stars! Strength, 10 stars! Dexterity, 10 stars! Intelligence, 10 stars! Spirit, 10 stars!

They were all 10 stars! A perfect balance!

Zhang Yang was shocked. If he had not heard to Fatty Han saying that having more than 7 stars is considered strong enough, he would have considered Felice's growth rate to be average! As the saying goes, jack of all trades, master of none. In any online game, investing in all attribute points would be suicidal. Truthfully, if he could, Zhang Yang would wanted to have all her Spirit points to be cut in half and be invested in Strength and Intelligence so that they would be maxed at 15 Stars instead. That way, Felice's attack in her human form and her Dragonhawk form would be much higher.



"Little Yang! Come on, dude! Tell me! What's the star count for Felice's attribute? Don't hide it though. Even if Felice does not have much room to grow, I would laugh. You know? Grade or tiers, does not determine growth power! Haha!" Fatty Han laughed.

Zhang Yang cringed but quickly smirked. He then screen-shotted Felice's attribute properties and let Fatty Han feel the burn in his face. "Here, have a look. Don't feel too disappointed when my Felice beats the sh\*t out of your busty dullard!"

"What's up with that!? 10 stars! All of them!?" cried Fatty Han disgruntledly.

It was no surprise that Felice had much greater power than the rest of the Battle Companions. She was, after all, the first Battle Companion in the game, and was the one who had unlocked the Battle Companion system. If she had been rubbish, it would have been highly irresponsible for the developers to do so for the first player to discover her.

Fatty Han was dissatisfied. He then proceeded to look for Hundred Shots and Endless Starlight to compare their Battle Companions. Perhaps, he was hoping that they had inferior Battle Companions so that he could stroke his ego. All 10 core members of Zhang Yang's team had obtained their own Battle Companions, ranging from Gray-Silver to Mythical. Everyone happily reported their Battle Companion status for a little comparison.

Among all of them, the best was unsurprisingly, Felice. Coming close to her was Sun Xin Yu's Battle Companion, Ankh the

Assassin, and then Messick the mother\*cking pervert.

Ankh was covered in a black tight suit and had hide behind a black veil that covered everything from head to shoulders. Despite leaving no skin exposed, everyone could easily determine that Ankh was a lady from the body outline of her tight suit. Truth be told, she was a carbon copy of Sun Xin Yu. Ankh's original tier was only Gray-Silver. Despite that, her attribute growth was strong. Vitality, 6 stars. Strength, 7 stars. Dexterity, 10 stars. Intelligence, 1 star. Spirit, 1 star.

Even though her Intelligence and Spirit points were the lowest, Ankh had made up for it with extremely high Dexterity. She was an Assassin class Battle Companion. Having 15 stars in Intelligence and Spirit would not do her any good. Ankh was a good example as to how tiers do not determine a Battle Companion's prowess.

Sun Xin Yu was a burst damage type of player. It was natural for her to pick a Battle Companion that suited her playstyle. Perhaps, one day when Sun Xin Yu has Ankh equipping a full set of Violet-Platinum weapon and armor, she would be able to stand together with Sun Xin Yu and deal an explosive amount of damage. That's what gamers refer to as nuking. A nuking playstyle focuses on a large amount damage dealt over a short period of time. Perhaps, even tank class player like One Sword Stroke would not survive after being bombarded by Sun Xin Yu and Ankh.

As for Messick, the cowardly, persistent, and perverted little buggar only had 5 stars for his Strength, Dexterity, Intelligence, and Spirit. However, his Vitality was 12 stars! Even stronger than Felice!

Hmph. Such high Vitality befitting of a coward!

However, 10 Stars should not be Felice's full potential. She still had four seals that had yet to be broken. Zhang Yang believed that the breaking of the seals would definitely have a positive effect on Felice's strength. If every seal grants Felice an additional 1 star for her attribute growth, Felice would be a Battle Companion with 14 stars for all her attribute points!

It had been sometime when all 10 of them had gathered together. Naturally, jokes and teases were flying around. Out of the blue, Hundred Shots went silent and withdrew from the merry conversation. Zhang Yang noticed his odd behavior and observed him. Zhang Yang realized that Hundred Shots was actually having a conversation with someone else through the messenger. After a while, Hundred Shots nodded and quickly came back to the group. "Dragon Throat Fortress has been conquered!"

Zhang Yang was the first one to be surprised. "Hundred. Where did you heard the news from? If Dragon Throat Fortress was conquered, the system would have announced it!"

"Oh! Right! Give me a second," said Hundred Shots as he placed his hands on his ears for a second. He then laughed awkwardly and said, "Haha. My bad. Sorry for agitating everyone. Dragon Throat Fortress has been conquered. But it was only the Hard mode and not the Hardcore mode. It was taken down by a guild from Europe call "[Mess Up Your Mama](#)"!"

## Mess Up Your Mama?

Almost everyone cringed, while others twitched a little when they heard the rather bold and senseless name.

Zhang Yang remembered something and then explained the situation to them. "If I'm right. Mess Up Your Mama is a direct onomatopoeia of the Latin name Nihilum. It does mean anything, but the guild is undoubtedly strong. Leave them be for now, but don't let your guards down. They are strong, and we should watch our backs."

"Heh. Sounds like another bunch of proud mother\*ckers." Fatty Han puffed. Lone Desert Smoke was not doing any better than the other guilds. They were still stuck at the last boss and could not finish it off. The problem was that the boss' attack power was too strong. At the same time, the demand of the dungeon for players' DPS was also too great. Fatty Han had the Vampire Inheritance transformation, but when it was on cooldown, there was nothing that the party could do, besides slowly grinding their way in.

Even though Nihilum had already taken down the Hard mode, that result would never earn the right to trigger a server announcement. Still, no one could deny that they had already displayed the potential to raid the Hardcore mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. To unlock the Hardcore mode, one must first defeat Hard mode. Similarly, to unlock Hard mode, one must first defeat Normal mode.

"Hey dummy, shouldn't we join the exploration team as well?" asked Han Ying Xue. The exploration team consisted of 50

qualified members. However, it did not include top players like Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue and the other strong members. Only Hundred Shots, Endless Starlight, Fatty Han and Fantasy Sweetheart had joined the team.

Zhang Yang shook his head to deny Han Ying Xue's proposal. "Worry not about losing the First Clear Achievement. Hardcore mode is not that easy to defeat. In fact, we might still lose even if we join them now. I suggest we spend our time to search for the Inheritances instead. Hundred, Mountain Mover will be reaching to Level 100 soon. When he does, I need you to hand over the commander position to him. In the meantime, why not search for Inheritance for yourself?"

Hundred Shots was the man who had obtained the overwhelming dragon pet in Zhang Yang's previous life. Zhang Yang did not want him to preoccupy himself with any more dungeon activities that might directly affect the chances of him obtaining the Red Dragon pet. Even though he had only managed to obtain B or C class Inheritance, he was on par with an A class Inheritance player when he acquired the Red Dragon pet.

According to Zhang Yang's well thought out plan, Hundred Shots would obtain the Red Dragon pet while Fatty Han takes the Phoenix pet. With two mythical creatures pairing up, it would be a fearsome presence in the game. The means to obtain the Red Dragon was completely mysterious, on the other hand, the Phoenix pet was just a hidden class quest of a hunter. Still, there was a capture prerequisite, one had to be Level 120 before they could even try to take on the quest.

"Oh! Mess Up Your Mama was able to raid the Hard mode because two of their players had Inheritances," said Hundred Shots. "According to the local forums there, the two players' Inheritances were C class.

Zhang Yang smiled, "There's no need to worry. C class Inheritance is strong, but its prowess would only help them to defeat the first five boss of the Hardcore mode. The last few ones would be extremely difficult."

The stronger the Inheritance, the stronger the boss would be in the chain quest. For example, the black dragon that Zhang Yang had to face would have been completely impossible if Felice did not go crazy back then. Even if he had forced all of his guild members to reach Level 120 and kill the dragon together, they would still lose. They might stand a chance if Zhang Yang asked for the help from Crimson Rage and Sky High!

On the other hand, the Vampire Inheritance bosses were only possible due to Zhang Yang already possessing the God of War Inheritance. On the other hand, Inheritance Classes D and below would only cough out easy bosses. Players would only need to kill mini-boss like entities and run around the world.

"Zhang Yang, when are you going to help me get all the remaining pieces of the Inheritance Fragment?" Han Ying Xue asked impatiently. She had already gathered five pieces of Inheritance Fragments. The other five pieces should be in the hands of the Hell-family Priest. If both sides do not end this cowardly conflict, the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance would never surface.

"Relax. Don't rush into things. If you do, they will too! Just let them be. When they can't take it anymore, they will strike first, and that's where we'll be waiting for them!" said Zhang Yang. "Then again, even if you have all Inheritance Pieces, it would matter since an S class Inheritance quest boss would not be an easy target. I'm not even sure if we can defeat it yet!"

It was the truth. When they were fighting the Vampire Count Ferra, it had taken all they had to survive. The boss for the Milkmaid Deity quest should be on the same level as the Black Dragon King. Even if Zhang Yang and Fatty Han transformed, two hours might not be enough to defeat the boss!

At least, in the meantime, they should lay low and grind to Level 120 to remove the Level Gap Suppression to win! In the meantime, the group should be able to gather more Forbidden Scrolls to increase the chances of winning.

After the chatting session, everyone left to do their own business. Zhang Yang then moved on and found himself a large cave. It was at least the size of a basketballs stadium with a height reaching to 30 meters tall. Stalactites glowed, protruding from the ceiling of the cave, illuminating the interior with a white-warm light.

At the deeper section of the cave, there was a stalactite that housed a large bird's nest which measured at least the 5 times the size of a king-sized bed. Inside the nest, a large female harpy was sleeping happily. Around the area, there were many hard to see sticks that were arranged in a long row.

[Harpy Queen, Yaniboque] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 125

HP: 37,500,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 30,157 – 34,157

Skills:

[Death Shriek]: Unleashes a devastating sound wave to deal 30,000 physical attack to all targets within 40 meters.

[Tackle]: Flies in the sky and shoots down at breakneck speed to claw a target. Deals 100% melee physical damage. Damage will be doubled if either the Head, Neck, Chest, or Abdomen is struck with the skill.

[Tear]: Tears a target apart with sharp claws. Deals 100% melee physical attack and reduces the healing rate of a target for 50%.

Note: The queen of Harpies, greedy, gluttonous, and has a lust for spherical-ended, pillar-shaped objects.

While the queen was sleeping, 20 elite tier Harpy guards stood



guard around their queen.

(1) Mess Up Your Mama – This one was rather hard to translate but the mandarin words were 黑你老母. According to the context itself, the pinyin of it (hei ni lao mu) sounds like Nihilum. Hence, when the Chinese read it out loud, it would sound something like hei ni lao mu. For the novel, we will use the official name Nihilum as the author had stated it in official context like a system announcement. But when the author uses 黑你老母 in conversation– we will retain its original meaning and use Mess Up Your Mama.

# Chapter 530: The Harpy Queen

---

"Away with you! Instead, bring me back the little wooden puppet that would grow his nose when he lies!" The harpy queen drawled lazily.

"Yes! My queen!" Two elite guards knelt down and saluted.

Zhang Yang roared and paced over boldly. "No need to waste your time. Might I suggest you clean your neck a little so I that wouldn't stain my blade when I remove your head!"

"Insolent!" All 20 elite guards raised their spear and glared at Zhang Yang. They awaited for their queen's command to act.

"Hm?" The queen widened her eyes as she lazily crawled out of her nest. She spread open her glorified wings and hovered a few feet above the ground without the need to flap them. Judging from her completely naked upper body, all men would have slobbered over her, but their mood would be killed instantly when they lower their gazes to her lower half, which looked like eagle talons attached to the end of chicken drumsticks.

When Yaniboque spotted Zhang Yang, her expression turned incredibly lustful. "Hm. Hm. It's a little human warrior. Come here my dear, please me and I shall spare your pathetic life~"

Zhang Yang glanced around and saw that the sticks arranged in a row were completely gnawed off. Some of them were even broken. Fuh. No wonder she was A Mythical tier boss, perhaps she was

graded that way due to her level of lust! Zhang Yang drew his hammer and hurled it in the air. "Bird lady! Perhaps you would want to have a taste of my Ru Yi bang's power!"

Who could have known that Yaniboque would look at the hammer's long and rough appearance and slobber around like a bitch in heat. She giggled happily and said, "No bad~ Mm~ The stick is long and rough~ But is it hard enough for me~~"

Zhang Yang could have tossed the hammer over to her and let her rub it against her huha. How could a boss behave such a way!? Which developer was responsible for this boss' development! Bring him out and give him a thousand years worth of torture. Zhang Yang was trying his best to anger the boss, yet she was greatly delighted, or perhaps, took it as an invitation?

What's done is done, might as well just attack and get it over with.

Zhang Yang activated the God of War Transformation. His character glowed with a golden radiance and illuminated the cave for a brief second.

"Ah hah! Wonderful! You are a Harpy as well!" cried the Harpy Queen in an orgasmic voice. "Come and please me! If you can, I will marry you and pleasure you every single day!"

Oh lord, have mercy on this lost soul...

Zhang Yang completely shut himself out from listening any longer. He activated the {Spear of Obliteration} and engulfed the hammer in his hands with a shroud of dark cloud. With great force, Zhang Yang hurled the hammer in his hands towards the queen. A splatter of blood spewed out of the nest, accompanied by a scream of pain.

"Urgh~~" cried the boss. With rage, she commanded, "Kill that man!"

All 20 elite guards spread their wings and zoomed towards Zhang Yang. In a neat formation, they surrounded him and thrust their spears at him.

Zhang Yang reached his hands out and called his hammer back to him. Once the hammer got to his hands, he struck down hard at one of the elite monsters. The monster had taken more than 80,000 damage, generating so much Rage points that it filled up his gauge to its maximum. The monster was sent down to the ground and had even formed a deep crater as it hit the earth. With quick movement, Zhang Yang flew around the cave and shot towards Yaniboque, casting {Destructive Smash} the moment when he was right above her.

‘-380,004!’

Now that is what you would get when you are not under-level!

The queen took the damage and had her head slammed down forcefully. The damage was so high that any DPS class would be

ashamed of themselves, wishing that they could just dig a hole and hide inside. Zhang Yang flung his arm out and cast {Glare of the Death God}. The skill failed and was only rewarded Zhang Yang with a large text - "Resist!"

Such a pity that the boss-killer skill had such a low success rate on a boss. The effect was like the {Frost Strike} and the Frozen effect. For players or any normal monsters, the success rate would always be 100%. But when the target is a boss, the success rate to freeze the boss would be so low that even an ant would not feel a thing if they had stepped on it.

That being said, Zhang Yang could kill a Mythical tier boss and would still have much time to spare in his God of War Transformation skill. Using {Glare of the Death God} would not make much difference. It's like adding salt into the sea. Go ahead and resist, the fight will last only for a few minutes, anyway.

"Bastard! Human! Despicable humans!" Right then, she had lost her lustful emotion towards the man, or perhaps, had only diverted her lust only to the hammer that Zhang Yang was wielding. The harpy queen spread out her wings forcefully and whipped out her talons to claw at Zhang Yang's chest.

{Tackle}!

Zhang Yang raised his shield immediately. A loud metal scratch was heard along with a deep mark on the Titan's Shield. The attack had immediately deducted 18 points of the Shield's [Durability](#) and also knocked Zhang Yang backward by 4 to 5 meters. Immediately, Zhang Yang was surrounded and attacked by

the group of elite monsters.

‘-232!’

‘-892!’

‘-122!’

‘-0!’

A series of pathetic attacks landed on Zhang Yang. With his 12,000 Defense points, almost all elite monster’s attack would not make much damage, even if they do, the residual damage that manages to get pass through the Defense would still face a 20% damage deduction and 2,606 damage absorption! For them to even deal a few hundred damage meant that they had quite a respectable amount of attack power.

Zhang Yang’s Vitality Aura had been leveled up to Level 6. The bonus Vitality was as high as 24%. His original 122,120 HP was multiplied by 40, granting him a godly 4,884,800 HP! A few hundred damage was nothing but tiny specks of thorns for him.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

Wham! Bam! Boom!

Instantly, a series of 160,000 damage burst out, some of them

were even 330,000 damage! If only one of them was a Lucky strike, the damage would reach over 500,000! Such a damage could kill an elite monster in just two hits!

"Argh~~" Yaniboque cried in pain. Just then, her voice grew louder. It grew so loud to the point that the sound wave was visible to the naked eye!

{Death Shriek}!

‘-11,794!’

‘-29,120!’

‘-28,200!’

Zhang Yang, Felice, and Whitey Jr. took damage. Naturally, the damage Zhang Yang taken was the lowest among the three. The poor flying serpent had only 34,960 HP. The attack had nearly killed the poor reptile! Felice on the other hand was in her Dragonhawk form, having only 880 Defense, and the damage she took was the highest. However, it did not matter, since her HP was ridiculously long.

Zhang Yang tossed a bottle of potion and a [Bandage] to Felice and she automatically healed herself. The little girl could be said to be a player herself. However, she had no inventory and had to rely

on Zhang Yang to physically give her items to heal herself. As for Whitey Jr, Zhang Yang had activated {Wild Recovery}, allowing it to slowly restore its HP, 5% at a time.

"None shall harm me and live to tell the tale! Die! Death be upon you for disobeying my wishes!" Yaniboque shot into the sky and suddenly zoomed in at Zhang Yang at a high speed. Zhang Yang could see her afterimage that was heading towards his head!

{Tackle}!

If the attack lands on him, it would cause double damage!

Zhang Yang raised his shield despite {Block} was still on cooldown. A loud "skrriiiiing" was heard and a loud "pak!" came after. Yaniboque's talon had forcefully pierced through the shield and had clawed at Zhang Yang's head.

‘-13,520!’

Unfortunately, the boss' attack had damaged the shield; however, the attack was somewhat weakened, since it had only cause normal damage to Zhang Yang.

D\*mn! No wonder they say that the shield was a replica! Although the Titan's Shield was a Violet-Platinum tier equipment, it had failed to block the boss attack without being physically damaged. That attack alone had removed 120 points of Durability! F\*\*\*CK!



Zhang Yang had started to be mindful of his shield and hesitated using his shield to block any more attacks. Once the Durability of the shield reaches 0, the item attributes will be rendered useless! The shield alone gives 1,344 Vitality points, with both the Vitality Aura and the God of War Transformation skill multiplying its effect, it provided Zhang Yang 666,620 HP. If the shield was broken, he would lose that much maximum HP.

Yaniboque's attacks came one after another without any pauses. Just 10 seconds later, the boss used {Death Shriek} again and dealt damage to everyone. The poor flying serpent had only managed to recover 50% of his HP, hence he was killed instantly. Felice, on the other hand had managed to recover only 20,000 with the potion and [Bandage].

The AoE attack was starting to get annoying.

However so, it was meant to be that way. If it was not annoying, they wouldn't be fighting a high-leveled boss! Faced with such a boss with such a devastating AoE skill, players cannot win the boss by sheer numbers. They would need to send multiple batches of players to swap around.

Zhang Yang frowned a little and cried, "Felice, I need you to withdraw for now!"

"But...Big brother! Felice wants to help!" cried the little girl disgruntledly.

"Do not fret. Big brother can take on the harpies alone!"

"Ok!" cried Felice. She then left the boss' attack range and had accidentally kited one of the elite guards with her. The little girls then sent one {Fire Missile} at the monster, before morphing into her human form to attack with her lance.

The monster, despite being an elite tier, could not handle Felice's powerful attack. In only a few hits, Felice had killed the monster.

"ARGH--!" Yaniboque shrieked once more and blasted out echoes of sound waves.

30 seconds after Felice had withdrawn from battle, Zhang Yang God of War EP had gained 3 points. He then quickly activated {Crushing Strike}, sending beams of light bursting out of the earth and damaging all monsters around. Sadly, the attack will never be stronger than {Horizontal Sweep}. Still, EP was given to him for free, and since the only skill that he could spend them on was {God of War Crushing Strike}, might as well use it rather than leaving it to gather dust.

After a series of {Horizontal Sweep} and {Thunder Strike}, Zhang Yang had successfully killed all the elite monsters, leaving the boss alone with Zhang Yang. During the fight, Zhang Yang was finally done analyzing the boss' {Death Shriek}. At most, the boss would use the skill once every 8 seconds to 15 seconds.

Now able to time the attacks of the boss, Felice was able to join in the battle. Every time the skill was used, she would have to rush to

the furthest range possible and fire three counts of {Fire Missile} before retreating from the battle to heal. Even though it was a waste of time which would diminish her overall DPS, it was better than being dead!

In truth, even though he was rather nervous, the entire boss fight was just a walk in the park. If he had fought the boss head on, he would have taken close to 7 to 8 minutes. His DPS was over 87,000, coupled with Felice's "weakened" DPS of over 12,000, the total DPS would be around 90,000. If he had a few hits that produced a critical or even a Lucky strike, the total time taken would have been shorter!

It was nothing but a cake walk!

All S class, A class, and B class Inheritance had been adjusted in a way where players can only obtain them once they reach Level 120. Hence, truly powerful bosses would only make their appearances after level 150. Right then, when Zhang Yang had not yet even reached Level 120 and had already obtained the God of War inheritance, he was like a US Special Force that had been sent to fight the Hans or the Mongols. No matter how strong the boss is, even if it was trained in the ultimate form of martial arts, it would not be able to stop Zhang Yang's simple Desert Eagle 50 AE bullets from blowing its head up.

Zhang Yang could not help but feel truly lucky. When he had just obtained Felice as his Battle Companion and took on the God of War Inheritance quest, Felice was able to destroy the Black Dragon with ease and had led to the early procurement of the S class Inheritance. Right then, from Zhang Yang's perspective, all bosses

around his level were like weeds in a field.

Such a relaxed period should only last until Zhang Yang surpasses Level 150. The bosses in Level 150 maps have had their difficulty adjusted to take on players with at least C class Inheritances. A few of the bosses would even require a team of B class tanks and healer players to fight together. For Zhang Yang, a player with the S class God of War Inheritance, he could easily make an Ethereal tier boss grovel at his feet when he activates the Transformation!

...

Yaniboque shrieked, clawed, zoomed, and tackled Zhang Yang like a deranged woman. Although her attacks were not weak, Zhang Yang's overwhelming Defense had turned them into needle pricks. After damaging Zhang Yang by over 2,000,000 damage, she was defeated and had fallen down to the earth, leaving her blood all over the ground.

Zhang Yang headed over to the boss to quickly collect all the battle loots. The time remaining on the God of War transformation was still plenty enough for him to go for one round of grinding. The boss drops were rather fair; one Mythical tier Heavy Armor Greaves and two Violet-Platinum equipment, a ring and a dagger. There was one more skill book and an iron key which, according to its description, should be able to unlock Yaniboque's chest.

Zhang Yang took all the items and tossed them into his inventory before splitting up with Felice to search the room for a treasure chest.

As he searched around, he reviewed the items that he had just acquired.

[Marronda's Ring] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +212

Intelligence: +137

Sprit: +137

Equip: Increases 270 maximum MP.

Equip: Increases 2.1% damage.

Equip: Increases 0.7 Critical rate.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

Note: Marronda was a spirited adventurer Spellcaster. He was famous and renowned for venturing into places of great danger. Looks like his journey has ended. Let's hope that the great Spellcaster had not been tortured too greatly before he died.

Pass...As for the dagger, even though it had a Level 120 Level Requirement, it would be placed in the Little Merchandise Shop for sale, since it did not have a lowered Level Requirement special effect. That being said, a Level 120 Violet-Platinum would still fetch a few hundred thousand gold coins easily.

Lastly, the greaves. It was the only Mythical item that the boss had dropped. Since it was the boss's first kill, the best equipment should have a lowered Level Requirement special effect!

[Sky Soaring Greaves] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +889

Strength: +420

Dexterity: +420

Equip: Increases 1,700 maximum HP.

Equip: Increases 3.5 % healing rate and damage output.

Equip: Absorbs 358 damage on attack.

Use: Increases 50% movement speed for 15 seconds. Cooldown: 30

minutes.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

Special: Lowers the Level Requirement by 20 Levels.

Hah...Finally! An item that he could use immediately!

(1) Durability, the maximum durability points of that shield was never mentioned in the novel. It was not known to how much was the maximum durability points does each weapon has.

# Chapter 531: The Messenger Man

---

Last one, the skill book.

[Pet Skill Book: Shatterpoint Weakness]

Use: Teaches you pet the skill {Shatterpoint Weakness}.

Zhang Yang was dumbfounded. Yaniboque was a Level 125 boss, despite not being the strongest entity in the map. Even so, since it was her first kill, the skill should be of some caliber. The problem was, which pet should he put the skill on?

The Mythical Turtle was the highest tier among all, but its movement speed was too slow. The flying serpent on the other hand was a flying mount, and a magic attack type, and under certain conditions, it had more damage output than the white bear. However, since its mass and size were too large, not all maps, or fields could accommodate for it. On the other hand, the white bear was useful in tight spaces. However, the bear was of a physical attack type. Its attacks were greatly behind that of the flying serpent. In cases where the flying serpent could be sortied, Zhang Yang would have never thought of using the bear.

What a drag!

Might as well gets his hands on a Thunderhawk as soon as possible. It is Violet-Platinum, magic attack type flying mount that was much slimmer and smaller than the flying serpent. As it would be easily summoned in constricted spaces, it would solve the



problem of who to teach the skill {Shatterpoint Weakness}.

After he had steeled his decision, Zhang Yang kept the skill book instead of using it. He had decided to use it on the Thunderhawk later on to save some Pet Skill Engravement Scroll.

After circling the cave for half an hour, Zhang Yang finally stumbled across the Harpy Queen's chest. He then used the iron key to unlock the hatch and open it. A bright metal that had been carved into a long, baton-like shape lay inside. Zhang Yang picked the baton up and examined the item description.

[Zinc Alloy] (Quest Item)

Item Description: A mineral alloy found in the Skeletal Spirit Mining Cave. Only one can be found in a thousand years. The Zinc Alloy is a malleable, pliable, and ductile metal. Best for a certain type of product.

Note: Yaniboque's most precious treasure. Especially important whenever she feels lonely. Feels rough, ribbed, thick, long...and slightly bent to perfectly fit in her...

Zhang Yang frowned and twitched a little with disgust as he picked up the "Zinc Alloy" out of the box and in his inventory. He could not help but to feel a little ticked off at Margery when she had asked him to collect the metal, could it be for her own purpose? After all, she was living inside the Pandemonium. Her only neighbor was a stone giant. It could not be helped if she gets lonely sometimes...

Right then, Zhang Yang still had over 1 hour as a God of War. Zhang Yang then proceeded to move on kiting as many monsters as he could. He was still at Level 105, at 47% experience. When he was done killing everyone and the transformation skill had ended, he had gained 6% experience points. If he could maintain God of War transformation, he could level up in one day (real time).

After emptying the entire mining cave, Zhang Yang moved out of the cave and found himself inside a dark cave. He hesitated a little and thought that he might have taken a wrong turn somewhere. Right before he wanted to turn back, he picked up a putrid smell coming from a section of the cave that was devoid of light. He braced himself and moved inside, only to find mountains of corpses that had already undergone putrefaction. Some of them still had fresh blood still dripping from the stumps of their headless necks. The cave... was a graveyard.

Zhang Yang ventured around, hoping to find something interesting, besides dead bodies. After digging around for a little, he found out that all of the corpses here were male. It was a little odd to find only human men, due to the fact that there were many other races besides humans. There were dwarfs, centaurs, elephants, and other animals.

"F-Friend..."

An inaudible voice came from a corner, like a whisper of the wind which made Zhang Yang jump a little. He then turned to the source of the voice and found a withered body of a man.

"F-Fret...not...I'm n-not cough d-dead yet!" The man was a human, wearing ragged clothing that resembled a magician robes. Even though he was not rotting, there was practically no flesh in his body. His body was literally skin on bones. Nothing in between. His face was sunk inwards, which made the outline of his skull stood out.

[Marronda] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 1 / 12,000,000

Defense: 3,300

Skills: NIL

Marronda? The owner of the ring that Zhang Yang had just obtained? It's a miracle that the man was still alive. Pity that he had only 1 HP left, a state where if Zhang Yang had accidentally stepped on him, he would be delivered to heaven. However, since Marronda was a green-friendly NPC, killing him would not do any good.

Zhang Yang walked over to him and cried, "Hold on my friend. I shall take you to a Priest!"

"Don't waste your time. I have exhausted all of my life energy. I'm afraid that I can only last for a few minutes," said Marronda.

His voice was brimming with energy and he could even talk properly without stuttering.

A quest, perhaps?

Zhang Yang pats the man's shoulder and asked, "How did you end up this way?"

"Sigh." Marronda sighed with despair. "I was an adventurer like you. It is a lifetime career. An endless adventure. My goal, was to enjoy the great land and its beauty. With my great looks, my elegant mannerisms, my noble status, and my adventurous spirit, wherever I went, ladies would be slobbering all over me. Pity that men do not share the joy of my presence. I had to leave a town in less than 2 weeks! There was this one time where I was having a happy conversation with a lady in her bed, when I was ambushed and had to leave the place!"

Zhang Yang cringed. Initially, he was empathetic towards Marronda, but when he had to mention about his unruly "adventure", Zhang Yang felt like stepping on his skull to crush him there and then.

"Sigh... I was doing so well...Until, I was caught by the harpies. It was then when I knew, that my happiness was morphed to my nightmare! Yaniboque, that crazy harpy, was a horny beast! No matter how many time I had laid with her, she was not satisfied! She had even threatened to kill me if I fail to take her to the peak of pleasure. To save my skin, I had to use a forbidden spell. The spell would grant me the power of Length, Girth, and Size, at the cost of my own life energy. In the end, when I finally subdued the female

happy, I was on the brink of death. Hence, here I am."

Forget Yaniboque, the entire mining cave must have been designed by a perverted designer with terrible taste! Zhang Yang nodded his head to his own thoughts.

"My friend, the reaper is but only a few steps away. I beg you, please take this magic letter and give it to Yanny of Galant Town. Tell her, that she is the only woman I love in my life!" The perverted bugger had taken out a white glass orb and shoved it in Zhang Yang's hands.

'Ding! Marronda has a quest for you: Message for Yanny. Will you accept it?'

No matter how lustful a person maybe, there will always be one person that he truly loves! Zhang Yang was not disappointed after all. Zhang Yang accepted the quest and the man's head slump over, breathing his last breath.

Zhang Yang sighed placed his hands over the man's eyes to shut his eyes lids. However, when he opened his quest log to read the quest description, Marronda had opened his eyes again!

Eh?! Could a person turn into a Spectre at such a speed?

Zhang Yang checked his properties and found that the man still had 1 HP and was a human.

Zhang Yang was furious and nudged the man's head. "You're not dead yet, why bother to close your eyes."

"I'm tired. Can't a man have his sleep?"

Zhang Yang could just slap the man with his metal gauntlet and kill him off instantly.

"Hold on, I have just remembered. I have one more magic letter. Please take this to Julie of Wumin Village. Tell her, I will never forget her beautiful eyes," said Marronda as he shove another magic glass orb to Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! Marronda has a quest for you: Message for Julie. Will you accept it?’

...

"And this magic letter is for Milon of Heryu City. Tell her that I will not forget her fair legs!"

"This one is for Tinting of the Balon Island. Tell her I will not forget the taste of our first kiss!"

"This one is for Marianna of the Black Smoke Town. Tell her, I will always miss the feeling of stroking her long hair!"

...

The magic glass orbs in Zhang Yang's hands started to multiply. He had obtained so many more until he had over 20 orbs in his hands, which forced Zhang Yang to place them around him to take more from Marronda. The man was a pervert of mythical proportions. When he started to shove more orbs, he did not stop!

20...30...50...90!?

Thud! It was the 35th or 36th time when Marronda suddenly dozed off.

Zhang Yang shooked his head and said, "Bro, enough with your sleep. Come on, how many more women have you actually pissed off."

Marronda did not respond. Zhang Yang was stuned. He then checked the NPC's properties and found the man was already dead.

Well, sh\*t. Even the reaper must be tired of waiting for so long and had just given up on waiting.

Zhang Yang felt like he had just taken a looooooong assignment. He opened his quest long and found there was as many as 90 messenger quests that he had to complete. However, there was one question that lingered in his mind when he had accepted the 30th orb in his hands. Should he just give up the quest? It was clear to anyone that a messenger quest was worth only a tiny speck of experience points and would not reward them with anything valuable.

Furthermore, the 90 messenger quests could never have a follow-up quest after. It would just be a complete waste of time.

Eh...wait a minute. Zhang Yang suddenly recalled in his past life, a player had stumbled upon a main story quest. When he was interviewed about it, the player revealed that the quest had started off with a long and draggy messenger quest.

For such a time-wasting quest, out of 100 players, perhaps 99 of them would automatically give it up. Even if there were players who would be interested in it, they might give up after delivering the 10th or the 20th letter!

The 90 letters were meant to be delivered to all corners of the Chaos Realm! Those that were bad with directions might take close to a month (real time) to complete the entire quest chain! What more, the return value of it was practically worthless! Only the unhinged would carry on through!

In that case, perhaps delivering all 90 letters would be of some worth since it could be related to a main story quest!

Zhang Yang then tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and returned to Morning Town, and then to White Jade Castle to have the [Sky Soaring Greaves] identified. After socketing a few [Gemstones], Zhang Yang returned to Morning Town and headed to a high-level map called Isaac Hills to hunt for a flying mount, the Violet Thunderhawk.



In truth, he had not wished to visit the Isaac Hills too early, since the monsters around there were of Level 150 and above. The highest-leveled monsters around the hills were Level 180. With such huge gap between him and the monsters' levels, it would be extremely tough for Zhang Yang to kill even a single normal tier monster.

When he had just entered the new map, monsters from as far as a hundred meters away had rushed over to him like sharks that had picked up the scent of blood. In a Level 150 map, normal monsters would have the same power of a Level 100 Violet-Platinum boss. Adding that to the immense level gap and monster count, Zhang Yang would be facing a tough challenge.

If the power curve of monsters as they increased in levels weren't steep enough, players would have already swarmed up the high-level maps and get themselves rare tiered battle mounts. If they are lucky, they might even haul in a Mythical or even a Holy tier battle mount which would be extremely powerful once they reach Level 100.

That aside, the map in Chaos Realms was huge. That was already established when Zhang Yang first entered the portal. Without a specific direction and objective, searching for a battle mount in such a place would be like searching for a golden dust on the beach. All the while, Zhang Yang knew that the Isaac Hills has battle mounts of Holy tiers, yet it was just a pipe dream. The safest plan was to just head on, find a Thunderhawk, subdue it and escape with a [Teleportation Scroll].

# Chapter 532: Violet Thunderhawk

---

After the greaves were Identified, the stats had been increased. Vitality, 1,270. Strength and Dexterity 601, and 2,500 max HP bonus. 5% damage boost and 512 damage absorption. However, the Gemstone that Zhang Yang had socketed in were Strength Gemstones to increase his attack instead of defense. Hence, the increment of his HP limit was not as drastic.

As of then, with the bonus of Vitality Aura, Zhang Yang's max HP was 134,520, 3,211 Strength, 24,547 – 28,147 melee attack, 2,480 Defense, and 2,886 damage absorption. Overall, his stats were equally balanced for attack and defense.

Along the route in search of the Violet Thunderhawk, Zhang Yang had been drawing in monsters unintentionally. In Level 130 or Level 140 maps, the monsters he faced pose no imminent threat to Zhang Yang. On the other hand, when Zhang Yang stepped into the Isaac Hills, his Rage gauge had started to charge up. He had been forced into a battle. Immediately, Zhang Yang turned his head around to search and after 2 seconds, he saw a black little dot in the sky that was heading towards him. It was a huge two headed vulture.

[Twin Head Corpse Eater] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 160

HP: 87,040

Defense: 4,260

Attack Power: 16,566 – 20,566

Skills: ???

What a ferocious beast! The twin headed vulture was still a few hundred meters away from him, yet Zhang Yang was already in its aggro range. In maps of high-level monsters, lower level players had not hopes of hiding at all!

That aside, the monster's stats were too strong for a normal tier monster. The stats alone could rival that of a player equipped with Violet-Platinum equipment. That being said, that was also the recommended gear for players to enter this map.

As mentioned before, the monster's difficulty increment was normal. In Level 180 maps, Holy tiered boss were considered to be the strong bosses whereas Ethereal tier boss were only mini-bosses. A small guild with a minimal number of strong players could defeat it. In accordance to that, a Mythical boss would be nothing but scrap then, only if they were of the same Level. Hence, a normal tier monster being as powerful as a player with a full set of Violet-Platinum gears was nothing to be surprised about.

The most important aspect was that Zhang Yang was only Level 105. Half of his gears were Violet-Platinum, and four of them was of Mythical tier. Generally speaking, Zhang Yang was already on par with the normal tier monster of that map. However, since the level gap was too great, Zhang Yang was at great disadvantage.

With a deafening shriek, the vulture zoomed through the air space and bit the flying serpent's neck. In his mounted state, attacking the serpent would mean attacking Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang raised his shield up and blocked an incoming claw attack.

PANG!

The metal plate vibrated violently and forcefully knocked Zhang Yang 7 to 8 meters back. Zhang Yang was fast. As he was reeling back, he hurled his hammer and managed to land a hit before breaking apart from the enemy.

‘-12,442!’

Not bad. For such a large level gap, Zhang Yang could still deal more than 10,000 damage. It was due to the bonus 50% damage of the God of War Inheritance. Or else, his attack would have been reduced by 10% or even 30%.

"KAW!" The vulture took the hit and let out a high-pitched screech. In response to the attack, the vulture spewed out a cloud of black, putrid gas that made the flying serpent to feel nauseous. It had even wavered a little in the air, as if it was going to fall down!

‘-39,342’

Zhang Yang took the damage, frowning suspiciously. It was too

high to feel right and he quickly checked the battle log. The attack was a skill called [Putrid Breath] that deals 20,000 fixed Shadow damage. However, since the level gap suppression was in effect, the damage that was dealt to Zhang Yang had been tripled, hence, the staggering 40,000 damage.

Zhang Yang had expected the amplified damage, but what he had not expected was the instant cast time of the skill. If a skill could lock onto a target and could be cast instantly, the chance to dodge it is practically zero.

Zhang Yang started to feel a little scared. If a normal monster was already that strong, what of the elites or the boss?

Argh. When that happens, he will find a way to deal with it. Now that the monster is here and ready, might as well just get over with it. Zhang Yang counterattacked and won the fight after using {Shield Wall}. When the vulture died, the loot appeared in midair and plummeted to the ground. Zhang Yang had no intentions of flying down just for a normal monster's drop and had Whitey Jr. fly higher, instead.

Unfortunately, the flying serpent was not able to fly too high. There was a certain limit to it which, highly depended on its tier. If the flying mount was a giant dragon, or a phoenix, it would be a whole new world for his flight experience. Higher tiered flying mounts could fly as long as they wanted to. The flying serpent was only a Yellow-Gold flying mount, hence, the distance of which it could fly, and the duration was greatly affected. As such, Zhang Yang was unable to dodge and avoid fighting all monsters that came after him. Occasionally, Zhang Yang would have to rely on

{Shield Wall} to fight one normal tier monster.

{Shield Wall}. To fight a normal monster. Anyone would laugh at that!

Zhang Yang laughed at his own actions. Still, it would be suicidal for lower leveled players to enter this place. Zhang Yang knew the location of the Thunderhawk, that was why he had dared to enter this Level 180 map in the first place!

After killing his way forward, Zhang Yang had finally arrived at the forest that he remembered from his past life and found the sky scraping tree.

Zhang Yang was extremely fond of this place, which explained why he could remember it so clearly. Due to Zhang Yang's late participation in the game, Zhang Yang had only managed to catch himself Green-Copper tier or Gray-Silver tier mounts. It was unavoidable since higher tier mounts were only available in small amounts for players to haul. After mounts were tamed, they would never spawn again. Even if they do, the tiers would drop. It was similar to that of a boss' drop. Killing it multiple times would reduce the drop rate and the item grade.

For example, Zhang Yang's Gold Eared Bear King. When Zhang Yang first caught it, it was a Yellow-Gold tier, if a second Bear King appeared in the map, it would be a Gray-Silver tier. That was why it is hard to obtain a high tier mounts. Besides equipment, the second most important aspect of all online games would be a player's level. When you have the level advantage, you can be a few steps ahead of other players and obtain many perks such as the

boss' first kill, or a dungeon's First Clear Achievements, and not to mention, the high tier mounts!

In his previous life, the information about the Thunderhawk mount being in his forest was known by many, besides Zhang Yang. Back then, Zhang Yang had to guard the place for more than a month to make sure he obtains the mount. Even though he had succeeded in obtaining the mount, it was an arduous experience that had left him exhausted. Things were so much easier now that Zhang Yang was alone! There was no one there to fight over the mount! Hence, the only threat that he would need to take care of was the parent of the baby Thunderhawk. King of the forest, the Mythical tier boss, King of the Violet Thunderhawk.

Even though Mythical tier boss was considered to be a scrapper in this map, Zhang Yang was barely on par with it! After setting and planning the battle strategy, Zhang Yang patted Felice's head and asked, "Are you ready, Felice?"

"Leave it to me, big brother! Felice will make sure that she does her job!" said Felice as she thumped her chest proudly like a knight pledging her loyalty. Zhang Yang was at ease, but he was a little worried that her super strength might ram her chest inwards and ruin her growth.

Zhang Yang's plan was to descend down with Felice and have her to lure the boss away. With her skill {Absolute Defense}, she could at least hold on for 2 minutes which would allow Zhang Yang to tame the baby hawk.

"Let's go!"

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the flying serpent and shot down towards the sky scraping tree. Zhang Yang had been too high in the sky and could not properly identify the exact location of the nest. As he got closer to the ground, Zhang Yang could see the nest, along with a large, blue color giant hawk that rested in it. The feathers of the bird were radiating with the blue color of electricity!

[Violet Thunderhawk King] (Mythical, Beast)

Level: 170

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Attack Power: ???

Skills: ???

Due to the large level gap between them, Zhang Yang could only see the boss' level, whereas the other attributes were hidden away with three question marks. However, that information was not necessary, since he was not there to defeat it!

The boss noticed Zhang Yang's presence the moment when he could see the nest. The aggro range was almost the same as Zhang



Yang's line of sight! The hawk spread its wings and shot into the sky. The sheer force of its lift-off tore fresh green leaves off the tree branches around!

Felice shot down in her human form and morphed into her Dragonhawk form while midair. When she was in the attack range, she immediately blasted off a {Fire Missile} and struck the boss with only 2,342 damage. The girl would then shot down to the ground and morphed back to her human form to activate the skill {Absolute Defense}.

While the boss was preoccupied with Felice, Zhang Yang was completely left at peace. The boss then closed its wings and descended to the ground to chase after Felice. Taking the chance, Zhang Yang flew to the nest and activated {Shadow of the Void} to leave the battle mode. Quickly, he dispelled the invisible effect and landed on the nest with the [Sealing Lease] in his hands. The reason he had entered the {Shadow of the Void} was because a player could not seal a monster during battle!

The tiny little bird, roughly the size of Zhang Yang's palm was just sitting right in the middle of the nest. The cute little bird could barely stand up, and the way it blinked its eyes lid was as cute as he remembered in his previous life. If Wei Yan Er was there, she would surely be competing with Zhang Yang for the bird.

With time quickly running out, Zhang Yang hastily used the lease on the Juvenile Violet Thunderhawk.

1%...2%...3%...45%...Pak! Failed.

One more.

1%...2%...22%...Pak.

ONE MORE!

Fortunately, the little bird was in the nest of a boss. Hence, with the boss' powerful influence around the area, there were no monsters around to disturb Zhang Yang in the middle of his sealing. Furthermore, Thunderhawks or hawks themselves were a species that are proud and non-sociable. Even during mating, they would only come upon each other for a moment, and part on to their own ways.

Hence, even if Zhang Yang was a 10,000 watt super light bulb, no monster would be able to pick up his aggro. As for the Thunderhawk boss itself, it could not even see that Zhang Yang was pillaging its nest and abducting its offspring since Felice was doing a wonderful job of kiting it away.

ONE MORE TIME!

1%...2%...3%...98%...100%!

Done!

Zhang Yang grinned happily. In his previous life, he had owned a

Thunderhawk. In this life, he had managed to own one as well! The only difference was the timing of when he got it!

Zhang Yang quickly tore a [Teleportation Scroll] up. During the teleportation process, Zhang Yang unsummoned Felice back into his inventory and disappeared without a trace.

Shush!

Zhang Yang appeared in Morning Town, a big smile plastered on his face.

# Chapter 533: Assault of the Japan-Korea Region

---

Zhang Yang arrived safely at Morning Town with Felice in his inventory Battle Companion's space. Only then, did he summon out the newly obtained mount.

[Juvenile Violet Thunderhawk] (Mythical Flying Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Defense: 0

Attack Power: 1 – 3

Skills: NIL

Zhang Yang was stunned. Was it not supposed to be only a Violet-Platinum tier? It took him only 1 second to realize that the same hawk he had obtained back then had probably been respawned many times over. Furthermore, if the parent was a Mythical tier boss, it should not be a mystery on why the offspring would also be a Mythical being!

Hmph. Lucky. A good haul.

Zhang Yang summoned the flying serpent alongside the hawk and brought it to grind as swiftly as he could to Level 100. The hawk could be as strong as Felice and would be a great help to him.

Even though there were plenty of players already entering Chaos Realm, they were greatly scattered around the place. The land of Chaos Realm was truly huge. Even though there were already more than a thousand players within it, but those numbers meant nothing when compared to the vastness of the land. With haste, Zhang Yang arrived at a safe zone that was completely devoid of people. He began his grinding there. Within an hour, Zhang Yang's super-powered attacks and the immense experience points of the monster in the Chaos Realm were enough to raise the hawk to Level 30. When the hawk reached the Level 30 threshold, the little hawk grew into a larger, handsome male hawk.

Zhang Yang did not stop there, he dedicated two whole days to get the hawk to level 100 and continued on until the handsome hawk reached Level 105, the limit of its level, since Zhang Yang himself was only Level 105.

Upon reaching Level 105, the hawk had grown even bigger. It was 2 meters tall and had iron-like talons that could break even the strongest of rocks. The feathers were naturally blue, with occasional streams of electrical impulses that flowed along the feather lines. Through the [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll], Zhang Yang had "cut and paste" the skill {Icy Built} and {Iron Built} from the bear, {Madness} from the Mythical Turtle, and {Bewitchment} from the flying serpent, all to the Thunderhawk. He had also let the hawk learn the skill {Shatterpoint Weakness} and two other skill books that he had already prepared, {Wild Recovery} and

{Haste}. Through leveling, the hawk itself had gained three other skills on its own.

[Violet Thunderhawk] (Mythical Flying Mount)

Level: 105

HP: 177,380 (Vitality Aura in effect)

Defense: 4,480

Magic Attack: 9,629 – 11,629

Skills:

[Shared Life (Passive)]: Combines both HP of the master and the pet.

[Icy Built (Passive)]: Reduce Frost damage by 90%.

[Wild Recovery]: Restores 5% HP by consuming 10 Focus points every second. Last for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 2 minutes.

[Iron Built (Passive)]: Increases 30% maximum HP.

[Haste]: Increases movement speed by 100%. Lasts for 15 seconds. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

[Madness]: Increases 50% attack speed. Grants 10% chance to restore 30% HP with every successful attack. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

[Bewitchment]: Confuses the target, immobilizing it. Lasts for 15 seconds. The state of confusion will be dispelled when the target takes damage. Success rate will be lowered while targeting a boss. Casting time: 2 seconds. Range: 30 meters. Cost: 100 Focus points.

[Shatterpoint Weakness]: Attempts to locate the target's weak points and causes all attack in the next 10 seconds to deal 50% additional damage. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

[Thunder Ball]: Fires a ball of thunder to a target, dealing 200% Natural magic damage. Has 1% chance to paralyze the target, preventing the target from moving for 1 second. Focus: 20 Focus points. Casting time: 2 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

[Violet Thunder Slayer]: Launches a Thunder Storm in an area of 10 x 10 meters. Deals 3,000 Natural damage to all target for 10 seconds. Cost: 100 Focus points. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

As expected of a Mythical tier battle pet. Even though it had only one single target skill, it was more than enough to deal 10,000 damage per second! Perhaps, it was on par with Felice in her Dragonhawk form. Besides that, the hawk had the skills {Madness} and {Shatterpoint Weakness} to start the fight. The Violet Thunderhawk was like a mobile, floating cannon. It was slow in reloading, but could deal powerful blasts that could kill any player

in his own level range!

Now that his hawk had reached to the highest possible level, for now, it made things easier for Zhang Yang. He could now start to search the last ingredient, [Light of Miracle] to unlock the second seal. He could also fly to the Malevolent Tower of the Spectre Sacred Land and complete the main story quest that he had accepted when he was only Level 10. That, or the Catarina quest in the Spider Kingdom. Lastly, he would take a look at the 90 Messenger quests...

Just as Zhang Yang was deciding on which quest to complete first, Hundred Shots called.

"Zhang Yang. I had received grave news. A group of North American players has just found themselves a [Territory Conquest Order]. The Japan-Korea region players have bought it.

"Hm. That's weird. Aren't they hostile? How could they, I mean, players of two great regions be involved in such a transaction?" asked Endless Starlight.

"It's possible." Hundred Shots explained. "Through interbank transfer. After the money is transferred, one player from the North America region would allow players from the Japan-Korea region to kill him. Kill, revive, and repeat until the item is dropped upon death."

Huh! That was possible...



Zhang Yang could not help but to recall something. When players enter the Holy City in the Chaos Realm, there should be an Auction House that would allow transaction of items for a high 20% tax. The method was widely used since the system could prevent cheating in transactions, even though they had put up an expensive taxing system.

"How much did they spend?" Fatty Han asked.

" 5 million USD!"

"WOOOOAH!" cried Fatty Han. "How could a small piece of paper be so expensive."

Zhang Yang shook his head. "Under normal circumstances, the [Territory Conquest Order] could fetch up to 100,000 to 1 million. But since the japs and koks are eager to get back their territory, the North Americans had taken advantage of them!"

"Heh. It's not like the fatsos in America would stop at one. Look at what they did to Japan's Hiroshima and Nagasaki. Hehe! Perhaps even the japs are getting used to being bullied. Talk about S and M. Woooo~" said Lost Dream.

"Heh." Zhang Yang chuckled. "In that case, let's make a show for them to remember. We will make the japs and koks waste their 5 million dollars!"

"Mm. Let's give them hell."

Fatty Han got excited and roared, rousing up everyone else.

However, just when they thought that the Japan-Korea region player would attack, four days passed and there were still no signs of attack. Zhang Yang and everyone else thought that it was due to the fact that they had yet to decide on a specific guild to launch the attack. It was a national war. They've had their own land taken away by other nation. It made sense if they would prepare the strongest guild to launch a counterattack. Selections of the best guild would take a long time since they would be the guild that carries the flag of the nation. If the said guild emerges victorious, it would gain the highest honor and fame.

Hence, with such benefits at stake, there was surely be a catch to it as well. What if the selected guild loses the war? It was, after all, a matter of national war. If they fail to emerge victoriously, the guild would be deemed the worst of all. A waste of national talent that would be blacklisted! Their own countrymen might hunt them down!

As such, it made sense for the guild selection to take so long. However, it was just a matter of time before they create an ultimate strike force. If the number was small, the defense of the castle would be stronger. 1000 players could be killed with only two to three blasts of the magic cannons. As such, the longer they take to decide, the more players could join the attack since more and more players would be reaching Level 100. Since the guild was created just for the sole purpose of taking down Winst Castle, players who meet the requirement could temporarily join the guild and fight in the war. The selection of players should cover the entirety of Japan and Korea. To put in comparison, the defenders

of Winst Castle would only be Lone Desert Smoke's own men. How could a single guild fight against the best players in Japan and Korea?

When they have gathered 10,000 to 20,000 players, Lone Desert Smoke might only have 1,000 or fewer Level 100 players. By then, the attack would be swift and decisive, a one-sided massacre! Again, it was a matter of time. Too early, and the attacking guild would not be able to gather enough players to attack. Too long, and Lone Desert Smoke would have gathered enough Level 100 players to attack. By then, Japan-Korea region player will lose the advantage of numbers since Lone Desert Smoke was the only Level 4 guild with a higher player capacity!

After a series of serious discussions, Zhang Yang had come up with an estimated timeframe. It was estimated that the Japan-Korea region will attack within the next 3 to 4 days. Since it was just a rough estimation, Zhang Yang had been laying low and did not hunt for bosses. He had purposely retained his God of War Transformation. Instead of grinding, Zhang Yang spent the next few days delivering the magic orbs. After the 23rd letter was sent, the system had sent the notification of the attack.

‘Ding! Player Amaou Kuyoshi has used the Territorial Conquest Order on Winst Castle. The Territorial Conquest War will start tomorrow night at 7.00 PM sharp. The war will last for 3 hours. The war is limited to Lone Desert Smoke, the Defender, and Sakura no Nagare Mae, the attacker. During the war, all teleportation circles will not function. All players who die will be revived at their designated major city and cannot return to the war. Within 3 hours, if any of the Sakura no Nagare Mae guild member successfully attacks the Territorial Hall, victory will be

theirs. The owner of Winst Castle will be Amaou Kuyoshi if the attackers win the war!’

Here it comes!

All guild members of Lone Desert Smoke were fired up when the notification had rang in. This was the first, authentic nation vs nation war! The main character of the war was Lone Desert Smoke! How could anyone remain calm!

Lo and behold, come another system notification that had silenced every member of Lone Desert Smoke.

‘Ding! Player Hangugui Gugwang has used the Territorial Conquest Order on Morning Town. The Territorial Conquest War will start tomorrow night at 7.00 PM sharp. The war will last for 3 hours. The war is limited between Lone Desert Smoke, the Defender, and E.E, the attacker. During the war, all teleportation circles will not function. All players that who die with be revived at their designated major cities and cannot return to the war. Within 3 hours, if any of the E.E guild members successfully attack the Territorial Hall, victory will be theirs. The owner of Winst Castle will be Hangugui Gugwang if the attackers win the war!’

A second Territorial Conquest Order!

"Crap! Those K-pop guys really got themselves a second Territorial Conquest Order!" cried Fatty Han angrily.

"This is a problem..." Hundred Shots sighed heavily. "Right now, we are being cornered. Right now, we only have 1,876 Level 100 players on the guild that could enter Chaos Realm. On the other hand, I had obtain news that the Japan-Korea region have already amassed more than 60,000 members. We are being attack by 30,000 players on each sides!"

"Looks like they are attacking both Winst Castle and Morning Town at the same time! Since we have taken two lands, we'll lose both lands! The Japs and Koks want to take their revenge!"

Right then, the Japan-Korea region players had gained the advantage in numbers. If Lone Desert Smoke wishes to save both territories, they would only lose both.

Zhang Yang laughed. "There's no way we are going to lose Morning Town. For better or for worse, we could always ask for help from Crimson Rage and Sky High. Have them lend us all their Level 100 players. It's a matter of China's pride now. If we lose, the town will be taken by the Japs and Koks. I don't think that anyone from China, friendly or not, would willing to let that happen."

"Bloody hell, it's infuriating to think that the Winst Castle is going to be taken away by the Japanese!" cried the little girl.

If he manages to borrow manpower from the other guild, it would create a new problem in the future since they would want to piece of the cake. If it was a matter of national protection, it might still be a valid reason to have them lend their powers. But if Zhang Yang were to have them fight for Winst Castle, the borrowed manpower might not be on the same page with Lone Desert

Smoke. After all, the ones guarding the castle would carry the name of Lone Desert Smoke. It would be Zhang Yang and the guild who gets the fame, while others remain completely unknown.

Under such circumstances, Zhang Yang could not even estimate the number of people he could bring to Winst Castle.

Lone Desert Smoke had a 40,000-player limit. If Zhang Yang wants to defend Morning Town, he would need to place 30,000 players in Morning Town. The remaining 10,000 players would be sent to defend the 30,000 men attacking force from the Japanese guild, Sakura no Nagare Mae. The odds are 1:3...no matter how, it would be tough for Zhang Yang to defend the castle...Was it too early to give up on Winst Castle...?

## Chapter 534: The Empire Helps Back

---

Zhang Yang had never planned to own Winst Castle forever, but he had never wanted to lose it so soon either! However still, the end must come. By hook or by crook, Zhang Yang would never allow the China Territory be lost! He would never allow the joke of the Japan-Korea region to be rebounded back at them!

Naturally, the first guildmasters he contacted were Snow Seeker, Sky Shaman, and Greensleeve Prince. In truth, there was no need for him to explain the situation. They had spies planted in Lone Desert Smoke. Luckily, all the guildmasters that he had contacted shared the same view as Zhang Yang. Without asking, they had all agreed to lend their members to Lone Desert Smoke. It was a gesture that any guild, friendly or otherwise would do, since it was a matter of national pride.

Not sooner after, Zhang Yang even received a private message from One Sword Stroke. Once Zhang Yang picked up the message, the first few lines were rather cross accusations on how One Sword Stroke believed that Zhang Yang was looking down on him. One Sword Stroke explained that he was not the kind of man who would still hold grudges and refuse to help his one nemesis to defend the nation. He was no traitor and would never allow the real enemy to strike their land without doing anything. Promptly, One Sword Stroke sent over 1,500 strong members to help Lone Desert Smoke.

The news spread out like wildfire. Forums had posts and topics about the war. Almost all Chinese players were enraged and invigorated. Even so, close to 90% of all players were still under-leveled, and since the manner of the war was between two guilds,

even if they wanted to, they could not help out. They could only cheer their compatriots on.

During the preparation phase, Zhang Yang had even received supports from guilds that he had never heard of before. Even though the guilds were not big or strong, each guild would have a fair bit of Level 100 players. The guildmasters had kindly offered their help to Zhang Yang and offered all their eligible members to help out in the upcoming war.

As such, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream were as busy as bees. First, they would need to arrange a large number of under-leveled players to temporarily leave the guild to make space for the incoming reinforcement. This process was exceptionally complicated since it involved more than 20,000 members. Once a member leaves the guild, the amassed guild Contribution points will be reset. Hence, the number must be jotted down in order to reimburse them when they return.

After a short period of time, Lone Desert Smoke was now an army of mercenaries. The guild consisted of 40,000 players from all corners of China. Naturally, there would be enemies among them, and minor arguments broke out. Some had even crossed swords and killed each other. Hundred Shots had treated the conflict as menial matter. Since the players who had entered were only on a temporary basis, Hundred Shots had only given some courteous words. It would be their choice to listen or not.

When it comes to defending Morning Town, everyone was fired up and willing to put their lives on the front lines. However, when it comes to defending Winst Castle, only a tiny fraction of them



was willing to fight. A majority of the players had insisted on fighting in Morning Town. Their reason being that with 40,000 players, they could at least guarantee victory on one front.

So far, Lone Desert Smoke was the only Level 4 guild with a maximum capacity of 40,000 players. They would have the upper hand in defensive fights. If they fully focused on defense, it would be a 100% sure win rate. If they were to still lose the war, it would be better for the game if all 40,00 of them just deleted their accounts and went to sleep.

Zhang Yang sighed. The defenders were all volunteers, he had no say in the matter.

In the end, Zhang Yang decided. He would take care of Winst Castle alone!

With the God of War Transformation, Zhang Yang would have 12,400 Defense, 90% magic nullification rate, 20% permanent passive damage reduction, and 20% active damage reduction. There had to be fewer than 100 players who could hurt him much!

Even so, he still had 2,886 damage absorption skill! The only threat to him were players who had similar Transformation Inheritances. Besides that, his HP would be 5,380,800 and he had a means of restoring his health completely every 30 minutes. Defending for 2 hours would not be a problem, but the war will last for 3 hours. What could he do in the final hours?

Even though the God of War Transformation would give him a

massive boost of attack, it was only 500%, not 5000%, and surely not 50000%. Players are not monsters and would not stand closely to each other to take the {Crushing Strike} like idiots. It would be a challenge for him to kill 30,000 players within 2 hours...

Perhaps, it is time to use the Forbidden Scroll?

[Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday] (Usable)

Use: Creates a 5km field from the center of the caster and deals 10% of maximum HP as damage to all targets within the field. Maximum damage dealt per target is 100,000. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Level Requirement: 100

Zhang Yang could kill 99% of all players with this scroll easily. With God of War Transformation, he could easily kill all players! SOLO!

It was settled then. Might as well be flashy for once and create a legend!

Even though the Forbidden Scroll was a rare item, it would be a worthless scrap of paper if it not used. Right then, Zhang Yang had the confidence of obtaining the second, the third, or even more Forbidden Scrolls! It would not be a waste to use it on the Japs and Koks!

Zhang Yang steeled his decision to defend Winst Castle alone,

and surprise the world with his feat!

The first Forbidden Scroll could be said to be the same as a nuke. It's high time to let the world know that in 'God's Miracle', such a weapon of mass destruction exists! The best part was that no one knew about Zhang Yang having such a weapon. After the war, those who would want to launch an attack on Lone Desert Smoke would have to think thrice before doing so.

Hmm. The Japs had taken a nuke to their nation once before. This time, in the game, Zhang Yang will drop another nuke on them! Let them experience losing one more time!

Thud thud thud...

From afar, the sound of marching footsteps could be heard. An extremely large horse come to Zhang Yang. The rider pulled the reins right in front of Zhang Yang, almost trampling him.

The horse calmed down, and a knight came down. The knight's armor was big and bulky. It gave off a light greenish hue which reflected most of the light, making him look like a beacon of hope. The knight opened raised his helmet's visor and spoke boldly. "My name is Rockovich. I am here in the name of Queen Serena to expand Her Majesty's Empire. In accordance to Her Majesty's will, I am here to lead an expedition to open a pathway to the Chaos Realm!"

[Rockovich, The General of White Jade Empire] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 120

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 19,410 – 23,410

Skills: NIL.

After Serena had conquered all eight kingdoms in China's region, her had ascended to be the Queen of the Union, and had White Jade Kingdom become White Jade Empire. Zhang Yang had earlier known that the Queen would invade Chaos Realm, but he had not expected the army to arrive so quickly.

More importantly, why is this Rockovich here in Morning Town? And that HP. Surely he was not a random Mythical tier boss. Could he be an important character for a quest?

"General, why are you here?" asked Zhang Yang straightforwardly.

"As I said, opening a pathway to the Chaos Realm requires a land. The Queen had spoken highly of you and your deeds to the once King of White Jade. You have put your life on the line on more than one occasion! I will have 200,000 soldiers of the empire to

rest and camp here for a few days before the Queen herself sets foot here!" said Rockovich boldly.

Zhang Yang widened his eyes. "You want to have your soldiers camp here?"

"Does it offend you? Would you assist the Empire no more?" said Rockovich, with a penance stare.

Felice was infuriated. The lance in her hand was ready to thrust out anytime to knock the man's helm off. Zhang Yang immediately held her shoulders and pulled her back calmly. He was not afraid of Rockovich. Perhaps...

"General. I am more than willing to help. But Morning Town is operating at peak capacity. I am afraid that I cannot provide enough room for your troops. It would be an inconvenience to the army itself. May I suggest that you occupy my other land? Winst Castle. Both lands have Teleportation Circles that are linked to each other."

Rockovich nodded his head. "Very well. Off to Winst Castle then."

Zhang Yang interjected quickly and said, "I'm glad to be of service. However so, General. Winst Castle has been under constant attack by the savages who live nearby the castle. It might be some danger for---"

"Danger? I am here to lead the army to a greater cause. Be it a berserking demon or the evil Spectre, I shall exterminate them easily. What of savages? They mean nothing to me!" said Rockovich proudly.

Hehehe! That's the right attitude! Just wait and see!

Zhang Yang was beside himself with happiness. Even though the Territorial Conquest War was between two guilds and other players may not interfere, it was not limited to NPCs! Zhang Yang had taken this chance to make use of the expedition army as his own troops that would not be kicked out of the war zone!

When the guild Sakura no Nagare Mae attacks, they would be surprised to see 200,000 NPC army occupying the castle! Zhang Yang could not wait to see the faces of the Japanese punks when that happens!

Such excitement!

Rockovich stood atop his horse, towering over everyone else, and commanded the army to use the Teleportation Point to travel to Winst Castle. Although the process of it could be seen by the players around, it was rather subtle and did not raise much attention. With haste, all 200,000 soldiers were teleported away. Everyone looked like hungry wolves that were forced to retract their claws and strike at the vital moment.

The news about him obtaining an NPC army was kept a secret among the Lone Desert Smoke higher administrators like Hundred

Shots and Daffodil Daydream. China was a large country, there could be a chance that a traitor was already amongst them. It would be a waste if the enemy obtains news about the NPC army.

One day passed quickly and Lone Desert Smoke had gathered and prepared all of their 40,000 players. More accurately, there were only 39,999 of them in Morning Town. When E.E guild attacks, Zhang Yang would be in Winst Castle alone to welcome the players of Sakura no Nagare Mae!

E.E guild was the Korean's strongest guild while Sakura no Nagare Mae was Japan's. It was not revealed as to how the two nations decided on the attack formation. Zhang Yang only knew that the Korean guild only had professional Korean players while the Japanese guild had theirs.

# Chapter 535: 1 vs 30,000 (1)

---

Naturally, Morning Town was filled with players of the highest capabilities. Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Snow Seeker, and even One Sword Stroke himself was present. Additionally, Zhang Yang had even given Sun Xin Yu the Forbidden Scroll just in case. If they were to lose the Territory, Zhang Yang would be at loss for words.

Hence, there was nothing for him to worry about, while standing alone in the middle of Winst Castle!

7.00pm.

‘Ding! The Territory Conquest War has started!’

As the notification rang, all non-Lone Desert Smoke players were teleported 10km away. On the other hand, players of E.E guild and Sakura no Nagare Mae were lined up neatly, 2km outside their target Territories.

Through the new battle UI, Zhang Yang could check out the forces of both army.

Morning Town: Attacker: E.E. Player Count: 30,000 Defender: Lone Desert Smoke. Player Count 39,999.

The guildmaster of E.E was extremely disappointed when he saw the differences in between the player counts.



Korea and Japan have fought among themselves for the right to choose their attack target. E.E was able to defeat all the other guilds in Korea but had unfortunately lost to Sakura no Nagare Mae. If he had been able to choose, he would want to attack Winst Castle instead of Morning Town, because that Territory was of the Japan-Korea territory. It was their pride. If they could win the war, their guilds would be award with the territory ownership, not to mention the honor and fame that comes from defeating the invaders.

Morning Town, on the other hands, was nothing but a small pile of chocolate sprinkles on top of a chocolate ice-cream. The honor of defeating Morning Town would never be on the same level of the honor of reclaiming Winst Castle. It could not be helped. Sakura no Nagare Mae was indeed stronger than E.E..

Hence, the only hope left for Hangugui Gugwang was for Zhang Yang to be stupid enough, or rather, greedy enough to protect both sides. He would need to divide 40,000 into two separate forces to defend both sides. In that case, with his 30,000 players in his guild, he could trample over 20,000 players with relative ease. However, the hope was crushed when he saw that the defending number of players was as high as 39,999. Even though he thought that Korean players were superior gamers, and were capable of fighting greater numbers, since the defenders had the terrain advantage, it might be too much to ask for.

"Tsk. Those Japs dogs have beaten us to it!" Hangugui Gugwang clicked his tongue in annoyance. There were 39,999 players here in Morning Town, that meant that there would be only 1 Lone Desert Smoke member there in the Winst Castle. Victory would be theirs even if they were to only bring 300 players!

"What a shameless bunch of Chinese swines!" cried Hangugui Gugwang as he displaced the blame on China. Hangugui Gugwang blamed Lone Desert Smoke for not daring to defend both territory, which had place Hangugui Gugwang in such a disadvantageous position.

With the war of nations looming, countless of players had already turned on their in-game recordings to record the scenery of the war. Right then, it would be too late for Hangugui Gugwang to retreat. With a gallant roar, Hangugui Gugwang laid down the attack order. Even if they had 39,999 players, what if they were truly cheap Chinese 'products'?

...

On the other side of the war zone, Amaou Kuyoshi was happy as f\*ck!

Winst Castle: Attacker, Sakura no Nagare Mae. Player Count, 30,000 Defender: Lone Desert Smoke. Player Count, 1.

1...

Just one.

No one moved from their original spot as they laughed till their stomachs hurt. Just one man, trying to take on 30,000 players! Even when everyone had their guards heighten to its maximum,

they could not help but relax instantly. It's 1 vs 30,000! How could they not win?! And why would they need to even put up a fight? If they would still need to take it seriously, it would be useless!

No one in the great empire of Japan is useless!

Amaou Kuyoshi laughed and said, "Fellow mates! The Chinese swine have returned to their pig sty and cowered behind it! Hah! Shall we take the offering they have left for us? Hah! Remember to thank the Korean dogs for their unrelenting spirits!"

The mocking laughter continued on amongst the members of Sakura no Nagare Mae.

"Kill! Kill till your heart content!" cried Amaou Kuyoshi. He was a Sniper class player and wielded a longbow. With an intense glare, he cried out, "The NPCs inside the castle were meant to serve us, the citizens of the great empire of Japan, and yet they had betrayed their loyalty and served a Chinese swine! Such an act shan't go unpunished! Kill them all! Kill every NPC in the castle! The great empire of Japan has no need of these spineless weeds!"

"Kill!"

"ARGHH!"

All 30,000 players roared and charged into the castle doors like ants. There was only one defending player in the castle. There was no need to use the Trebuchets to destroy the magic cannons and

the castle walls!

It was without a doubt, the easiest war anyone has ever fought. Or so they thought. If they had still lost the fight despite having only one defender, they would have to conduct sepuoku to end their shame.

"Hmph. What a noisy bunch," said Zhang Yang as he covered his eyes. The roaring players were indeed greater than the roar of a single dragon. Zhang Yang watched as the attacking army approached the castle wall. With a sinister smile on his face, Zhang Yang walked to one of the magic cannons and loaded it with an Energy Crystal. Zhang Yang mounted the cannon and fired the first blast on the spot with the highest concentration of players.

WHAM!

A bright ray blasted off and created a large crater in the middle of the battlefield. At least more than 100 players had been vaporized by the attack. The magic cannon could deal a fixed amount of 200,000 Chaos Damage, and at that current stage, no player could take the hit without relying on skills.

Hell yeah!

Since he had the army in the castle as his trump card, he could use the cannons alone and the attackers would be held at bay. However, attacking is always much more enjoyable than defending! Plus, blasting those Japanese buggers up, up, and away is better than going into the field and killing them himself.

One blast costs 100,000 gold coins? So? Money is not a problem bro~

BAM! BAM! BAM! BAM! BAM!

Zhang Yang did not hold back. In just one session of blasting, Zhang Yang had used up the Energy Crystals. Even the magic cannon was rendered useless after 10 shots. Zhang Yang shrugged and move on to the next cannon. After blasting till he was content, Zhang Yang moved on to the second cannon and blasted till it was rendered useless as well. Zhang Yang had a total of three cannons! No problem!

BAM! BAM! BAM!

The magic cannons blasted mercilessly. With each blast covering 30 x 30 meters and causing damage as high as 200,000 Chaos Damage, it was an unrivaled killing machine! After all 30 shots was fired, the Sakura no Nagare Mae guild had lost 1,821 players!

The japs were not stupid monsters. No one would be stupid enough to cluster together and die. After the first few initial shots, many of them had scattered all over the field. Zhang Yang had only managed to kill close to more than 10 persons per shot.

With a flying mount, 2km was nothing but a short distance that could be reached within the blink of an eye. A few of the players had flying mounts and had made it close to the castle wall! Zhang Yang grunted and mounted on the Thunderhawk. With a flash of

blue light, the Thunderhawk soared to the sky at the speed of lightning!

D\*mn!

As expected of a high tier flying mount! Not only was its battle prowess commendable, its flying speed was truly something to behold. Zhang Yang had shot to within 30 meters of a Spellcaster and before he could react, Zhang Yang shot a {Spear of Obliteration}.

‘-27,650!’

The player had taken the damage and before he could even gasp, the Thunderhawk had reached within the target’s melee attack range. Zhang Yang raised his Heaven’s Shaker and smashed the Spellcaster’s head.

‘-26,778!’

Two hits were all it took to reduce the Spellcaster’s HP by half. Even though he could not examine the opponent’s stats, he could judge its maximum HP and stats by accounting the damage he received and the percentage of HP its dropped. With quick calculations, Zhang Yang estimated that the Spellcaster’s HP was at least 90,000.

After Zhang Yang had laid down the second hit, the Thunderhawk has activated {Shatterpoint Weakness} and

{Madness}. Its original {Thunder Ball} 2 seconds casting time was shortened down to only 1.3 seconds, and its attack power was increased to 50%!

WHAM!

A ball of cracking electricity blasted off the beak of the hawk and hit the Spellcaster.

‘-34,704!’

Just as Spellcaster was about to turn tails and run, Felice’s {Fire Missile} appeared behind the {Thunder Ball} and dealt more than 20,000 damage, instantly removing his head from his shoulders.

"Now, that’s what I’m talking about!" cried Zhang Yang with satisfaction. He led the hawk and rushed to a group of players. From the attack before, Zhang Yang’s Rage gauge was already filled up. All he needs to do now is to vent all the Rage on them!

{Horizontal Sweep}! {Destructive Smash}! {Frost Strike}! {Force Strike}

Like a true God of War, Zhang Yang kept on swinging his hammer about, each swing drawing fresh splotches of blood. With the Thunderhawk and Felice together, Zhang Yang’s presence was made even more frightening. Players that were on their flying mounts were limited to a few skills and could not simply escape Zhang Yang’s death grip.

The players that were flying in the sky were all turned into punching bags and fell down to the ground, their corpses dismembered.

"It's Zhan Yu!"

During the war, Zhang Yang had publicly revealed his name tag. Since it was an all-out war with the Japanese, Zhang Yang wanted them to know the person that they were messing with. Players that were on the ground saw Zhang Yang shooting through the air at breakneck speed and felt a cold shiver through their spines. It was like seeing a reaper coming at you, with no hope of escaping. Even though they were disgruntled, none of them could deny that Zhang Yang was already several tiers ahead of everyone around. He was heads above shoulders when it comes to individual power.

"No fear! We, the citizens of the great empire of Japan, are the best people in the world! He is but nothing but a pig on a bird! Let him enjoy swinging that Inheritance about first, so be it! When we obtain our Inheritances, we shall be better than him!" cried Amaou Kuyoshi. "Thank the gods that he was not cowering behind the walls of Morning Town! Or we would not have had the chance to kill him! Brothers! Kill the man! The pig has come here to offer up his life!"

"Spellcaster! Hunters! Form a team of a hundred men and chase after Zhan Yu! The rest of you! Attack the castle walls! We will feast and bathe in their blood!" cried Amaou Kuyoshi like a demonic killer.



## Chapter 536: 1 vs 30,000 (2)

---

Although regular [Mounts] were not as swift as [Flying Mounts], the gap wasn't much. The ground [Mounts] would arrive 10 seconds after the [Flying Mounts]. The army up ahead had already arrived at the front gates of the castle. They began to launch their assaults aggressively. The City Gate was not particularly tough, having a maximum HP of only 1,000,000! It was like a violent, powerful hurricane, threatening to tear the City Gate off its hinges!

A Territory Conquest is never about the kill count. As long as the attackers take down the City Hall of the Territory, victory would automatically be theirs!

So, it would not be worth their time to engage with Zhang Yang. Moreover, Zhang Yang had a [Flying Mount] that would allow him to move like lightning. It would almost be impossible to land a hit on him when he is buzzing about at that speed! Anyone could see that enemies would automatically achieve victory the moment they reach City Hall of this Territory. By then, Zhang Yang would be forced to surrender!

Zhang Yang had come all the way here, hoping to secure the Territory all on his own. Well, there is a saying about this. Attack the enemy's 'key point,' and they will come to you to defend it! So instead of wasting time trying to strike Zhang Yang down, why not force him to go to them?

Zhang Yang had not put much effort on reinforcing the Defenses of the Territory. The main City Gate is only Level 1, which only

had a total of 1,000,000 HP, with 1,000 Defense and 1,000 Magic Defense. With an army full of different Classes, the City Gate would crumble within 20 seconds!

--- even then, 20 seconds is a lot. That was due to the City Gate being protected by a long, narrow arch, that made it possible for only 20 players to attack at the same time. Or else, the 1,000,000 HP would have been emptied out within seconds!

Although the City Gate had been breached, that was the least of Zhang Yang's worries. He only smiled confidently. Just when the enemies thought they had broken through the City Gate, Rockovich and his army moved out from the shadows and wreck them!

Zhang Yang had no direct control over Rockovich's actions. However, as long as Rockovich and his army are still camping in the Castle, they would treat Winst Castle as their base. Naturally, when a base is attacked, the leader of the army would rally his army around him and defend their base! It's simple common sense.

"Uncivilized savages! How dare you vandalize my base! Are you seeking for death?" As expected, a thunderous, heaven-shaking roar came right out from the entrance of the Territory. The enemy players who were in the first few rows were blasted away by an invisible, powerful concussive force! With that impact wave pushing all the players back from the ruined City Gate, Rockovich took one booming step, and another, until he stopped and stood in the middle of the entrance! Dressed in completely green, ornate armor and a Crimson Golden War Hammer in his hands, Rockovich stood there stoically, right in the middle of the Winst

Castle archway!

"Bo... Boss!?"

The Japan Players dropped their jaws, as they were so shocked to see such a powerful being standing before them!

They had taken part in a few Territory Conquests before, but they have never encountered any boss level NPCs before. This was actually their first time seeing a boss level NPC standing right before them. So, why did a boss spawn in a Territory? A Mythical Tier too, at that! What the hell! 100,000,000 HP? Are you kidding me? The enemies felt as if they had fallen completely into Zhang Yang's hands!

They were even more furious that the boss had actually called them 'a bunch of uncivilized savages'?

Uncivilized savages your \*ss! They are the great and powerful Empire of Japan, for god's sake! How could Rockovich call them 'Uncivilized'? They definitely have nothing to do with being 'Uncivilized'!

Instead of joining his comrades in their shock, Amaou Kuyoshi widened his eyes, sensing an opportunity. He began to shout into his guild channel, "Very good! Not only are the Chinese pigs giving us back our Territory Gateway, but they have also been generous enough to provide us a Mythical Tier boss! Haha! My little brothers and sisters! Time to slay the boss and get some powerful equipment! A boss with 100,000,000 HP is usually a Super Boss!

The drops will be awesome!"

Indeed, Rockovich was only a Mythical Boss. He was not an Ethereal boss that would bring endless despair to all who dared show themselves before it! Furthermore, there was no Level Gap Suppression in effect, as the level of the boss was not too far from the level of the players here. Also, they had 30,000 players at their disposal now! Shouldn't they be more than enough to overwhelm the boss? Taking down a Super boss was all about numbers, right?

So, are they not enough for a super boss?

At his rational, logical words, every single player from Japan charged at Rockovich with renewed vigor! In the setting of 'God's Miracle', under the circumstances that players are not from the same party, any player who lands the last hit on the boss will gain an additional 50% experience points!

Although they are all under the same banner - 'Sakura no Nagare Mae', but they had actually been created from hundreds of different guilds. 'Sakura no Nagare Mae' was just a temporary guild, created solely for this battle. So, how would you expect them to be truly united? Therefore, many of them started to look for the opportunity and time to give the boss a final strike at 1% HP!

That should be about 50,000,000 experience points! Players would be required to kill more than 2,500 normal monsters just to get that amount of experience! If, by estimation, one minute is required to kill 2 regular monsters, they would still need 2,250 minutes, which was a total of 37 hours to get that much experience points. That would be almost two-days of in-game time!

Furthermore, once you leave a party, you would also get the chance to snatch the loot! Drops from a Mythical boss would certainly be impressive enough. However, for a super boss that has over 100,000,000 HP, each 'dropping' had to be a treasure for the ages!

With those thoughts poisoning their minds, every player from Japan had glowing red-eyes, like pent-up, horny old men who were in much need of a release. They all charged at the boss as if they had all turned insane!

"Humph! Mindless, uncivilized savages! How dare you raise a sword at me! Let me show you despair!" Rockovich let out another thunderous roar as he raised up his left hand, and proclaimed, "Warriors of White Jade Empire! Leave nothing behind! Kill!"

"Rawgh!"

"Rawgh!"

"Rawgh!"

His roar was so much louder and more intimidating than the roars of 30,000 players. The entire Winst Castle trembled beneath the roars of Rockovich and his army. Winst Castle was like a gigantic foul beast, roaring upwards into the sky! The soldiers of the White Jade Kingdom began to march out from the entrance of Winst Castle, one echelon after another. There were Infantries,

Knights, Hunters, Spellcasters, and also white-robed Priests! The Army had the perfect spread of various roles!

"Kill! We are more in numbers! Those are just small fries!" Amaou Kuyoshi was still clouded up in his delusional thoughts.

"All uncivilized savages are the same!" Rockovich stared the players down and began to move towards the enemy's front line. With an intimidating aura, he plunged into the enemy ranks and led his army into battle. The army of NPCs started to earning their keep!

However, the narrow entrance of Winst Castle did not do good to the NPC army as well. Because the players from Japan had swarm up on them by the entrance, the White Jade Empire troops could only squeeze themselves out slowly, like toothpaste from a tube! They had slowly force their way through. However, it was possible, thanks to Rockovich! Swing after swing, the hammer of Rockovich sent shockwaves all over the place, causing massive damage to the players from Japan. At the same time, the impact also sent them flying back, clearing some space, little by little, one wave after another, for the NPC army to emerge from the entrance!

Some of the brighter players began to react and adapt to the situation. A few Tankers took over the front line as they began to kite Rockovich away from the heated spot of the battle. They kited the boss about 1 Kilometer away from the entrance and began their assaults on the boss.

Many players had swarmed up to the boss, as the benefits of

killing a boss were so lucrative. No one needed any reminder of that fact! As a result, the number of players attacking the Castle had been halved! Amaou Kuyoshi was furious to see that the players had actually been sidetracked. He berated them endlessly, pointing out their lack of foresight! They could easily hunt after other bosses in the future! It was just a Mythical Tier boss, after all. A few more levels later, and this boss would mean nothing.

Well, the Territory Gateway basically symbolized the dignity of the Japan-Korea Region. So, how long are they going to let the players from China slap their faces?

After hearing what Amaou Kuyoshi had to say, the players from Japan started to agree. After all, those who can join this battle were basically the best of the best among the Japan-Korea Region, and they understood that it was really not too difficult to farm for good equipment. As for their dignity... of course it would come first! They are the Great Empire of Japan after all! Honor and dignity will never be forgotten!

Under the 'teachings' of Amaou Kuyoshi, only about 200 players remained with the boss. A large number of the players had resumed their efforts in pushing against the large army of NPCs who guarded Winst Castle!

Inarguably, the Normal Tier NPC would not be able to do much against an army of well-equipped players! Although there were about 200,000 soldiers, they were just Normal Tier NPCs after all. Only the captains were Elite Tier NPCs.

Furthermore, the players from Japan had the ground advantage

over the army. They had scattered into a curved formation that encircled the NPCs, allowing many more players to fight against a single NPC at a time. They managed to increase their efficiency in slaying the NPC one after another in the shortest time, minimizing the damage that they were receiving. The NPC army was truly in trouble!

If this goes on, the 200,000 soldiers would definitely be wiped out! It was only a matter of time!

However, that would only happen if Zhang Yang remained idle!

{God of War Transformation}!

Two large wings that radiated with angelic, bright light sprouted out from his back, and Zhang Yang was rejected off the Snake, as he was no longer permitted to be in a Mounted state. With a flick of his wings, he soared into the sky --- The {God of War Transformation} does not allow the player to be mounted to a pet.

Well, that was too bad. In his previous life, Zhang Yang was still able remain mounted on his pet even after activating his {King Kong Transformation}. Well, the developers were most likely trying to balance out the power of Class-S Inheritance. With 40 times the Maximum HP, a mounted player would be unkillable! After all, mounts added a tremendous amount of HP to players!

Shoof! Zhang Yang glided straight towards Ichiban Sake who was currently tanking against Rockovich!



Zhang Yang had observing from up above since the beginning, and he had noticed that this Ichiban Sake was also a Guardian. He had to be pretty capable, since he had managed to get a solid hold of Rockovich's attention. To gauge the capabilities of a Guardian, one would have to keep count of the rate of successful {Blocks}.

A skilled Guardian would never waste any opportunity of using the Skill {Block}! Ichiban Sake was one such Guardian. Furthermore, his movements and maneuvers indicated that he was just getting the hang of 'Supporting Attacks'. He seemed to have master it, and had the makings of a formidable foe in the future.

As the game aged, along with the Professional League Championships, many skillful players had been polished and born as they begin to show some promises in their performance. Like it goes with the mastery of anything, anyone can be a novice, or even an average Joe, but a master would take forever to form. Many would slow down greatly, or even be halted entirely as they approach the more advanced stages of the game. According to Zhang Yang's estimation, this Ichiban Sake should already be 70% as good as he was!

Of course, that 30% of Strength and skills would require about 2 to 3 years of catching up! Without any hardships, he would not be able to catch up to Zhang Yang's progress as well!

Zhang Yang did not turn to aid the NPC army, instead, he charged straight towards Ichiban Sake! The moment Rockovich has nothing kiting him, he would wreak havoc across the bulk of the player army. Additionally, Rockovich had a few AoE attacks up his sleeves, a typical trait of a boss!

Although Ichiban Sake was focused on tanking the boss, he had kept an eye out for surprise attacks! He quickly noticed Zhang Yang approaching him at a high speed! Well, some players had already acquired [Class C Inheritances], and the {Transformation} skill was no longer a stranger to his eyes. Therefore, when Ichiban Sake saw Zhang Yang flying without a mount, he figured it out --- Zhang Yang had activated a {Transformation} Skill!

He went pale white!

An [Inheritance] would really make a huge difference between players. The difference would be like heaven and hell! The power level of the player with an [Inheritance] would increase substantially!

Fortunately, Ichiban Sake did not know that Zhang Yang's [Inheritance] was a Class S. He would have turned even paler, if it was even possible!

"Musashi Ousama, Shuro Ousama, you guys take a bunch of men and stop Zhan Yu!" Ichiban Sake shouted.

Shoof! Shoof!

Two shadows appeared right in front of Ichiban Sake out of a sudden. One of the shadows was Musashi Ousama who previously engaged with Zhang Yang in the Realm of the Sacred Glory. The other one was Shuro Ousama, a Berserker who wore a black helmet, and held a gigantic axe in his hands.

"Ha!" the two of them let out their battle cries at the same time. A small tornado emerged from thin air right behind one of them, while a skeletal spectre appeared right behind the other. The phenomenon only lasted for about 1 second before the mini tornado and the skeletal Spectre vanished into thin air.

Oh! Those certainly were {Inheritance Transformations}!

However, Zhang Yang was confident that these players did not share his luck. They did not have Battle Companions like Felice who could actually boost her own power and slay a boss by herself! But they did have {Inheritance Transformations}. Zhang Yang took a wild guess and deduced that their [Inheritances] should only be Class C. They couldn't possibly be Class B, for bosses like Vampire Count Ferra were too powerful for them at the moment!

He recognized them as the [Tornado Inheritance] and the [Skeletal Spectre Inheritance]. Both of them should be Class C [Inheritances]. However, Zhang Yang had no idea at all about the details of the two {Inheritance Transformations}! Because the cool down for an {Inheritance Transformation} was 72 hours long, it was really rare to witness an {Inheritance Transformation} in action. Plus, the Professional League Championship prohibited the use of Skills that had cool down periods longer than 30 minutes, so it would be impossible to witness any {Inheritance Transformation} Skills in the arena!

However, sending two allies in an attempt Zhang Yang was futile gesture. It was like sending a mantis to stop a car!

Zhang Yang let out a cry and raised the [Heaven Shaker] high up, and swung the quarterstaff at Musashi Ousama.

‘-98,226!’

After a solid strike from the [Heaven Shaker] that Zhang Yang wielded, the HP bar of Musashi Ousama was reduced by 10%!

Musashi Ousama was terrified by the amount of damage he received! What in the world is going on? He initially had a total of more than 60,000 HP, and once mounted atop his pet, he had even surpassed 100,000 HP! His Class C {Inheritance Transformation} boosted his HP amount further up to a total of 1,000,000 HP! That was the HP of a boss! But now, that amount of HP had been reduced by 10%, courtesy of a single hit from Zhang Yang! How is that fair?

A normal attack that reaches up to a total of 100,000 damage! What the f\*ck! How much Attack does this bastard actually has on him?

Even though Musashi Ousama was wielding a two-handed weapon as well, a Class C [Inheritance] would only increase the Attack of the user by 100%, and the maximum damage caused wouldn't exceed 25,000 damage. So Musashi Ousama would have to hit 4 times in order to cause a total of 100,000 damage! That one hell of a difference truly rendered Musashi Ousama speechless for a moment!

But ... Zhang Yang was just one man. He couldn't possibly fight

off all these players alone!

Musashi Ousama let out a roar and said, "Heal me now! Heal me!" and with his hammer raised up high, he struck Zhang Yang with all his might.

‘-6,914!’

It was pathetic. Comparing to the normal attack of Zhang Yang, Musashi Ousama’s normal attack was a joke! The difference had indirectly humiliated Musashi Ousama!

Are you kidding me?

Although that was just a normal attack, without any power up from any Skill, it was still a normal attack under the power of an active {Inheritance Transformation}! Why was that attack so ridiculously low? Although a total of about 7,000 damage was pretty good under normal circumstances, it was a joke compared to Zhang Yang’s 5,000,000 HP. It had merely taken off 0.1% of his health bar!

"Arienai!" Musashi Ousama screamed. Fortunately for him, they had the advantages of numbers over Zhang Yang. Or else, he would have fled the scene, trying not to get himself killed! How could he possibly stand a chance against Zhang Yang!

Shuro Ousama also let out a raging roar of his own as he swung his giant axe at Zhang Yang. However, he only scored about 7,000

damage as well.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he began to retaliate, {Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-192,234!’

‘-189,988!’

Two terrifying damage values popped out on top of Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama as both of them lost a large chunk of their HP bars! They now truly knew despair! Even with their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills activated, they could not withstand the oppressive assaults of Zhang Yang!

Right behind the two of them were at least 10 healers chanting their Healing Skills as rapidly as possible.

Well, numbers do bring strength! With so many Healers healing their backs without having to worry about the shortage of MP, they actually managed to heal Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama back right up! Meanwhile, Amaou Kuyoshi was aware of the situation over there and had immediately sent more Healers to support Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama! Meanwhile, Spellcasters and Hunters were quickly arriving at the scene!

## Chapter 537: 1 vs 30,000 (3)

---

With the increasing number of Healers arriving at the scene, the health bars of Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama were healed back to their full health states.

Musashi Ousama laughed madly as he said, "Zhan Yu, it doesn't matter how powerful you are! You are just one man! So, let us show you just how powerful we, the Great Empire of Japan really are!"

But players would always be players. They would always believe that they are the best!

Zhang Yang would definitely not act like a boss, where it's decision making choices would mainly be restricted by the aggro system of the game. So he would not only focus his attention on Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama! His main target remained. If he takes out that Tanker - Ichiban Sake, then he will be releasing Rockovich from the control of the players around him! Then, the Mythical Tier boss shall be able to unleash hell upon the players from Japan!

With one powerful flap of his wings, Zhang Yang flew into the sky like a dragon and in a flash, his golden wings glittered as he arrived right before Ichiban Sake. Everything happened so quickly, that none of the players could react to him.

"Abunai!" Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama shouted at the same time in fury.

Zhang Yang's normal attacks had reached up to a total of 100,000 damage, and his Skills would reach up to a total of 250,000 damage. No Tanker at the current stage of the game could actually tank against such terrifying damage! Only players with {Inheritance Transformations} would be able to stand up to other {Inheritance Transformations}.

Ichiban Sake reacted with impressive speed, already activating his {Shield Wall} to guard against the attacks of Zhang Yang that appeared to be as powerful as a hurricane!

But what would a {Shield Wall} do? Zhang Yang would still smash him up like a pinata!

Zhang Yang raised up his [Heaven Shaker] as the quarterstaff lit up in flames, {Destructive Smash}!

‘-37,216!’

Bam!

Ichiban Sake lost his professional composure as he took the attack. To think that he would still receive such great damage from the attack, even though he had already activated his {Shield Wall}. Furthermore --- he brought up the battle log to take a look, only to find that it was not even a Critical Attack!

"Hold still! D\*mn you, I'm your opponent!" Musashi Ousama



pointed his finger at Zhang Yang, and a small scaled whirlwind suddenly formed around Zhang Yang, blowing him off his feet!

Zhang Yang was slightly worried, as the skill had completely immobilized him!

[Whirlwind]: Summons a small scale Whirlwind to detain a target, the target will not be able to move at all. But, the target will not receive any damage or other Status Restriction Skills. Lasts for 10 seconds.

It was one of the 'Inheritance Skills' of Musashi Ousama!

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang instantly broke himself out of the Skill Effect and regained his mobility. Half a second before his Global Cool Down period was over, Zhang Yang raised his [Heaven Shaker] up high once again, ready to strike.

The Healers from the Sakura no Nagare Mae quickly threw their Healing Skills at Ichiban Sake as rapidly as they could! Although Ichiban Sake had already been affected by the {Destructive Smash} which reduced 75% healing effects on him, there were so many Healers that they were still able to restore his HP to full capacity in no time at all.

With so many Healers focused on the Tanker, as long as Ichiban Sake is not killed by a single hit, they would still be able to heal

him up efficiently. It would just be like tanking against a powerful boss.

Zhang Yang sighed. Although his attack power is insanely powerful, he is still not powerful enough to instantly kill a {Shield Wall} empowered Guardian! Unless Zhang Yang can trigger both a {Lucky Strike} and a Critical Attack at the same time when he strikes, then Zhang Yang should be able to cause at least 200,000 damage to a Guardian with {Shield Wall} by activating powerful Skills such as {Horizontal Sweep} and {Destructive Smash}! Even if Ichiban Sake is mounted on his Pet to increase his Maximum HP, he would still fall within seconds!

Well, if the players from Japan knew about what he was having in his mind, they would definitely be humiliated! A life saving Skill is precisely called a life saving Skill because the Skill could save a player's life! If a player is instantly killed, even after using a life saving Skill, then what is the point of playing the game, then!

Zhang Yang let out an intimidating roar as he flapped his wings and flew back into the air. Then he faced the Healers and began to fly towards them --- the duration of {Shield Wall} on Ichiban Sake should still last for about 7 to 8 seconds more, so Zhang Yang decided to let him live for a little longer.

Musashi Ousama quickly raised his axe up and pointed at Zhang Yang as well, and he shouted, "Summon!"

Instantly, four white skeletons emerged from the surface of the ground and crawled up to their feet. These skeletons did not look like regular, slow-moving spectres. They were as agile as

Spiderman himself! They began to move agilely across the battlefield as they approached Zhang Yang. Suddenly, they leaped towards Zhang Yang, aiming for all four limbs! They wanted to tear Zhang Yang apart, limb from limb!

They leaped into the air towards Zhang Yang at lightning speed! Zhang Yang assumed that the leaping must be these skeletons' Skill. The next split second, all four skeletons had grabbed hold of Zhang Yang, and with their might, they pulled Zhang Yang straight down to the ground.

Zhang Yang was shocked as he fixed his eyes upon these skeletons. These skeletons were all elite Tier, but each of them only had 200,000 HP! The skeletons had released Zhang Yang for the moment as they began to attack Zhang Yang with their white and bony hands.

Are they trying to get themselves killed?

Zhang Yang swung his [Heaven Shaker] across the four skeletons and caused about 90,000 damage on each of the skeletons. The powerful impact of the strike had knocked the skeletons back by 3 to 4 meters! He got out of the 'dangerous situation' and activated his {Charge} at one of the Priests near him.

{Force Strike}!

‘-99,887!’

"Argh!" the Priest did not even last for one strike of Zhang Yang's [Heaven Shaker], and was turned to mush and jelly!

Zhang Yang humph as he stomped on the ground and activated his {Thunder Strike}! As the flashes of electrical damage surged across the Priests, and tens of them took about 20,000 damage, all affected by the 5-second speed reduction effect! They could not even flee from Zhang Yang!

"Kill him! Quickly, kill him!" At the same time, the army of ranged attackers, Spellcasters and Hunters, had finally arrived, though they were really late. More than 200 players were shooting their arrows and magic attacks at Zhang Yang.

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

‘-O!’

Without the power up from [Inheritance], how could they possibly even cause any damage to Zhang Yang who had now been

endowed with a ridiculously high Defense! Not only that, players without [Inheritances] would face a situation akin to the Level Gap Suppression when they go up against players with [Inheritances]! Their Status Restriction Skills would not do much to Zhang Yang! Although Zhang Yang was being struck by tons of Movement Speed Reduction effects and Movement Restriction effects, however, only one {Concussion Shot} had managed to affect on him! As soon as Zhang Yang took swig of [Mobility Potion], he regained his movement. He swung on with his weapon and caused massive panic among Healers as he started his version of Armageddon!

His normal attacks could reach up to a total amount of 90,000 damage. Even if players have greatly increased their Maximum HP with their [Mounts], but they would be required to be mounted atop a [Mount] that is at least a Yellow-Gold Tier in order to increase their Maximum HP up to more than 100,000 --- provided that the player is well-equipped in the first place. Well, they should at least have a few Level 100 Violet-Platinum equipment in order to achieve that amount of HP!

Therefore, every single blow coming from Zhang Yang brought instant death! Only a few players were able to withstand 2 hits or more! Even if there were, Felice and Violet Thunderhawk quickly ended them from above in the sky!

Bam! Bam! Bam!

None of the players who got hit by the [Heaven Shaker] still had their heads intact! Their heads had been smashed open, as blood spilled across the air, turning the air sour. It tasted of rust! Such

horrible deaths! Zhang Yang was so addicted to killing that he did not even turn back to Ichiban Sake, even though his {Shield Wall} had long faded. He carried on slaughtering the players around him, one smash at a time! No one could match him, they could only delay the inevitable!

Zhang Yang had no qualms about killing these Japan players so indiscriminately. To him, it was like the slaughtering of chickens and dogs, or even pests! With the support of his {God of War Transformation}, other than some players who had [Inheritances] nobody could even cause a single point of damage!

As the God of War EP took some time to accumulate, Zhang Yang did not use them immediately. He intended to accumulate about 100 God of War EP before spamming his Skills all at once. By doing so, he would cause about 32,000 AoE damage to the players in every wave of his attack, and by activating each skill of his in every second, his enemies would not have the chance to heal back up at all!

{Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}, {Thunder Strike}!

These 3 AoE Skills were quickly becoming universal nightmares to the players from Japan, especially {Horizontal Sweep}! Without any Critical Damage, that attack alone could already reach up to about 200,000 damage. Without activating a life saving Skill, anyone within the attack range of that Skill would be dead the moment the Skill is activated!

How long would it take for a life saving Skill to cool down? How long would it take for {Horizontal Sweep} to cool down? Can the

cool down period of these Skills really be compared, side-by-side?

In the eyes of the Japan players, Zhang Yang was now basically a boss with an invincibility buff as he was slaughtering them up without any sense of mercy. They could not hurt him at all! They could just run around like wild chickens, being pursued by a farmer's wife armed with a chopper!

Amaou Kuyoshi was so furious at witnessing such an absurd scene, and the only thing he could do was to send more players over to Zhang Yang's location. If all the Tankers die, then the DPS players and the Healers would be instantly wiped out by Rockovich!

"Slay the boss first! Focus on the boss now!" Amaou Kuyoshi shouted! The truth was clear, before his very eyes. No one could even actually break through Zhang Yang's Defense to cause damage to him, let alone empty out Zhang Yang's immense HP bar of 5,000,000 points!

After some quick deduction, it was obvious that they should focus on the boss first!

The Japan players had been separated into two sides. The side with fewer players was focused on bringing down the boss, while the side with the larger number of players was focused on the massive army of NPCs. Killing Zhang Yang or the boss was no longer their priorities. They had set their minds on taking down the City Hall of the Territory as their priority, it was why they were here in the first place.

Because the entrance of the Winst Castle had been blocked by hundreds of thousands of NPCs, the Japan players would have to kill the NPCs first to clear a path to the City hall. Meanwhile, Japan players with [Flying Mounts] were in the sky attempting, to fly over the entrance itself! It was obvious that they were beginning to aim at the most vulnerable spot of the castle! They were making their way into the City Hall!

Zhang Yang did not pursue them, because he had already arranged a massive NPC army near the City Hall, and he had also placed his 100 [Mechanical Servants] and 200 Castle Guards close by the City Hall. They should buy them enough time till the Territory Conquest ends.

Zhang Yang only sent Felice over to the City Hall to support the army, and as a pair of eyes and ears to keep him updated about the situation within the Castle. He could always fly to any location that needs him at the moment.

Rockovich had a total amount of 100,000,000 HP. Even though he was being heavily assaulted by the players, his HP bar still looked healthy! Furthermore, Zhang Yang had purposely picked on the Healers as his main targets. Because of that, the DPS players from Japan could not get enough support from the Healers as they took heavy damage from the boss' AoE attacks! They could only take their [Potions], or withdraw in order to use their [Bandages].

However, taking [Potions] and using [Bandages] required time and had cool down periods. The area and range attacks of the boss were struck out at them, one wave after another, forcing the DPS



players to wait for those cool down periods! They could not even do a thing about their current situation!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he spread his wings and soared around the area. Meanwhile, Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama could only stare at him from the ground, witnessing him slaughtering up their guild members.

But they could not simply leave Zhang Yang be. The moment when Zhang Yang turns his attention over to Ichiban Sake, the poor tank would surely perish! When that happens, the boss will return to the entrance of the Castle and all hell would break loose! They knew all too well the consequences if a Super boss is left unchecked!

Of course, they could remain in their delusional worlds and fantasize about slaying Zhang Yang!

After slaughtering hundreds of Healers, Zhang Yang finally turned his attention towards Ichiban Sake. After all, Rockovich did not have the ability to heal himself, so he would eventually fall!

Shoof!

He flew towards Ichiban Sake and struck at the Guardian's head with his 'hammer'!

{Block}!

Ichiban Sake reacted like a true professional Tanker as he raised his shield up in between himself and Zhang Yang, just in the nick of time!

However, it would hardly make a difference. It barely even delayed the inevitable

What could one {Block} do? Zhang Yang still had at least 3 Skills lining up at the back of his list, ready to be dispatched, and each Skill would cause about 200,000 damage! How was Ichiban Sake going to survive that?

{Frost Strike}!

Zhang Yang thumped Ichiban Sake on the head again, with his [Heaven Shaker] like a roaring black dragon! The next thing that happened was a bunch of flesh and the splatter of blood oozing out of the stump that was once Ichiban Sake's neck, followed by the numerical value of '-412,246!'! That was a Critical Attack! The HP bar of Ichiban Sake was immediately emptied out!

## Chapter 538: 1 vs 30,000 (4)

---

"Yaro!" Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama screaming in rage, as they had believed that they could have stopped Zhang Yang from killing Ichiban Sake. Their confidence level was hammered hard as they were proven wrong! The delay of Ichiban Sake's demise wasn't due to the fact that the two of them posed any threat to Zhang Yang in their transformed states, it was actually because Zhang Yang was not in the mood to kill him yet!

Just look at it. The guardian was wiped out so easily! Just a single strike had already sent him to his demise, without the need to throw another strike at him!

Meanwhile, as these two were doing their best trying to get at Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang had lost about 700,000 HP. Their damage output could already be considered to be extremely high, as 700,000 damage was already a decent value. However, that amount of damage meant little to the Maximum HP of Zhang Yang that reached up to 5,000,000 HP! Such a ratio would really push a person to the brink of madness, especially for players who were confident of their own skill and power to begin with!

As Rockovich had suddenly lost his main aggro target, he immediately switched his attention towards the DPS players and the Healers. The General swung his heavy hammer across the players before him and sent a bunch of players flying in the opposite direction as he roared, "You uncivilized savages! Is it really that fun to be hiding behind your Tankers while using your ranged attacks on me? Very well, let me show you what real fun is!"

He slightly bent his knees, and suddenly leaped into the air with his strong and powerful body, followed by a superhero landing among the army of DPS players and the Healers. Next moment, Rockovich was swinging his war hammer about, crushing all the players before him. The army of players descended into chaos, as none of them were able to hold their ground against the powerful boss! Every single blow created a shockwave effect. Therefore, players with insufficient strength could only be blown away by the shockwaves of Rockovich's hammer.

Furthermore, at the current stage of the game, who would actually have enough attribute points to boost their Strength to the level of a Mythical Tier boss?

Rockovich swung in hammer in a twirling arc, killing a large number of players around him!

--- with their Tankers gone, the boss was no longer being shepherded around like a cow, he was now a hungry wolf that had just been let into a herd of sheep. That's the end of the story. The players were being slaughtered by the boss like a bunch of harmless sheep!

Zhang Yang was laughing out loud as he joined in to support the boss. The two of them worked together, Rockovich and his terrifying hammer, and Zhang Yang with his [Heaven Shaker] that spun like a tornado in the middle of the battlefield! {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}. {Thunder Strike} were struck out repeatedly as Zhang Yang caused massive casualties to the Japan army! Under the support of his {God of War Transformation}, Zhang Yang could

already hit so much harder than the boss! His normal attack had already reached up to a total of 100,000 damage, and his Skills could already reach up to at least a total damage to 200,000 damage! Even an Ethereal Tier boss would respect that power.

Rockovich had a surprised look on his face as he said, "No wonder the Queen speaks highly of you! I wouldn't have believed that you are so powerful if I haven't just witnessed it with my own eyes! But from what I've seen, this strength is not your base level. It seems to be some sort of magical power that brings out the inner power within your core, and it's highly unstable!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "It's true, I can't keep this form for long, but it's enough to kill these 'uncivilized savages'!"

"Haha!" Rockovich laughed as well, and his eyes turned sharp and intimidating as he shouted, "You idiotic uncivilized savages! How dare you launch an assault on the great White Jade Empire! How dare you assault the expedition army of Queen Serena! I hereby declare that all you uncivilized savages must die!"

All Japanese players were so angry to hear Rockovich's words that their veins were beginning to pop! Being called 'uncivilized savages' while being unable to physically refute that statement surely made it seem as if they were admitting to that very fact!

The feeling was just great!

Looking at all the furious, disgusted face, Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh out loud. Then, he flapped his wings and began

to swing his weapon around once again. All the non-Tanker Class players were instantly killed. Even if the players are Tanker Class, Zhang Yang would only have to activate his {Horizontal Sweep}, {Destructive Smash}, {Frost Strike}!

With Zhang Yang working together with Rockovich, the number of those Japanese players was reducing steeply! Meanwhile, the seemingly endless NPC army continued gushing out from the entrance of the Castle! What were their chances of breaching the walls now?

The current numbers on both sides --- Attacker: Sakura no Nagare Mae, number of players: 25,239; Defender: Lone Desert Smoke, number of players: 1!

This was just 10 minutes after the Territory Conquest had began, and Sakura no Nagare had already lost about 5,000 players! If they continue to lose their numbers at this rate, they might even be wiped out in an hour! There's no need to even wait until the end of the Territory Conquest! Amaou Kuyoshi was close to blowing up! He quickly sent another fresh party over to keep Rockovich occupied. Well, they could not just let the boss roam freely around their own army and cause havoc!

The fact did remain, however, that they were all helpless against Zhang Yang, the super killer!

Logically speaking, players were not bosses, they would basically get affected by all sorts of Skills! With about 100 players, if each of them takes turns using a Status Restriction Skill on a target, they could keep the target immobilized there, perpetually. The target

would be their toy!

Unfortunately for them, players with [Inheritances] were an existence transcends all others, mostly due to their resistances against Status Restriction Skills --- quite a small number of players had managed to acquire an [Inheritance] for themselves in each of the regions. Although there were still no signs of Class S, Class A, and Class B [Inheritance] in other regions, there was already quite a number of players with Class C [Inheritances], which was enough for them to {Transform}. The professional players have encountered some of such players, so normally, players with [Inheritances] would have over 90% rate of resistance towards the Status Restriction Skills of the players without [Inheritances]!

When the players with [Inheritances] activate their {Inheritance Transformations}, they would almost have a 100% rate of resistance against the Status Restriction Skills of players without an [Inheritance]!

The total HP of Zhang Yang after he 'transformed' was just too high for the Japanese players to fathom! Plus, his Defense and Magic Defense were both terrifyingly high. There was no way for the Japanese players to even take him down via focus fire! Now that they realized they could not even use their Status Restriction Skills on Zhang Yang in an attempt to restrict his movement, they could only let Zhang Yang slay them at will, as Zhang Yang broke their heads open like fresh watermelons!

"Tsukaenai Obakadomo!" Amaou Kuyoshi could not longer keep his vulgar words back, he was really disappointed with Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama as they had failed to stop Zhang Yang.

They were basically useless! They had claimed that things would become far easier, upon the activation of their [Inheritances], even going as far as to say that they would triumph over tens of thousands of enemies!

"Musashi Ousama, Shuro Ousama! Forget about Zhan Yu, and focus on making a break for the castle interior!" Amaou Kuyoshi made a crucial decision, based on the most logical sense.

Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama felt ashamed as the two of them had only managed to tail Zhang Yang's ass around like two idiots, even after they had activated their {Inheritance Transformations}. There was no better way to shame them both! The two of them quickly communicated with their pets and charged towards the entrance of the castle. They began to activate their 'Inheritance Skills' on the army of NPCs to unleash their anger and frustration.

Although the two of them had been led around by Zhang Yang like two idiots, they were still able to demonstrate the power of Class C {Transformations} to their compatriots.

Musashi Ousama activated the greatest skill in his arsenal - courtesy of his [Whirlwind Inheritance]. He transformed into a whirlwind, sending the NPCs around him flying in an insane turbulence! Every single NPC that went flying received about 20,000 damage. Their landings were not soft either. If they did not have any effects on them that slowed down their descents, they would have to receive another damage that could go up to 10,000 damage, from the fall alone!



Normal NPCs would be instantly killed after they get sucked into the {Whirlwind} that Musashi Ousama had just activated. Even the elite Tier NPCs were losing their will to fight after being sucked into the {Whirlwind}!

Meanwhile, Shuro Ousama had turned himself into a white skeleton that was about 7 meters tall. Every single NPCs that he killed while he was in his skeleton form had turned into a skeleton soldier. These skeleton soldiers turned around and supported him in attacking their former comrades! Well, that had the potential of becoming a really broken skill, depending on the duration of those skeletons.

Zhang Yang observed the battle from afar and he could not help but sigh. {Inheritance Transformations} really changes the game. Even C Class {Transformations} turned players into insanely powerful beings!

Of course, those 'forms' of Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama did not last long. Every type of {Inheritance Transformation} would gain 1 point of 'Energy Point' in every 10 seconds. The 'transformations' of Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama would definitely need 'Energy Points' to support them using their 'Inheritance Skills'. When their 'Energy Points' run out, their Skills would end as well. Furthermore, the cooldown period for their 'Inheritance Skills' were extremely long.

Those Skills were just like the {Vampiric Blood Drain} of the [Vampire Inheritance].

1 EP would be gained in every 10 seconds. The battle had raged on

for tens of minutes, and Zhang Yang had already gained enough EP point to fully fill up his Energy Bar. Without wasting any time, Zhang Yang went out with the 100 EP on hand, ready to unleash hell upon the Japanese players!

With a powerful flap of his wings, Zhang Yang flew straight towards the entrance of Winst Castle and activated his first destructive Skill. Instantly, a stream of golden light surged outwards!

{God of War's Crushing Strike}!

Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam!

Instantly, a tremor spread across the ground, as countless beams of golden light broke out from the surface of the ground. The light formed into the shapes of arrows as they began to hurtle further up the sky! Every single target within the attack range received a damage of '-32,110!'!

Zhang Yang huffed coldly as he waited for his 1-second Global Cool Down period to pass. After that, he raised his left hand and activated another {God of War's Crushing Strike}!

Again! And again!

The purpose of waiting for his EP bar to reach 100 EP was to allow him to spam his {God of War's Crushing Strike} 34 times in a row, without giving his targets any chance to recollect themselves!

Furthermore, his {God of War's Crushing Strike} inflicts Chaos Damage that doesn't get affected by Defense or Magic Resistance. Any non-Tanker would have to return to their Main Cities after about 3 hits from Zhang Yang!

{Horizontal Sweep}! {Blast Wave}! {Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang did not only use {God of War's Crushing Strike}. He also activated his other Skills. His {Horizontal Sweep} reached up to about 200,000 damage without triggering a Critical Damage. So Zhang Yang did not see the reason why he should waste the availability of his other powerful Skills!

‘-24,278!’

‘22,876!’

‘21,977!’

Under the oppressive assaults of the boss and Zhang Yang, the players from Sakura no Nagare Mae were being slaughtered!

This is really bad!

Quite a number of Japanese players were actually aware of their situation! They started feeling uneasy as they saw the endless swarm of NPCs gushing out from the entrance of the castle. Meanwhile, they had been informed that the Aerial Troops sent into the City Hall earlier on had all been annihilated. According to the rumors they heard, the Aerial Troops had been taken out by a large number of [Mechanical Servants], Castle Guards and a Dragonhawk!

Unable to march forwards as their Assault troop had been wiped out entirely, and having two insanely powerful beings cutting off their escape route, how should they proceed with the Territory Conquest then?

Did they even have the choice of retreating, now?

Even if there was a mountain of swords and a sea of flames before them, the Japanese players had no choice but to close their eyes and jump in! Or else, they would definitely be scolded and cursed upon by many other furious Japanese players, shoving red-hot sticks down their \*sses. 30,000 players had failed to take down a Territory that is only defended by one player? That will definitely become the joke of the century!

The Japanese players had no choice but to charge towards their demise!

Bottles of [Potion] were taken, one after another, the moment they could take them. It was as if these Japanese players were on steroids and viagrasm having just gotten rid of their long-standing impotence, charging forward with their 'second brothers' in high

spirits as they attempt to launch a last ditch attack! At such a moment, none of them would still want to save any money, their dignity were much more important! They would definitely be blamed for their defeat when they are back in their own countries!

Although only their spirits were boosted up, with that high spirit, the Japanese players managed to improve their strength and performance in pushing forward! They actually pushed the NPCs back, and were on the verge of breaching the entrance of the castle!

Zhang Yang let out a loud roar as he flew down from the sky. Then, he descended right before the entrance like a god descending from the heavens.

As Zhang Yang had been slaughtering up the Japanese players to such great effect, the Japanese players were intimidated for a moment when they saw Zhang Yang standing in front of the entrance! However, they only halted for a brief moment before they regained their senses and continued to push forward. "Kill!" These players shouted one while charging at Zhang Yang.

# Chapter 539: Wrap Up

---

The battle was totally a one-sided slaughter. Zhang Yang planted his feet in the middle of the castle entrance. Right before the front row of the Japanese players could clash into him, he swung his [Heaven Shaker] like the legendary warrior [Zhang Fei](#), who stood in the middle of the [Changban Bridge](#)! Every roar was lethal, and every strike was destructive! With only one man, Zhang Yang was holding against tens of thousands of Japanese players, leaving no one to pass him!

‘19,820!’

‘17,892!’

‘15,922!’

The number of players from the Sakura no Nagare Mae had been reduced by half and they were only one hour into the battle! The casualty was increasing at an unacceptable rate!

While they were on the brink of despair, the Korean players were actually trying to acquire information concerning the Territory Conquest battle over at Winst Castle. Everyone knew that there were over 39,999 Lone Desert Smoke players at Morning Town. So,

if Winst Castle was not an empty castle at the moment when the Territory Conquest occurs, then there should at least be one China player there!

Wouldn't an army of 30,000 basically walk their way to victory?

Why haven't the system informed them about the change of Barons for Winst Castle, then?

What have the 30,000 army of Japanese players been doing all this while? How could they be incapable of taking out a lone player in an empty Territory? Quite a number of players who were in between the Level 90 to 100 bracket were beginning to lose their patience and started cursing. They started saying things like - if they were of sufficient levels, they would ride over to the Territory Gateway and take it back themselves! Why would they even need a bunch of losers to help them take back their Territory Gateway?

Upon all the scoldings from those players, Amaou Kuyoshi could only endure the pain in his crotch silently. He dearly wished that he could simply summon those cynical Japanese players over to his location, so that everyone could witness the insanely powerful 'Transformation' of Zhang Yang!

Oh my god! How could one player be so powerful, to such an extent!

If Zhang Yang only had an extremely long HP bar, then they should still be able to take him. However, his attack power was also extremely high and powerful! Among the Japanese players,

they also had players who could ‘Transform’ as well...but they were nothing compared to this. A ‘Transformed’ player could also be healed up by a few Healers supporting them from the rear, if and only if they were fighting monsters and bosses!

But this is not a boss, this is a god d\*mned player! A player’s behavior in the game is not powered by the Aggro system of the game! A player could choose who to kill without being restricted by the aggro system! Worst off, Zhang Yang was basically immune to any sort of Status Restriction Skills! With all these conditions favoring Zhang Yang, it really did bring about a sense of despair upon the Japanese players!

Amaou Kuyoshi made quick calculations in his mind. He believed that they would need about 20, no, 50 players with {Inheritance Transformation} Skills to be able to take Zhang Yang down!

However, they only had Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama, so where would he find so many players with {Inheritance Transformation} Skills? It was not because the Japanese players couldn’t get any of the [Inheritance Fragments]. Some of the lucky ones had already obtained the Linking Quest for Class B [Inheritances], and some of them had even got the quests for Class A [Inheritances]. But all of them had been halted by the final bosses of their [Inheritance] quest. It seemed that they would not be able to magically gather 50 players that were capable of {Inheritance Transformation} in the short run.

‘ 14,322!’



‘11,092!’

‘7,834!’

...

As the battle raged on, the number of players continued to reduced steeply. Meanwhile, the number of players from Lone Desert Smoke continued to remain steadily at the single digit - ‘1’. All the Japanese players had their eyes glued to that number, as they gnashed their teeth together, and felt the shivers down their spines!

The murderous look on Zhang Yang’s face was bound to be a nightmarish scene that would haunt all of the Japanese players for the rest of their days! What a terrifying monster!

After the tormenting battle had reached the 120th minute, the Japanese players suddenly got released from their suffering --- the duration of Zhang Yang’s {God of War Transformation} Skill had finally come to an end!

Zhang Yang, however, did not lose himself in the lust of killing

those Japanese players. He already had [Violet Thunderhawk] standing by on his side. The moment his {God of War Transformation} faded, Zhang Yang had hopped onto the [Violet Thunderhawk] immediately. The [Violet Thunderhawk] flapped its frosty-blue wings and rose into the air, 50 meters from the ground! There, Zhang Yang had gotten himself out from the attack range of all the players, regardless of their Classes.

The Japanese players had not be able to recover their senses, as they could not react to Zhang Yang's actions as well. They were still wondering on why Zhang Yang had suddenly stopped killing, as if he had turned soft on them! But the more experienced Japanese players quickly realized the situation, and they started to shout, "His {Inheritance Transformation} has faded!"

"Hahaha! It is time for us to strike back!"

"There's still time. 1 hour for us to take down the Territory's City Hall!"

The Japanese players who had tasted despair for the past 2 hours suddenly saw a glimpse of hope, a glimpse of light! All of them began to cry in excitement! Before that, Zhang Yang had his stupidly insane {God of War Transformation} activated, so none of them could do anything to him! But even now that the {God of War Transformation} Skill had faded away, nothing much had changed! Just because their equipment were decent, it did not guarantee them victory over the mighty Zhang Yang! Even with those powerful equipment, they could not shorten the power level difference between themselves and Zhang Yang by much!

At that moment, the remnants of their Aerial forces had soared atop their [Flying Mounts], heading towards Zhang Yang. About 9 players with 9 different type of [Flying Mounts] charged towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang did not falter as he activated his {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} at one of the Spellcasters! At the same instant, he activated his {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} on a Hunter. Upon the activation of those two Skills, he flew towards another Priest! With his [Heaven Shaker] raised up high, poised to strike, Zhang Yang merciless tore into the Priest.

The movement speed of the [Violet Thunderhawk] was extremely fast! The Priest did not have any time to react at all. His dilating pupils reflected the looming silhouette of Zhang Yang approaching at lightning speed! The moment he realized Zhang Yang was already in front of him was the moment when the [Heaven Shaker] crunched into his neck.

‘-27,882!’

At the same time, the {Dance of the Heaven and Earth} and {Chaotic Dance of Electric Current} had started to take effect, causing a series of ‘10,000’ damage to the Spellcaster and the Hunter. As they were all 50 meters above from the ground, the Healers on the ground could not reach them, as they were too far away. Also, the only Healer that was capable of flight was currently being given a beating of his life. The Spellcaster and the Hunter struggled to go back down, within the range of the other healers. As Zhang Yang’s Skills were still active, there was no reason for them to stay in the sky, or dream on that the Healers on

the ground would grow wings and soar into the sky!

Buzz!

The [Violet-Thunderhawk] spat out a ball of lightning. Bright, white electricity surged through the Priest's body as he was winced and then fell still. That was actually the 'Paralytic' effect of the {Lightning Ball}!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he continued to beat the Priest up with his {Destructive Smash}!

‘-54,332!’

After three devastating hits from Zhang Yang, the Priest let out a cry and fell from the sky.

Zhang Yang did not stop there, and turned his attention towards the remaining 6 Japanese players.

Nine elite players without [Inheritances] were absolutely no match to Zhang Yang. Without much of a fuzz, Zhang Yang sent them crashing down to the ground, their voices of misery echoing through the field. Only one Spellcaster had managed to flee back to the ground! However, he did not last long either.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he directed [Violet-Thunderhawk] to circle around the sky like a dragon. He would randomly lunge down to attack some players with one or two hits,

and then get back up to the sky to circle around!

Meanwhile, without any firepower left in the sky, the Japan army could only stare at Zhang Yang, while he picked them off one after another like a bird of prey picking on a herd of trapped mice.

Well, if they couldn't do anything against Zhang Yang, then they should just focus on taking down the castle, and take down the City Hall. That was their only chance now! However, the Japanese players finally realized that they had just lost another 4,578 players on their side!

So only about 4,000 players had survived the onslaught of Zhang Yang!

Meanwhile, tens of thousands of NPCs remained at the entrance of the Winst Castle, and Rockovich was still alive and well! Although Rockovich had already lost two thirds of his HP bar, taking into context his 100,000,000 HP, a third of that amount was still a lot! Rockovich still had over 30,000,000 HP! That amount of HP would definitely be enough to curbstomp the Japanese army!

Looking from another perspective, 4,000 players should still be able to take down the boss. However, even though Zhang Yang could no longer pose a great threat to them, but the NPC army had become their worst problem. They outnumbered them by over 2 to 1!

More and more soldiers of White Jade Kingdom gushed out from the entrance of Winst Castle, pushing the players of Japan army

back, one step after another. By the end of it, the NPC army formed a circle formation and completely surrounded the Japanese army before they started getting busy!

NPCs behaved very differently compared to groups of players, they worked together in perfect tandem, focusing on one player at a time. Especially the Ranged soldiers, 10 Hunters and 1 Spellcaster would focus their fire power on the same target. Even a player with extremely good equipment would die in misery!

Meanwhile, the Priests of the NPC army started to shine. Earlier on they had been all trapped within the castle interiors, it was finally their turn to squeeze themselves through the entrance of the castle and start healing up the soldiers on the front lines. Although they could not heal those soldiers who were instantly killed, Rockovich still had an abundance of HP left, so they started healing the boss back up. Hundreds of Priest cast healing Skills on the boss, swiftly healing him up!

What the f\*ck! What could the Japan army do with this?

After all, this army of NPCs was no ordinary army, it was the Expedition Army of the White Jade Empire! Of course they would be an extremely powerful force!

The formation of the Japanese army had finally crumbled. Under the suppression of the NPC army, they had finally given up on every last bit of hope. Their remaining numbers continued dropping, from 3,000 to 2,000, from 2,000 to 1,000... falling from 4 digits to 3 digits, then from 3 digits to 2 digits, then lastly, down to 1 digit!

When the final player, Amaou Kuyoshi was stuck down by the [Violet Thunderhawk] with a

{Thunder Ball}, the system declared that the Territory Conquest had ended in advance. The duration of the Territory Conquest was 2 hours 38 minutes 56 seconds!

‘Ding! Congratulations to Lone Desert Smoke, for having succeeded in annihilating the entirety of Sakura no Nagare Mae. You have claimed victory over the Territory Conquest in advance!’

The members of Lone Desert Smoke received the same notification at the same time.

Huh? What just happened?

The China players who were still engaged with the E.E Guild in guild almost popped their eyes out of their skulls!

After all, there was a total of 39,999 Lone Desert Smoke members stationed in Morning Town. Only Zhang Yang alone was defending Winst Castle. The system made no such mistake!

It only meant that Zhang Yang had annihilated all of Sakura no Nagare Mae and had even claimed victory in the Territory Conquest, in advance!

It did seemed to be a little over exaggerated!

Meanwhile, when the Korean players had also received news about the lost of Sakura no Nagare Mae, instantly, their assaults became even more aggressive and precise! It was now or never! The army that was supposed to take down Winst Castle had failed! That was definitely an impossible outcome! However, a loss is a loss, there's no denying it!

All the Korean players began to go mad. Although they could not claim back the Territory Gateway that was supposedly theirs, they were very determined to take down the Territory Gateway that belonged to China Region! There was no need to think about the rightful owners of the Territory Gateways! Just take it down, and think about the rest after!

Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes as she suddenly looked at Sun Xin Yu and said, "Sister Sun, let's just use that [Forbidden Scroll] and get this over with!"

Sun Xin Yu said, "We've won!"

She meant that the Lone Desert Smoke had already secured a sure victory over this battle, so it was not necessary to waste a precious [Forbidden Scroll] over nothing.

The little brat quickly added, "That noob tank single handedly took out the entire army of the 'Shorty Japan' even before the Territory Conquest ended, are we seriously going to battle for 3 hours, with all 40,000 of our men? When we see that noob tank



later, he is going to laugh at us with that nasty face of his! More importantly, he's going to make fun of me.. I mean us!"

Sun Xin Yu was also a person who loved winning. As she was listening to Wei Yan Er's reasoning, the look on her face changed a little as her conviction on not using that scroll started wavering. She revealed a murderous look on her face, as her eyes gleamed in uncertainty.

Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue added wood to the fire, "Humph! What a boring person you are! Are you seriously worried that you might get scolded by Zhang Yang after you use it? What a coward!"

"Do you want a punch in the face? You big-titted b\*tch!" Sun Xin Yu shot a cold glare as she reached into her inventory and took out the [Forbidden Scroll].

Well, praise the lord, as Zhang Yang had given the [Forbidden Scroll] to Sun Xin Yu, for he knew she was a calculated professional, with a steel, ice heart of precision. She was mature enough to not be controlled by her emotions. But what he had not seen was the chemical reaction between these two ladies. That would really stir up disaster with unimaginably terrible consequences!

Sun Xin Yu had firmly decided to use the [Forbidden Scroll]. Without any delay, she tore the [Forbidden Scroll] into half, and there goes the first [Forbidden Scroll] of the game, sinking into the depths of past history!

The sky began to rumble!

The [Forbidden Scroll] had been activated! The entire sky instantly began 'boiling' in dark clouds, as the clouds shrouded every inch of the sky within their visible range. Within the fast moving dark clouds, there was also the continuous crackling of blazing white, electrical charges.

'Ding! Player Frost Night has used the [Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday]!'

With Sun Xin Yu as the center point, every player within the range of 5 Kilometers from her received the same system notification! As the center point was in the middle of the town entrance, that had covered every single player involved in the Territory Conquest.

A for... forbidden scroll? What the heck is that?

No one had any idea on what a [Forbidden Scroll] was. Naturally, they wouldn't know the power of one either! But, the name spoke wonders for itself. Imaginations began to run wild. After all, the scroll contained word 'Forbidden', so the power of this 'magic' should be terrifying, to say the least. If that was not the case, the system would not have even bothered announcing it!

However, as far as their imaginations went, no one would ever imagine that the range of this 'Scourging Doomsday' would reach out as far as 5 Kilometers! The impact of the strikes from the 'Scourging Doomsday' was even more powerful, to the point that

people would piss their pants as they remained within its effective range!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

As the dark clouds rolled in the sky, massive thunder bolts hurtled straight down from the sky and countless burning meteor rocks came crashing down! It was the apocalypse, Armageddon, Ragnarok, whatever you wish to call it!

All of the Korean players began to receive damage in every passing second! The 'Scourging Doomsday' would reduce 10% of the target's HP in every second, but the maximum damage would not exceed 100,000 damage! Other than the Korean players who at least had Class B [Inheritances], none of the Korean players would ever have 1,000,000 HP. Therefore, everyone, other than the Class B [Inheritance] holders started to lose 10% of their health in every passing second. Furthermore, 'Scourging Doomsday' is 30 seconds long!

As the Healer Classes still lacked the power to heal 10% of a powerful player's HP, the situation was akin to a huge, leaking vessel!

From the 11th second, many of the Korean players started to die. On the 15th second of the 'Scourging Doomsday', the death toll had reached up to tens of thousands! The current death toll was beginning to catch up with the total death toll from the first two hours of the battle --- at first, when the Korean players saw that there was almost 40,000 players in Morning Town, they already knew that there was no hope in taking over the Territory Gateway.

So, they simply decided to aimlessly wave their weapons around to pass time. However, when they received the news that Sakura no Nagare Mae had failed in their conquest, they started to get serious and charged towards the entrance of Morning Town!

On the 20th second, the total death toll for the Korean players had reached up to total of 20,000! On the 25th second, the last bunch of players who had activated their life saving Skills started dying, one after another!

The insane electrical surges continued to strike, and the meteors continued to fall on the ground, however, there were no more players alive to take anymore of that!

The Korean players had been wiped out!

‘Ding! Congratulation to Lone Desert Smoke, for succeeded in annihilating the entirety of the E.E Guild. You have claimed victory over the Territory Conquest in advance!’

The second system notification was sounded not long after the first, but the other players that Lone Desert Smoke had ‘borrowed’ from their ally guilds dropped their jaws as they stared at the aftershock of the ‘Scouring Doomsday’.

Oh my god!

1. Zhang Fei - a military general who served under the warlord Liu Bei in the late Eastern Han dynasty and early Three Kingdoms period.

2. Changban Bridge - The Battle of Changban was a battle fought between the warlords Cao Cao and Liu Bei in 208 in the late Eastern Han dynasty.

# Chapter 540: The War's Post Mortem

---

The Japan-Korea Region had launched their assaults on the two Territories of Lone Desert Smoke at the same time, however, the two massive armies were soundly annihilated like ants!

The news had spread across the official forums like wildfire. At first, many players could not treat it seriously, believing them to simply be rumors, however, after knowing that the two Territories of the China Region still belonged to Lone Desert Smoke, solid evidence to that fact, they could no longer deny the truth! Therefore, everyone began to wonder how did Lone Desert Smoke pull that off!

After all, guarding the Territory to defend their rights overruling the Territory in a Territory Conquest, and annihilating the enemies to claim victory in a Territory Conquest were two different things!

Furthermore, the news had stated that Lone Desert Smoke had over 39,999 players stationed in Morning Town, so victory via annihilation would be feasible. But the details about the Territory Conquest over the Winst Castle is a little bit absurd! One man against 30,000 and that one man had managed to wipe them out?

Holy mother of the cow as the goosebumps comes! Are you sure you're reading the text right?

Is there anything else that could really be even more absurd than this? One man wiping out an army of 30,000? Did that one player

lug a [Magic Cannon], with unlimited ammo?

But after Zhang Yang released the footage of the entire Territory Conquest over Winst Castle, questions and doubts on the forums were cleared out as the players began to shut up!

Everyone could not help but to feel sorry for the players from the Japan-Korea Region as they were really unfortunate to have clashed head-on with the Expedition Army of White Jade Kingdom, along with a very powerful boss!

Of course, the players were even more shocked to see Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation}!

To see Zhang Yang going all out without the need to heal as he toyed with the 30,000 to the point that they could not do a thing! This was no longer insane, this was ludicrous, this was insanity itself going insane!

So proud! So mighty! So dominating!

Who wouldn't want to be so outstanding in a game? Who wouldn't want to be the center of the attention like that?

All of a sudden, the search for the [Inheritance] had become a hot topic for the players. Every one of them started to imagine themselves 'transforming' like how Zhang Yang did. They would imagine slaying all their enemies from all directions like almighty beings! Of course, those who had certain knowledge of the game

knew that Zhang Yang had managed to become the center of the attention because he was the first to get a high Class [Inheritance]. So when more and more players acquire [Inheritances], Zhang Yang would no longer be the invincible monsters that everyone had pictured him to be!

However, the players were not willing to open their eyes to common sense. They were only willing to see the mighty and undefeated side of Zhang Yang without thinking logically. In other words, those players who were not interested in getting any [Inheritance] back then were now searching for the [Inheritance Fragments] all over the place, like madmen. They did not even need the Official website to announce anything about [Inheritances]!

Other than that, some players had uploaded the footage showing the power of the [Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday], and all players lost their voices again for another 3 minutes!

Annihilated an army of 30,000 players in merely 30 seconds? That was something is even more full of ridiculous bullsh\*t than the {Inheritance Transformation} Skill!

In the coming days, two words would be mentioned very frequently. 'Inheritance' and 'Forbidden'.

Of course, the Japan-Korea Region had become the butt of the joke for the other 7 Main Regions in the game. The two armies had suffered devastating defeats, leaving them with broken halberds, buried in the sand. Ever since their defeat, the 60,000 who took part were heavily condemned by their own countrymen! The



guildmasters for the E.E Guild and the Sakura no Nagare Mae, the names 'Hangugui Gugwang' and 'Amaou Kuyoshi' had become synonyms for the term, 'disgrace'!

Those players that were 'borrowed' from other guilds had left the two guilds and returned to their initial guilds with shame and anger, while the players who originally belonged to the two guilds went back to their own Region in disdain! Now, these two guilds were facing fates far worse than anyone could anticipate, as these two guilds were actually super powerful guilds in Zhang Yang's previous life! Now, the two guilds might fall apart and get disbanded sooner than anyone could think! Zhang Yang was no longer spreading his butterfly wings like a hurricane, instead, he was spreading them like a storm cloud, a force of nature that cannot be tamed!

After witnessing the powerful aftershock of the [Forbidden Scroll], everyone feared of its existence, an existence that could bring about devastating effects like a nuclear warhead! Not only was the range of this 'bad boy' ridiculously vast, but it could also bring about the substantial amount of damage to enemies within its range. Unless the players had {Inheritance Transformations} that boosted their HP up to the millions, nothing stood a chance.

Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream quickly regrouped their original guild members. Meanwhile, the high Tier players who were 'borrowed' from other guilds saw that the warehouse of Lone Desert Smoke was full of powerful and rare items and equipment! So many of them were not willing to leave the guild --- Zhang Yang had limited the access to the guild's warehouse to only his own guild members, however, only the high-ranking members of the guild could deposit and withdraw items to and from the

warehouse. All those Level 110, Level 120 Violet-Platinum equipment that Zhang Yang and his party had acquired from previous battles lay gracefully among the slots of the warehouse. It was an act to inspire his guild members to work hard and earn them as rewards and prizes.

Zhang Yang attempted to feign ignorance about these additional ‘visitors’, as high Tier players were a form of ‘wealth’ that is hard to come by in the game. Meanwhile, the guild had recently been upgraded to level 4 Guild not too long ago, and there was a new wave recruitment going on as well. There was no need to worry about a shortage of space. Of course, Lone Desert Smoke paid more attention to the attitudes of the players when recruiting new members. If the players do not have firm resolutions, it did not matter if they are high leveled or high Tiered, their performances would definitely be below average.

After the battles, Zhang Yang and the Lone Desert Smoke had become even more prestigious than before! The players in the China Region were worshiping Zhang Yang, while the players from Japan-Korea Region hated him to their cores. Even players from other Regions now knew that the China Region had a super powerful player and a super powerful guild!

Zhang Yang did not blame Sun Xin Yu for using the [Forbidden Scroll]. He had actually planned to use it as a deliberate show of strength, making a statement to the world that Lone Desert Smoke had a ‘Nuclear Warhead’ in possession. After all, they did not need the other guilds and players coming at them with trouble in mind, slowing down their progress in the game! With such a ‘warning’ sign on their doorstep, Lone Desert Smoke could prevent a lot of unnecessary problems from other guilds!

Even though the Lone Desert Smoke was already on track to a decisive victory in Morning Town, they had still used one [Forbidden Scroll] on their enemies. So what did that mean? To be able to use one Scroll so generously, they had to have several more in possession!

Quite a number of players started to come down with paranoia, and that was exactly the effect that Zhang Yang wanted. He's no battle maniac, it would be tiring to battle players day after day.

Of course, Fatty Han felt an ache in his heart as soon as he found out that they had used a [Forbidden Scroll]. After the triggering of [Forbidden Scroll] over the Territory Conquest on Morning Town, the price of the [Forbidden Scrolls] had rocketed out of orbit! That meant that the convenient use of a [Forbidden Scroll] by Sun Xin Yu had cost them at least tens of millions of dollars, like throwing a chest full of gold bars to the bottom of a river! Of course, that fatty was so greatly disturbed to the point that he could not eat well for the next couple of days! He actually lost a couple of pounds!

There, the Territory Conquests were finally over for now. After all, [Territory Conquest Orders] were not easy to come by. Meanwhile, players from the Japan-Korea Region had also found out that they would have no other way of restricting Zhang Yang at all, when he is in his {God of War Transformation} unless they had an army of Class B [Inheritance] owners! Otherwise, charging into a battle head-on with Zhang Yang would never end well!

Furthermore, they had to find a way to divide the forces of Lone

Desert Smoke if they even want to claim victory over any of their Territories. Or else, they shouldn't even attempt any single conquest!

So, the top guilds from all eight Main Regions had turned their attention back on acquiring the 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. Ever since Mess Up Your Mama had cleared the Hard Mode of the dungeon, the other top Tier Guilds were beginning to share their progress, joining the 'front line' with the other pioneers!

Currently, Mess Up Your Mama had scored 5/15 bosses, securing the first place in clearing the dungeon. The following guilds had also cleared up to 4/15 or 3/15 bosses at that stage, as well. The first 5 bosses of the Dragon Throat Fortress were easier to slay, but the 6th boss is the line of demarcation for the difficulty of the dungeon. That was the boss that got Mess Up Your Mama stuck, and it was already days after they cleared the 5th boss. There were no signs of the battle log concerning the 6th boss for two months!

Zhang Yang was not worried at all. He knew that the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress was extremely difficult. The following 5 bosses should be able to keep the other guilds from progressing for at least a month. The last 5 bosses would definitely stop the guilds in their tracks for at least two months!

The priority now was to head out into the open world and slay some open world bosses and gather some powerful equipment to increase the guild's Strength. Only then would the guild be powerful enough to push through the bosses and clear the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress!

Now that Zhang Yang had obtained the [Zinc Alloy] and the [Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang], he no longer had reason to hold back on locating the final quest item for his quest, the [Light of Miracle]. As it had started off as such a difficult quest, Zhang Yang would definitely stumble across some high Tiered bosses, and he might even get the chance to pick up some fine and powerful booty while he is at it. So basically, Zhang Yang would be killing two birds with one stone again, a situation that he would always welcome at any time of the day!

Zhang Yang hopped onto him [Violet Thunderhawk] as he began to zip across the sky like a lightning bolt. In just a brief moment, Zhang Yang had arrived at the Siccory Mountains, where he began to head on over to the Radiant Canyon in search of the [Light of Miracle].

When comparing the [Violet Thunderhawk] to the [Snow-Scale Wind Serpent], this Mythical Tier Thunderhawk could really travel swiftly, and it had far more stamina than Whitey Jr.. It did not show any signs of tiredness or fatigue, even after carrying Zhang Yang across the sky for a long time. If this was Whitey Jr. that was carrying Zhang Yang over such a distance, it would have been using its cute, large glittering eyes to beg for sympathy.

The Radiant Canyon was a magical, fantastic place where the night would never fall upon the canyon. Even after sunset, the rocks and stones in the canyon would release blinding light, as if they had recharged themselves throughout the entire day, unleashing the light that they have 'collected' into the surroundings.

However, Radiant Canyon was steep and treacherous. There were many spiky rocks across the path and it wasn't easy at all for a [Flying Mount] to roam freely. They could only fly across the canyon from a height, tens of meters off the ground. Flying higher than that would risk crashing into the spiky rocks all around the place! Fortunately for Zhang Yang, there weren't many monsters in the area. So, it wouldn't be an issue to fly low in that area, as Zhang Yang did not have to worry about a bunch of monsters chasing after their tails.

After flying for a distance in the Radiant Canyon, Zhang Yang decided to land by the road that had forked off into three different directions, as he had spotted a Red-Skinned Orc who was struggling to crawl away. That Orc had three arrows buried deep in its back, and he had most probably been crawling in the same direction for quite a while, as there was a long trail of blood behind him.

[Aldo] (Normal, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 115

HP: 86/17,800

The HP bar of the Orc was slowly depleting. Judging by the rate of the HP reduction, it would probably only take about 1 minute or so before the HP touches zero.

There was a yellow exclamation mark on the top of the Orc. This

was a quest-giving NPC. Furthermore, Zhang Yang would not risk missing out a quest in the middle of such a place, as there was a decent chance that this quest might have something to do with the [Light of Miracle] that Zhang Yang is looking for.

"Human ---" Aldo raised his head up when he sensed the presence of Zhang Yang. His dying eyes started to lose focus as he tried his best to speak in a trembling voice, "Help... me... with this! Take this message... to our Red-Skinned Chieftain Roger Kluge. Hellscream!"

‘Ding! Aldo has a quest for you: A message to Roger Kluge. Hellscream. Will you accept it?’

Accept!

"Argh!" Aldo let out a long sigh, as if he had been relieved of a heavy burden, and went limp.

[A message to Roger Kluge. Hellscream] (Difficulty: D-rank)

Description: You have stumbled across a dying Red-Skinned Orc. As a compassionate Adventurer, you agreed to aid him in completing his errand, right before he died. You will need to deliver this message to Roger Kluge. Hellscream. It was most likely that the Orc had been crawling in his intended direction.

Completion: Pass the message to Roger Kluge. Hellscream 0/1

Zhang Yang quickly hopped back onto his [Violet Thunderhawk]. Then, he followed the road down the direction where the Orc had been crawling.

After flying for about 20 minutes, Zhang Yang arrived at a large campsite. The design and styling of the buildings within the campsite looked very Orcish. Every single one of the houses had spiky spears on top of them. Those spears would make good self-defense weapons, if the need ever comes.

By the entrance of the campsite, there was a platoon of Level 120 Elite Tier Orc soldiers. The moment they saw Zhang Yang descended from the sky, they charged towards Zhang Yang and surrounded him. Then one Orc came up to him and said, "Human, identify yourself at once!"



# Chapter 541: A Conflict of Interests

---

"I'm an Adventurer from the White Jade Castle, and my name is Zhan Yu!" Zhang Yang hopped off the Thunderhawk and gestured courteously, "I came across an Orc by the name of Aldo. Even at death's door, he was beseeching for me to pass this message to your Orc Chieftain Roger Kluge. Hellscream!"

"Aldo... is dead?"

"Sod this! How dare those bloody goblins to spill the blood of our kin! To arms! Show these litter critters the meaning of death! Kill them all!"

The Red-Skinned Orcs started to roar in rage. The ultimate act of evil had been committed to one of their kind! They would not let this pass!

The leader calmed the Orcs down and said, "Human, follow me!"

Zhang Yang followed the Orc into the campsite. He saw that the Orcs here were all red-skinned. All sorts of Orcs were there, male and female, young and old. They all looked at Zhang Yang, especially the Orcs children as if they were laying eyes upon an alien visitor for the first time. All of them were curious to see Zhang Yang's arrival.

After walking continuously for more than 10 minutes, the Orc finally led Zhang Yang to the front of a large building. After a series of security checks, Zhang Yang finally met the Chieftain of

the campsite.

[Roger Kluge. Hellscream] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 125

HP: 37.500,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 33,207 - 39,207

Skills:

[Wind Walk]: Enters an invisible state and increases movement speed by 100%. Increases the damage of the next Skill by 200%. The effect would only last for 1 minute, or it would fade if the user does any additional actions other than moving around.

[Storm Blades]: Swing your weapon around and inflict every single target within your melee attack range with the Attack of your weapon!

[Jumping Slash]: Melee Attack will have a 20% rate of triggering a Critical Attack.

Note: The Chieftain of the Red-Skinned Orcs, he is as wise as he is

brave!

As Chieftain of the Red-Skinned Orcs, he was also red in color. The difference was that he was in a much deeper tone, that you would have thought that he had dipped himself in a pool of blood. Although he was middle-aged, this Chieftain did not look like his age. He had an intimidating aura around him, even though he appeared to be calm for the moment. A long sword was slung over his back. Although he was not particularly large, nor did his muscles ripple, but he gave the impression that he could just tug that sword from its scabbard and turn his enemies into mincemeat, all in a single motion!

"Human, the message, please!" Roger Kluge spoke in a deep rumble that was clouded with sorrow.

Zhang Yang took the out 'Message' from his inventory and passed it over to Roger Kluge, then he said, "My respected Chieftain, what sort of enemies are you up against? I have friends that are Orcs as well. Although they are not of your clan, I am willing to provide aid in such regards!"

A hint of surprise and respect came across the noble Orc's face for a brief moment. He nodded at Zhang Yang in acknowledgment and began to read the 'Message' as he unfurled the scroll. The more he read, the more intense his expression grew, and the more his fists clenched and quivered. Zhang Yang could see that the Chieftain was on the verge of popping a vein!

The old Orc sat down in his chair and gathered his thoughts for a moment before he started speaking again, "Close to our territory,

there is a mining cave. You can mine for some sort of ore they call the [Light of Miracle]. These ores are extremely fantastic and unique. They contain powerful magic, and can be used as the power source for magic staffs! This canyon is named The 'Radiant Canyon' because there is no difference here during day and night. Every single rock and stone in this place produces the 'light of miracle'. After all, the normal rocks and stones in the normal mountains and valleys do not have the [Light of Miracle], so they are not suitable for us!"

Therefore, it appeared that this [Light of Miracle] was a type of mining ore. If Zhang Yang had known this before getting himself into all these troubles, he would have gone to mine the item himself!

At least, that was what Zhang Yang told himself. Of course, he also knew that the system would never make things so convenient, or any other player in the entire game would have been able to acquire quest items without the need of going through any quests, or even slaying bosses! Also, only players in the mining profession would be able to mine ores! So, if he doesn't complete this quest, then he will be unable to mine for the [Light of Miracle] even if he really stumbles across it. He could only stare at them.

Roger Kluge continued to talk, "Mining the [Light of Miracle] requires a very specific type of Magic Equipment. We don't have enough finances to go around purchasing those equipment yet. Therefore, we have been sending men to guard the entrance of the mining cave all this while. Also, we've been able to gather some of those loose pieces of [Light of Miracles] lying around the cave"

Then, why was there a dead orc, now?

Roger Kluge did not intend to tantalize Zhang Yang at all. As such he quickly spoke, "However, just beyond the land of Radiant Canyon, there is also another tribe of Orcs. They are the Blue-Skinned Orcs, and they have been ambushing my people at the mining cave, even as we speak! Although they are much larger in number and much stronger than us, they are not capable of wiping us out yet. If we really were to engage them, we would suffer great losses, and so will they! When they are weakened, other Orcs from different tribes will surely try to take their place as the most powerful tribe! It would be all over for them!"

Bam! The old Orc slapped the surface of the table hard, as teapots and cups jumped up for a split second before returning to the surface of the table, and said, "Those Blue-Skinned Orcs know that very well! Therefore, they did not attack us directly. Instead, they decided to coerce a bunch of goblins into snatching the mining cave of the [Light of Miracle] from us! Pui! The campsite of these goblins are very close to the mining cave. However, all Orcs know very well that the mining cave belongs to us, the Red-Skinned Orcs! If those filthy, weak little creatures did not have the support of the Blue-Skinned Orcs, they would not have had the guts to do such a thing!"

Zhang Yang finally got his chance to say something, so he asked, "Why would the Blue-Skinned Orcs be doing this? Aren't they afraid to go head-to-head against your tribe? Although goblins are known to be a filthy greedy tribe, everyone knows that the goblins have almost 0 power in battle. Even if Blue-Skinned Orcs really form an alliance with the Goblins, their battle power will not even change by a bit! The outcome would be the same!"

Roger Kluge shook his head, then he said, "Human, you have no idea how Orc 'Politics' works!" He then let out a breath of sigh as he continued to explain, "The number of Orc tribes that dare to ambush the mining cave is extremely low. Well, most of the Orc tribes come up with excuses so that they do not have to send their troops and join the Blue-Skinned Orcs in their ambush! Meanwhile, although we Red-Skinned Orcs are a little weaker than the Blue-Skinned Orc, but among all the Orcs, we are good enough to rank fifth! No other tribe will have an easy time taking us out! At worst, both sides will suffer heavy losses, and lose their respective standings! However, with the Goblins at the front line, they would have a reason to form an alliance to go up against us!"

The situation was pretty complicated!

Zhang Yang frowned as he had never been good in any form of politics, and he said, "My respected Chieftain, what do you plan to do, then?"

Roger Kluge began to drum his fingers on the surface of the table as he continued to speak, "I have sent a messenger over to the campsite of the Goblins to express our rage and to once again reiterate, strongly, to everyone else that the Miracle Mining Cave belongs to us, the Red-Skinned Orcs. The goblins should know that if they are playing with fire, they will get burned!"

What a familiar line!

"But Aldo is dead!" Zhang Yang said.

"That's right, Aldo is dead!" Roger Kluge suddenly had a murderous look in his eyes, "So those goblins must believe that the Blue-Skinned Orcs are supporting them now! Do they believe that we will not lay a hand on them? Human, since that you are willing to aid us, then I gratefully accept! I shall give you a quest! Get over to the Miracle Mining Cave and wipe all the goblins trespassing the area. That should teach them a lesson!"

‘Ding! Roger Kluge has given you a quest, Teach the Goblins a Lesson, accept or decline?’

Accept.

Zhang Yang walked out of the tent. Then, he summoned the Thunderhawk out. At the speed of light, Zhang Yang lunged into the sky and began his journey over to the quest location. Of course, he had that greedy thought of even getting his hands on a [Light of Miracle] the moment he lands there. If that is the case, he would be able to fly back to hand in the previous quest and get over with it.

Less than ten minutes after soaring through the sky, Zhang Yang arrived at the entrance of the mining cave.

This location could be easily marked and recognized, as there was a large number of goblins all around the entrance of the mining cave. The goblins had no hair at all in the middle of their heads, and they were even shorter than the dwarfs. They were also much smaller in size. These goblins were just a bunch of little creatures, as skinny as twigs. Their arms and legs were so thin that they

looked very fragile! Judging from their appearance and the appearance of the Orcs, they were just like a bunch of 'looney-toon' creatures with only 5 Attack power!

At the other side of the mining cave, there were over 100 Red-Skinned Orcs standing off against them. The two sides were staring at each other as if they were about to clash! Although the goblins were not exactly outnumbered, if these two troops really clash into each other, the Orcs would crush those goblins like crispy crackers within 5 minutes!

Well, it seems that this Roger Kluge is really a patient Chieftain!

Zhang Yang could not help but to shake his head over and over again. He understood that a Chieftain had many things to take into consideration before making a move. No matter which side he decides to slaughter, there will be consequences. So, he cannot act according to his own will. The quest only required Zhang Yang to slay 24 goblins, however, Roger Kluge did mention that the more goblins Zhang Yang slays, the happier Roger Kluge would be.

Let's make us a happy Chieftan. Zhang Yang decided to wipe out ever goblin in sight!

He patted on Thunderhawk as they charged towards the goblins' side. He picked his first target.

[Philpines Goblin]



Level: 115

HP: 1,150,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 7,623 - 9,623

Skills:

[Goblin Mortar Strike]: Mortars crafted from the technology of the Goblins, inflicts 20,000 Fire damage to targets. Instant activation. Range: 30 meters.

[Goblin Defibrillator]: Attempts to revive one of their fallen comrades.

[Goblin Pulse Rifle]: Launches a shot at the target, inflicting 20,000 Nature Damage, and stuns the target for 10 seconds. Casting time: 1 second. Range: 30 meters.

Note: Philpines Goblins had inherited all attributes of the goblins. They prefer the soft way rather than the hard way. They greed for gold. However, they will not stay and fight to their deaths when they face danger, instead, they will just run away like cowards! Because they are naturally born weak in combat, they have invented a type of 'Supporting Attack' called 'Technology' to support them in battle.

They prefer the soft way rather than the hard way, they say? Hehe, then let's show they how hard this [Heaven Shaker] hits!

Zhang Yang let out a shout as he threw his {Spear of Obliteration} over to one of the Philpines Goblins

‘-27,822!’

The shadow of a spear stabbed straight through the body of the goblin and red blood spilled from the greenish body of the monster to all over the place as it shrieked in pain. It jumped 3 meters high, as if something had seared its buttocks. After that, the goblin quickly raised up its spear and charged at Zhang Yang.

"You filthy human! How dare to show your disrespect by attacking a Goblin of the great Philpines!" This goblin was charging towards Zhang Yang. The money-minded Goblin snarled, "You must compensate me for this! Hand over at least 100 gold pieces, and I shall consider not killing you!"

Pak! Pak!

Felice and the Thunderhawk completed their casting almost at the same time as they shot out their attacks.

"Argh! Another two! Human! You are not going to get away with just 100 gold pieces!"

## Chapter 542: Slow-acting poison

---

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, seeing how the Goblin was still rambling on about compensatory fees, even though he was about to die a most gruesome death. He was truly worthy of being a Goblin!

This goblin halted all of a sudden as it took out a mini-sized red mortar and directed it at Zhang Yang. Only god knows how the goblin had produced it out of thin air! The goblin fumbled around with the fuse at the bottom, while covering a ear with its free hand.

A series of sparkles ignited at the bottom of the mortar and boom! The mortar fired a blazing hot missile straight from its muzzle, a stream of burning light trailing behind it like a shooting star!

It may have seemed to be a long, slow process, what it had all unfolded within one-tenth of a second! Judging from the speed and the way it handled the weapon, the goblin had to be extremely proficient at handling that odd-looking weapon!

Zhang Yang only managed to turn his head before the fire missile hit him. The fire missile sent a shower of sparks over his entire body and Zhang Yang received '13,114' damage.

"Hahaha! Human, are you scared? Tremble before the 'Technology' of the goblins!" The little green goblin was pleased with itself. With a wave of its left hand, the red mortar vanished. It

raised its spear up and charged towards Zhang Yang. After a few small, pathetic strides with its tiny feet, the goblin finally reached Zhang Yang and stabbed its spear at Zhang Yang's neck.

Chiang!

Zhang Yang immediately raised his shield to block the strike, and a series of sparks flew out between the tip of the spear and the surface of the shield. Zhang Yang blocked the goblin's attack, and then swung his [Heaven Shaker] towards the goblin and started turning it into mincemeat.

Unfortunately, in the game, despite having a battle power of 5 according to how the Orcs described them, along with their flavor text, when engaged in battle with players, Goblins would just as powerful as Orcs! They would have almost had similar stats, compared to normal Level 115 elite Tier monsters. However, a mere level 115 elite Tier monster cannot do anything much to defend itself against the mighty swings of Zhang Yang.

The goblin launched a few more fire missiles at Zhang Yang, and it also tried to stun Zhang Yang with its {Goblin Pulse Rifle}. However, although the {Goblin Mortar Strike} could not be interrupted as it can be instantly activated, the {Goblin Pulse Rifle} had a 1-second chanting time, so it could be easily interrupted by a professional player in many ways!

{Crash Magic} can be used to instantly cancel the {Goblin Pulse Rifle}. The stun effect of the {Blast Wave}, {Brutal Smash}, and {Heroic Leap} can also interrupt the chanting of a Skill. Unless it is a boss that is naturally designed to be immune to interruptions, it

would just be a lame joke for any other normal Tier or elite Tier monsters to try to chant a Skill before Zhang Yang.

When the goblin's HP bar was down to about 10% left, the goblin was no longer showing any signs of arrogance on its face. Instead, it turned tail and fled in the opposite direction like a coward!

However, the 4-second stun effect of the {Blast Wave} was enough for Zhang Yang, Felice and Thunderhawk to deal at least 100,000 damage to the goblin and send it to its afterlife with ease.

Carrying on to the next target.

Zhang Yang threw another {Spear of Obliteration} at a second Goblin. This goblin had a {Goblin Defibrillator}, a Skill that is similar to some Skills of a Priest, or Knights that can actually resurrect a player. Thanks to game logic, even if the dead Goblin has had its heart ripped out or its skull smashed in, a simple shock would get them back to full fighting condition. Literally!

Even more annoying was the fact that killing those resurrected goblins will not reward the players with a single drop of experience points, or a single loot. What kind of logic is that!

Usually, players will suffer the same fate as Zhang Yang did right now because they would have no idea at all that killing the goblins in a group would give the goblins an opportunity to resurrect their fallen fellow goblins. Kill one group of goblins, and another group rises back from the dead. That is truly annoying!

Half an hour later, Zhang Yang had finally taken care of most of the goblins by the entrance of the mining cave. All that remained were the two elite Tier monsters standing by a tent that had been set up temporarily. However, Zhang Yang believed that these two elite monsters were just 'guards'. There should be another powerful goblin inside the tent.

Since these 'guards' are already elite Tier, then the goblin resting inside that tent must be a boss. The only question is, what Tier would this boss be?

If it is a Mythical boss, then Zhang Yang would not be able to slay the boss all by himself. But if it is just a Violet-Platinum Tier boss, then Zhang Yang can still depend on his {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from the battle and let Felice tank against the boss while activating her {Absolute Defense}, and he also can depend on using his ultimate god-slaying Skill, {Glare of the Death God}! He would still stand a chance at slaying the boss all by himself!

First, to identify the Tier of the boss. If it is a Mythical Tier boss, Zhang Yang would just hop on the Thunderhawk and fly away as swiftly as possible from the battlefield. He already fulfilled the criteria for completing the quest, there would be no reason for him to risk dying for nothing! But if it is a Violet-Platinum Tier boss, Zhang Yang would just take the boss down. After all, a 'free' boss is not to be missed!

He began by hurling his [Spear of Obliteration] at one of the monsters as usual. The goblin on the left was struck by the {Spear of Obliteration}. The two goblins have shared aggro vision, so both of them began to let out some weird roars and charged towards

Zhang Yang.

"You bunch of filthy shorties! Can't you just give me a rest already?" right after an annoyed grumble, a large and tall Blue-Skinned Orc came out of from the tent. Two large and sharp teeth bulged out from the folds of the Orc's lower lip, making it look very fierce and intimidating.

[Bermuly. Meryl Lynch] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 120

HP: 3,600,000

Defense: 2,120

Melee Attack: 9,222 - 13,222

Skills:

[Wind Walk]: Enters an invisible state. movement speed increased by 100%. Increases the damage of the next Skill by 200%. The effect will only last for 1 minute, or it will fade if the user does any other actions besides moving around.

[Storm Blades]: Swing your weapon around and attacks everything within melee range!

[Jumping Slash]: Melee Attack will have a 20% rate of triggering Critical Attacks.

Note: Blue-Skinned Orcs are one of the largest factions of the Orcs. They have the most influential power in Radiant Canyon. The Blue-Skinned Orcs love to intervene in the affairs of others. But because they have an extremely high battle power, no other Orcs dare to stand up and challenge them.

What the f\*ck! That was a Yellow-Gold boss!

Zhang Yang was extremely disappointed. Violet-Platinum equipment currently flood the market. It would already be a miracle for a Yellow-Gold Tier equipment to sell at anything above 1,000 gold! Although the drop rate for Yellow-Gold equipment wasn't really that high, players can basically farm for an endless amount of Yellow-Gold equipment from dungeons!

The Normal Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress would drop Level 100 - 110 Gray-Silver equipment, the Hard Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress would drop Level 100 - 110 Yellow-Gold equipment, and the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress would drop Level 100 - 110 Violet-Platinum equipment! As there are too many bosses in the Dragon Throat Fortress, along with the relatively easy first 5 bosses of the Dungeon in Normal Mode and Hard Mode, it is really so much easier for the players to farm for Yellow-Gold Tier equipment. Therefore, the level 100 Yellow-Gold equipment are definitely becoming the average standard for all players.

Of course, as the Hardcore Mode of that dungeon is insanely



difficult for players at the current stage of the game, it would still be impossible for them to clear the Hardcore Mode to farm for Violet-Platinum equipment! Therefore, only the Violet-Platinum Tier equipment can be sold at good prices for now. Unless those Level Yellow-God equipment are extremely rare necklaces, accessories, rings that cannot be found from boss drops, players would just dismantle the Yellow-Gold equipment into a bunch of [Runestones]!

The moment when Bermuly. Meryl Lynch took notice of Zhang Yang, he revealed a tired, bothered face. Bermuly. Meryl Lynch tugged the battle sword that hung over his back out and muttered, "I could have never expected a human to intervene in the affairs of the Orcs. Looks like you've run out of reasons to live!"

Shoof!

He did not even give Zhang Yang the chance to explain himself as he swung his battle sword and charged at Zhang Yang. Of course, it would actually be normal for the boss to charge right at players upon sight. Unless there is a drama mode going on, that's what bosses are for.

A Yellow-Gold boss can only show off their long amount of HP! Other than that, they are basically child's play to high Tiered players! Their normal attacks alone were already half of Zhang Yang's. The gap would only widen when Zhang Yang's Skills are activated. The boss was only called a boss at this point, due to their HP. It was the only thing worth mentioning.

The {Inheritance Transformation} can make a player so powerful

as the Skill itself can boost the HP of a player by game-breaking amounts! For instant, a Class S [Inheritance] only boosts a player's Attack by a multiplication of 5, but it can boost a player's Maximum HP up by 40 times! It would turn a player into a boss! That would create a real pain in the \*ss for the players who haven't acquired [Inheritances]!

Zhang Yang met the boss without any sense of fear. With the shield in his hand swinging out, Zhang Yang bashed the boss with a solid hit and pushed the boss backward!

Zhang Yang could not help but felt shocked himself. Initially, the Titan Armor Set that he was wearing should logically was not on par with the Strength of a Level 120 Yellow-Gold boss. However, after he rolled in a few pieces of Mythical Tier equipment to replace some of his Titan Armor Set pieces, Zhang Yang's Strength had actually increased up to the point that he could now suppress a Yellow-God boss! He was not even aware of this fact himself!

This would make things really easy now. Having the advantage in his Strength, he could now fully unleash the potential of his 'Supporting Attacks', suppressing the boss to the point that the boss could not do anything at all!

As he was engaging the boss, Zhang Yang did not forget to turn around and smack the two goblins around as well. With his shield in his hand, he kept the boss and the two goblins occupied with bashes, slams, shoves, sweeps of the legs, and kicks. The two goblins could not do a thing, crying out loud miserably while being 'toyed' around by Zhang Yang. Meanwhile, the attack combination of Zhang Yang, Felice, and Thunderhawk was so powerful that it

took them less than a minute to bring the HP bar of the boss down to 50%!

"My lord Bermuly. Meryl Lynch, I think we should scram now!" Although Zhang Yang's assaults were well focused on the boss, the two goblins were also receiving damage from the AoE attack of Zhang Yang. Even though they only lost a small amount of HP, goblins are creatures that feared death. So when they saw the powerful Orc being beaten down, they began to raise the notion of retreat.

The Blue-Skinned Orc let out a cry of rage as he began to swing his sword more swiftly than ever and hacked at Zhang Yang's shield in vain, "I am an Orc! I am not a filthy little goblin that can't face death in the face! There will always be the Orc who falls in battle, never an Orc who runs from the battle!"

After that, Bermuly. Meryl Lynch became an Orc who fell in battle! Within two minutes, the combination attacks of Zhang Yang, Felice and Thunderhawk had emptied out Bermuly. Meryl Lynch's HP bar. The boss let out a miserable cry and collapsed to the ground. Upon his death, the boss dropped quite a few pieces of equipment that glittered gold. However, Zhang Yang showed no interest at all.

The moment when the boss died, the two goblins quickly turned around and ran away. Zhang Yang hopped onto Thunderhawk and began to pursue one of the goblins. After making quick work of it, Zhang Yang rode Thunderhawk and flew around the map, finding the second Goblin hiding among the trees. He slaughtered it as well. Not a single Goblin was left alive in the cave.

Zhang Yang was not willing to give up on the hope that he still had a chance of stumbling upon the [Light of Miracle] that he needs for his quest. He wandered about the mining cave, trying to see if there were any. But Zhang Yang had no idea at all on how a [Light of Miracle] looks like, so how would he know one if it was dangling right in front of it? So, after he went for a spin in the mining cave, he had no choice but to return to the campsite of the Red-Skinned Orcs, empty-handed to report back to Roger Kluge. Hellscream.

"That's quite a surprise you gave me back there, human!" Roger Kluge looked at Zhang Yang with surprise, then he said, "I have just received news from the guards that I stationed in the mining cave. They informed me that you actually took out every single one of the goblins! Hahaha! Although those are just some weak goblins, you have convinced me of your sincerity!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Teach the Goblins a Lesson, acquired 1,000,000 experience points. You have slain a total of 82 goblins and 1 Orc Captain. Your Relationship with Roger Kluge has grown stronger by an additional 1,020 points!’

So it's another ‘relationship’! Am I getting into a homosexual one this time?

Zhang Yang laughed a little, then he said, "I believe that the brave Red-Skinned Orcs can also accomplish it without any problem!"

"Hahaha!" Roger Kluge laughed heartily, and continued to speak, "Your bravery reminds me of my younger self! Very well! I was not going to give you another quest if you did a half-\*ss job about it. But, you have proved me wrong! So now, I truly believe that you will definitely be able to complete this upcoming quest!"

If players only killed about 20 goblins just to fulfill the criteria of the quest and reported back to Roger Kluge, then they would only be completing the basic criteria of the quest. By then, Roger Kluge would not have even bothered mentioning anything else, other than rewarding the players and sending them on their way. Only by killing more goblins, would Roger Kluge be impressed enough to continue giving them quests.

Zhang yang nodded and asked, "Chieftain, what more good can I do for your fellow Orcs?"

"Hmm... I need you to enter the goblin's campsite and take out their second-in-command, Guitteny. That is the worm who tipped the balance that the Blue-Skinned Orcs had with us! If he is dead, then the goblins should go silent for a bit!" Roger Kluge raised a hand up to stop Zhang Yang from speaking up, and then he continued to explain, "Rest assured, I'm not going to send you in to die! Take these, I am entrusting you my ultimate Magic Scrolls. They would allow you to use a magic called, 'Wind Walk'. You can use these to enter into the heart of the goblin campsite without being spotted and plant the poison into Guitteny's 'Honey Pot'!"

'Ding! Roger Kluge. Hellscream has a quest for you: Poison em up! Will you accept it?'

Accept.

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] X 2!’

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: [Colorless and odorless Poison] X 1!’

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: [Indication Map on Goblins’ Campsite] X 1!’

Zhang Yang realized that a bottle, two [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk], and one Map appeared in his inventory. The bottle would be the poison that he would be using to complete the quest, so there was nothing special about it. Then, he took out the [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] to examine them.

[Magic Scroll: Wind Walk]: You will acquire the Wind Walk effect, entering an invisible state. Movement speed increases by 100%. The damage of your next Skill will increase by 200%. The

effect will only last for 10 minutes, or it will fade away if the user does any actions other than moving around. Cooldown: 10 minutes

Note: Roger Kluge. Hellscream made this himself.

Zhang Yang could not help but to palpitate with excitement, thinking that if he had unlimited [Magic Scrolls: Wind Walk] for himself, it would be like obtaining a new skill permanently. A new skill that would turn him into an invisible Guardian who holds the destructive power of a Berserker and the elusiveness of a Thief. Unfortunately, the quest only rewarded Zhang Yang with two pieces of [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk]. Zhang Yang surmised that one was for him to infiltrate the goblin's campsite, and the other is for him to escape from any possible difficult situation.

Under the normal circumstance, players must use up both of the [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] in order to successfully 'plant' the poison deep in the campsite. However, there are also players with specific Classes that can complete the quest without using the [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] that they acquire from the NPC --- for instance, Thieves. They can probably enter their Stealth Mode and infiltrate the enemy's campsite and 'plant' the poison at the right spot, then get out of the campsite without being spotted. By doing so, they will be able to earn two extra [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] for their own usage!

Although Zhang Yang did not have the Skill {Stealth}, he had something similar --- {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void}!

Very well, here's a chance to earn two [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] after all. It would be very handy for players to use them and

assassinate their enemies! {Invisibility} and {Stealth} are two different things. {Stealth} would only be effective at a certain distance from the enemy. Get close enough, and they would no longer be in {Stealth}. But things are different for {Invisibility}. There is not specific way to reveal the caster as of now. Even if the caster is standing 1 inch right before the player, making funny faces like a mime, nobody will ever know!

Following the directions of the quest, Zhang Yang rode Thunderhawk and traveled over to the campsite of the goblins.

These creatures try really hard to make up for their poor physical traits via the research and usage of 'Technology'. Their buildings clearly showed that. Each of the buildings was built with metallic materials in the shapes of cogs. The cogs are constantly spinning, making some really annoying mechanical sounds that made people wonder, how could the goblins ever get a peaceful night's sleep!



# Chapter 543: Heavily Fortified Goblin Campsite

---

This mechanical city was a little smaller than the campsite of the Orcs, but they made up for that by sheer height. The buildings here are at least five-stories to eight-stories tall, made by layers after layers of gears and cogs. To locate for a specific monster in such a complex place was not exactly like looking for a needle in a haystack, but it would be a tall order, nonetheless!

Fortunately for Zhang Yang, he was provided with a map. He quickly took the map out to take a look at it. He saw a skull drawn on the left upper corner of the map. That must be where the target is.

Zhang Yang activated {Burrow} and began to move northeast. As his movement speed is halved when {Burrow} is activated, Zhang Yang made so progress. It took quite a while for him to reach beneath the building where his 'target' was.

It made sense for this quest to provide every player with [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk]. The goblins are afraid to die, and the ones who carry ranks would be even more afraid to die! There were many elite Tier goblin guards in every corner of the building, and Zhang Yang could not simply use his {Burrow} to get to the top floor of the building. He was left with two choices: One, use the [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] to get to the top floor; Two, kill everything and charge straight to the top floor.

Zhang Yang was really determined to keep his [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] for his own use in the future, so he had made up his

mind to slaughter everything in his way to open up a way to the top floor of the building.

After observing the whereabouts of the goblins in the area, Zhang Yang began to sneak out from his hiding spot towards the entrance of the building. He used the blind spots of the goblins to avoid detection. Then he summoned Felice and Thunderhawk out. However, the size of this building is built according to the size of the goblins. Zhang Yang had to bend over his back in order to move around in the building, meanwhile, Thunderhawk had to hunker down just to be able to move forward. It was extremely inconvenient for them.

Under such circumstances, it would also be difficult for Zhang Yang to wield his weapon around freely, or even use his 'Supporting Attacks' for the moment.

Therefore, Zhang Yang was being extremely cautious. If he ever encounters 3 of the goblins at the same time, he might not be able to handle the situation, and he might even be forced to activate his {Radiance of the God of War}! Also, the {Radiance of the God of War} was not the same as the {Berserker's Heal} which only had a 2-minute cooldown. The {Radiance of the God of War} can only be used again after 30 minutes, turning it into a very high Tier life saving Skill, instead of a regular Skill that can be used throughout an entire battle!

With his {Spear of Obliteration}, Zhang Yang attracted one goblin over and engaged it in battle. But this goblin is a Hunter type monster. It raised its firearm and aimed the muzzle straight at Zhang Yang. Without even taking a step, it started firing away.

Zhang Yang quickly dodged and hid behind a pillar, forcing the monster to come over to him.

If the enemy was a player, of course, the player would not be 'tricked' so easily. Even if the player would no longer be able to see its target, the player would still go around the pillar, maintaining a large distance. As a Hunter, the most important thing in a battle is maintaining their distance. Instead, this little green goblin let out a weird cry as it charged at Zhang Yang.

"Intruder! There is an intruder in the premises!" battling against an enemy all alone is not the style of the goblin. So the goblin was shouting out loud to alert its other little green friends.

For players, the only way to get the aggro of a monster is to enter the aggro range of the monster. It wouldn't actually matter how loud the player shouts, the monsters will not be able to hear the player and would completely ignore them. However, monsters shouting at each other was another matter. If anyone of the monsters shouts, the others that are nearby will be able to pick up the 'signal' and get attracted over to the monster that is shouting.

Instantly, 7 other goblins came towards Zhang Yang, brandishing their firearms. Fortunately, these monsters did not shout out, or else, it would start a domino effect of more and more Goblins being alerted! Things would definitely be out of hands for Zhang Yang!

Such cowards!

The first goblin to shout had now earned Zhang Yang's intense ire. But things had already escalated to such an extent, so Zhang Yang could only choose on whether to activate his {Shadow of the Void} to escape, or to stay and fight!

He took up his shield and tightened his grip on the shield strap. The terrain of this area was very suitable for Zhang Yang to block out the monsters with obstacles, causing the Hunter goblins to come near him and engage him in melee combat. Well, the Melee Attack of the Hunter goblins are far weaker than their Ranged Attacks, after all. So Zhang Yang had no reason to worry about getting slaughtered up by these 8 goblins.

Although it was really easy to use the terrain of the area to lure the Hunter type monsters to him, moving around with his back bent over was another problem. Zhang Yang was soon surrounded by the 8 goblins and they began to pummel him. As he sustained the assaults from the goblins, fortunately, Felice and Thunderhawk were there to share his burden. The two of them took on one goblin each, decreasing his workload.

Zhang Yang has {Shield Wall} which can recover 75% HP, Felice has {Absolute Defense}, while Thunderhawk has {Wild Recovery} and {Madness} to heal themselves up. They actually managed to hold their ground against these 8 elite Tier goblins! 6 minutes later, the 8 goblins all lay dead on the ground. Although the goblins have {Goblin Defibrillator} to revive themselves once, the resurrected goblins would only come back with 20% HP. So, it wouldn't be a problem for Zhang Yang to slay them once again.

After clearing out that wave of goblins, Zhang Yang realized that

he had cleared out all the guards of this floor.

Following down the narrow path, Zhang Yang felt like a little doggy crawling through a the flap in doors meant for dogs. That really had Zhang Yang cursing and making himself a promise that he would never set foot in the campsite of the goblins again!

On the second floor, there were another 8 elite Tier goblins scouting around. Zhang Yang repeated what he did on the first floor and he began to use the narrow entrance of the stairwells to get out of their line of fire. The surrounding space was really narrow for Zhang Yang, but was rather large and comfortable for the skinny and short goblins. Four of them could actually attack Zhang Yang at the same time.

Despite that, it was enough for Zhang Yang and Thunderhawk to block the goblins as Felice transformed into her Dragonhawk Form and attack them behind their safety line. As Felice's {Absolute Defense} had a cooldown period of 12 hours, she was now limited to her flying, mobile cannon form.

They took out the goblins with ease and it was a brief battle. After that, they went on to the third floor, the fourth floor to repeat the same process. Half an hour later, Zhang Yang arrived at the top floor of the building.

Compared to the floors below, the seventh floor was far more spacious and adorned with a grand decor. There are quite an abundance of silk and satin used in decorating the floor. Every single furniture on the floor was highly stylized. However, the clanking between the machines would be the only reason for this

place to be unsuitable for a boss Tier monster to live in. Excluding the goblins, of course. This place was more like a factory than a room.

Well, goblins are basically the bumpkins in {{God's Miracle}}, so they would still look like a bunch of side characters even though they were wearing high-class robes.

However, Zhang Yang did not see any signs of a boss on that floor.

He thought about it and it clicked. 'Poison em up!' was basically a quest that requires players to complete it in stealth. Even players are using the [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk], would be forced out of stealth when they begin to poison the targeted 'Pot of Honey'. If the boss is there to witness the players doing it, would the boss be stupid enough to still chug the entire thing down to its stomach?

Furthermore, Goblins are infamous for their cowardice. Therefore, the game developer decided to make things simpler by removing the boss from the scene.

Zhang Yang located the 'Pot of Honey' almost immediately. It was a quest objective, anyway. Any player who has accepted the quest will be able to see that 'Pot of Honey' flashing about like a beacon. He took out the bottle of poison from his inventory and poured the liquid in.

The moment Zhang Yang placed the 'Pot of Honey' down, he heard footsteps. Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Shadow of the

Void} and entered the dimension of the void. Then, he quickly ran downstairs. 20 seconds later, Zhang Yang got out of the void as his {Shadow of the Void} faded away. He revealed himself on the fifth floor. Then he began to walk carefully towards the stairs leading down to the lower floor. Turning his head over to the side, he saw a goblin with the name - 'Guitteny' sitting in a chair like a boss. There were also 12 elite Tier goblins standing behind it. On top of the table right before Guitteny, there was a cup and the 'Pot of Honey'. Zhang Yang recognized that pot immediately. That was the pot that he had just poisoned. Looks like the boss isn't far from death now.

Guitteny is a Level 125 Mythical Tier boss and had a small troop of elite Tier goblins by his side. So Zhang Yang would not be able to solo the boss without his {God of War Transformation}. However, the quest did not need him to kill the boss. All Zhang Yang needed to do was to poison the honey, let the boss take the honey and drop dead!

"Argh! Cough! Cough! Cough!" Guitteny suddenly grabbed its own neck as it began to tense up a little. It's eyes were almost popped as it was pointing its finger at the goblin soldiers. However, Guitteny could not even pronounce a word. After writhing about, Guitteny collapsed onto the ground and died.

Those goblins were looking at each other as it was happening. The moment they realized that their boss was dead, they suddenly screamed as they made their way out of the door.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang activated his {Rearm} to reset the cooldown period for {Shadow of the Void}, and then he

reentered the void again before making his way out of the campsite to make sure that he does not stumble across some goblins! However, after he entered the void, Zhang Yang did not leave the scene immediately. He wanted to check on any loot that the boss might have dropped. But, the game system was not that generous. So, the boss did not drop anything.

Beggars can't be choosers!

After shaking his head, Zhang Yang went down to the ground floor and activated {Burrow}. Then, he made his way out of the goblin's campsite and broke out of the ground once he was outside the campsite. Zhang Yang summoned his Thunderhawk, and they left immediately.

Zhang Yang met up with the Chieftan back at the campsite of the Red-Skinned Orcs.

"Warrior, are you sure that you are a pure-blooded human?" Roger Kluge could no longer conceal his surprise beneath his calm facial expression anymore as he pointed his finger at Zhang Yang and said, "Only the great Orcs of our species can breed out such excellent warriors! Are you sure that your father is not one of the great Orcs like us?"

What the hell, man!

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes at the Chieftain, but he knew that this elder Orc was actually praising him in his own Orcish way. Still, those word were a little hard to accept!



Roger Kluge then talked about lots of unrelated things before he finally went to the main point, "So, my brave human. The death of Guitteny should have shaken up the entire tribe of the goblins, serving as a warning to them. They should now be reminded that we are not to be trifled with. I have just received news from the goblins that they are giving up on taking over the Miracle Mining Cave. They will honor and respect our proprietorship over the Miracle Mining Cave! However, the Blue-Skinned Orcs will not just stand by aside and let us mine as we please. They will never give us any chance to grow stronger than them and take over the top!"

He let out a sigh before he continued, "Those bastards have put a large number of Blood Spider's eggs inside the mining cave, and now the eggs are hatching! They are wreaking havoc in the mining cave as we speak! I have sent warriors over to destroy the Blood Spider's nest. So my brave human, are you willing to aid us any further on this?"

‘Ding! Roger Kluge has a quest for you: Exterminate the Blood Spiders. Will you accept it?’

"Very well indeed!" Roger Kluge was nodding with relief, and then he turned his head back to Zhang Yang and said, "Hehe, I am very certain now. Your ancestor must be an Orc!"

Zhang Yang, "..."

[Exterminate the Blood Spider] (Difficulty: A-rank)

Description: Roger Kluge wants you to go over to the Miracle Mining Cave, slay 20 Blood Spiders, and slay the leader of the Blood Spider, the Blood Spider King to eliminate all threats in the cave! Warrior, the Blood Spiders are not to be trifled with! Don't go alone, or else you might just end up as one of their delicious meals!

Completion: Kill Blood Spider King 0/1, Kill Blood Spider 0/20

Quest reward: Heaven Armor Chest Plate, Bone Soul Robe, Fire Leopard Leather Chest Plate, Light of Miracle. Choose one among four.

Crying with tears all over his face, Zhang Yang has finally found what he was looking for after all this time! The [Light of Miracle] had finally revealed itself!

# Chapter 544: The Appearance of the First Player with a Class A Inheritance

---

The objective of the quest would be very obvious. Zhang Yang did not say anything unnecessary. Immediately, he hopped onto the back of Thunderhawk and once again headed over to the Miracle Mining Cave.

After flying about for a brief while, Zhang Yang arrived back at the entrance of the mining cave. The Goblin-Orc standoff was no longer there. Instead, there was a small-scale defense facility built by the entrance of the mining cave. There was a row of Orcs, most probably about 20 elite Tier Orcs, standing behind a wooden wall that had spikes all over it. Meanwhile, there were also giant spiders, with scarlet red linings on their backs, coming straight out from the mining cave, one after another, and they would attack the Orcs right outside the cave.

Zhang Yang could not help but frown. It was just about half a day of in-game time after everything that he has gone through. Well, let's see. First, Zhang Yang wiped out a troop of goblins by the entrance of the mining cave, then he went on over to the goblin campsite to poison their leader, and then he went back to see the Chieftain to accept this quest before getting here. How the hell did it get to this! Didn't the Chieftain told Zhang Yang that those were just freshly hatched eggs? Well, these are no ordinary baby spiders then, these are more like gigantic spider monsters!

Zhang Yang hopped off from the back of Thunderhawk and stopped by the wooden wall. When the Orcs caught sight of Zhang Yang's presence, looks of admiration and respect were expressed

on their faces. Everyone was saying, "Hey, human! Great job on the goblin's campsite!"

"That's really brave of you! You're already on par with me!"

"Human, are you sure your father, or your grandfather, or your great grandfather does not have the blood of the great Orcs?"

What the hell! Here it goes again! Zhang Yang could not accept the 'praise' that these Orcs had for him! He quickly said, "So how's the situation down there in the mines?"

"Worse than the gas that my grandma has!" an Orc spat and said, "The Blue-Skinned Orcs are really bad eggs. They actually planted a massive number of Blood Spider's eggs within the Miracle Mining Cave! The worse part about this is that these Blood Spiders will grow and breed rapidly as long as they consume enough fresh blood. Now, the Miracle Mining cave has become the lair of the Blood Spiders! Talk about taking back the mines, we can barely hold ourselves against the hordes of Blood Spiders from getting out by the entrance of the mining cave!"

"Curse those foul Blue-Skinned Orcs! I say that their ancestors must have been f\*cked by some cunning fox! That's why their descendants are so cunning! They are a disgrace to the Orcs!"

No wonder this quest is ranked as an A-rank quest. The Blood Spider King must be located in the deepest part of the mining cave. Players would have to battle against countless waves of Blood Spiders before reaching the boss. Furthermore, the narrow space

of the mining cave provided little space for the party members to spread out into formations. At most, only 10 to 30 players may be able to form a front row capable of facing the boss at any single instance. The lack of space for maneuvering and the small numbers would make fighting the boss all the more perilous.

Zhang Yang nodded, then he walked into the mining cave with bold, large steps as the Orcs gazed at his back with admiring looks on their faces. Their sense of recognizing Zhang Yang as one of their own had grown stronger than ever, believing that he has the blood of a noble Orc surging through his veins!

The second Zhang Yang set foot in the mining cave, a spider with the size of a calf lurked out of the corner of the cave and came up to Zhang Yang. The entire body of the spider was black, from the tips of its fangs to the end of its eight legs. Blood red stripes lined its back, similar to how blood vessels run along the skin of a living being. The fearsome combination of red and black was a mixture of disgust and horror.

The legs of the spiders were no less deadly than an actual spears. If their legs were straightened out, they would be facing the Thunderhawk at eye-level. Such was the magnitude of their height.

[Starving Blood Spider] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Magic Attack: 5,082 - 6,082

Skills:

[Spider Venom Spit]: Spits spider venom at the target, causing 150% Magic Attack of Nature Damage to the target. Instant activation. Cooldown: 2 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

[Web Entanglement]: Entangles the target with sticky spider webs, causing the target to be entangled on the spot, lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: Brutal, bloodthirsty creatures. As long as they feed on enough fresh blood, they can grow swiftly. They are merciless and cold-blooded. They have sworn to purge their enemies and prey.

The moment the Blood Spider detected the presence of Zhang Yang, it began to blink its large eyes and raised its body slightly above the ground. A projectile in the form of greenish venom was fired out from the spot below its belly button at Zhang Yang without any sign of warning.

‘-4,297!’

A red numerical value popped right on top of Zhang Yang.

Although the amount of damage he received was not much, however, Zhang Yang found himself completely drenched in the vile liquid, putting him in an awkward predicament. If Fatty Han had ever seen Zhang Yang in such a state, he would definitely be laughing at Zhang Yang for being ‘sprayed’ on!

Zhang Yang could not help but to let out a sigh. It would seem that the monsters in the mining cave are equipped with venomous projectile types of attacks! So, Zhang Yang is destined to be ‘facialised’ until he hits his climax!

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang clashed into the Blood Spider with the impact of a lightning bolt. Raising his [Heaven Shaker] high into the air, Zhang Yang gave a good smash to the spider’s head. Felice and Thunderhawk were not just bystanders, they were also casting their own skills.

"Zhang Yang, I’ve just received news that the Europe Region has slain a Level 150 Ethereal boss!" just when Zhang Yang was sunk in the satisfaction of whacking the Blood Spider up, he received an unexpected message from Hundred Shots in the form of a voice message.

"Hmm?" Zhang Yang could not help but to frown slightly. For players at the current stage of the game, Ethereal Tier bosses are beings that exist on a whole different level. They commanded so much respect and fear, beyond anything else in the realm, that it would be unfathomable to even think about challenging them. Zhang Yang would be able to hold his own against the boss, thanks

to his [God of War Transformation], but that would raise the question to another problem. Would his durability be matched by the total DpS of the others? Would there be enough players and enough firepower to slay the boss within the 2 hours that he could buy them?

The other question that must not be ignored lay within the level of the players at the current stage of the game. Level 150 Ethereal Tier bosses are usually located within Level 120 - 150 maps. The players at the current stage of the game were beginning to pop through the level cap of Level 100. If these players travel over to those high-level maps, they will definitely become homing signals that invite monsters from all over the map to come and whack their \*sses!

Under such circumstances, it would proved too troublesome to to bring a large number of players over to the location of this boss. It was not impossible, but a great amount of money and time would be burnt over such efforts. Meanwhile, the gateway to the Chaos Realm had just been unlocked not too long ago, and the race to the 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress had turned into a raging inferno. So, who would spare their precious time in battling a boss that had nothing to do with them at the moment?

After all, there wouldn't be the slightest benefit gained from slaying an Ethereal Tier boss at the time like this. Furthermore, even if the reduction of 20 Levels were accounted for, players will also have to wait until they hit Level 130 before they can actually put on the equipment that they acquire from the drops upon killing the Ethereal Tier boss! Such act will not assist in the progression of acquiring the 'First Clear' of a dungeon in any way!



"The Europe Region had mobilized every single player above Level 100 to the boss battle! A total amount of 70,000 players were involved. Rumor has it that they had used two [Forbidden Scrolls] as well! They spent a full day just to get the job done!" Hundred Shots was very eager to report the details he found to Zhang Yang.

Two [Forbidden Scrolls]?

Zhang Yang felt a jolt in his heart. So who exactly was the one who so generously spent two [Forbidden Scrolls] and 'hired' all the Europe players who have exceeded Level 100 to slay a 'valueless' boss! Furthermore, the glory of acquiring the 'First Clear' for an Ethereal boss had been claimed Lone Desert Smoke awhile ago, so why were they still so eager to do it?

"Are they trying to acquire some sort of [Inheritance] Class?" Zhang Yang asked out of his own convenience. There aren't many idiots in this world. So there is but one possibility that lay within that reason.

"Well, rumor also said that they were aiming for a Class A [Inheritance], an [Inheritance] by the name of [Blood Angel Inheritance]!" Hundred Shots sighed as he continued to speak, "Two [Forbidden Scrolls] were used! And they used those scrolls just to take on a boss! Two of them were called the [Forbidden Scroll: Absolute Lethargy]! It can reduce the Attack of the boss by 70%, and the effects last for as long as 10 hours! Without these two scrolls, I believe they wouldn't have stand a chance against the boss, even if they keep on running back to their corpses!"

"That being said, a player with [Blood Angel Inheritance] was born?" Zhang Yang took a deep breath after his mind crossed that thought. Although he has a Class S [God of War Inheritance], Zhang Yang would never have dare to underestimate any player who possesses an {Inheritance Transformation} Skill --- the reason is simple, Zhang Yang cannot just 'transform' whenever he wants to. For instance, his {God of War Transformation} was currently under a cooldown period. Even if one player with Class A [Inheritance], or Class B [Inheritance], or even a Class C [Inheritance] pops up, Zhang Yang might be obliterated!

"That's right! Nothing has been calm ever since we entered the Chaos Realm! And now, the tide has changed, players without [Inheritances] wouldn't stand a chance against players with [Inheritances]!" Hundred Shots shook his head as he sighed.

What he didn't know is that he will be the powerful Hunter that would dominate all others thanks to the Red Dragon pet. Any player with a Class A [Inheritance] would have to activate their {Inheritance Transformation} in order to be equal to his Strength. However, heaven's secrets must not be divulged, so Zhang Yang had to keep his mouth shut. Furthermore, the 'destiny' that lay before Hundred Shots might have greatly deviated, thanks to Zhang Yang's intervention. It remains a question if Hundred Shot would still be the one possessing that Red Dragon pet.

Right after passing the message to Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots ended the conversation with him. As a personal request from Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots had also stepped down as the commander on the front lines, especially in clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. He started to avoid training with his regular party - an attempt to allow most of history to

repeat its course - the course that he remembered and knew from his past life. This is to prevent Hundred Shots from being taken off track, denying him the opportunity to rise to the Hundred Shots that he remembered. By avoiding contact with him for that period of time, Hundred Shots should be able to take the same path that he had taken from before - without Zhang Yang's intervention getting in the way.

Zhang Yang went back to slaughtering up the Blood Spiders that came at him as he took them out with his [Heaven Shaker], one swing after another. Of course, Zhang Yang was entirely drenched in the venom liquid from head to toe! If he was a little shorter in height, he wouldn't be needing any makeup to disguise himself as a goblin!

Having smashed spiders mechanically for half a day, Zhang Yang was no longer keeping count. However, judging by the fact that as a level 105 player, his experience bar was now filled up to 86%, so he had to have smashed more than a hundred of them by now. Zhang Yang would probably be crossing on to the starting line of Level 106, in another 3 days of in-game time. Leveling up seems to be so difficult these days!

Just when he was sighing on, Zhang Yang caught a glimpse of an elongated shadow beneath his footsteps. The shadow began to extend into a long shadow on the wall.

He quickly turned his head around, towards the direction where the shadow came from. On both sides of the wall in the mining cave, there was a scourging torch on the walls by each section of the path. These torches were not too far away from each other, and

yet not near to each other as well. With the fainting light that came from the torches nearby, Zhang Yang could vaguely see the true form of the 'thing' that lurked behind his back --- it was not a monster, but a foreign babe with blonde hair and a super hot body!

Of course, even an African player can set up their avatar in the game as a Snow White Princess. However, Zhang Yang could recognize her as a player from Europe Region, because she had an obvious annotation saying - 'Europe Region' on the top of her head!

Dusk Phoenix!

It was that little hot 'chilli' again!

Dusk Phoenix was wearing a set of leather armor that wrapped around her body tightly, exposing her sexy hot body figure completely, especially the two round and prideful 'peaks' right on her chest! That curvy body really did a splendid job of demonstrating the unique bodies that European and American women would have. With that kind of waist curvature that boomed out with a set of 'outstanding' buttocks, this woman really would harden specific parts of men by simply standing before them!

Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder. Previously, questions were raised in his mind on how Dusk Phoenix could locate him as he almost got ambushed by her. How did she actually track him down? And now, she had once again tracked him all the way down to a hidden mining cave, and located his exact location! Zhang Yang was very positive that either this woman had a way with the

system, or she must have some sort of previous 'treasure' that can reveal the tracks and whereabouts of a specific player!

But one must be wondering, why would this woman reveal herself out in the open, like this? Shouldn't she be covering her tracks a little more vigilantly?

"Zhan Yu ---" the moment Dusk Phoenix laid eyes upon Zhang Yang's face, she flashed her teeth viciously, and her eyes turned murderous all of a sudden.

"Hey!" Zhang Yang waved at her cheerfully as he greeted her. However, his gesture only enraged Dusk Phoenix more than ever, "So you can't get me off your mind? I'm sorry, I already have someone else in my heart! Although I would like to make my country proud by dating a foreign girl, I would like to avoid being cursed upon by the others. All I can say is, it is already too late for us to give it a try!"

# Chapter 545: The Return of Dusk Phoenix

---

After listening to a bunch of crap that he threw at her, Dusk Phoenix's face turned ash-white. As she was overwhelmed with shame and vexation, she shouted out loud at Zhang Yang, "Shut up!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud, and suddenly got back to the main topic, "Out of boredom, perhaps you're just here to admire my beauty as I killed monsters?"

"You ---" Dusk Phoenix was on the verge of popping her vein. Ridiculing her and blaming her for being bored right after that? Dusk Phoenix was completely pissed off! This sexy girl could not stand feeling so vulnerable before Zhang Yang. Her image of being noble and elegant would be shattered by Zhang Yang every time they happened to bump into each other! She truly felt like murdering Zhang Yang every time she looked at that goofy smile on Zhang Yang's face!

She took a deep breath in an attempt to cool herself down, and reverted back to her cool, deadly poker face, "Zhan Yu, I am going to make you squeal like a pig today, and make your face end up like one as well!" She smiled confidently as she continued to speak, "I have already switched on the recording function of the game! Your defeat shall be shown to the public, let them gaze upon your pathetic face when I step on your dead body! Let them see that the world's number one Tanker is just a pig who snorts way too much!"

It seemed as if she was extremely sure of her victory!

Zhang Yang suddenly frowned and said, "So, you are the player from Europe Region that did the quest for the Class A [Inheritance]."

Dusk Phoenix was a little shocked, but she did not deny it. "That's right! I have just recently acquired the [Blood Angel Inheritance]! So I can 'transform' myself into a 'Blood Angel'! As for you, correct me if I'm wrong, it hasn't been two days yet ever since that battle at Winst Castle. So I am sure that your {Inheritance Transformation} Skill is still under cooldown! Zhan Yu, you have been bullying me over and over again! Today will be the day things turn around!"

Oh my... what a violent girl.

Felice came forward and said, "Despicable! If you're really as good as you claim yourself to be, fight my big brother on equal grounds then!"

Dusk Phoenix did not waste her breath further as she immediately activated her {Blood Angel Transformation}. In just an instant, her body began to radiate with the colour of blood as a pair of wings spread open into the surroundings. Each of her wings were about 3 meters long. However, they seemed to be ghostly and intangible as they went right through the walls!

As her wings fluttered, her sexy hot body began to float into the air!

Zhang Yang narrowed his eyebrows a little, sensing danger!

Class C [Inheritances] like the ones that Musashi Ousama and Shuro Ousama have acquired do not provide players the ability to fly in the air. Even the Class B [Vampire Inheritance] that Fatty Han has acquired does not provide Fatty Han the ability to fly freely when he ‘transforms’! In order for Fatty Han to fly, he must first activate his {Bat’s Voyage} while he’s in his ‘transformed’ form! Even then, he would only gain the ability to fly for a brief moment!

Furthermore, it drains the Energy Bar for his [Inheritance]! Also, the Skill itself had a very long cooldown!

However, Zhang Yang could fly freely in the air without any restrictions. Although he still has the disadvantage of not being able to mount onto any [Mount], he could fly freely in the air at no cost whatsoever.

Zhang Yang had actually believed that the ability to fly freely in the air was an exclusive function that only players who have Class S [Inheritances] would enjoy. Apparently, his idea was proven wrong by Dusk Phoenix. It seems that there are also some Class A [Inheritance] that provides players the flying ability! Zhang Yang was looking at it with his own eyes. As Dusk Phoenix had just entered her ‘transformation’ form, she should start with 0 EP value. Since that she can flying around without the need to consume any EP, it is pretty obvious that this is a special effect that she gets when she activates her {Blood Angel Transformation}!

As they were currently indoors, the outcome of this battle



between Zhang Yang and Dusk Phoenix would depend on their speed! However, Dusk Phoenix was now about 10 times faster than Zhang Yang!

Dusk Phoenix would not pass on this opportunity, as she had been defeated and humiliated badly by Zhang Yang in their previous encounter. She would definitely take her sweet revenge on Zhang Yang this time, as she now had the advantage over Zhang Yang! It was going to be sweet, and she wouldn't mind it turning cold. Since the duration of her {Blood Angel Transformation} would last for 2 hours, Dusk Phoenix had plenty of time to play around with Zhang Yang!

"Zhan Yu, look closely at my attributes now!" She did it as a means of intimidating Zhang Yang as she posted her attributes onto the chat without a second thought!

[Player: Dusk Phoenix]

Level: 102

HP: 1,878,920

Defense: 1,008

Attack: Primary: 27,580 - 35,580 (Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds, DPS: 11,280), Secondary: 24,196 - 32,196 (Attack Interval: 2.5 seconds, DPS: 11,280)

Although her Attack was still no match to Zhang Yang when he activates his {God of War Transformation}, that amount of damage would be enough for her get her job done! Furthermore, Thief Class players use one-handed weapons, so it would be very normal for them not to have a high damage output. However, by adding in the damage of her secondary weapon into her total damage output, the DPS of Dusk Phoenix was nearing the amount of DPS that Zhang Yang had when he was in his {God of War Transformation} mode!

However, Zhang Yang was currently equipped with a Level 120 Mythical Tier weapon. With some quick calculations, Dusk Phoenix should only be holding two Yellow-Gold Tier weapons in each of her hands. That being said, she still had so much room for improvement in terms of her damage output when she gets her hands on higher Tiered weapons and equipment! So this was what the players are fuzzing about, the so-called 'bug' of Thief Classes!

Of course, because the attack speed of one-handed weapons are faster, they would be more easily affected by Defense, causing less effective damage on targets. However, that disadvantage could be made up for if players use Skills like {Eagle Eye}. If this woman is capable of rallying all the high Tiered players from the Europe Region to her cause, and could casually spend two [Forbidden Scrolls] without batting an eye, getting a [Skillbook: Eagle Eye] would be as easy as breathing for her!

But Class A [Inheritances] are one Class lower than Class S [Inheritances,] after all. So it made perfect for a small gap between the functionality and practicality of Class A [Inheritance] and Class S [Inheritance]. Merely a 30 times multiplication for the Maximum HP, without the ability to hold a shield in hand, due to her class

limitation really did reduce the intimidation that Dusk Phoenix attempted to wrought upon Zhang Yang. Without a shield that augments her with more vitality points, the total amount of HP that Dusk Phoenix did not really terrify Zhang Yang, not yet!

But the Dusk Phoenix that was standing before Zhang Yang was out of his hands!

However, Zhang Yang did not abandon hope, showing no sign of faltering at all!

--- {Glare of the Death God}!

As long as the Skill is not 'ineffective,' and it's effects begin to take place, the total HP of Dusk Phoenix would be pulled straight down to 1 point even if she has over 10,000,000 HP! In other words, when the effect of this Skill kicks in, all Zhang Yang would need to do is to give her a gentle tap in order to send her straight down to her demise.

The key to winning this battle would lie on whether Zhang Yang is able to land his attack on the agile Thief. And when he does, can he keep it up and survive long enough for him to trigger the effect of the {Glare of the Death God}? After all, there is only a 10% chance of triggering the special effects of the Skill. It would take about 10 hits. Even with Felice and Thunderhawk, and even with the summoning of his [Servant], it would still take about 3 to 4 seconds to land 10 hits on the Thief!

Furthermore, a player is not like a monster in the game. If she

realizes that something is up, Dusk Phoenix can just disengage herself from the battle with her {Vanish}. Well, the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} would only last for 5 seconds. All she needs to do is to wait it out and re-engage into battle to continue her 'crusade' --- after all, every {Inheritance Transformation} can last for 2 hours!

Hence, Zhang Yang only has one shot at this!

He looked at Dusk Phoenix, grinning sheepishly as he asked, "I have been wondering, how did you find me?"

"You wanna know?" The Phoenix held her hands against her fair chin with pride as she humphed lightly, then she said, "I ain't telling you, go ahead and bask in that frustration of never knowing!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud at her, and suddenly lunged forward and activated {Charge} to engage himself in battle with Dusk Phoenix. He picked a suitable time to activate his {Glare of the Death God,} and it worked wondrously. A smokey shroud of a skull, dark and spooky, seeped into the black Phoenix's body. That skull then came to the top of her head and loomed over her. The scene was a little terrifying.

Zhang Yang then raised his hand and summoned [Devastator]. The servant descended from the sky and filled the entire passage. It even broke the ceiling of the cave and left a hole there! Felice and Thunderhawk went all out with their AoE attacks at the same instant --- what they were attempting to do is to trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. So, they only focused on

increasing the rate of their assaults, instead of the damage output. Both of them were spamming their skills as soon as they were able to. The {Pulverizing Flame} and the {Purple Storm Guillotine} were flashing across the battlefield for every single second. Those skills were actually being activated at every second, twice the frequency of a normal attack. Each normal attack took place every two seconds. This meant that the skills were being triggered at every second.

Bam! Bam! Bam! Bam!

Dusk Phoenix had already received numerous attacks before she could even read the 'Negative Effect' that was cast upon her. At first, she simply smiled coldly as if nothing mattered. She was still calm, as the damage to her HP bar was still at minimal, and there was nothing for her to worry about. However, when she read the description of the {Glare of the Death God}, her face changed in an instant!

The moment that she realized she was in great danger was the moment when Felice's {Pulverizing Flame} triggered the special effect of the Skill!

In one split second, that smokey skull on top of Dusk Phoenix began to descend upon her with its dark mouth opened wide. It devoured her through it's dark and bottomless mouth! After the stream of dark light flashed through her body, Dusk Phoenix was left with only 1 point of HP!

"Argh ---" the little black Phoenix was mad and terrified at the same time as she had not expected Zhang Yang to have such an

ultimate trick hidden up his sleeves!

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and swung his [Heaven Shaker] at the black Phoenix's head without any sense of mercy. After all, that was not a time to have a tender heart for the fairer sex!

"You bastard!" Dusk Phoenix let out a scream. With a shoof, her body flashed with the color of blood and her HP bar suddenly recovered back to its full state! However, she was also added with an additional 'Negative Effect' --- Blood Angel's Requiem.

[Blood Angel's Requiem]: Ignites the Strength of the Blood Angel, instantly recover 100% HP. However, the caster will be affected by a weakening effect where Attack is reduced by 30%, and the total amount of HP is reduced by 30%. Lasts for 2 minutes.

Her skill was like of Zhang Yang's {Radiance of the God of War}! However, the difference in between the capability of a Class S [Inheritance] and the capability of a Class A became obvious in that situation! There would be no 2-minute 'Weaken Effects' upon activating the {Radiance of God of War}!

Zhang Yang let out a long sigh.

Although her Attack had been reduced by 30% and her total amount of HP had dropped below the million mark, Dusk Phoenix was still too powerful for Zhang Yang to stand toe-to-toe! Everything that he had managed to do so far has only achieved in diminishing the power of her Classs A [Inheritance] down to the power of a Class B [Inheritance]

A wise man does not fight when the odds are against him. It's time to run!

Zhang Yang activated {Burrow} on the spot, without any hesitation. He burrowed himself straight into the solid ground and disappeared from sight.

"Argh!" Although the black Phoenix went charging towards him, she was still one step late from landing her sword on him. So she could only swing her sword across the thin air as she missed. The black Phoenix roared into the sky with rage! It was supposed to be her day to take her sweet revenge on Zhang Yang! However, she had failed to kill Zhang Yang, even after activating her {Blood Angel Transformation}. To make matters worse, she had this on live recording, and she had actually fallen short of her claim on Zhang Yang's life!

The cunning man had almost defeated her, and got away with it scot-free!

As she was enraged, Dusk Phoenix took a small transparent crystal ball out of her inventory. With a single thought from the black Phoenix, the small crystal ball began to emanate in all directions. A hologram of a map was projected out of crystal ball and displayed two blinking dots on it. One of them was a green blinking dot that stayed stationary, while the other one was a red blinking dot that was moving towards a certain direction.

If Zhang Yang could see what was going on, he would have found

out about how Dusk Phoenix had been tracking him down!

"You bastard! You're not getting away!" the black Phoenix tightened her lips as she spoke, "There's still about two hours left, and I'm going to find you, and I'm going to give you a life lesson that you'll never forget!"

...

Zhang Yang was in a total hurry. He only managed to keep Felice back in his Battle Companion Slot. However, it would require a brief period of time to cast a spell in order to summon or unsummon a pet mount. Hence, Zhang Yang had to leave Thunderhawk behind for the lady Phoenix to slaughter up like a fat goose.

Fortunately for Zhang Yang, Thunderhawk was a [pet mount]. So, no matter how many 'torturous ordeals' it gets put through, or how many times it gets abandoned cruelly to a horrifying death, it would never be displeased, unlike a sentient Battle Companion. If Zhang Yang had abandoned a battle companion in such a manner, it might even turn on him in anger!

It seems that the future was full of risks!

His thoughts were still lingering on the risks that he is going to face in the future as he tunneled the ground. After all, the {Inheritance Transformation} Skill, when used at an opportune moment, would have a terrorizing effect over the players. It was just like what Zhang Yang had just gone through, without being



able to use his {God of War Transformation}. Unless he can reserve his {Inheritance Transformation} Skill for an indefinite time, he would definitely have a really tough time engaging any player with an [Inheritance] that is at least Class B, or above!

Fortunately, there weren't really many players with a Class C [Inheritance] yet so far. Most of those players were using their {Inheritance Transformation} on bosses, instead of killing players like black Phoenix over there. Well, only very few players would actually do this.

After tunneling beneath the ground for about 5 to 6 minutes, Zhang Yang had finally broke through the layers of rock and arrived at the lowest floor of the mining cave. The place seemed like a typical corner of a cave. However, Zhang Yang was ambushed by one of those Blood Spider the moment he resurfaced from the rocks. He quickly summoned Felice and the two of them combined their strength to take out the spider. They took the spider out in a brief moment, without any unforeseen circumstances.

Zhang Yang did not continue his quest on slaying the Blood Spiders. After all, he was still being 'hunted'. He still had not gotten any idea to how Dusk Phoenix had managed to locate him so easily. If there is a second time around, there will surely be a third time and even a fourth time around!

The {Blood Angel Transformation} would last for 2 hours. Zhang Yang can only try to avoid detection at all costs for now.

Although Zhang Yang was not willing to admit it, the truth is

always painful! The current him was no match to Dusk Phoenix at all! Zhang Yang could not help but to sigh at the fact that he had managed to take on tens of thousands of high Tier players while he was in his {God of War Transformation} form, and now, he could not even take on Dusk Phoenix while she is in her {Blood Angel Transformation} form, without his {God of War Transformation} form. That is the way the game should be after all. If one player can defeat another player with Class A [Inheritance] that has already 'transformed', the game would surely be deemed unfair --- of course, that has to exclude the usage of special Skills that depend on luck, such as (Glare of the Death God}.

No matter what the circumstances are, Zhang Yang would never flee from a battle willingly. The terrain and design of the mining cave was quite complicated. There was a complex network of roads that connected to each other in the mining cave. Furthermore, Zhang Yang deeply believed that the 'secret item' that black Phoenix had in her possession would run out of juice, sooner or later. In other words, she would not be able to track him so precisely in time to come!

As long as Zhang Yang could keep this up for another 2 hours, he would be able to change the tide of the battle the other way around. By then, it would be him who would pursue the black phoenix.

So there it began. Zhang Yang and Dusk Phoenix were both tied down in a game of 'Hide and Seek'. Zhang Yang still had the {Shadow of the Void} ready at hand. He could use the Skill twice if he ever activates his {Rearm}. Furthermore, he also had two [Magic Scrolls: Wind Walk] unused. That being said, he still had many means of escape up his sleeves, giving Dusk Phoenix a really hard

time in tracking him down!

After half an hour of pursuit, Dusk Phoenix had finally caught up with Zhang Yang's pace. However, her face and the rest of her body was completely drenched in greenish vile liquid, putting her in an awkward predicament, just like it did to Zhang Yang! Evidently, she had been 'sprayed' on quite 'violently' by some Blood Spiders as she was making her way over here. Zhang Yang could not help but laughed out loud as he could already see her 'glorious' appearance from a far distance. After seeing Zhang Yang gloating at what she had been through, the little black Phoenix was so pissed off at him that she was trembling with anger.

The moment she tried to slash at Zhang Yang's throat, Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow of the Void} and sent himself into the void dimension. Then, he took advantage of the complex network of roads in the mining cave and disappeared, beyond her reach.

As expected, the 'Secret Item' that Dusk Phoenix had been using to track Zhang Yang could not be used indefinitely. The moment she lost track of Zhang Yang again, she took out the item again and attempted to activate once more. However, there were no signs of any blinking dots or indicators on the hologram map this time. The black Phoenix got so mad to the point that she screamed and stomped on the ground repeatedly.

Half an hour later ... one hour later... one and a half hour later...

Dusk Phoenix was indeed worthy of being a Thief. Her patience was admirable. There were a few times when her blade had almost sliced Zhang Yang's throat open. However, Zhang Yang had

painfully forced himself to use one [Magic Scroll: Wind Walk] to escape on one occasion!

The moment 2 hours had passed, the two large, blood-red wings faded and vanished into thin air. That was the moment Zhang Yang had been waiting for. That was the moment the {Blood Angel Transformation} finally expired!

# Chapter 546: The Blood Spider Queen

---

Dusk Phoenix was frustrated beyond words. The moment her {Blood Angel Transformation} faded, she screamed into the sky at a deafening pitch, and then she took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it apart without any hesitation. In just a while, her body radiated in a bright white light as she teleported away from the scene.

Honestly speaking, this black Phoenix walked on the path of an Assassin. She could have stayed and waited for the right moment to ambush Zhang Yang. Even though Zhang Yang was capable of doing so, it would be an extremely difficult task to detect a Thief in 'Stealth Mode'. If she times it right, she could take him out. She could have gotten the job done by using her {Ambush} on him when the right time comes!

However, her previous encounter with Zhang Yang had left her with an irrational, paranoid fear. Without the support of her {Blood Angel Transformation}, she was no longer willing to take on Zhang Yang.

The moment after she left, Zhang Yang popped himself out of a corner. It was such a pity that he did not come out a little earlier. Zhang Yang could not help but to shake his head at his own hesitation.

Just a few minutes ago, Zhang Yang was still the mouse that was trying to outrun a furious, flying cat. The moment when her {Blood Angel Transformation} expired, the tables had been turned almost immediately! Unfortunately for Zhang Yang, the black

Phoenix was quick to remove herself from the mining cave, leaving no chance for Zhang Yang to retaliate!

All things considered, Zhang Yang had managed to survive the onslaughts of a Class A {Inheritance Transformation} for 2 hours. What's more, the moment the Inheritance wore off, the player had immediately retreated, having depended on its power, wholly. Well, he was lucky enough for the place to be a cave, with many places for him to hide. If they had been battling in an open ground, or a desert, it would have been wiser for Zhang Yang to use {Burrow} to gain distance from Dusk Phoenix and just escape by using a [Teleportation Scroll]!

Actually, Zhang Yang was not all too bothered about killing her in return. What he wanted to know was, how does she keep finding him!

Without the knowledge of how the black Phoenix had managed to track him again and again, made Zhang Yang slightly paranoid. It was like, someone watching him all the time like a creepy stalker. He had this feeling that if he ever lets his guard down for a split second, he would be taken out in a flash, just like that!

There was indeed a very real threat going on here!

With Dusk Phoenix's Class A {Blood Angel Transformation} possibly looming around at every corner of his journey, Zhang Yang would need to keep his own {God Of War Transformation} in reserve as a countermeasure, should she come at him full-on. If he does not do so, he would be forced to flee for his life every single time! However, saving the {God of War Transformation} solely for

her would severely limit his performance in other activities.

If Dusk Phoenix ever chooses not to appear for an entire month, would he have to withhold his own 'Transformation' for the same duration? Was it worth it?

Not knowing when your enemy may strike, while realizing that every step you take is a perilous one, was not a pleasant sensation at all.

Since the situation was not amendable at the moment, Zhang Yang decided to focus on his current quest.

After calming himself down, Zhang Yang continued to move deeper into the mining cave. He slaughtered up hundreds of Blood Spiders along his way before he finally arrived at the deepest area of the mining cave. Finally, he lay his eyes upon the legendary boss!

This Blood Spider was the size of two bungalows. It was gigantic! Its eight, spearlike legs flashed and gleamed in the light. Countless bristles that stood out from its body like sharp blades sent chills down the spines of everyone who gazed upon it.

[Blood Spider Queen]

Level: 125

HP: 37,500,000

Defense: 5,200

Melee Attack: 30,157 - 34,157

Skills:

[Virulent Venom Blood]: Projects venom to all targets within range, causes 30,000 Nature damage to every target and reduces the Movement Speed of the target by 50%. Lasts for 15 seconds. Instant Activation. Range: 40 meters

[Armor Piercing Skewer]: Gives target a fatal strike with it's sharp legs, causing 100% Melee Attack, Piercing Damage. The target will be afflicted with [Bleed] and receive a total of 40% Attack in the form of Bleeding Damage for 15 seconds. This effect can stack by up to 5 layers. Range: Melee range.

[Spawn]: Lays a row of Spider Eggs on the ground. A bunch of little spiders will spawn every 30 seconds. The number of the spiders spawned is equal to the number of players engaged in battle X 2.

[Berserk (Passive)]: Attack will increase by 10% for every 10 minutes in battle.

Note: This is the Blood Spider Queen. It has an unimaginably strong capability to breed. A wise warrior would rather face 100 hungry wolves than being an enemy to a Blood Spider that is



undergoing its nesting season.

Upon seeing that this was a Mythical Tier boss, ZHang Yang no longer had the slightest intention of battling the boss solo. This boss seemed to be proficient in both melee and range. It was so massive that kiting seemed completely implausible!

Zhang Yang equipped his [Party Summon Order] and activated it. He summoned Sun Xi Yu, Han Ying Xue and the rest of his party of 10 over to his current location.

"Little Yang! You're my savior! You really are!" Fatty Han was crying in tears when he arrived, "Xiao Wei did not seem like a clumsy girl at all! But after guiding her for 3 days in the game, I'm going mad! I'm very grateful that you pulled me here! Or my \*ss would be 'flowerishly' ravaged by arrows!"

Lost Dream was shocked to hear it as he spoke in a weird pitch, "Did you find yourself a girl, or a dominatrix...for you know...some recreational..hmm?"

"Haiyah!" Fatty Han let out an exasperated sigh again before he continued to speak, "Well, Xiao Wei became a Hunter just like I did. But the tragic thing about it, is that she doesn't even know how to choose a target! She had already penetrated my \*ss multiple times, more like a hundred times in just three days! If her level was not that low, I might have been killed many times over already!"

"Noob tank, looks like you have found yourself a big boss!" Wei Yan Er looked at the boss with gleaming eyes. Tightening her grip

on the handle of her battle axe, she asked, "You must drop a Mythical Tier Axe for me, or I'm gonna bite you and shred you into pieces!"

There were as many as eight entry-level maps in the Chaos Realm. Although maps like Tibanya Wasteland were the more basic of maps with a level gap ranging from 100 to 130, it was already far larger than anything the players had ever encountered, pre-Chaos Realms! Many high leveled Mythical Tiered bosses roamed all over the maps, but without any lead from any quests whatsoever, it would still be like searching for a needle in a haystack.

Therefore, everyone was excited to see a Mythical Tier boss standing right in front of their eyes!

According to the rules of the Chaos Realms, every epic equipment dropped from a boss would have a Special Effect that reduces the Required levels of equipping by 20 levels. If a boss happens to be level 125 and drops a level 120 equipment, players would already be able to equip them when they reach level 100. That would grant players an early headstart!

That was also one of the many reasons Zhang Yang had gathered all of his core members of Lone Desert Smoke and set them on the task of clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress, as he focused on finding and slaying Open-World bosses at the same time! After equipping a set of Level 120 Mythical Tier equipment, players could really make up for most of the difficulties, oppressing a Level 110 Violet-Platinum boss with high level equipment.

"Everyone! Stay in position! We're about to cut open this boss!" Zhang Yang shouted out loud to his party members.

"There must be an Axe! Give me an Axe!" Wei Yan Er was repeatedly wishing for an axe.

Zhang Yang could not help but to laugh at her. Then, he began to charge towards the boss.

{Spear of Obliteration}!

‘-28992!’

With the little brat's {Strength Aura} that added 12% Strength to everyone within its effective range, Zhang Yang had gained quite a boost. His normal attacks could almost cause up to 30,000 damage! His {Spear of Obliteration} went straight through the Defense of the boss and caused a substantial amount of damage to it!

Zhang Yang no longer need to keep count on how much aggro each of his Skills could score for him. His damage output topped over every single one of his party members at the moment. His current damage output was even higher than the sum of both Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu's damage output! He definitely had the aggro that a tank would need!

"I hate you! Noob tank! How could you snatch the Class S [Inheritance] from me! It was supposed to be mine!" Wei Yan Er could not help herself anymore as she began to wail. Every single Class S [Inheritance] was unique, and only one person could have it. So, the little brat no longer stood a chance to acquire the [God of War Inheritance]!

"Haha! Now, now. Calm down. The Class A [Inheritances] are actually more powerful than you think. The power they can give can actually be almost as powerful as the Class S [Inheritance]. You know, almost!" Zhang Yang quickly tried to calm the little brat. Well, you would never know what kind of frightening things Wei Yan Er would actually do when she goes crazy!

"Chi! Ji ji ji!" The Blood Spider Queen stuck up its butt all of a sudden. Then it began to shoot 23 poison projectiles of venom towards the gang. This was a boss after all. The venom spat out was very different from those of the elite Tier Blood Spiders. It wasn't green in color, instead, it was the color of blood! The gooish venom was sprayed onto the gang as it caused 30,000 basic damage to each of them. The venom had also reduced the movement speed of the gang, Felice and that annoying whiner of a Battle Companion.

This was the boss's {Virulent Venom Blood}!

The boss was already going all out from the beginning!

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart quickly took up their staffs and began getting to work. However, their healing targets were not just the 10 of them, there was also everyone's Battle

Companions and the Pets of Zhang Yang, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots! So, they had to focus on healing a total of 23 targets! The stress was tremendous!

Fortunately, the Battle Companions of Endless Starlight and Lost Dream belonged to the Healer category. They could heal themselves up and give some healing support to everyone as well. Their support had also lifted some weight off the shoulders of the two Healers. Furthermore, the Healers had decisively given up on some of the not-so-effective Battle Companions in the battle. The Hunters could also heal up their own pets. Therefore, after some adjustment over the chaotic situation, the Healers finally healed up the HP of the entire party.

Just when the two ladies thought they could take a step back and catch their breaths, the boss stuck up its butt again! It's the 23 projectiles of dark-red goo-ish venom, once again! Everyone suffered a high value of damage, and their HP bars were reduced sharply, again!

Zhang Yang quickly said, "Everyone with ranged attacks, get 40 meters away from the boss! We shall take turns to attack! Into formation!"

It was impossible for the two ladies to be focused on healing Zhang Yang and the rest of the party, Zhang Yang knew that he had to lighten the load for the Healers. Zhang Yang had arranged the party to be split into smaller groups in order for the Healing to be manageable.

The attacks of the Blood Spider Queen were terrifying and

violent. Its normal attacks could cause up to 32,000 damage! Fortunately for Zhang Yang, he was no longer the Zhang Yang of old. With his {God of War Shield} adding 20% Passive Damage Immunity, the attack of the boss could only cause about 15,000 damage on Zhang Yang. Practically speaking, the normal attacks of the boss could only cause about 5,000 damage to Zhang Yang per second, thanks to the regular usage of his [Block]!

However, this gigantic spider had a wide array of skills! Its {Virulent Venom Blood} was basically activated once every 10 seconds. Although the boss did not really use its {Armor Piercing Skewer} that often, but the gang could not risk underestimating the amount of damage that particular Skill was capable of! After all, that one Skill could deal about 8,000 damage in every passing second!

If Zhang Yang was the only one that Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart needed to heal, the two ladies would definitely prevail in their role, even after the healing efficiency of Healers had been nerfed by the developers. Their equipment was powerful enough, and their special Skills allowed them to heal more efficiently and effectively. However, the boss did not just focus its attacks on Zhang Yang. The {Virulent Venom Blood} of the boss was an AoE Skill. Every time the boss activates that Skill, everyone within the Skill's effective range would suffer. The two ladies had their heads scourged as they were busy maintaining the HP bars of the party members. They were the most exhausted of all players in the party!

"Wah! I'm going to remove my Class and retrain another one! I don't want to be a Healer anymore!" Han Ying Xue was flustered.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud at her and said, "It would be such a shame for you to quit as a Healer! Look the 'capacity' of your udders!"

"Bus Tart!" Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang. She mouthed something in silence, glaring at Zhang Yang. Only Zhang Yang saw what she 'said', "You're not getting any sleep tonight!"

Pak pak pak!

The moment the HP bar of the boss was reduced down to 20%, the Blood Spider Queen turned its back on Zhang Yang and went on to produce a long row of white, egg-like objects across the ground. Each of those objects were about half the size of a regular human! The eggs twitched about, as if they were alive.

# Chapter 547: Abominating Guillotine Axe

---

There were at least a thousand of these white spider eggs being spawned. These eggs had occupied almost half of the cave, leaving almost no room to step on, in that area. The place became disgustingly white, and most people would feel chills up their spines. The scene before Zhang Yang and the gang was really creepy!

As Endless Starlight was not required to channel Damage Output or tank the boss as a secondary Tanker, he was chilling at a spot that was more than 40 meters away from the boss. After seeing so many eggs, he could not help himself but to exclaim in great fear, "What the f\*ck! This boss is such a strong breeder!"

"Well, she deserves to be awarded with the title '[Mother Heroine](#)'!" Daffodil Daydream giggled.

Wei Yan Er could not understand the meaning of it, as she began to widen her eyes and blink them for awhile, then she asked, "Why so?"

"Once upon a time in a certain country, too many people died from serving their country against a war. Therefore, the government decided to encourage women to bear more children. If a woman can bear at least 10 children, the government will award the mother with a silver medal and also the title of 'Mother Heroine'!" Daffodil Daydream tried to explain it to the little brat.

"Women are not pigs! It's not right for women to bear so many



children in one life!" Fantasy Sweetheart was definitely not on the same page with the term 'Mother Heroine'.

"I would only bear one! At most!" Han Ying Xue showed one of her fingers, "Rumor says that it is extremely painful when women are giving birth to a child. If I have to bear that kind of pain, once is more than enough!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and he said, "If every woman is only willing to give birth to one child, then humans would be extinct sooner than you would know!"

That was the simplest maths of all time. If two becomes one, the numbers would be halved every time.

"But, even if 'Mother Heroine' can give birth to 10 children, she would be just a pile of junk, dealing only 5 damage, when she is compared to this boss!"

"Hehe, this boss is undoubtedly the best breeder in the entire game!"

Just as the gang was happily talking on a ridiculous topic, 20 white spider eggs suddenly burst open! Small little Blood Spiders were crawling out from each of the spider eggs. They were only about the size of a human fist. However, the spiders were still too huge too be considered normal!

[Newborn Blood Spider] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 120

HP: 19,200

Defense: 100

Melee Attack: 5,570 - 6,570

Skills:

[Web Bind]: Traps the legs of the target with extremely sticky spider webs, the target will not be able to move at all. Last for 15 seconds.

Note: They are newborn spiders! They need to feed! "Tasty flesh and blood, where are you!"

The moment when these spiders appeared, they began to scatter into the surroundings, moving around with their eight legs irregularly fast! After a brief moment, they had set their targets upon Han Ying Xue!

When these baby spiders first spawned, they would have no aggro targets. As no one was causing any damage to any of them, these spiders did not have any 'sense' of purpose on whom to attack first. Furthermore, there were no Tankers attempting to get their aggro either. Therefore, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy

Sweetheart both became their targets, as the two ladies were very focused in healing. Han Ying Xue became their primary target, as she was healing at the rate greater than any healer in the battlefield at the moment.

Without the need for Zhang Yang to shout out, Endless Starlight had already stood between Han Ying Xue and the hordes of baby spiders. He quickly cast his {Devotion} right before the spiders could reach him. Upon the activation of the Skill, bright golden light was shed upon the ground 10-meter across the surroundings. The golden light radiated faintly on the ground.

When the baby spiders stepped right into the effective range of the {Devotion}, every single one of them began to receive damage in every passing second. With that happening, their aggro were switched straight onto Endless Starlight. The spiders turned their fangs towards him and began to leap at him.

If normal Tiered monsters had the advantage in their numbers, they could be quite troublesome for DPS players and Healers to deal with. However, if they ever encounter a Tanker with extremely good equipment, then everything would be omitted! These baby spiders could only deal more than a hundred of damage on Endless Starlight. However, as they were small in size, they could all attack Endless Starlight at the same time. Be it small, overtime, it would be of a fatal cause.

The gang members who were taking their turns resting at the sidelines, and the idle Battle Companions immediately came forward and launched their assaults on the 20 baby spiders. They tried to keep the spiders rounded up so that they could exterminate

the spiders more efficiently. The boss's Skill description had stated it out clearly, that a new bunch of baby spiders would be spawned every 30 seconds. If they do could not exterminate them as soon as possible, their number would stack up indefinitely! When their number reaches a certain amount, the situation would become uncontrollable, causing the entire party to be wiped up in an instant.

These baby spiders had less than 20,000HP. In under 20 seconds, the baby spiders were wiped out after they were boxed in by the gang. However, the boss was enraged, and it began to stab its sharp legs at Zhang Yang repeatedly! The stabbings left marks of large holes all over the surface of Zhang Yang's shield, causing the shield to look like a crippled umbrella, riddled with a thousand wounds. The durability of Zhang Yang's shield was reduced steeply right after that series of attacks!

Zhang Yang had no choice but to endure it. He shook his head again and again as he recalled his proud moment of acquiring this [Titan Wall] from the lucky draw, back in Shang Hai. But now, Violet-Platinum Tier equipment were on the brink of being phased out by Mythical Tier equipment. It made perfect sense for this Level 80 Violet-Platinum [Titan Wall] to falter in the face of a Level 120 Mythical Boss!

Zhang Yang was swinging his [Heaven Shaker] at the boss, whacking it as hard as possible while he shouted at his gang, "Everyone, quickly! The boss is gaining an additional 10% boost on it's Attack power once in every 10 minutes! I can still hold the boss here, but the AoE Skill {Virulent Venom Blood} is still an undeniable threat to all of us!"

"Alright!"

Everyone adjusted their tactics a little. Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were in charge of channeling the damage output on the boss, while Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were in charge on wiping out all the baby spiders that spawn throughout the boss battle. It's not because Hunters could not do real damage to the boss, they were arranged in such a formation because the Hunters were ranged attackers. They could just stay 60 meters away from the boss while killing the baby spiders without having to worry about the {Virulent Venom Blood}. That would really lighten the load on the two Healers.

Among all Battle Companions, Zhang Yang's Felice, Sun Xin Yu's Ankh the Assassin, and Wei Yan Er's The Artist, Reina had the most powerful DPS. Therefore, they were assigned to attack the boss. Meanwhile, Messick the whiner was 'coaching' the baby spiders with Endless Starlight.

Well, no doubt that this annoying whiner was really a pain in the \*ss. Even the monsters did not seem to like him. All he did was to say something unpleasant at the monsters, and half of the baby spiders would leap towards him in a frenzy! Messick was more than capable of getting the monsters' aggro over to himself!

At the moment, Zhang Yang and the 4 powerful DPS players were being supported by three powerful Battle Companions and his Thunderhawk. Their total DPS had reached up to 85,000 damage! Even though the Blood Spider King had over 37,500,000 HP, it would only take about 8 minutes for that kind of DPS to empty out that amount of HP.

The party could perform so efficiently, mainly because of Zhang Yang. After all, he was swinging about a Level 120 Mythical Tier weapon, and he also possessed the [God of War Inheritance] that provided him with an additional 50% increment in his Attacks. His DPS alone had already reached up to a total of 27,000 damage!

With about 10,000 damage in each passing second coming from Felice and Thunderhawk, Zhang Yang could channel out about 47,000 damage in every second! His DPS was actually much higher than the DPS of all the others combined!

Fatty Han could not help it but to feel shocked, then he said, "In any case, I'm also a player with a Class B [Inheritance]. Why is the difference between the power level of me and little Yang so much?"

"Well, try switching to a Level 120 Mythical Tier ranged weapon, and switch all your pets and your battle companion to Mythical Tiers as well. By then, you should be able to reach 10% of my full power!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

"F\*ck off! I'm a real DPS as well, okay!" Fatty Han was unwilling to admit the fact. If his {Vampire Transformation} was no longer under its cooldown period, Fatty Han would have tried to take on the boss all alone --- of course, even then, against a Mythical Tier boss, a Class B Inheritance might waver. Furthermore, Fatty Han was not a Tanker. Even after activating his {Inheritance Transformation} Skill, his Maximum HP and Defense would not be as ridiculously high as Zhang Yang's {God of War Form}.

The gang was used to working together. Zhang Yang was holding the boss back while Endless Starlight was holding against the monsters in the surroundings. Two Healers were supporting them as much as they were able to. Meanwhile, the DPS players were not willing to give in to Zhang Yang's damage output, so they were also trying their very best to raise their maximum damage output!

However, upon acquiring the [God of War Inheritance], Zhang Yang could equip a two-handed weapon. He was now an anomaly. He was basically a Tanker and a DPS player at the same time! Meanwhile, with the additional boost of his Attack power because of the [Inheritance], Zhang Yang was now an ultimate source of DPS!

After bringing down the HP bar of the boss down to 12%, Zhang Yang activated his {Glare of the Death God} on the boss. However, it was a tragic attempt, as it failed to take effect.

Fatty Han was patting his chest in relief, realizing how lucky they had been when they were fighting the Vampire boss back then. If the rate of 'Resist' on that boss was as high as it is on this boss, Fatty Han would have needed to wait until the other gang members reached Level 120 before they could challenge Vampire Count Ferra. He would have to wait until then to get his [Vampire Inheritance].

Or, they could just do what the players from Europe Region did. They could just send tens of thousands of players and use a few [Forbidden Scrolls] to slay the boss.

Well, it did not matter if the special effect of the {Glare of the

Death God} did not trigger. Activating the {Glare of the Death God} would be like adding icing onto a cake, after all. At their current rate of DPS, they could just take the boss out in within a minute.

"Chi! Ji ji ji ---" When the last drop of the boss's HP bar was taken out, the gigantic Blood Spider King instantly turned upside down, with its belly on the top, facing the sky, its legs curled up. A number of loot dropped beside the dead body of the gigantic spider. Wei Yan Er cheered as she ran straight towards the loot to take a look at them.

The following session was, of course, the happiest moment for them all. Everyone followed the little brat closer to the loot to take a closer look. Therefore, it did not really matter if the boss resisted the Skill, or not.

The boss dropped a total of 4 pieces of equipment. One was an axe that flashed so brilliantly that it would send chills up people's spines when they laid eyes on it. The other one was a dark piece of leather armor. There was also a gray colored necklace and an old-school shield. Other than that, the boss had also dropped two [Middle-tier Aura Stones]!

"Haha! My prayers have been answered! There really is an axe among the loots!" Wei Yan Er picked up the axe with excitement.

[Abominating Guillotine Axe] (Mythical, Two-Handed Axe)

Attack: 4,850 -6,100



Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 1,572

Equip: Increase 14% damage

Equip: Increase 3.5% Critical Rate

Equip: After hitting the target, there is a certain rate of beheading the target, causing your target to receive additional 10% damage whenever the target is struck by you. Lasts for 10 seconds. The effects cannot stack.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 120

Special: Reduce 20 Levels from the Required Level.

Zhang Yang teased the little brat on purpose as he said, "Yo. This is really not bad at all! I can use two-handed weapons as well now, this weapon really suits me!"

"No way! You cannot go back on your own words! I even let you have the [Heaven Shaker] last time! How can you be so shameless! Snatching a child's toy! You are such a mean, despicable, shameless bastard!" Wei Yan Er grabbed on to the axe as she held it in her arms as tightly as possible. She seemed to be worried that

Zhang Yang might take it from her by force.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to frown. He should have well prepared the moment when he decided to pull the little brat's leg. As the little girl's laughing standard was really low, and she was also extremely naive, this little brat would actually take jokes seriously!

1. Mother Heroine - an honorary title in the Soviet Union awarded for bearing and raising a large family.

# Chapter 548: Breaking the Second Seal

---

Without a doubt, the axe was Wei Yan Er's. She finally had a weapon befitting of her strength. The axe was just as powerful as Zhang Yang's weapon. When a Warrior equips an axe, the character's class passive skill Axe Mastery would provide an additional 5% Critical rate and damage. Even though it was not as strong as the God of War Inheritance 50% damage boost, Wei Yan Er was now strong enough to act as Lone Desert Smoke's top Berserker, one who would not be dwarfed by Zhang Yang.

The little girl had stopped picking up loot as she was too far gone in her own world with the axe. Han Ying Xue sighed and went over to take over the role. Firstly, she picked up a grayish white necklace. Expecting it to be made of pearl, the witch examined the necklace closer and sulked in disgust after discovering it was made of tiny skulls. The woman did not have such a heavy metal taste.

[Skeletal Necklace] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +212

Strength: +137

Dexterity: +137

Equip: Increases healing rate and damage by 2.1%

Equip: Increases 420 Maximum HP.

Use: Induces a crippling fear to a target, causing the target to run amok! Target will be disarmed. Lasts for 8 seconds. Instant cast. Cooldown: 1 Hour.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

Note: Made from the bones of an unborn child. A curse necklaces.

"Urgh...This is bad..." said Zhang Yang after he examined the necklace. "Tell you what though, we should put this in the guild storage and let the newbies drool over it."

The flavor text aside, it was a rather strong necklace. The last effect could force an opponent to stop attacking instantly. It would be extremely useful for PvP fights. After the Japan-Korea Region war, a portion of "borrowed" players had quietly remained in the guild.

Besides having friends in the game, players would want to join a strong guild! However, what defines a strong guild? Generally, players would judge a guild by their capabilities in raiding bosses, which in extension, grants them access to strong equipment! Hence, Zhang Yang had placed many of the strong equipment in the guild storage to let the newbies drool over them. In a way, it would encourage the guild members to farm for more contribution points. The points can be used to level up the guild and allow them to exchange points for equipment! No transactions in the guild

involved gold coins. The guild members were all accustomed to using guild contribution points in order to obtain equipment and potions. Since there were no gold coin transactions in the guild, most competition between the guild members were of a friendly nature. It would be of great advantage to increase the overall guild morale and the bonds between the members.

Han Ying Xue proceeded to pick up another equipment. She lifted a black shirt and examined it. Zhang Yang sighed and said, "Why could you not pick the shield first? Why must you raise my hopes high and crush them?!"

The witch smirked and dropped the shirt to pick up the shield. "I want to leave the best for last. You know, to give you a sense of excitement! Teehee~"

The shield was a triangular shaped kite shield with an edge as sharp as a blade. It would be a weapon strong enough to rival a hammer! The entire shield had a green surface and a had the emblazoned figure of a dwarven warrior wielding a hammer and a shield on it.

[Vera's Edged Shield] (Mythical, Shield)

Defense: +3,024

Vitality: +2,963

Equip: Absorbs 1,075 damage on attack.

Equip: Increases 6,000 Maximum HP.

Use: Toss the shield at a target to slice it apart. Reduce 1,000 Defense points from a target. Lasts for 1 minute. Instant cast. Range: 30 meters. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 120

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Levels.

Note: Crafted by the great dwarven smith, Vera Copperhammer

By its stats alone, the shield had to be one of the best Level 120 Mythical tier equipment around. The active skill of the skill was rather strong, even though 1,000 Defense was not much. It was almost the same as {Cripple Defense}. Any lower, and it would be useless since it reduced defense by a fixed value.

"Woah," cried Endless Starlight as he drooled over the shield. However, since Zhang Yang was present and had done most of the work, Endless Starlight was smart enough to keep his wants to himself.

Zhang Yang knew that and purposely chose to give the shield to Endless Starlight instead. He then tossed the shield to him and

said, "Starlight, I have many Mythical tier equipment for myself. Perhaps it's time for you to get some as well."

"Thank you, sir! Thank you very much!" cried Endless Starlight with tears in his eyes.

The guy was the main tank in the exploration party of the Dragon Throat Fortress. While Zhang Yang could not spend time raiding dungeons, he would need to give a pass on some great loot to ensure that Endless Starlight gets stronger in order to defeat the Hardcore mode of the dungeon. He was already an overwhelmingly powerful tank, but had the usual shortcomings in terms of offense. This shield would help him slightly.

"Hah! Not bad! Boy! Endless Starlight has become a strong tank with the shield!" said Fatty Han.

It was true. Endless Starlight's shield was only a Level 100 Violet-Platinum tier with only 1,680 Vitality points. On the other hand, the new Edged Shield had boosted his Vitality points to over 4,200 points. The shield had given him more than 8,000 over HP, bringing his maximum HP to over 30,000 HP. This would turn him into a more complete tank, increasing all his attributes.

Now, Endless Starlight had joined Wei Yan Er in the corner, indulging in their own world.

Han Ying Xue picked up the last item and examined it.

[Black Bull's Chest Plate] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor, Battle Companion Only)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +1,210

Strength: +346

Dexterity: +783

Level Requirement: 120

It was an equipment specially for Battle Companions. Since Felice's armors were all Mythical tier, Zhang Yang was the first one to select Pass. On the other hand, Messick – Han Ying Xue's Battle Companion had already started off as Violet-Platinum tier. When he reaches Level 120, all his equipment would automatically be upgraded to Level 120 as well. Hence, there was no need for him to take the chest plate. Then again, the big pervert is a tank. Giving him leather armor wouldn't be the wisest of choices.

In the end, the leather armor was taken by Sun Xin Yu. Even though Ankh had an extremely strong Dexterity growth rate, she was a Gray-Silver tier and required the help of stronger tiered equipment. Still, it was a little too early, since the equipment could only be equipped at Level 120. On the other hand, the officials had released information about the Dragon Throat Fortress.



Starting from the 6th to the 10th boss, there would be Battle Companion equipment drops. Coincidentally, the Hardcore mode of that dungeon would drop Level 100 Violet-Platinum equipment. Hence, it was considered to be a haven for Battle Companion equipment farmers.

After distributing the last two [Amateur Aura Stones,] there was no more loot on the ground. The [Aura Stones] were given to Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue, and both of them immediately used the stones to upgrade their Aura level to Level 6. Han Ying Xue could provide an 18% extra healing rate, and the other Aura increased the Critical rate of the party by 6%.

Once the quest was dealt with, everyone left the place, leaving Zhang Yang alone to run out of the cave by himself. Zhang Yang leaped on the Thunderhawk and flew out of the Red Skinned Orc Camp and submitted the quest to acquire the Light of Miracle. With the Light of Miracle in hand, Zhang Yang could finally complete the seal breaking quest.

Zhang Yang came to Roger Kluge. Hellscream and confronted the old orc. The orc had once again praised Zhang Yang for having orcs blood flowing in his bloodstream for being strong and brave.

Sadly, the quest's rewards limited him to pick only one out of the four. Naturally, Zhang Yang picked the Light of Miracle instead of the other three rewards. The three rewards were Level 100 Violet-Platinum Cloth, Leather, and Heavy Metal armor. At the current stage of the game, those armors would still fetch up a good price on the market.

Zhang Yang had not yet built a Teleportation point in Morning town, hence, he used the Territory Baron's teleportation skill to return to Tukula Fortress and headed to Pandemonium dungeon.

At his current strength, challenging the Hardcore mode of the Pandemonium was a walk in the park. With haste, Zhang Yang defeated the stone giant and talked to Margery the NPC.

"Young man! You have kept me waiting!" cried Margery with a disgruntled look. "Hmph. Adventurers in this generations sure take it easy! Adventurers back in my day would have taken 10 days to gather all three materials!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Breaking the Second Seal. Obtained 10,000,000 Experience Points!'

After complaining on and on, eventually, Margery took the sword from him with a huff. She then placed the sword on a table and started to chant random gibberish. No sooner later, the sword glowed with an intense radiance which took 4 to 5 minutes to slowly fade away.

[Sword of Purging Devourer, The Ancient Mystery] (Mythical, One-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 4,438 – 5,238

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds.

DPS: 1,728

{Level 4 Socket 1}

{Level 4 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases 20% damage.

Equip: Increases 5% Critical rate.

Equip: Grants a 3% chance to repeat the same attack to continue to attack the target.

Special: Consumes another weapon's special effect.

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 20 levels.

Level Requirement: 120

Note: The second seals has been broken.

Bound

3%? 3% attack [echo effect](#)?

Zhang Yang eyes widened with great interest. Before the second

seal was undone, the sword had only a 2% chance of repeating the same attack! Perhaps...could it...after unsealing more seals, the special effect on the weapon will be strengthened!?

Zhang Yang took out a Two-Handed Weapon which he had already prepared for this occasion from a while back. Even though the weapon was a Yellow-Gold tier, it had a special effect of inflicting a stun effect on a target for 10 seconds. The sword's equipment consuming effect targets the equipment's special effect, and not the equipment tier.

‘You have activated the Sword of Purging Devourer special effect. Please choose the weapon to be consumed. Be advised, the weapon that will be consumed must belong to you. The weapon will be destroyed.’

Zhang Yang held up the Yellow-Gold Two-Handed Hammer and selected it to be consumed.

‘ You have chosen Octagonal Stone Hammer as your weapon to be consumed. The Sword of Purging Devourer will obtain the special effect: Grant a chance to stun a target for 10 seconds on attack. Be advised, the Octagonal Stone Hammer will be destroyed in the process. The weapon of choice is a Two-Handed Weapon. During the process of consumption, the Sword of Purging Devourer will have 20% chance of becoming a Two-Handed Sword. Will you proceed?’

Hell yea!

Zhang Yang was happy. Even though 20% was low, there was still a possibility that it could be stronger! Furthermore, even though the sword does not morph into a Two-Handed Sword, he still had the Heaven's Shaker as his backup plan. That was the reason why he had not chosen the Heaven Shaker as a sacrifice for the sword.

Proceed!

Shrring!

A bright light radiated out of the sword. The Octagonal Stone Hammer started to crumble into fine particles, and the Sword of Purging Devourer started growing in length. Eventually, the sword's blade and the hilt had grown to a point where it couldn't possibly be a One-Handed Sword!

[Sword of Purging Devourer] (Mythical, Two-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 7,400 – 9,672

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds.

DPS: 2,246

{Level 4 Socket 1}

{Level 4 Socket 2}

Equip: Increases 20% damage.

Equip: Increases 5% Critical rate.

Equip: Grants a 3% chance to repeat the same attack and continue to attack the target.

Equip: Grants a fixed chance to stun a target for 10 seconds on attack. Success rate will be lowered on a boss monster.

Level Requirement: 120

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Levels.

Note: Second Seal has been broken.

Bound

Honestly, Zhang Yang thought that using a Two-Handed Hammer and a Two-Handed Sword would not make a difference since both weapon types could not activate the Axe Mastery. However, the Sword of Purging Devourer was much stronger due to its effect. Repeating the same attack over and over in a mass monster killing session would be OP as f\*ck! What would it be when Zhang Yang activates his God of War Transformation skill...?

"There's one more seal," said Margery. "The last seal has a strong

power embedded in it. I would need stronger materials to unseal it. Warrior, do you want to proceed?"

‘Ding! Margery has a quest for you: Breaking the Third Seal. Will you accept it?’

Accept!

Zhang Yang returned to White Jade Castle after the quest and socketed [Level 4 Strength Gemstones] into the sword. He then asked Han Ying Xue for Rune Stones and gave the sword a Vampiric Lifesteal effect. After having his sword upgraded in all possible ways, Zhang Yang left the castle to complete the messenger quest.

He had already sent out 23 letters in total and still have 67 more to go to trigger the Legendary tier Main Story Quest. In his previous life, he had joined the game a little too late. When the Legendary Quest was already in progress, he was still grinding in the Level 20 maps. It’s understandable for him to not know anything about it.

In this life, he will be the one triggering the Legendary tier Main Story Quest!

However, every single time when he tries to dive into the ‘zone’ and focus on something, he was bound to be distracted! This time, Wei Yan Er had returned to his villa and had brought along Zhao Bin, Zhao Yu, and Zhao Xue.

The situation was as follows, the University of Zhou Su had a rule whereby all students must be able to swim within the four years of their tertiary studies. Failure to do so would result in failing the course. It was opposed by many but was eventually accepted. After all, learning to swim was a lifelong skill. Being able to swim was a skill that would save one's own life. It could actually be quite enjoyable! However, when the university made it compulsory for students to do so, it becomes rather unenjoyable.

The Zhao sisters were all rocks who would sink into the water. Wei Yan Er was no better. In fact, she would only dare to enter the pool with a floater nearby. Hence, all four of them had decided to spend the summer learning how to swim! Even though there were many public swimming pools, the girls dared not enter such places there the hygiene was questionable. Especially when new swimmers would surely be gulping more water down than swimming!

Eventually, after some slight persuasion, everyone managed to obtain permission to use the swimming pool in Zhang Yang's villa.

Echo Effect: The sword's copying the previous attack and casting it again.



# Chapter 549: The Bliss in the Pool

---

The four floating driftwoods had no instructors with them, hence, Zhang Yang was unfortunately dragged to the pool and was forced to teach them how to swim.

The pool was situated indoors. Even though there was air conditioning inside the complex, it would never be the same as breathing the natural air of summer.

Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were distracted by the noises that the little girls made and decided to join the fray and have some fun in the water. After everyone had gotten into their swimsuits, Zhang Yang felt a great sense of bliss in the pool.

Han Ying Xue had the most smexy, bootylicious body among all the girls. In fact, she was the only one who could pull off the string bikini look. She came to the pool, wearing only thin, skimpy pieces of latex that revealed close to 95% of her skin. Two tiny patches of material covered her pointy peaks, while the straps that were supposed support the melons had completely failed at their job. When she moved, her redonculous melons jiggled up and down, left and right, making Zhang Yang's blood pump up to a dangerous level. While her top was completely "defenseless", her bottom half was much worse. Her thong was so small that only her important bush was covered, while the rest of her butt was exposed for the world to witness. Gazing at her back alone, Zhang Yang would have thought that she was completely naked, the strings were barely visible. If he wanted to, he could plunge his hands into her cleavage and bury himself in her lushness. She had the longest, fairest pair of legs around, that matched her supple arse. Zhang Yang was not alone, being lost in a dreamy land, in fact, the other

five girls present in the pool were unable to avert their admiring gazes away from her body.

In contrast to that, Daffodil Daydream seemed rather ordinary. Even though she had the perfect curves on her body at all the right places, she was overshadowed by the presence of Han Ying Xue. She had C-cup sized busts, which was considered to be rare enough among Asians. While her front lost greatly to Han Ying Xue, the one factor that made her rather attractive was her arse. She had smooth and bouncy buns that were shaped in the outline of a nice peach. Han Ying Xue loved to teased the girl so much that she would occasionally smack her bum lightly, making them bounce like jello. Zhang Yang could not help but start imagining himself taking her from behind. The sensation and the image of her buns shaking as he penetrates her from behind was extremely lewd.

What a "torture"!

Zhang Yang averted his gaze away from the two matured ladies and landed on the triplets. All of them were too similar to each other. Like carbon copies, it was extremely hard for him to differentiate one from another. Since they had yet to fully mature into full-fledged women, they had bodies that radiated with youth. Still, they were curvy and rather slim. Their lumps were filled with the right amount of joy and had yet to succumb to the harsh effects of gravity. All three of them shared the same look. Thrice the delight!

Five ladies in swimsuits, splashing about in a pool, was truly a scene that every man would want to wake up to.

On the other hand, Wei Yan Er was just sad to even look at. She was completely extinguished by the presence of all the other jewels. Bust? Zero. Buns? Zero. The only redeeming factor she had was her beautiful, young face. Zhang Yang sighed when he noticed that her chest seemed to have a bulge in them, and poked at them with his fingers.

"HEY! WHAT ARE YOU DOING!?" The little girl shouted, covering her chest.

Zhang Yang laughed. "What are you shouting at? Worry not, I will never fall for your skeletal looks. Now, tell me honestly, did you stuff something in that swimsuit? I believed you did because that bulge has never been there before."

Wei Yan Er lowered her head and sulked disgruntledly. She then slipped her hands in and pulled out two pieces of sponge. Immediately after that, her chest flattened and Wei Yan Er returned to being a flat piece of wood.

Han Ying Xue had been holding back for the sake of Wei Yan Er. After watching her remove the makeshift "pads", she laughed on and on. Wei Yan Er was so furious that she lunged at Han Ying Xue grabbing hold of her badonkers, tugging them into the water. She had tugged with such force that the rest of Hang Yin Xue followed down, including her head. Han Ying Xue was not a swimmer, and so, when her head was submerged underwater, she struggled frantically while crying for help.

The pool was only 1 meter and 20 centimeters deep. Anyone could stand upright easily. However, if one is a poor swimmer, it

would be a natural response for them to panic.

Zhang Yang rushed over quickly. Before he could lift her up, she had already grabbed onto the nearest and most prominent thing to her, which was his dong. The b\*tch...could she not grab something that matters so much to him!? At least grab it with more care! You use it too, mind you!

Zhang Yang then wrenched her out of the water and princess-carried her above the water surface.

Huffing and puffing as she tried to catch her breath, the woman then glared angrily at the little girl and screamed at her. "You stupid little girl! You could have drowned me!"

"HAAHAH!" The little girl laughed away as she floated away with the floaters around her arms, and played with the Zhao sisters.

Now that Wei Yan Er had left Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang could help but to feast his eyes upon Han Ying Xue's chest. As the water waves flowed over and off her body, her chest floated about accordingly. The sight of it, and the sensation of Han Ying Xue's graceful hands still gripping onto his flag pole, started sending blood rushing to a certain place!

Han Ying Xue was beginning to relax in his arms, but her expression changed when she felt the thing in her hand getting hard and stiff. At first, when she was drowning, she had genuinely grabbed onto Zhang Yang Jr by accident. She had been in bed, entwined, conjoined with Zhang Yang for many nights now, she

would not have made a careless mistake like that intentionally.

The little minx just loved teasing Zhang Yang, and thus, when she realized that she had flipped a switch, she did not let it go but smirked at Zhang Yang. She pulled Zhang Yang closer to her and whispered, "Does it feel good?"

Zhang Yang kept quiet and bashfully nodded.

Han Ying Xue then let his dong go free. Before Zhang Yang was left hanging, she whispered again, "Let's go to the other side!"

It was a good idea since they were only 3 to 4 meters away from Wei Yan Er and the triplets. Since the water was crystal clear, the young girls might catch the couple's funny business.

Zhang Yang cleared his throat and faked a loud cough. "There's too many people here. I'll tell you how to swim underwater!"

When Han Ying Xue heart underwater, she twitched a little and with a gloomy face, she scoffed. "What do you mean by underwater?"

"Ah. Haha. Nothing."

Zhang Yang helped Han Ying Xue doggy paddle over to the other end of the pool. It was a good distance between them, hence Zhang Yang thought that it was safe to do their little thing.

Zhang Yang stood up, covering Han Ying Xue with his back and caressing her breast up and around, sloshing the water around those mountains. His fingers slipped under her swimsuit and started to flick and pinch at her nipples.

Undaunted, Han Ying Xue immediately retaliated, her fingers slipping beneath Zhang Yang's trunks to lightly caressed the gearstick. After a short time, the little rod turned into a long, solid pole, ready to pierce the high heavens.

Zhang Yang then turned Han Ying Xue around and planted a kiss on her lips. That after, he whispered something to her which made Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes and shook her head. Zhang Yang became slightly sadden and made a sulky face. He then tried his best to persuade her again and again, and finally managed to get her to nod her head with glowing red cheeks.

She then caressed Zhang Yang face and sucked in a deep breath before going underwater.

After a short, awkward moment of waiting, Zhang Yang then felt Han Ying Xue's warm hands pulling down his trunks. His stiff rod was then covered with a warm and moist sensation. The space around his little rod became tighter by the moment and he could feel a powerful suction around his shaft. Zhang Yang thrust his head backward at the surge of pleasure that rushed to his brain. The guilty pleasure of it was multiplied when he could hear the chitter-chatter of Wei Yan Er and the triplets behind him.

Han Ying Xue might have a hidden talent in holding her breath. She was underwater for close to 2 minutes before resurfacing. She was panting heavily, her chest heaving up and down, which made Zhang Yang craved for more. Zhang Yang kissed her again and asked for it one more time. After another session of teasing and persuading, Han Ying Xue let out a loud sigh before she went underwater again. The similar sensation of warmth enveloped him again.

Just when he was about to unload, Zhang Yang heard the sound of water splashing about behind him. Zhang Yang quickly tried his best to conceal his front and craned his neck over his shoulder. He saw Zhao Bin swimming over, with a floater below her chest. Fear basically paralyzed him! They were going to be caught!

Shush Shush! The sound of the water splashes grew louder as Zhao Bin got closer to him.

URGH!

Zhang Yang shot a powerful blast of load in intense pleasure.

"Owph!" Han Ying Xue shot out of the water with a loud splash. Just as she was about to open her mouth, she quickly swallowed a mouthful when she saw that Zhao Bin was just behind Zhang Yang. She glared at him angrily. Her cheeks were raging red with a slight hue of bashful pink.

"Brother Yang, Sister Snow, what are you guys doing?" Zhao Bin hovered over the water with the air of her floating ring. It seemed

that Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue were safe.

"Oh! I'm teaching the snow witch how to swim underwater!" said Zhang Yang casually.

Han Ying Xue's coincidentally ragged panting what sold off his lie.

"Hm. Okay then," said Zhao Bin as she paddled her way back to rejoin Wei Yan Er. Zhang Yang's eyes were sharp enough to notice a faint line of bashful pink in her cheeks.

Just after Zhao Bin left, [a small patch of white foam floated upwards and dispersed.](#)

Zhang Yang then sighed heavily and put up a fake annoyed tone. "Dear sister, you have just conducted an act that has killed many innocent lives!"

Han Ying Xue was greatly aggravated. She then curled her fist up and punched Zhang Yang's chest as hard as she could. In the end, she retracted her fair, gentle hand in pain. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, was not affected by it. "It's your fault! Who in the right mind you want a blow---ARGH! You made me swallow that disgusting sludge!"

Zhang Yang laughed it off but silently, he blamed himself for not able to endure longer. He was with two world-class hotties, but was still unable to last longer than a dynamite bomb! A single



touch and kaboom--!

"Noob---tank! Come---and---teach---us---swimming----!" cried the little girl as loudly as she could.

"Scram!" cried Han Ying Xue as she shoved Zhang Yang away. She covered her mouth and ran back into the villa. Perhaps...she was going to wash her mouth.

Zhang Yang laughed and swam back to the chirpy little girls. First, he taught them how to exhale underwater, how to properly thread the water with their hands, and the most important one, how to float on water without the need of a floater. Naturally, all of the teachings required Zhang Yang's physical touch. Zhang Yang was fine with little girl since she was like a little sister to him. Besides, Wei Yan Er flat board body was extremely hard to appreciate.

On the other hand, the Zhao triplets had given Zhang Yang a hard time. Their youthful, young bodies had the potential to grow to be like Han Ying Xue's. Even though Zhang Yang had just unloaded, he could feel his little Zhang Yang Jr. getting ready for round 2.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He was a good man. He would never touch a woman with any ill intent. Well, in the case of Han Ying Xue, she asked for it. However, when instructing someone to swim, it is inevitable that he would accidentally touch their bodies. Touching their supple butts to correct their position was still somewhat forgivable, but Zhang Yang felt extremely guilty when his hands accidentally grazed their still growing chests. This went

both ways, even the three girls would occasionally lose their sight in training and could not help but to fall for Zhang Yang.

...

After spending close to 2 hours in the pool, everyone played a little before getting out of the pool. Everyone was tired and ordered take out to be delivered to Zhang Yang villa. After dinner, the four university students were exhausted and were dragged along by Wei Yan Er to stay for the night. The villa had many rooms anyway, even if Wei Yan Er drags along a few more friends over, it would not be much trouble for the villa. That is, if she manages to give a valid excuse to Zhang Yang.

(1): If you must know, the white foamy thing is Zhang Yang's sperm.

# Chapter 550: A Malicious Invite

---

After dinner, Han Ying Xue sneaked into Zhang Yang's room and they spent the entire evening banging each other up. At some point, his bed started creaking and loosening up. It had had enough of their madness.

For a few days now, Sun Xin Yu had been extremely busy with a big case at work. She had not been able to come back to the villa and had been resting in the office or in her car. Occasionally, she would log in for a while and disappear without anyone noticing. It was a chance for Han Ying Xue to dominate Zhang Yang alone.

After a good bam-bam in the ham session, both lovers were soaked in each other's sweat. They continued on snuggling and cuddling for a bit. Thanks to the lubricating, lewd, dirty sweat, Han Ying Xue managed to entice Zhang Yang for one last shag by smothering him with her shining, oiled up breasts. After that, they put their gaming helmets on and got to work.

Although the Korean players are said to be extremely good at gaming, the Europeans shared a similar sentiment as well. The guild, Nihilum had been actively training and had managed to take down the 6th boss, making it 6 out of 15 bosses in their progress. The speed was rather fast, which made everyone think that they might gain the chance of taking the boss's First Clear Achievement.

Due to their insane progress, Fatty Han got anxious and had call for a group gathering to enter the dungeon to overthrow the Europeans. Ever since Endless Starlight had obtained the new

shield, his survivability had been upgraded. Combined with Fatty Han's Vampire Inheritance, and the experience of them honing their skills at the 5th boss of the dungeon for several days, it was a matter of time before they were able to proceed. Perhaps, the only aspect that they were lacking on would be the hardware.

With Endless Starlight performing his role perfectly as a tank, the party managed to take down the 5th boss of the dungeon after several times being completely wiped. Although the 6th boss was much greater than the 5th boss, the party had managed to rely on Fatty Han Vampire Inheritance Transformation to forcefully make it through the 6th boss. They had managed to pull the gap between China and Europe.

In one day, Lone Desert Smoke had managed to kill two of the Hardcore dungeon bosses and made those commentators that had doubted their skills eat their own words. Still, they had good reason to doubt Lone Desert Smoke, since they had not been performing any better at Normal mode or Hard mode. Even though they had managed to kill two bosses in one day, their ranks were only pushed up from the 20th to the 10th place. Since Lone Desert Smoke had not made much of a show battling the first four bosses of the Hardcore mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress, hence, their average rank had been going up and down, highest being at 29th rank and the lowest being at the 84th rank!

That was why there was the saying that had started spreading in the forums. No one was better at killing bosses than European players. Although China players were creative and highly adaptive, they lacked the innovation to create their own battle strategies. Previously, they were able to defeat boss thanks to imitating the Europeans, taking their strategy and making it their own. Now

that the game was on a global stage, Chinese players were unable to silently copy their strategy without being noticed.

Being bombarded with such an accusation, players of China were greatly provoked. However, results and actions speak louder than words. All of China's top guilds were performing poorly. Not only was Lone Desert Smoke not performing at their best, other guilds such as Crimson Rage, Imperial Sky, Sunset Amber, and the others were only able to match Lone Desert Smoke.

Due to their unsightly performance, the topic of "Chinese players being weak" got heated up.

Zhang Yang had been through this dungeon before, and he knew the means and methods to get pass through. However, he chose to remain quiet. He wanted to let Hundred Shots and Mountain Mover discover the strategy themselves. After all, Zhang Yang had only experienced the game till level 179. Beyond that, he could not help anyone out anymore. It was best that he starts letting them be on their own for the time being. Because of that, Lone Desert Smoke exploration party had always been in two phases, a raiding phase, and a conditioning phase.

Zhang Yang had gathered all the main party members like Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue to hunt for their own Inheritance fragments. On the side note, they had been hunting for Open-World bosses to gather strong equipment, in hopes of increasing the exploration party's prowess. Still, it was not progressing as fast as he hoped.

Imperial Sky, and Crimson Rage were doing roughly about the

same thing as Lone Desert Smoke. Ever since they had experienced the toughness of the Dragon Throat Fortress Hardcore mode, they had not been able to proceed further if they had only depended on the drops of the first few easier bosses in the dungeon. As a result, the guilds have been hunting for equipment from Open-World bosses.

Faced with such a difficulty, all of China's top guild and players were in a rather stagnant phase.

While Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were progressing rapidly in the aspect of their own character development, they had fought valiantly to refute that statement. In an instant, the forum got heated up and rowdy with commentators as they tried to compare both Lone Desert Smoke's and Nihilum's strength. However, Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were not on the same page as the forum commenters. What the commenters were focusing on were the strengths of the guilds in raiding dungeons.

As such, Zhang Yang had no reason to get himself involved. Depending solely on his Inheritance Transformation skill was not the "authentic" way to raid a dungeon, even though it was extremely efficient. If the transformation skill was only activated to kill the final boss, it would be highly useful at obtaining the First Clear Achievement. On the other hand, if the Transformation skill was used to raid the entire dungeon, it would not be enough, unless the guild had many players with Inheritance Transformation skill. There was just not enough time.

Zhang Yang shrugged at the mess around him and proceeded to complete his messenger quest. The quest itself was a draggy long

quest and would definitely waste a player's time. Especially since it was too boring! By the time Zhang Yang had delivered the 54th letter, Zhang Yang felt like he could just smash all the orbs in his inventory. As such, he felt a great admiration for the previous players in his previous life to actually finish the quest since there was no way that that particular player would know that it would trigger the Legendary Main Story quest. Yet, he had done it all, and completed it! Such endurance!

"Hey dummy? The Hell Priest guy just messaged me, inviting us to a battle in the Hovering Amphitheatre. The winner will walk away with all 10 of the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragments. Should I accept the challenge?" Han Ying Xue asked Zhang Yang, through the in-game communicator.

All 8 regions of the game were natural enemies. Hence, there was no method for a private message, nor the ability to befriend them. However, it was possible to contact a player of a different region via the standard mail service, in which, gold coins must be used.

"Hovering Amphitheatre?!" cried Zhang Yang in shock. It seems like the Hell family had lost their patience. It was weird that they had not dared to hunt Han Ying Xue for it, but had chosen to deal with her via the Hovering Amphitheatre.

Hovering Amphitheatre is a PvP matching arena where only two players could participate at a time. Hence, it was considered to be safe, since no one could barge in and interrupt the fight. Furthermore, the Hovering Amphitheatre battle had a betting function whereby players can place bets. It was not limited to just equipment, but other items such as potions and equipment. The

battle would be fair and just since the system would be sort of a host and would ensure that the winner walks away with the prize without any additional trouble.

However...how could the opponent be that straightforward?

Fights in the Hovering Amphitheatre were not the same as Battle Arenas (Team PvP). All skills and item were not limited, unlike the Battle Arena where skills and item with 30 minutes or higher cooldown will be greyed out. Lone Desert Smoke had revealed the item [Forbidden Scroll] to the world once, could the Hell family truly believe that they did not have a second piece?

It was unlikely...but how could they ensure victory via a Forbidden Scroll?

If it was Zhang Yang, he would use a [Forbidden Scroll] to counter their [Forbidden Scroll], sending them both to their deaths. Still, it was a huge risk, for even if one side dies a millisecond earlier, they would be the loser. On the other hand, the Inheritance Transformation skill. Even though the [Forbidden Scroll] was overwhelmingly strong, it was not a one-shot skill type but a DoT type skill. The Inheritance Transformation skill was much stronger as one could kill the opponent in a shorter duration than the [Forbidden Scroll]. Once the opponent is killed, the loser would be removed from the Hovering Amphitheatre.

Zhang Yang felt a little guilty, but the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance was an S class Inheritance. There was no way that he would let such a godly haul be snatched away from his hands!



Zhang Yang went into a stupor and thought about it with all his might. He was sure that the opponent had some trick up their sleeves. As such, he should too! They were not stupid, if they suddenly notice the opponent had changed their challenger, they could cancel the fight before it begins...

Perhaps...Hmm...

Zhang Yang widened his eyes at a sudden brilliant idea.

[Guising Potion]: Consume to change your appearance to a being within 10 meters away from the user. Has a 50% chance of failure and morphs the user into a disgusting being. Guising potion lasts for 5 minutes. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

Zhang Yang would take the potion and made sure that Han Ying Xue be next to him during the consumption of the potion. If the potion fails, then she should find an excuse to delay for 30 seconds until he gains Han Ying Xue's appearance.

Once the disguise is implanted, Zhang Yang's name tag will change to that of Han Ying Xue's. He would then send out the challenge and enter the battle. Even if the opponent sees through his disguise after the match starts, it would be too late for them to do anything but to die under Zhang Yang's blade. After winning, they should disappear with the haul.

Yeah.

Even though Zhang Yang dislikes cheating, an S class Inheritance was too important to let go of.

Zhang Yang collected his thoughts and nodded his head. "Yea. Tell them we accept."

"Oh. Okay then," said Han Ying Xue as she hung up and went to reply them via the mailing system. After a while, she called Zhang Yang again, "They want us to gather at Anthylor Holy City. The fight will be held there 3 days from now. Hey dummy, where is this Anthylor Holy City?"

"Sigh...It's time for you to stop doing breast exercises. They're huge enough already! It's time for you to read more about the game!" said Zhang Yang casually.

"Dummy! It's all your fault then! You grab and rub them raw all the time! What's going to happen if they start sagging!" Han Ying Xue puffed with anger.

"Hehehe." Zhang Yang laughed. Both of them were lying down on his bed in reality. He then moved his hands up and grabbed her soft, supple tits. His other hand came around and grabbed them both, teasing them relentlessly. "Research states that a woman's breast will only grow bigger when they are touched by a man! Worry not about your jugs, I will personally take care of them!"

The moment Zhang Yang touched Han Ying Xue's perky points, her legs grew weak and she started rubbing her knees against each

other. "Stupid! Not now! Stop teasing me, or....I might want to do it again..." Han Ying Xue let out a soft moan before crying out again, "Where is this Anthylor Holy City...Hmmm...."

Zhang Yang froze. Sun Xin Yu the ice queen was not at home, it was a good opportunity to give his magnum a well-deserved rest. It would be troublesome if the witch starts doing it again. Zhang Yang quickly removed his hands from Han Ying Xue's puffy cushions and slightly lowered his hands to her waist.

"The Anthylor Holy City is located in the Chaos Realm. It's situated at the center of the entire map. Like a major city, all PvP in the area is blocked. Players from all over the world could trade and place items in the auction house there. It's like the central hub for all players all over the world."

"But, isn't the Hovering Amphitheater accessible from any city? Why must we go to that bla bla Holy City for?" said Han Ying Xue intrigued.

Zhang Yang had a sudden glint in his eyes. He had only been 80% confident that the opponent would pull a trick, but now that Han Ying Xue had asked about it, he was 100% sure of it!

# Chapter 551: Disguise vs Disguise

---

There is always a draw back for disguising as someone else, that is, the fake can never perform as well as the real deal.

Hence, when a player sends out an invitation for a fight, the system will still reveal the opponent's profile information. However, a player could choose to hide their profile as a choice. It was to protect one's dignity if they happen to be defeated. In this case where both sides had no choice to hide their profile information, who in their right mind would choose to accept a Hovering Amphitheater challenge? The penalty for losing would be the deduction of levels and the Inheritance fragments!

However, when a player walks to you and reveals their profile information and name tag, even if they had registered the invitation with a hidden profile, players would take it for real and accept the fight.

Sigh.. the things people would do to cheat and lie...

Zhang Yang had called for Han Ying Xue and explained the situation to her. The witch started fuming in anger. On one hand, she was cursing the people on the other side, on the other hand, she had also scolded Zhang Yang for catching them for their act. Birds of a feather flocked together. Only a cheater can catch a cheater. That was her reasoning, which left Zhang Yang a little troubled.

"Please, I'm just being observant! Unlike you! All breast and no

brain."

Han Ying Xue raised her chest high and grabbed Zhang Yang's ball sack. "Say it again. I dare you. Who's all breast no brain?"

When men have their balls grabbed like that, they would have to surrender. Zhang Yang caved in, while his real hand caressed her fair legs and slid smoothly into her moist nether region. "Alright, you win! You're the most beautiful woman, the smartest, the best woman any man could have!"

"Hmph! Pussy!" Han Ying Xue scoffed. "Well, now that you have explained what they are going to do, how do we deal with them? I can't fight a player with the Inheritance Transformation skill.

There was no doubt about that. Zhang Yang did not have any more [Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday] either for Han Ying Xue to carry. She would be killed even if the player has a Class C Inheritance.

Sigh...such a graceful woman... Zhang Yang was truly distracted by the sensation of her thighs and her waistline. While his hands were still caressing her body in real life, Zhang Yang said, "Are you daft? If they could use some trick, we could do the same! Tell you what though, when the time comes, I'll be the one challenging them! So, let them send a player with Inheritance, we will do the same!"

"But, do you know how to make a Guising Potion in the first place?"

"Haha! Well, not yet. There's always the auction house! Even if the auction house does not have the item, we can still buy it. Fret not, these days, as long as we have the money, there's nothing in the world that I cannot buy. It's not like it's a rare equipment."

Zhang Yang spent the rest of his time completing the messenger quest and getting Daffodil Daydream to search for the recipe in the main city. Without taking much time, Daffodil Daydream called back and told Zhang Yang that there was no recipe for the [Guising Potion] in the auction house. However, there was a player that was selling on the streets and had insisted on selling it for 10,000 gold coins.

Zhang Yang did not hesitate to fork out the money since it was crucial for the plan of robbing the S class Inheritance. However, when Daffodil Daydream wanted to pay the money, the player had promptly increased the price to 30,000 gold coins.

Zhang Yang matched his pace and immediately gave Daffodil Daydream the permission to pay 30,000 gold coins. Be it 10,000, 30,000, or even 30,000,000, Zhang Yang would pay the money. However, what of business ethics? How could a seller suddenly increase the price by such an amount? Zhang Yang was not greatly offended by it and had Daffodil Daydream pay the money. When he obtained the recipe, Zhang Yang had a few Assassins follow the seller around for a kill-on-sight order. He would keep the seller hunted down for a few days, and let the greedy f\*cker know that Lone Desert Smoke is not to be messed with.

After 3 days, Zhang Yang managed to send out 72 messages. The

day of reckoning arrived, and he brought Han Ying Xue to Anthylor Holy City.

The place was a safe ground. There were no monsters around and no PvP battles. However, even though the city was safe, the route to the city was filled with many monsters with Level as high as Level 190!

Even though they were mostly normal tiered, they were considered to be as strong as an Ethereal tiered monster from Zhang Yang's current perspective. Luckily, Han Ying Xue was around to heal him, enabling him to kill one monster within 10 minutes of struggling. Both of them took close to 10 hours before they finally arrived at the legendary holy city.

Anthylor Holy City is a miracle city that floated 300 meters above the ground. The city was built on a hill with a flat top. Each structure in the city was built with a different sense of architecture. Somewhere big and flat, while the others were narrow and tall. It could be said that it was built to accommodate various races.

The two of them flew to the city and could see many different kinds of beings around. There were centaurs, minotaurs, gnomes, jinn and many more races that were never seen before. Even though the segregation of races in the pre-Chaos Realm lands was prominent, there were none in this holy city. In fact, everyone was having a good time with each other. Even a vicious Alligator Beastman could have fun playing with a little Lamb Beastman. One was drooling, while the other was having a good time being tossed around in the air.

To have such a peace in this land, only a powerful entity could have achieved it. Zhang Yang knew about the place, and naturally, he knew that the owner of the holy city was a powerful Celestial tier boss, the true Spellcaster, named Charles the Sun Chaser.

Charles the Sun Chaser was a powerful entity with a rich background. His father was an Elf Spellcaster while his mother was a Human Priest. The union of races was greatly objected by the Elven race of his father. Right after Charles was born into the world, a group of Assassins were sent to assassinate his parents. Charles was spared, and had dived into the world of the Arcane and had managed to be the first being in history to use two racial magic powers. After coming of age, he tracked down the group of assassins that had killed his parents. After removing them from the surface of the earth, he had built the Holy City of Anthylor in the Chaos Realms.

Anyone with logical thinking would be able to imagine just how powerful Charles's magic was, to be able to create such a gigantic floating city. With such a powerful Celestial tier boss residing in the center of the city, no one had dared to cause any trouble. Not even Spectres nor Demons dared step into the area. Anthylor quickly became one of the most peaceful and holy places in Chaos Realm.

Zhang Yang had taken his slow sweet time to explain the lore of the city as he walked through the city streets. As per the city law, players were not allowed to travel in the city with a flying mount. Any lawbreakers will be promptly be expelled.



The two of them walked and came to the auction house. The streets were brimming with many NPCs but there were no traces of any players nearby. Han Ying Xue then sent a message to notify their opponent of their arrival. Not long after, the opponent had sent a message back and told Han Ying Xue that they would take another 10 minutes.

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue exchanged a look. Both of them knew that the opponent had already arrived, but were trying to buy more time to get the disguise they want via the [Guising Potion].

"Well then, shall we start?" said Han Ying Xue. She then passed all five Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragments to Zhang Yang. The two of them then found a quiet corner to start using the [Guising Potion] as well.

Zhang Yang had crafted the [Guising Potion] himself, so he had managed to craft out a Transmuted version of it, lengthening the Disguise duration. Every one tier of Transmutation would provide an extra minute to the Disguise duration. During the three day period, Zhang Yang had crafted a whole pile of potions and among them, he had many bottles of Transmuted tier 10 potions which would increase the potion's duration to 15 minutes.

Still, Zhang Yang was not as lucky. He had taken a total of three bottles and only then managed to proc the disguise successfully. With a flash of bright light, he turned from an overly large chicken to an old duck and finally turned into a beautiful female priest with a huge rack. His name tag then morphed and turned into Han Ying Xue's.

Zhang Yang then reached out and rubbed his boobs. With a wide smile on his face, he said, "Woah! This is so real. I can assure you that my boobs and yours have no difference."

"..."

Zhang Yang walked over the auction house. He had made sure to sway his hips seductively with each step make a convincing Han Ying Xue. On the other hand, Han Ying Xue had hidden her profile information and had changed into a different set of equipment that concealed her identity well.

"Little Snow?"

After waiting for 7 to 8 minutes around the auction house, a man named Hell Priest came forth to Zhang Yang.

Hell Priest, Level 103, Human Male, Priest, Paragon.

Little Snow, Level 101, Human Female, Priest, Lone Desert Smoke.

Zhang Yang flashed "his own" name tag at the man. When both of them were satisfied, the man spoke, "There are no words left to exchange. Let's just get down to it."

The man hid his name tag, and his character was immediately

highlighted with an enemy's red outline. He then sent an invite to a Hovering Amphitheater class A challenge. The penalty for losing would be Level -3! At that point in time, it would take roughly 10 days to gain a level. The losing party would have to grind for another long month to regain the lost levels!

Zhang Yang accepted the challenge. He opened the wager window and placed all five of the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragments inside. This action can never be faked. After the opponent had placed their items, the system then locked and "confiscated" the items, and waited for both parties to accept the challenge.

Shush! When both of them had confirmed their selection, they were teleported into the battle field with a 5 minute countdown to the fight.

"Hahaha!"

When the battle had been locked in, no one could leave or enter the battlefield. Even if Zhang Yang chooses to leave now, he would be forfeiting the battle and would have to accept defeat and have his level reduce by 3. Since the opponent felt that he had trapped Zhang Yang, he had let out a laugh and had dispelled his [Guising Potion] effect to reveal his true self.

Dusk Phoenix, Level 102, Elf Female, Bandit, Paragon.

Grah! It's Dusk Phoenix again.

It would make sense since the opponent had taken into account the dangers of the [Forbidden Scroll]. Only A class Inheritance transformation skill would give a player a safe range of HP to take the damage, so Dusk Phoenix had been sent to take down Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang smirked to himself and quickly pretended to be surprised. "Y-Y-You cheated!"

"So what?!" Dusk Phoenix snarled through her teeth. "Blame your guild master for this. That perverted, wretched man must pay for it. In fact, all that is dear to him shall pay as well! His guild members included! Haha! I want to see his face the moment he loses an S class Inheritance!"

Sigh...Really...Women can never be offended. Zhang Yang remembered that he had smacked her butt a few times, and even then, he had used his shield, and not his own hands! Was it worth going so far to hurt him?

Zhang Yang remembered when she had hunted him in the cave for almost two hours back then. It was one of the worst experience for him. This time around, it should be his turn to hunt her down like a dog! He smiled confidently and said, "Are you sure that you can defeat me?"

"Hmph. The only trump card you have should be the [Forbidden Scroll]! I've researched it! [Scouring Doomsday] can only deal 10% worth of HP per second! The upper limit is 100,000! What that you don't know about me is that I have an A class Inheritance! After Transforming, I will have 1,880,000 HP! Even then I have a full

recovery HP skill! At most, you can deal 300,000 HP worth of damage, and I will kill you with my remaining HP!" said Dusk Phoenix, proudly and confidently.

"Oh woah. I can never calculate like that. Your calculus must be top of the class!"

"You---" Dusk Phoenix felt that something was off. The graceful woman in front of her certainly did not seem like a rascal. Dusk Phoenix sucked in a deep breath and adjusted her collar. She pulled down her collar that seemed to be too tight that it was strangling her. Her skin was so fair, unlike those of Asian girls.

"Don't provoke me. I will not fall for it!"

Zhang Yang truly believed that the woman had to be of an upper class. The way she moved the tone of her voice all hinted towards that direction. Those of which, Zhang Yang thought to be pretentious and rather snobbish.

5 minutes was about to reach its end, and a large digital clock appeared in the middle of the battlefield.

10 seconds...

Dusk Phoenix immediately activated the Blood Angel Inheritance Transformation skill. A pair of red wings sprouted out of her back, enabling her to hover above the ground with a few flaps of her wings. Her wide wings had eclipsed the sunlight behind her and

cast a long dark shadow over the field.

7 seconds...

"Dorky, let me give you a piece of advice. Before you know the opponent's trump card, do not allow yourself to think that victory is already in your hands." Zhang Yang smiled lightly.

D-D-D-D-Dorky!?

Dusk Phoenix was aggravated. If she could have started the fight then, she would have already zoomed to his neck and sliced Zhang Yang's head off.

4 seconds...3...2...1...!

The horn of war was blown, and Zhang Yang activated his own God of War Transformation. A rainbow, radiant light blasted off everywhere and a pair of magnificent wings burst out from Zhang Yang back. The wings Zhang Yang had were far bigger, wider, and more beautiful than Dusk Phoenix's.

I-im—im—impossible!

Dusk Phoenix was flabbergasted. How could her opponent have a transformation skill as well?! It was impossible! If her opponent had a transformation skill, "she" should have an Inheritance already! Why would "she" fight for more Inheritance Fragments in the first place?! Perhaps, "she" too had taken a bottle of [Guising

Potion] and had wanted to fight in the real Little Snow' stead.

It would not make sense then...to make sure that the opponent was the real deal, she had even camped at the rendezvous. For the whole time she had been watching, she had not seen the "woman" taking any potions! If she had, the Disguise effect should have already worn off! The worst part of it all was that Little Snow had been alone for more than 5 minutes! The potion would only work if the person you are imitating is within 10 meters away from you!

Could it be, that Little Snow is fighting for the Inheritance, even though she already possessed an Inheritance, all for the purpose of obtaining an S class Inheritance!?

...

Dusk Phoenix was not an Alchemist, hence, she was not all too familiar with Transmuted potions. Thus, at that sudden appearance of Zhang Yang wings, she had instantly forgotten about Transmuted potions and thought of another reasoning behind the battle. To be just like her, to be able to fly after activating the Inheritance Transformation skill, "Little Snow" must have an A class Inheritance!

Dusk Phoenix collected her senses and became serious. An A class Inheritance and the possibility of [Forbidden Scroll] being used might be the end of her. However, it would not make sense for "her" to even have a [Forbidden Scroll] in the first place! She could have already used the scroll to win the battle and obtain an S class Inheritance! Why would she choose to obtain an A class Inheritance just to fight Dusk Phoenix!?

Class A Inheritance vs another Class A Inheritance...

Hmmm. It should be a good fight then.

Dusk Phoenix smirked as she thought about it.



# Chapter 552: One Sided Victory

---

Two players, two Transformation. One fight. One winner!

Dusk Phoenix did not dare let her guard down in the face of a player with an Inheritance. She sensed that she would need to fight "her" as if she was fighting a stronger foe. With a cloud of smoke, she disappeared midair.

Zhang Yang's eyes widen when he saw that Dusk Phoenix had entered stealth mode in mid-flight.

Zhang Yang closed his eyes and calmed himself down. By the time a player can see an invisible attack, it would be too late to do anything by then. Instead of the eyes, it would be more efficient to rely on the other senses of touch and hearing. Players can sense and hear the distorted airspace, and could determine the location of the Thief and attack at that very spot to force her out of the stealth mode.

Fu.

Zhang Yang could hear a faint and inaudible sound of breathing coming somewhere from his left. He shut his eyes still and properly pinpointed her position before swinging his sword towards his left.

"Argh—" With a grunt of pain, Dusk Phoenix's character reappeared in the battlefield with a large wound in her chest. The blow had torn through her clothing, but they quickly mended itself

back. She gazed back to Zhang Yang with horror and surprised, not believing that "she" could detect her position, even while in stealth mode. The worst part of it all was when she noticed the sword in "her" hands.

Dusk Phoenix frowned and bellowed, "Y-You're not Little Snow! What are you!"

A Priest could only wield a staff. They cannot equip a sword or another weapon. That is, unless the player obtains the Inheritance called the "The Frost Swordsman". Any class would be able to equip a sword as their primary weapons. However, it did not make sense for a Priest, a magic class to rely on a physical weapon to attack. Without a proper equipment setup, even if one had unlimited Intelligence, the sword would not do any damage at all. Dusk Phoenix knew that Little Snow's character was a Priest, hence, it would not make sense for her to equip a sword.

Furthermore, the damage she had just inflicted on her, had penetrated all her Defense and had dealt 10 damage. It should have been 0!

Zhang Yang smiled widely until his teeth were exposed. "Ducky Phoenix, you have been infatuated with me for so long, yet you could not sense the real me beneath this appearance?"

Zhang Yang then removed the Disguise effect.

"YOU!" Dusk Phoenix cried with the anger and frustration of a thousand men. Old vengeance rose anew and her face was dyed in a

vermillion color of carnal shame. She did something with her right hand, and a beautiful female elf appeared by her side. She wore a white ceremonial gown which made her look like a Priestess. She must be Dusk Phoenix's Battle Companion.

"Zhan Yu! I WILL KILL YOU!" cried the deranged woman as she zoomed towards Zhang Yang and planted her swords into Zhang Yang's chest. Zhang Yang laughed at the sight of her coming at him and countered her attack with a flick of his shield. His shield deflected one sword and he used his other hand to parry the other sword with his Sword of Purging Devourer.

Ping ping bang bang!

Two players and one Battle Companion flung at each other in the air. Dusk Phoenix's Battle Companion was a healer type and had started healing Dusk Phoenix since her summoning. Fortunately, Zhang Yang was able to inflict {Destructive Smash} on her and reduced her healing rate. Still, even with her healing going on, she could never nullify the devastating attack power of Zhang Yang's immense God of War Inheritance!

Zhang Yang thought about it and realized that since Dusk Phoenix had used her Battle Companion, Zhang Yang felt that he had no need to hide Felice anymore. He had his identity exposed already anyway. The little girl might just be a little girl, but her attack power rivals even Zhang Yang!

If Zhang Yang had not been sly enough to debunk the opponent's trickery, Han Ying Xue might have just blindly entered the battle and get herself killed by Dusk Phoenix. Not only would she lose the

precious Inheritance, she would have had 3 Levels deducted from and be expelled from the Chaos Realm as a result.

Zhang Yang could not allow that to happen, as the consequences would jeopardize his guild's progress. In fact, Zhang Yang wanted to teach her a lesson. A lesson so hard and brutal that whenever Dusk Phoenix hears his name, she would start having nightmares!

Zhang Yang kept his shield on his back and spread out his wings. He shot to Dusk Phoenix and punched her forcefully in her chest. Right then, his Strength was as high as 3,211. It was more than enough to overpower Dusk Phoenix since she was a class that primarily focused on Dexterity.

WHAM! CRACK!

Dusk Phoenix was sent down to earth like a meteor, leaving behind a small crater. No one, at the current stage of the game, could fight Zhang Yang in aerial combat!

The blonde woman could be said to rival that of Sun Xin Yu's agility. With a quick tumble, she hopped away from Zhang Yang's incoming "meteor punch" and got herself to safety by jumping back 4 to 5 meters.

Zhang Yang had always thought that a woman would always protect her dignity, even in the game. When Dusk Phoenix had managed to evade Zhang Yang super punch, she felt like her dignity had been tarnished. With great anger, the woman let out a battle cry and lunged at Zhang Yang.

She knew that she could not put up a fight with Zhang Yang in the air, hence, she opted for grounded combat. It was, after all, her method of fighting for the past year. She barely had a few days worth of aerial combat experience.

"You swine! You have no honor! Gangster! Hooligan! You are no gentleman! I will kill you for it!" she cried.

Zhang Yang laughed at her pitiful retort and moved to her at an alarming speed. Even though he could not avoid taking a slash or two from Dusk Phoenix, they were merely normal attacks which would not harm him much. With the strength of the world, Zhang Yang directed a straight corkscrew punch directly in Dusk Phoenix's chest.

A loud thump was heard, along with the slow-motion sight where Dusk Phoenix's chest was blown inwards, followed with a quick haymaker, resulting in Dusk Phoenix being blown away, as if she was rammed by a train. That did not matter since it did no "real" damage. However, after the corkscrew punch, the second punch was not necessary. It was landed just to make her boobs bounce around.

Dusk Phoenix realized that and was fuming with steam, coming out from her cheeks.

"S—Shameless bastard!"

Punishing someone would mean nothing if it wasn't harsh

enough! Even if losing an A class Hovering Amphitheater challenge ends up with a deduction of 3 Levels, it was just an amount of experience points that can be farmed again. Flesh wounds will heal, but mental scar does not heal as easily. That was what Zhang Yang was aiming for, he wanted to mentally scar her so badly that she would not dare to even mention his name for the rest of his life! Well, nothing that drastic. He only wanted her to leave him alone.

Zhang Yang smirked at Dusk Phoenix and glided through her wide open legs and landed a punch at her butt. The butt of the European woman was so supple and bouncy that his punches did nothing but sent them jiggling like crazy!

Dusk Phoenix was enraged and ashamed. She quickly opened up the system command menu and reported Zhang Yang's misdemeanor. However, the system rejected the report, saying that a battle was still in place and cannot be interfered with. In fact, there was a wager in place, hence a "harassment report" will not register. If a female player feels like she was being physically harassed, she can forfeit the match and make a report.

Remember that Dusk Phoenix was a prideful woman, just like a certain someone, hence, there was no chance that she would forfeit the battle, just because the player happens to punch her tits and \*ss. She gritted her teeth and continued the fight.

Unfortunately for Dusk Phoenix, Zhang Yang was a player who had reached the Grand Master level of Supporting Attacks. She may jump around, turn invisible, and would still take a point blank range of his super punch. Still, she could still turn the tables

around, since her attack power was strong enough to drain his HP away.

There were two problems with her attacks. Even though she was powerful, Zhang Yang had over 5,000,000 HP and could restore his HP with {Shield Wall}!

Zhang Yang healing rate was 75% HP, 4,035,600 HP every 150 seconds. Dusk Phoenix must push her DPS to at least 26,904 to properly kill Zhang Yang. But it was impossible! Zhang Yang's own devastating DPS was only over 26,000! Furthermore, Dusk Phoenix's Battle Companion was a Healer-type that could not help increasing her DPS. She could only widen her eyes in despair as Zhang Yang would restore his HP every 2 and a half minutes.

It's a torture! A mental torture that Zhang Yang wanted!

Zhang Yang moved around like the wind and continuously smacked Dusk Phoenix's chest and \*ss. Every time he touched them, she would twitch and wince with rage, and would not fail to retaliate with a wild attack. From her perspective, Zhang Yang was worst than any perverted man on earth!

Since both sides had the ability to restore their HP, the battle was dragged on until it was close to 1 hour.

Dusk Phoenix had her chest and \*ss "caressed" for a uncountable amount of times. Even though it was still a game, the sensation of his fingers making contact with her sensitive areas felt like it was real!

In the beginning, she felt ashamed and angry. After that, it was numbing. Finally, after a few rounds of touching, she started to feel a little weird. The kind of sensation that made her body hot, as if something inside her was begging for release. It made her face flush with a red hue that was even deeper than vermilion! She could have just moaned out loud on the spot!

"What is going on with me!" Dusk Phoenix cried to herself. She had never felt such a feeling in her life!

Zhang Yang saw the opponent face was turning red, but he only thought that she was flustered with rage and not...the other thing. He continued on to smack and slam his opponent without giving it a second thought.

"Argh~~" She tried to cover her orgasmic moans with loud cry of angers. Her voice cracked. She was afraid of the feeling. To make thing worse, she had attained that feeling in the hands of a man that she hated!

"My god..." Dusk Phoenix muttered under her breath. For 21 years, she had been brought up, trained and cultivated by the highest of nobility. For 21 years, she had never been touched by a man! For so long, she was proud that she had never been sullied by any man the world and gained the sanctity and pride of purity. Yet, all of that was destroyed, simply by a game battle with a hooligan!

Her pride had refused to let her lose the fight. Therefore, she chose to endure the humiliating shame of punishment, or pleasure



or was it both? All she could do was to shove those conflicted emotions down and focus on the shame and revenge. Still, there was an intense conflict in her heart that made her feel like killing herself in shame!

As Dusk Phoenix was battling on with the complex feeling swarming in her heart, Zhang Yang started to grow impatient and resorted to using his sword to strike his foe. With haste, Zhang Yang hacked away at her HP. Dusk Phoenix on the other had lost the will to continue on. She had even forgotten to use the recovery skill "Blood Angel Requiem" and was killed by Zhang Yang.

Shush!

Dusk Phoenix realized that she was defeated and lost the fire in her eyes. With dead, unfocused eyes, her body disappeared from the arena, and out of Chaos Realm. Having lost 3 Levels, her level had been deducted to Level 99. Zhang Yang puffed a relieved sigh. It would be an easy job for her to reach Level 100 with her Class A Inheritance.

‘Ding! You have won the battle!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragment (4)!’

‘Ding! You have obtained an item: Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Fragment (6)!’

‘Ding!.....’

Zhang Yang’s inventory had gained 5 pieces of Inheritance Fragment immediately. He then took out all ten pieces of the fragments and they glowed with radiant light. When the light faded, a long mirky white staff appeared in his hands.

[Milkmaid Deity Inheritance Keepsake] (Quest Item)

Use: Initiates the Milkmaid Deity Inheritance quest.

Class Requirement: Priest.

Level Requirement: 100

"Hey dummy! Did you win?" Han Ying Xue bounced on the balls of her feet when she saw Zhang Yang walking towards her. She had been waiting on the streets of Anthylor for more than 1 hour.

"Yeah. Here. This is for you." Zhang Yang dropped the staff in Han Ying Xue’s fair hands that matched the staff’s color.

"Awesome! This maiden—ops. This lady will have an S class Inheritance!" cried Han Ying Xue.

## Chapter 553: A Tiny Debt

---

After initiating the S class Inheritance quest, Han Ying Xue laughed her head off as she went off to complete it. She had the big pervert Battle Companion with her as her tank, and she herself could heal at an outstanding rate. Han Ying Xue now had the ability to fight any boss below Violet-Platinum Tier all by herself, as long as the boss fight does not have a time-based mechanism.

That being said, if she is patient enough, she could fight alone. In fact, she had always been calling for Zhang Yang to help her do the rough work. It was somewhat like working for his wife. According to Han Ying Xue, she would rather do something fun with him instead of wasting time killing monsters alone.

No matter what class of Inheritance quest it may be, the first few initial quests should involve running around to talk to a few NPCs first. Hence, Zhang Yang was free to do his messenger quest while Han Ying Xue did her menial errands.

When it was close to morning, Zhang Yang was awoken by the little girl's rude knocks on his door. She wanted him to drive her and the Zhao triplets back to the campus.

Zhang Yang sighed but eventually agreed. Wei Yan Er was almost his sister-in-law. And according to her own reasoning, a sister-in-law is half of a responsibility that he has to bare. Zhang Yang took a nice, long bath on purpose, making the girl impatient, and drove them back to school with the MPV.

Before they made to leave the villa, all triplets were all addressing Zhang Yang sweetly, calling him, "Brother Zhang". Although Zhang Yang could not recognize it, Zhao Bin had a slight blush as she stared into his eyes with a sort of admiration. She would also slip past him to evade his gaze, which left him a little weirded out.

Zhang Yang drove them all to the university and dropped them off at the university entrance. Since Zhang Yang had not yet had his breakfast, Zhang Yang parked his car on the side and planned to have a meal in the university's canteen. Along the route, he spotted Yu Li who was carrying a small leather purse, walking towards the same direction.

"Huh? Zhang Yang?" Yu Li was surprised to see him in such a place. She smiled happily when she thought that he had purposely come all the way to the campus just to see her. However, when she noticed that Wei Yan Er and the triplets were with him, she sulked immediately.

"Eh?! Brother Zhang, you know Miss Yu?" asked Zhao Bin. She was a little afraid.

"Well...Yes. I do. She was my homeroom teacher when I was still a student in the campus." Said Zhang Yang as he waved at Yu Li while greeting her with a warm smile. "Good morning Teacher Yu!"

"Teacher? What is she teaching?" said Wei Yan Er with a frown on her forehead. Although she was a busybody in nature, there were a few aspects of life that she was rather sharp at noticing. She had picked up something from the way Yu Li had called out to

Zhang Yang and how Zhang Yang had greeted her back.

"Software Engineering," said Zhao Bin. The triplets had chosen different courses to study, and Zhao Bin was the only one who had selected Computer Engineering as her course. Hence, she was the only person there, besides Zhang Yang who knew her.

Yu Li paced quickly and when she saw Zhao Bin, she nodded her head and politely asked, "My, my. Good morning, girl. Little Bin, how did you come to know Zhang Yang?"

"Ehrrm. Well. Brother Yang is our friend. Yes! Just a normal friend!" Zhao Bin explained frantically. Along her sisters, Zhao Bin was the only who was rather innocent. After enrolling for more than a year, she had not engaged in any relationships with any man and was afraid that Yu Li might have misunderstood something.

Zhang Yang patted the little girl's head and said, "Time for class then, little girls. The first period is about to start!"

"Psst!" Wei Yan Er gestured for Zhang Yang to lower himself for her to whisper. "Noobie tank. You better keep yourself clean! You must not betray my cousin sister or Sister Sun!"

Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow.

"I noticed that this Teacher Yu has a big bust and a nice butt. Hmph. I'm telling you. She's not a good person!"

Zhang Yang shook his head. How could the little brat judge a person based on the size of their boobs and butts?

Zhang Yang pressed his knuckles against the little girl's head hard and patted her back. "Off you go!"

Although the little girl never enjoyed having anyone rub or do anything to her head, she was extremely comfortable with Zhang Yang doing so. It was like a family thing for her. Wei Yan Er then walked away from Zhang Yang and joined the girls for class.

cough

"I must say. You're doing a splendid job at raising so many little sisters when you're not with me," said Yu Li with a little trace of disdain and sadness.

Zhang Yang burst out with laughter, which made Yu Li slightly annoyed. "What about it? Jealous?"

"Please. I'm not in the place to be jealous of anyone. I have not forgotten my place. I am but your lover. Not your wife, nor your girlfriend. I am someone that you can use anytime you want. It is not of my concern to be bothered with whom you sleep with," said Yu Li with a monotone voice as she turned around with a saddened sulk on her face.

Ever since Zhang Yang had been breaking beds with Han Ying

Xue and Sun Xin Yu, Zhang Yang had never once been left alone by the two vixens. During the daytime, he was "allowed" to go to the office. Although there were 6 super bootylicious babes in his office, ready to do his bidding, Zhang Yang was not at all affected. Even little Zhang Yang Jr. would refuse to stick its head out for a peek. Clearly, his standards had been elevated to another level. That, or little Zhang Yang was just too exhausted from pacifying the two-universe classed vixens at home.

With that going on with his life, Zhang Yang had no more energy to meet Yu Li. Still, Yu Li had been left with a dry spell for only a short two weeks!

Zhang Yang felt that a man was rather different compared to a woman in terms of sex. Women would only do it with a partner that they like. On the other hand, there were many men who would willingly have sex with any women. The only question was if the female partner could make them rise to the occasion.

Yu Li had the body of a mature woman, and since Zhang Yang had given her the experience of love not long ago, she had started to feel a little lonely when Zhang Yang had left her "unentertained" for two whole weeks.

Zhang Yang did no need to ask, as he already knew that she was dying to be filled up by him. Hence, he held her hands and pulled her close to his face. "Get in the car."

Yu Li could feel the heat rising up to her heart, but she refused to make it easy for Zhang Yang. "What for?"

"A man can do many things when he is not hungry. I need to have a meal first before I can repay the debt I owe you!"

"Poppy talk!" said Yu Li as she rolled her eyes. In the end, she sat in the co-driver's seat.

Zhang Yang quickly got to his driver's seat and glanced at Yu Li. She was wearing a short-sleeved blouse that was completely covering her chest. It seemed that she had been reserving herself. However, the one thing that she failed to cover was her long slender legs. Compared to anyone else, Yu Li might be the one woman with the fairest and sexiest legs. Seeing her legs alone was more than enough to satisfy his hunger.

The little girl had made things harder for Zhang Yang. When she was sitting in the co-driver's seat, she had made the seat position so low that when Yu Li had sat down on the seat, her legs were lifted upwards. Her pencil skirt was pulled backwards. Perhaps a little too far back that Zhang Yang could see the dark, forbidden region between Yu Li's magnificent thighs.

The dragon was awoken and Zhang Yang turned off the car's engine.

Yu Li caught his burning gaze and was happy and frustrated at the same time. Her body craved for the touch of the man that she loved, but to push Percy into the puss in the car would be a little too shameful. Plus, it was morning! There were many people, students, or even her own colleagues who will walk through the



parking lot!

"Why did you turn off the engine for? Go on, didn't you say that you were hungry?" said Yu Li.

"That's right. I'm hungry, so I'll devour you." Zhang Yang pulled her head closer to his and planted a hot passionate kiss on her lips. His left hand traced the lining of her neck and shoulders, his right hand crept beneath her skirt, "digging" through the bushes and into her cave.

Yu Li already had an amazing body before Zhang Yang was with her. That was one of the reasons, or rather, the main reason why there were too many horny male students in the university had beat their meat to her pictures. Now that Zhang Yang had plucked her fruit, her body had become more beautiful. Her perky curves had become curvier, not to mention so much bigger that Zhang Yang's wide hands had trouble cupping them whole.

Zhang Yang continued to play wrestling with her tongue until he saw that her twin peaks were standing out for him, reading to be teased.

After a while, Yu Li opened her eyes and came back to her senses, just when Zhang Yang was about to bury his face in between those protected mountains.

"Are you mad!?" said Yu Li as she pulled herself away from Zhang Yang's embrace.

"What?" said Zhang Yang.

"Do you want to be on the 8 o'clock news?"

Yu Li saw the sudden disappointment in Zhang Yang's eyes, as if a little kid had had his favorite toy confiscated. She felt a sharp pain in her chest. Although she could not deny that she wanted him inside her right there and then, it was too much of a risk to bear. She would still, like any other woman, prefer a safer atmosphere to make love in.

Zhang Yang cried out. "It should be fine! My car windows are heavily tinted glass. No one can see through the windows!" said Zhang Yang as he removed his fingers from the system of caverns and bushes. There was a coat of glittering liquid in his fingers. "Teacher. It's not good to lie. You want me to explore your cavern more, don't you!"

"Erhm...Well. I do. But not here."

Yu Li caved in. When she heard Zhang Yang utter the word "Teacher" she felt a sudden rush of carnal need for him. She felt the need of a man, no, not just any man. She wanted Zhang Yang to dominate her. The only thing that mattered was that he was hers.

Zhang Yang retracted his hands and looked as if he was about to cry. Yu Li then grabbed his hands and sucked on his fingers. Her tongue slithered around his thick, rough finger. After she had tasted her own fountain of youth, she removed his fingers from

her mouth with a soft pop. "My office. Let's go."

Zhang Yang's eyes widened with a glint of joy. He then started the car and drove like the drivers of Initial D to the I.T department. The two of them entered the faculty and met a number of lecturers along the way. Many of them did not recognize Zhang Yang and some of them had already forgotten that they had once taught him. Some of them had even asked Yu Li if Zhang Yang was her boyfriend. Their voices were clearly disgruntled.

Yu Li was a flower. Perhaps, the most beautiful flower in the entire faculty. She could be one of the top girls in the entire campus! It was not clear as to how many male teachers or students were in love with her. However, Yu Li had been guarding her heart closely. She never again fell for the temptation of money or promotion. In fact, she had been reserving herself for quite some time after Zhang Yang had rescued her. Hence, none of the male lecturers had a chance to taste her forbidden fruit.

They say that fruits that were not allowed to be plucked, tasted better. In the campus, when Yu Li walked across the pathway, many male lecturers had been giving her flowers and some had even proposed a relationship out of wedlock! They had been barging into her office, even though they had no business with her.

Hence, Yu Li was rather popular among the male lecturers, but was rather scorned by the female community. They had been calling her a sly fox behind her back. When Zhang Yang was still a student, he had been hearing such things. However, he had not dared to do anything about it. But now that he was taking care of

Yu Li in this lifetime, Zhang Yang "retaliated". He had publicly "announced" that Yu Li belonged to him by placing his hands over her hips. He even did a princess carry for her, carrying her up in his arms from the stairways to her office door.

"Sigh...What if others had recognized you as one of my students. I can't bear to live with that shame!" said Yu Li as her face was as pink as a ripe peach.

"What's wrong with that? As I recall, teacher-student relationships are all too common!" said Zhang Yang as he gently placed Yu Li on her office chair. He locked the door behind him and planted his face in between her thighs.

Originally, Yu Li was in no position to own an office room. However, due to few malicious acts of a few maverick male officers in the department, and a bunch of support from the male lectures, the department had agreed to assign Yu Li to her own private office instead of a small cubicle, despite many silent protests from the female lecturers.

The surprising feature of the room was that the noise cancellation of the room was too good to be true. When the windows and door was shut, there was absolutely no noise that could leak through, even if there was a gun fight right outside the hallway! The room was set up that way to allow the maverick male lecturer to have their alone time with Yu Li. However, Yu Li had been reserving herself to a point where no men could even come close to touch her hands! She was one of the prime example of women practicing the older traditional ways. However, Zhang Yang had been able to tear that barrier down and Yu Li had been

loyal to only Zhang Yang alone. She would never allow other man besides him to touch her. From her own perspective, it was a professional courtesy. She was, after all, Zhang Yang's "property".

"Hmm~ You bad boy. Are you going to molest a teacher?" said Yu Li as she gazed at Zhang Yang with her seductive eyes. The buttons on her blouse had been unhooked, which made her protected mountains burst out, revealing her sinful, black laced undergarment that was slightly transparent, allowing Zhang Yang to see the different tones of colors at the tips of her mountains.

"Teacher. Do you want me to molest you?" Zhang Yang laughed.

Yu Li groaned with pleasure when Zhang Yang buried his head and used his tongue to roughly caress the bell above the temple. As she moaned and groaned, she held his head up and pulled him closer to her face. "You have been waiting for so long. I think it's time to let the dragon loose."

When she pulled Zhang Yang closer to her, her hands had been rubbing hard against his groins. She could feel the great pressure of it that was pushing against the fabric of his jeans.

She had been waiting for 10 days and had amassed a dry spell so long that Zhang Yang would need to summon the rain from the high heavens to quench her thirst for him.

Without waiting any longer, Zhang Yang unzipped his jeans and introduced the hidden dragon to the crouching tiger. Yu Li gazed at Zhang Yang with unfocused eyes.

Neither of them could wait no longer. Zhang Yang pulled her undergarment aside and Yu Li swallowed the dragon whole.

The echoes of their delightful moans were only limited to inside her office, following close with the start of their journey to pleasure town.

# Chapter 554: The Pirate's Treasure Map

---

They say, that being a firefighter takes a real man to the test of his limits. Only with a steel mind and a strong body could they last against the fiery flames.

Zhang Yang sat in a spare chair in Yu Li's office, tired and panting like a mad dog. His first crush had the face that read fatigue, but she still had some energy left to her. There were sparkles on her face that made her even more attractive than before.

Sigh...both of them were the same breed of human, so why was he the only one panting for air?

Zhang Yang was so tired that he could barely lift his legs, yet Yu Li was still radiating with beauty!

"Hah. Why are you so tired?" asked Yu Li after she came back to her sense after being in trance. She got up to her feet and gently patted Zhang Yang little dragon. "Did you have a little too much nectar?"

"Hehehe!" Zhang Yang pulled Yu Li into his embrace and made her sit on his lap. "You should stay with me!"

Yu Li eyes widened at his proposal. Her breath started to speed up as she stared at Zhang Yang with disbelief. Her clothes were in a mess and her undergarments were somewhere in the corner of her office. As she caressed his face, she asked, "Are you being serious?"

Tears started to leak out of her beautiful eyes.

Zhang Yang cocked his head. He felt it funny that Yu Li thought it was weird. Since he was already in a relationship with Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue, having one more mouth to feed would not be a problem. That aside, he had gotten his relationships straightened up. He would not pretend to like someone, make love to them, and disappear into the night. He will take in Yu Li as well to break even with her.

That being said, Yu Li was the first person that he had fallen for in this lifetime. Even though he was infatuated with her for four years, the extinguished love for her had been rekindled. No wonder there was an old philosophy stating that feelings develop like tree rings, the longer they have been together, the stronger their relationship would be.

Even though Yu Li had always treated herself as Zhang Yang's lover and not a real girlfriend, Zhang Yang had never shared the same sentiment. She had never been able to find a stance which she could be proud of. However, if Zhang Yang allowed her to move in with him, it meant that he saw her as someone special.

Women always wanted a position or a status to be proud of. Men however, would shed blood for it.

A tree grows with nothing but it's bark to protect it, and asks for nothing more. Anyone can do anything that they like, as long as they wanted. That was why Zhang Yang would not go back on his words, even if he wanted to escape, for he might cause her to feel broken on the inside.



"Of course, I'm being serious." Zhang Yang pulled her closer and gently traced the side of her jaw. Both of them snickered with happiness and Zhang Yang laughed, "Come, give old daddy one more shot!"

"One more? Sure!" Yu Li's voice crack as she was already crying, but her cries turned into tears of joy. She punched Zhang Yang firm chest and gracefully slid her hands onto his crotch. "Let's go. One more!"

Zhang Yang was joking initially and did not know that Yu Li was being serious about putting Percy into the playpen again. If he had known earlier that Yu Li was still in the mood for more, he would rather take a beating to the face than ask for it!

As they were banging each other brains out, he thought of how to deal with Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu. Perhaps, Han Ying Xue might verbally allow it, but she might sneak into his room in the middle of the night to snip his junk off and become a modern world's eunuch. As for Sun Xin Yu, she might just come up to him directly and blow his brains out with a shotgun.

Still, even if he had manages to make do with both women's anger, what about bedtime? The next time he does it, he might have to break 3 legs to entertain them all! 2 females are more than enough to break his spirit, adding one more to that equation might straight up break his spine.

Sigh... Hugh Hefner please help me...

Zhang Yang sighed heavily at the thought of satisfying three ladies in one night. But, no matter what, he would never try to reject any one of them!

Tok Tok Tok.

Just after Zhang Yang unleashed his load into Yu Li, a gentle knock was heard on the door.

Zhang Yang cocked his head and asked Yu Li. "Didn't you say that you're free for the morning?"

"That's right. I don't have any classes or appointment until the evening. Perhaps its something important," said Yu Li as she got off the now limp dragon. She quickly slid back into her laced thongs and tidied herself up. She ignored her bra and buttoned up her blouse. Just then, she noticed love marks all over her breasts. Her nipples perked up again at the thought of him slobbering all over her.

Zhang Yang on the other hand only needed to pull his pants back up, zip it, and he was good to go. Perhaps, he might need to dry his slightly wet pants. Zhang Yang laughed at his own drenched pants while Yu Li started bashfully stared at it. It was her doing when she had squirted all over him when Zhang Yang delivered her to heaven.

"Look here! Haha! There's someone outside waiting for you! Imagine what would they think if they saw me like this! I might be

the one getting into trouble! I mean, I peed myself! Haha!"

The two of them quickly tidied the place up and made sure that it does not look like they had just banged each other brains out. On the other hand, Yu Li's radiant complexion was still there, no matter how hard Yu Li tried to hide it. She then waltzed to the door and opened it. It was Zhao Bin, the young, taller little girl who was on the verge of becoming a beautiful maiden. Yu Li was able to recognize her via her clothing since all triplets wore different sets of clothing.

"Miss Yu. We are about to host a barbeque party in the countryside to celebrate the starting of a new semester. Would you like to join us?" Zhao Bin. "Woah! Miss Yu! Your complexion is radiating with beauty! What kind of makeup did you use? Its effects are most invigorating!"

Zhang Yang chuckled quietly at her comment. "It's called being filled up with love my dear. Love brings life joy and that joy is being expressed out via her complexion!" said Zhang Yang to himself. Luckily, Yu Li office was huge enough to allow Zhang Yang to hide behind a cupboard, and out of the line of sight. After the two of them chatted for a little bit, Zhao Bin left and Zhang Yang came out to give Yu Li one last kiss before he went to the office in Silky Soft Holdings.

After he bade Yu Li goodbye, Zhang Yang left the campus and went to his office after a good shower. There, he joked around with the secretaries, locked the doors, and logged into 'God's Miracle' to continue the messenger quest.

As time passed, more and more players had entered the Chaos Realm. When Zhang Yang logged into the game, he noticed many players in Morning Town. Even the daily Teleportation fees had made Zhang Yang a rich man! Since China only had one territory in the Chaos Realm, Morning Town would be the only place to teleport to from the Ten Barren Sea to the Chaos Realm! It was a never-ending golden goose that would continue to lay many more golden eggs for Zhang Yang!

On the other hand, the Japan-Korea region players were having a tough time, since their own shortcut, Winst Castle had fallen into Zhang Yang's hands. Their own way to travel to the Chaos Realm was the Ten Barren Sea, which would take them close to 7 to 8 hours of swimming. The guild that was responsible to take back the territory, Sakura no Nagare Mae had become the clown of the year. Every day, countless of complaints would be thrown to them. Eventually, the guild members had to hide their name tag when they left town.

Before the war, Sakura no Nagare Mae was once the target for players of Japan to achieve. The guild was ranked 3rd in the entire country and many of them would be willing to spend their life savings just to enter. After the war, the guild had plummeted in the rankings and had become a laughing stock. Amao Kuyoshi, the guild leader had lowered the requirement of joining the guild, day by day. However, after the week, there were many players leaving and no players entering. Disbandment would only be a matter of time for him.

...

Han Ying Xue had come to a roadblock concerning her Inheritance quest, where she was required to kill a Level 150 Ethereal tier boss. The team was gathered to defeat the boss but overwhelmed by it. Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han had both used their Transformation skills, however, their attack had been suppressed greatly due to the immense level gap. Furthermore, even though Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were present to heal Zhang Yang, even they could not keep up with the overpowering boss. Zhang Yang had even tried to spam {Shield Wall} with every chance that he got, but had still failed to defeat the boss. The team only lasted for 3 to 4 minutes before perishing.

The boss was, after all, an S class Inheritance quest boss. Unless they could use a [Forbidden Scroll] that could greatly reduce the boss' attack, they might have to sortie the entire guild. Even so, it would still be a challenge since the boss' AoE attack was too strong. Hence, Han Ying Xue had to put her quest on hold.

It could not be helped. The S class Inheritances are just too difficult to obtain. Since the Inheritance was strong, the quest set to be completed would be proportionally difficult. It was to give a chance for players to choose lower classed Inheritance instead.

Right then, the most common and popular class of Inheritances was the C class.

Even B class Inheritance quests required players to defeat an Ethereal tier boss. Ethereal tiered bosses were already tough, to begin with and due to the immense level gap between players and the quest, defeating it required players to be at least 10 to 30 level above the level gap. On the contrary, C class Inheritances only

required players to defeat a Level 130 Mythical boss. Since the requirement for players to enter the Chaos Realm was at Level 100, players had already gained enough power and level to defeat the boss with just a small party. That explained the popularity of a C class Inheritance.

On the other hand, C class Inheritances were the lowest of the classes that had the Transformation skill. It allowed players to still enjoy the heroic sensation of being able to take on 10 players or even 100 players at a time. Hence, many players that were too impatient to grind their ways to a higher level, and had focused on obtaining the C class Inheritance instead.

Even though the fragments were unable to be put up on the auction house, players could still sell them off via normal transactions. Right then, one piece of a C class Inheritance was worth roughly a million each. Zhang Yang was astonished at the fact that players were willing to burn a hole in their pockets just for the sake of an Inheritance Fragment.

Zhang Yang had been busy delivering messages and had neglected his grinding session. 10 days after he had procured the Milkmaid Inheritance Keepsake for Han Ying Xue, he had only managed to reach Level 106. Before that, he was at 80% of Level 105. In 10 days, he had only managed to accumulate 20% worth of experience points, which was truly slow.

Wei Yan Er had been taking the triplets to the villa's swimming pool on every alternate day of the week. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang had to become their instructor. There were many weird moments where he had accidentally touched places where he

should not be touching, Zhao Bin would be gazing, not glaring, not looking, but gazing into Zhang Yang's eyes with her unfocused eyes.

Yu Li had chosen to postpone moving in with Zhang Yang. She was unable to leave her mother alone. Thus, she had professed to Zhang Yang that his intention alone was more than enough to please her heart for him. However still, she had called Zhang Yang many times in a week to help her ease her itch that only he could scratch.

...

After a few days, Zhang Yang had finally delivered the last magic orb letter. The delivery of the letters required no particular order. Zhang Yang only needed to look at the world map and plot his way into a complete circle to ease his journey. The last letter was addressed to an island called Diggea Island, located among the Islands of Camarro. The island had 3 of Marronda's lovers, which was the lowest number in a map. Hence, Zhang Yang had made it his last stop.

After crossing the ocean and several islands, Zhang Yang descended down to the island, outside a village. The village was located at the edge of the island. The people in the village were mostly fishermen, most of their houses had fishing nets being washed and hung up to dry. Zhang Yang asked around, delivered more letters and finally came to his final stop. The house in front of him was made of clay and there was a 40 year old, beautiful lady who was hanging her laundry outside. Her name was Waniaya, and she was the last NPC Zhang Yang had to deliver Marronda's

letter to.

"Excuse me, Miss Waniaya!" cried Zhang Yang.

Waniaya stopped and turned around gracefully, saying, "How may I help you, a man from a distant land?"

Zhang Yang smiled and walked closer to her and passed her the magic orb letter. "Miss. I am here as a request from Marronda."

"Ah! That hooligan. He still remembers me?" Waniaya puffed angrily but there was a trace of jubilation in her eyes. After she held the orb in her hands, tears started to flow and tainted her fair face.

"sob, that idiot. He said that he wanted to travel across the world, to search for treasures and discover the mysteries of the land. sob. In the end, he that dream killed him!" Waniaya cried in sorrow.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Message for Waniaya . Obtained 10,000 Experience Points!’

Ah. What a drag. The experience points for running around, far and wide was only 10,000 experience points? It was far lesser than the experience points gained from killing a single normal tier monster! The player that had completed the quest in Zhang Yang past life must have been a lunatic!

Zhang Yang consoled the woman and said, "Madam, let those who have passed be free. I'm sure that Marronda would not want



to see you like this."

Since the NPC had not promptly given him any subsequent quests, Zhang Yang had to do something to trigger the quest. He had to, or else the 90 letters would be for naught!

Waniaya nodded and wiped away her tears with her sleeves. "Young warrior. I'm sure you've had to travel everywhere to deliver that idiot's letters?"

"Hm? Letters?" asked Zhang Yang. How did the woman know about his quest?

"That pervert idiot must have thought that I was daft. I know that I am not his only "true love"," said Waniaya. "No matter. The man is dead now. Makes no sense for me to be angry now."

Zhang Yang laughed at her comment and said, "That's true. He is dead."

Waniaya eyes widened and she turned to Zhang Yang with a glint in her eyes. "Warrior. Do you know what I did for a living when I was younger?"

"Hmm? What is it?"

"When I was twenty years younger, I was a pirate. A captain at that. I had set sail to venture the ocean. Back then, there was none had not heard of the pirate "Poison Widow" and would be

trembling with fear! Until one day, I met that idiot and made him my slave. In return, he had enslaved my soul. I had fallen in love with him and we had traveled the seas for a month. However, he had to leave me. Speaking of things like dreams and ambitions. It was painful for me, but I had to let him go."

Waniaya was mournful. Perhaps she had regretted the day she had agreed to let Marronda go. If she had not, perhaps, he would still be alive!

She paused for a while. "To have him back, I sneaked into the strongest pirate crew of my time, into the lair of Ditch, Leader of the Blackbeard Pirates and stole a map that led to his treasure chest. However, I was found. A search and kill order was placed on my head. Eventually, I had to bury the "Poison Widow" and hide here in this village. I wrote a letter to the man and told him about the treasure, hoping that one day he would come back to me to search the treasure together. However, I have been waiting for so long and never saw a trace of his shadow."

Treasure Map!? That is the one! It should be the link to trigger the Legendary Main story quest!

From out of nowhere, Waniaya took out a piece of goatskin paper parchment and said, "Now that he is dead, I have no reason to keep this with me. Warrior. I give this to you. However, I must tell you this. This map is only half of the complete map. Ditch has the other half. Back then, he only had this half of the map. Now, I heard news that he had just found the other half. Warrior. Ditch is currently still searching throughout the world for this other half. If you want to have the complete map, you must go to his lair and

steal the other half from him!"

‘Ding! Waniaya has a quest for you: The Pirate’s Treasure Map. Will you accept it? ’

Hell yeah! It was a possibility of triggering a Legendary Main Story quest!

# Chapter 555: Baroque Island

---

[The Pirate's Treasure Map] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: You have acquired half of a treasure map. The other half of the map is in the hands of Ditch, Leader of the Blackbeard Pirates. Complete the map and you may have a chance of owning the treasure chest that belonged to the legendary Pirate King Roger. Be advised, Ditch is not an easy foe to deal with. Numerous residents of the Camarro Islands have heard the name and would advise you to leave. Consider your options carefully and react accordingly.

Completion: Obtained the Complete Pirate's Treasure Map 0/1

Zhang Yang frowned at the description of the quest log. They had left out a crucial detail for him to proceed on with the quest. The location of the pirate's lair. Luckily, Zhang Yang had not yet left Waniaya's side. He could simply ask her about it.

"The Blackbeard Pirates lair is located on the Baroque Island. I must warn you. The island is completely surrounded by reefs. You might lose your sheep if you're not too careful there." Waniaya started talking about the location of Ditch's lair. "That's the reason why the Blackbeard Pirates have always been able to conduct their activities without being caught or toppled over. There were many merchants who frequented the pass. Rich ones at that too, and they had hired mercenaries to take down the Blackbeard Pirates, but none had ever succeeded."

Zhang Yang nodded his head. Reefs or cliffs matters not to a player since they had flying mounts to fly directly to the island. Even if they have to rely on boats and ships, they could give it a try. If they fail and die, they could just revive on the spot and will probably appear directly on the island.

Zhang Yang bade farewell to Waniaya and summoned his Thunderhawk. The blue bird zoomed over the beautiful emerald sea and reached its destination. The island was more like a mainland. Zhang Yang was high in the sky and could not see an end to the island. The one thing that did not seem to match the image of a pirate's island was the beautiful forest that grew wildly, on and on. It was more like a holiday beach where people can put down a long chair and enjoy basking in the sun.

Zhang Yang glanced at his world map to estimate his general location and was surprised to see that the island was not on the map. It was so odd that Zhang Yang could not help but to do a little experiment. He asked Han Ying Xue to put on the Lover's Charm and use it to teleport to him. Right then, Han Ying Xue was unable to see the location of the island where she was teleporting to. After Zhang Yang had Han Ying Xue join his party, the map was revealed to her.

"Like magic!" cried Han Ying Xue.

The island was probably made to only allow players who had accepted the quest to locate. That, or other random players who had no relations to the quest would be seeing the endless sea and not an island.

After having her fun, Han Ying Xue groaned and said that she wanted to grind a little more with Wei Yan Er. She teleported away, leaving Zhang Yang to do his own business. Zhang Yang flew up to the sky, towards the center of the island. Just as he flew over a sea of trees, a cloud of dark bits shot out from the ground, towards him. By the time he noticed that the dark bits were arrows, he had taken several shots and had the Thunderhawk perform a U-turn in the air. Only when he left the forest, did the attacks stop. Each of the arrows had dealt 1,000 damage to him. He found it weird, and circled around for another pass, but when he got closer, the arrow attacks came again.

Zhang Yang took a good look at the arrows and found that they were long, wooden needles that look like the gigantic spikes of a cactus. They were not real arrows. Zhang Yang then descended down on land tried to walk on foot. Weirdly enough, the arrows did not rain down on him.

Zhang Yang then came to realize that it was a system that prevented players from flying in the air. They would have to get to their targets by foot!

Even though each arrow could deal only 1,000 damage, he would still receive a few million damage if he had stayed airborne for a few more seconds. Zhang Yang would still die within a few seconds, even if he had used the God of War Transformation. He had also tried using {Shield Wall} to block it, but still receive the same amount of damage. It seemed like the "arrows" had completely disregarded all form of defensive skills.

After walking for a few kilometers, Zhang Yang found the source

of the projectiles. It came from the sky scrapping trees. Zhang Yang had not seen such species of floras before. They had many stick-like tendrils that were growing in large numbers on the branches. They were a few feet long and were only as thick as chopsticks. It was these trees that had attacked Zhang Yang from before. The problem came next when Zhang Yang found that there was not one, not two, but countless of those trees growing on the entire island itself, turning the entire island into a strictly, no-fly-zone.

If he has to walk on land, he will walk on land.

The no-fly-zone was not really absolute. It had a few blind spots. Zhang Yang could give minute instructions for the Thunderhawk to hover a few meters above the ground. Any higher than the trees themselves, and they would "throw" their chopsticks at him, turning him into a pincushion before Zhang Yang can even use {Shield Wall}.

Those sky-scrapping trees were grown to be a form of natural aerial defense. Since the trees were so densely packed, there was no chance for him to dodge and roll in the air. If Zhang Yang chops the trees down first, he could remove them from sight and fly. However, who knows if the giant trees were capable of melee combat as well.

Zhang Yang went around the forest and circled the island by its borders, where the sea met the beach. He found a small, derelict harbor where a small boat was parked in. On the side, there was two unoccupied wooden hut.

There was a small walkway that led towards the forest behind the huts. Just as Zhang Yang had was about to walk down the pathway, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had roared in the chat, asking him to "pull" them over to his side. Their reason? To help him in his quest.

Verbally, they did say that they were here to help. However, Zhang Yang easily saw through them. These two girls were hot-headed brats who easily get bored. Perhaps, Han Ying Xue had told Wei Yan Er about the magic island and the latter had coaxed her into coming to the island.

Then again, Zhang Yang could use the company of the girls. Especially when these two excelled at making some noise to kill off boredom. He then summoned them over to the island with the [Party Summon Order]. Zhang Yang explained the situation of the island and they rode their mounts and ran or flew close to ground level.

The forest was too quiet to be normal. The trio had traveled for a long time and did not find any monsters. There were no annoying bug noises, or the sound of tree leaves rustling against the wind. They only saw tall trees among more tall trees. The deafening silence had turned the forest extremely eerie.

"Sigh...When am I going to get my S class Inheritance?!" cried Han Ying Xue. She had obtained the Keepsake, done the quest, but was now stuck at a powerful boss. It was so near, yet so far away.

"Sister...are you mocking me?! I had it worse, okay?" Wei Yan Er puffed her cheek. "The S class Inheritance has been stolen by a



noobie tank! Now, I can't even get hold of a A class Inheritance!"

Zhang Yang pretended not to hear, but he was listening to their conversation. It was best to keep quiet and lay low. If he agitates Wei Yan Er, the little girl would surely bug him till kingdom comes. If he continues acting dumb, she would forget all about it like a goldfish. However, Zhang Yang replied to Han Ying Xue's worries. "Don't think about taking on the boss before any one of us reaches Level 120. We should at least stand a chance now, if we have a few Forbidden Scrolls that could either reduce the boss' attack, or increase our party damage."

"Level 120?! That's like half a year from now! Ahhhh!" Han Ying Xue let out a frustrated cry, followed by a sulky face.

The trio continued on further, chatting along the way and found themselves out of the thick greens and into a spacious flatland. The grass that they were stepping on was soft and short. There were herds of wild horses, and cows that were grazing on the grass peacefully. However, there will still a few of the "shooter" trees peppered sparsely around the field. They would still get shot if they were fly in the sky. Even though the trees were far less numerous now, the ammo capacity of each tree exceeded 10,000. A single tree would bring them all down.

The three moved on. Wei Yan Er even purposely rode closer to the herds, scaring them away, causing a mild stampede.

"RAWR!"

From the corner of the field, there was a pride of lionesses coming out of the edge of the forest and growling. All of them charged towards Zhang Yang and the two girls, ready to maul and devour.

[Baroque Lioness] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 122

HP: 1,220,000

Defense: 1,300

Melee Attack: 8,364 – 10,064

Skill:

[Maul]: Mauls the target and grants a chance to tear away a part of target's Defense. Deals 150% melee physical attack.

[Suffocate]: Bites a target's throat, suffocating the target. Channeling required for 10 seconds. Immediate death will be inflicted once the channeling is completed. 50,000 damage or higher will enable the caster to be interrupted.

[Cry]: When in danger, the lioness will cry for help and summons a stronger Lion to rescue.

Note: Baroque Grassland's strongest beast. That is...if there were no earth worm dragons, two headed hydra hawks, and the berserking elephant.

Wei Yan Er had acquired a new weapon, she had been unsatisfied about the normal tier monsters who had fallen beneath her overpowered axe. Now that there was a pride of elite tier lionesses waiting for her, the little girl got fired up. She rushed over to the pride and swung her axe to deal over 18,000 damage with just a normal attack. Her Rage gauge was filled up instantly.

{Tornado Cleave}!

Shush! She twisted and turned in the air, swinging her axe around like a mini tornado and dealt more than 30,000 damage to all 10 lionesses.

The little girl got even more excited. She completely ignored Zhang Yang and swung her axe around as if it weighed as much as a wooden stick.

"RAWR!" All the lioness took only Wei Yan Er's damage and focused all their aggro on her. One by one, they did not wait for their turns and leaped at the little girl to maul her.

What a stupid little girl...

Zhang Yang sighed and zoomed towards her, leading his Thunderhawk which was flying only a few feet above the ground.

With a quick flap of its wide blue wings, all 10 lionesses had taken 3,000 damage from an electric attack.

Since Zhang Yang was mounting the hawk, all of its attacks would generate aggro on Zhang Yang. However, the little girl attacks were too strong to begin with. Sending out a {Thunder blade} right after her {Tornado Cleave}, dealing a total of over 60,000 damage in the span of 4 seconds. Her aggro generation rate was too fast for even the Thunderhawk's {Violet Thunder Slayer} to keep up with.

Zhang Yang quickly cast {Sacrifice} on the little girl and took all the damage that the lionesses had dealt to her. Thanks to all that damage taken, he had no need to work on filling up his Rage gauge any further.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-52,446!’

‘-59,232!’

‘-105,422!’

‘-55,676!’

...

After one blast, came another blast as the sword’s echoing effect was triggered. All the lionesses took over 50,000 damage while some were critical strikes, dealing over 100,000 damage.

After the sword had stopped blasting about, all the lioness had diverted their attack towards Zhang Yang instead.

Shush Shush Shush!

Wei Yan Er was not done. The {Thunder Blade} skill lasts for 6 seconds in total. Each second, the skill would deal one attack equivalent to the weapon’s attack power. When {Thunder Blade} ended, were a few of the lioness turned back to the little girl.

Zhang Yang remained calm. When {Sacrifice} ended, Zhang Yang casually fired out his {Blast Wave} and stunned all the monsters that were targeting Wei Yan Er. The sword’s effect procced again and dealt a total of 6,000 damage .

Zhang Yang did not stop there. He had to keep track of the aggro on all the monsters to make sure that they were attacking him, and not the little girl. He then used all of his and the Thunderhawk’s AoE attack skills to take over the aggro.

"What a party pooper!" When Wei Yan Er had spun around

enough, she noticed that she no longer retained any aggro on any of the monsters. She shrugged and sulked at Zhang Yang's best efforts at trying to protect her.

# Chapter 556: Lion's Pride

---

RAWR!

Three lionesses leaped at Zhang Yang and pinned him down to the ground. The one closer to his face opened its large mouth and sank its fangs into his throat. The pounce attack was fast and strong. Zhang Yang had been too busy dealing with the other lioness and had not paid attention to the ones behind his back.

Those three lionesses were not light, obviously. However, Zhang Yang had remained standing, carrying their weight.

It was the monster's certain kill skill. {Suffocate}!

If he does not do anything, the skill will deal the instant Death effect on after 10 seconds. It cannot be stopped with any Defense, or any amount of HP!

Zhang Yang grunted. He could feel the fangs in his throats digging its way further into his voice box. Zhang Yang bashed his shield against the lioness' head but the lioness would not budge. On the hand, Zhang Yang only made the lioness to sink its fangs deeper into his throat. The skill description had explained that only attacks dealing 50,000 damage or higher could interrupt the skill. Any supporting attacks would not be effective.

50,000 damage? Not a problem. One {Horizontal Sweep} could easily fix the problem. There was still 3 seconds to {Horizontal Sweep's} cooldown, hence, Zhang Yang ran around attacking other

lionesses while waiting for the cooldown to finish. Although it was painful for Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er could not help but to laugh at his funny appearance.

"Dummy! The lion's coat does suit you! You might even start a trend if you start wearing this in real life!"

"Noob tank! You're looking like you're actually having fun with the lionesses!" cried Wei Yan Er as she rolled on the floor, laughing.

"Witch...I'll smack your butt red when I'm done with this!" said Zhang Yang. The cooldown was completed just in time and Zhang Yang activated the skill and dealt more than 50,000 to all three lionesses that were "hanging" onto Zhang Yang.

"Auughh!" The lionesses groaned and finally released Zhang Yang. Their golden fur was tainted with splashes of red.

"HMPH!" Zhang Yang grunted as four more lionesses leaped on him. Luckily, only four that could bite his throat at one time. If one more leaped at him, it might have to find some other place to sink its fangs in. There was a limit to how long and thick his neck was anyway.

"Hahahahahaha!" Wei Yan Er dropped to the floor and laughed again.

What a useless team mate!



Zhan Yang sighed. He had just used {Horizontal Sweep} and the cool down was 10 seconds. It was just the same as {Suffocate}'s channeling time.

Fortunately, even without {Horizontal Sweep}, he could still inflict a high damage attack. The little girl may be useless in this instance, but the Thunderhawk and Felice would not stand by and let their master die.

However, as per the rules of the game, his throat had been bitten, hence, he could not even speak. However, it did not matter, since he could mentally command the Thunderhawk to attack the lionesses. On the other hand, Battle Companions would have to listen to a master's verbal command to communicate. Since he could not speak, he could not command Felice to save him.

Unlike the little girl, Felice was more proactive. The 10 seconds of the lionesses' {Suffocate}, was enough for the both the Thunderhawk and Felice to deal more than 200,000 damage. Technically, it should have already breach the threshold of the required damage to break the channeling 4 times. However, their attacks were divided into multiple hits instead of one strong hit. Luckily, Zhang Yang was still able to land a few strong hits himself, killing them off before they could finish their certain kill skill channeling.

"Well, I'll say, this place is not suitable for solo grinding!" Han Ying Xue sighed.

It takes 50,000 damage in an instance, per monster to interrupt the channeling of {Suffocate}. Zhang Yang had the ability to deal that much damage to free himself from the grasp of death, due to this God of War Inheritance, and a Mythical tier battle mount and Battle Companion. On the other hand, the lionesses always came in packs. If a random team of 5 players had encountered a pride of 10 lionesses, there would be 90% chance that they would die. After all, to pull all 10 elite monsters together, and tank powerful barrages of attacks, would require tanks of a certain caliber. Sadly, there were too few of them in the game at the moment.

If the tank is not sufficiently equipped, it would take at least 3 or 4 tanks in a group to tank the lionesses.

Now that they had one problem solved, the battle with the remaining lionesses were much easier. Zhang Yang started to use supporting attacks to smack down the incoming lionesses before they could sink their fangs into his throat. All normal attacks were nullified and only skills struck him, which barely did any damage.

Han Ying Xue was rather relaxed during the fight. She felt that Zhang Yang had finally started to treat her like a real wife and would not want her to be in too much trouble.

The fight continued and when one of the lionesses was damaged till it was left with only 20% HP, it ran a distance away from them and let out a deafening cry that reached the end of the field.

As if it was made of lightning, two, much more imposing, larger lions had dashed out from the forest to rescue their harem. The lions stood in front of the females and growled fiercely at Zhang

Yang and the two ladies.

[Baroque Lion King] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 3,750,000

Defense: 2,120

Melee Attack: 9,257 – 13,257

Skills:

[Maul]: Mauls the target and grants a chance to tear away at a target's Defense. Deals 150% melee physical attack.

[Suffocate]: Bites a target's throat, suffocating the target. Channeling required for 10 seconds. Immediate death will be inflicted once the channeling is completed. 100,000 damage or higher interrupt the caster.

Note: Every pride of lions would have 1 to 3 male lions. Even though the Lion King will not join in the hunt, it has the power to protect those to seek to harm the pride.

The male lions were huge; measuring close to 2 meters tall and 6

to 7 meters long. The wild, golden manes caught the wind that blew across the field, waving about.

Wei Yan Er's eyes widened with a certain glint and cried, "Woah! I've always wanted to rear one of them!"

"Little girl, you can't even take care of yourself, yet you wish to take care of a pet? I bet that it will die after one night with you!" Zhang Yang snickered.

"Hmph! Stupid! Idiot! Wei Yan Er stomped her feet, just like a little girl. If only she was 13 or 15 years old, her behavior would be acceptable. But she was 18! 18 years old! A university student at that!

"ahem Am I the only one here that is normal?" Han Ying Xue shouted at the top of her lungs. Zhang Yang was rather shocked at her sudden cry and turned to her. "That's two bosses right there! God! How are we going to beat them where they can just summon out random bosses?!"

Zhang Yang eyes widened and he laughed. "You freaked me out... Don't worry about the boss. It's just a Yellow-Gold boss. Treat it as an elite tier monster!"

"Easier said than done!" Han Ying Xue pouted her lips in protest.

Zhang Yang had reason to say that the Yellow-Gold boss were almost the same as the elite lionesses. The skills they had were

about the same, while the Yellow-Gold boss had stronger attacks, higher {Maul} skill damage, and 100,000 damage to interrupt the boss' {Suffocate}.

100,000 damage may be high, but it was proportionate to the Level 100 map Yellow-Gold boss prowess. Any Yellow-Gold boss above Level 60 maps was just a decorative ornament. As for a normal, average team, it may prove to be a challenge, but for Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er, and Han Ying Xue, the bosses were here to give free equipment!

Zhang Yang sudden had a thought. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had never heard of the name Baroque Islands. Technically, if there were random Yellow-Gold boss appearing so frequency, this place would be a treasure cove! There had to be more prides of lionesses in the flatlands. Every pride would have a few Yellow-Gold boss Lion Kings guarding the pride! More prides, more Lion Kings. More Lion Kings, more equipment!

If Yellow-God bosses were spawning like regular monsters, Violet-Platinum bosses should not be too far ahead! Zhang Yang had not yet proven the theory to be true, but if it was the case, the island would be a treasure island! Even though the island was huge, and the number of bosses fitting to complement its vastness, why had no guild ever occupied the island in his previous life? Such a lucrative money-making island should have been famous!

No matter how hard he thought about it, he had never heard of the island name itself!

So be it, once the quest is completed, the truth should be

revealed.

"RAAWRRR!" the lions roared and charged at Zhang Yang. It bared its fangs out at Zhang Yang, ready to mangle him from limb to limb. Each of its fangs were so long and sharp that they looked like Sun Xin Yu's daggers.

Zhang Yang planted his feet deep into the ground and forcefully knocked the lions away with his shield, via supporting attacks. His original Strength value could rival that of a Level 125 Yellow-Gold boss. Paired with Wei Yan Er's Strength Aura, it granted a bonus to Zhang Yang Strength, giving Zhang Yang the ability to bash the beasts away.

"Rawr!" The lions got back to their feet and leaped towards Zhang Yang again. The other remaining lionesses joined in together and attacked Zhang Yang as a pride.

Shush!

Zhang Yang casted {Horizontal Sweep} and dealt a wave of 50,000 damage to every monster there. The sword procced its skill and blasted another wave of {Horizontal Sweep}, almost sending all the lionesses to their last 20% HP.

The little girl cried in excitement and activated her skill {Indiscriminate} and {Tornado Cleave} after. With a swift blow, all monsters that had 20% HP or lower were instantly struck by Wei Yan Er's attack, taking more than 60,000 damage critical hits.

Wan Yan Er sighed disgruntledly and said, "Sigh. My critical hit is still weaker than the noobie tank's {Horizontal Sweep}! How sad!"

Zhang Yang shook his head. "Little girl, {Horizontal Sweep} is a 200% weapon attack skill. A Level 10 {Tornado Cleave} will only deliver 170% weapon attack. Then again, I have 50% extra damage boost from the God of War Inheritance. That is why my {Horizontal Sweep} is much stronger than your {Tornado Cleave}."

"Hmph. I see. In that case, I will get an A class Inheritance for myself, and get a strong skill that would deal AoE by 200% or 300% weapon attack! Haha! I will dominate the field then! Noobie tank! You've had your time, it's my turn!" said Wei Yan Er proudly.

"Haha. It's best for you to keep that in your heart. Aren't you scared of me slacking off? If you hit too hard, I won't be able to hold on to their aggro."

"Haha! You may slack, but my cousin sister has told me. If you dare to bully me, she will turn you into a dried up corpse!"

Zhang Yang frowned. Did that b\*tch just teach her little cousin sister how to threaten him!?

# Chapter 557: Mountain Rat

---

Two Yellow-Gold tier joined the pride but it did not help to ensure their survivability.

After some time, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue completely forgot about their Battle Companions. The little girl had genuinely forgotten about her Battle Companion, while Han Ying Xue was annoyed at the big pervert's dirty talk. That being said, Messick's attack was rather low, and since Zhang Yang was here to tank the monsters, she had no reason to summon Messick out to the field. She would only be giving a chance for the big pervert to make a move on her.

After 4 minutes, the party of three surrounded the dead bodies of the lion and lionesses. It's a shame that beast monsters do not have the tendency of dropping coins. Instead, they had dropped many ETC type items such as their fangs, mane, leather, and other useless items that would end up being sold to an NPC merchant. Still, the money obtained from selling them would be equivalent to that of gold drops.

However, ETC items were not equal to their value in gold. They take up inventory space, and that alone makes them far less desirable. If players were to grind for a long period of time, they might have to eventually pass up on them!

Zhang Yang did not have the slightest interest in picking up items that were worth several silver coins. On the other hand, the two money mongers were furious since there was no "real" money dropping from the lions. Luckily, the two Yellow-Gold bosses were



kind enough to not drop any Gray-Silver equipment but 5 Yellow-Gold tier equipment. Selling them for 500 gold coins apiece should not be much problem.

Even though Zhang Yang had surmised that the island could be a potential treasure cove, the money generation rate was still lower than the Little Merchandize Shop and the Mining Cave. Still, free stuff was up for grabs, why would he not take it then!

The party continued to move forwards and came across another pride of lionesses after just 10 minutes. This time, the pride of lionesses had only summoned one boss. Zhang Yang suddenly thought up of a funny joke and he messaged Han Ying Xue privately. "Hey, the male lion is quite a stud, don't you think? He, alone was able to "handle" so many female lionesses and is still standing strong! I wish I could be like him!"

Han Ying Xue playfully glared at him. "Perhaps you think that two of us are not enough for you. Are you planning to expand your den? Hmph. Those Zhao triplets could work. I'd say, if you just point your fingers at them, they would surely be following you like they're the mice and you're the Pied Piper!"

Zhang Yang merely laughed, but he knew that deep down, the woman was furious. It would be best for him to leave it as a casual joke. He also knew that the woman was jealous of them, since they had been coming to the pool on every alternate day and Zhang Yang would go on serving as their swimming instructor.

The three of them moved up the field, killed many more lions and finally came out of the flatlands. A few hundred meters away

were waves of hills and mountains. The mountains were not too high. At most, the tallest one should be around 200 meters tall. The mountains, however, were filled with the "shooter trees", which covered them from base to peak. It was impossible for Zhang Yang and the two ladies to use their flying mounts.

As they walked on, Wei Yan Er turned and look behind. She laughed, "I think we did something good for the horsies and cows. They can now safely graze the field!"

"Heh. Elite monsters will respawn in 5 hours time. I think, we may have only provided them with a short period of peace before they run around again!" said Zhang Yang as a matter-of-factly.

"Nyeh. You don't know how to be romantic, noobie tank!" said Wei Yan Er as she forcefully smacked his back.

The three of them moved up to the first hill. After just the first few steps, they came across an entity that had a grayish appearance. It was surprisingly as large as a fully grown German Shepard. It had a full coat of short fur, four short limbs, and a long tail that was a thick as its head. From a distance, the critter looked like it was a long black snake.

The critter moved so swiftly that Zhang Yang only managed to catch its shadow. Before he could turn his head and track its movements, Han Ying Xue screamed as the critter had already stabbed her fair legs with its long white teeth.

"F\*ck you!" Zhang Yang lunged at the critter and bashed the

critter with his shield. He stood to protect Han Ying Xue and said, "F\*ck off, you! Don't you know, only I can use my mouth at that region!" Zhang Yang turned back and grinned.

Han Ying Xue was panting and slapped Zhang Yang's shoulder. "Hmph! Pervert!" Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes.

"Chi Chi!" The critter squeaked and came back at them. Now, everyone had a clear glimpse of it.

[Baloque Giant Rat] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 105

HP: 1,050,000

Defense: 1,100

Melee Attack: 6,881 – 7,841

Skills:

[Fang Bite]: Bites a target's legs and deals 150% melee physical attack. Target will be immobilized for 10 seconds.

Note: The Baloque Giant Rats are famous for their long sharp teeth. There's nothing that they can't chew off!"

"RAAAA!!!" Han Ying Xue screamed and jumped into Zhang Yang's embrace. Zhang Yang frantically corrected his balance, laughing.

Wei Yan Er was surprisingly calm. Intrigued, the little girl glared at the giant rat and asked, "Hmph...such a big rat. It's quite rare to see one that big. Hey, if we rear one at home, would any cat dare to eat it?"

"Chi!" the giant rat squeaked. Like a giant boar, the rat sprinted towards Zhang Yang and bared its long sharp teeth, preparing to bite Zhang Yang.

From the looks of it, the rat was aiming at his crotch. Zhang Yang frowned at the thought of having his magnum getting bitten. It was different compared when Han Ying Xue did it back then. That was a love bite, a pleasant pain, as if he was between both ecstasy and pain. However, if the rat bites it, he might have to prepare giving up on "Happy Father's Day."

Zhang Yang immediately pulled his leg back and soccer kicked the rat. The poor rodent was sent flying off into the sky.

"Stupid perverted rat! Prepare to meet your maker!" Zhang Yang ran to the area where the rat was projected to fall, and slashed the rat in midair, like a baseball.

Han Ying Xue laughed and teased, "Hey dummy. The rat could be a female! Didn't you want to make a harem? Think about it. You

can take the rat home, and teach her how to swim. Perhaps, one day, the rat will bear you many children. Didn't you watch "Journey to the West"? There are so many beautiful Rat Spirits around!"

Zhang Yang was at a loss for words.

After Zhang Yang had attacked the rat, Wei Yan Er leaped in and joined the attack. With the combined forces of two battle mounts and two Battle Companions, the rat was killed quickly. The party moved on and encountered more similar rats. Whenever one appeared, Han Ying Xue will never fail to scream and jump into Zhang Yang's arms.

After crossing the mountains with little to no danger, they reached the peak. The top of the mountain had been flattened. So flat that it seemed like someone or something had chopped the top triangular head of the mountain off. The flat area of the peak was wide and large, and unmistakably white, like a huge stage.

At an edge of the flat peak, there was a rat that was as big as an elephant. Unlike its smaller brethren, this colossus rat was rather grand and beautiful. It's fur was silky smooth and had a little glint of violet platinum luster. It was not as disgusting like its smaller brethren, but far more ferocious and grand.

[Baloque Giant Rat King] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 109

HP: 10,900,000

Defense: 2,820

Melee Attack: 13,410 – 17,410

Skills:

[Fang Bite]: Bites a target's legs and deals 150% melee physical attack. Target will be immobilized for 10 seconds.

[Hide]: The Giant Rat King will dig underground and hide underground when its HP reached 10%. Will restore HP. Channeling: 1 second. Can be interrupted.

Note: The King of all of Baloque Giant Rats. Its sharp teeth can bite through even the toughest of steel.

Zhang Yang had a happy glint in his eyes and he cried out happily. "Looks like we've hit the jackpot!"

"What are you talking about? It's just a Violet-Platinum boss. It's not a Mythical tier anyway." Wei Yan Er asked.

"Hehehe. Stupid little girl." Zhang Yang pat and rubbed Wei Yan Er head. "Pay attention to the boss' level. It's only Level 109! That means, the equipment it drops will be Level 100. The kind of which we can immediately equip! Don't keep thinking about Mythical

bosses. How many Mythical boss can you find nowadays?"

For Zhang Yang and those around his level, Level 100 Mythical tier equipment were far more precious compared to Level 110, or Level 120 Violet-Platinum equipment. Level 100 equipment could be equipped right away and the rest would have to wait until they reach the appropriate level requirement. By the time they reach Level 110, or Level 120, they would already be targeting Mythical tier equipment! Hence, the significant factor about the giant rat was not its level, but the level of the equipment that it would drop!

"Huh." Wei Yan Er crossed her arms and nodded. "So, what you are saying is that a Mythical tier boss would drop equipment. However, unless the equipment they drop has a special effect that lowers the equipment Level requirement, it would make no sense to fight the boss then. Correct?"

"Haha! That's a way to put it. Since when has the little girl became so smart?"

Wei Yan Er scoffed and spotted something. "Hey! Hey! Hey! Look! Look!" The little girl pointed at something beside of the boss.

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue focused their sight at where Wei Yan Er was pointing at and saw a tiny, palm size rat that scampering around. The little rat had a violet-platinum fur coat. From that distance, anyone could mistake it for a violet colored ferret. It was undoubtedly cute.

[Juvenile Gold Biter Rat] (Violet-Platinum Mount)

Level: 0

HP: 50

"That's a Violet-Platinum mount!" all of them cried out at the same time. Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Hohoho. It's a good mount right there. That's probably the strongest mount so far. Sadly, it's just a regular mount and not a flying mount!"

Han Ying Xue shook her head and said, "I think its strong. Most of our battles are still occurring on the ground. There aren't many aerial battles nowadays. Besides, a flying mount is only good for traveling!"

Technically, almost 99% of all battles took place on the ground. In PvE fights, there would hardly be any difference for flying mount or regular mounts. The importance of a mount was its attack power. During PvP however, a flying mount user would have the aerial dominance over the other user. If they are about to be killed, they could jump on their flying mount to buy some time. In which, in a similar situation, a player with no flying mount would have to face their defeat.

Zhang Yang laughed and pushed Han Ying Xue lightly. "Go and catch it, then!"

Han Ying Xue squeaked a little and shook her head rapidly. No matter how small or cute the little critter was, Han Ying Xue could never accept it. For her, it would always be an annoying,



disgusting rat! That being said, Han Ying Xue was a healer. She had no need to be at the front lines to attack. Having this battle mount would not do any good for her.

However, if the little critter is of a magic attack type, Han Ying Xue might still be able to attack from the rear. However, based on the stats of the giant rat king, the little rat there would probably be a physical attack type.

Wei Yan Er already had a Violet-Platinum Flying Mount, the White Tiger. Zhang Yang had the Mythical tier Thunderhawk. Both of them had no need for the mount. Zhang Yang then called Hundred Shots and the rest of his friends over, "Hey guys, I have here, a Violet-Platinum regular mount. Anyone interested in taking it?"

"WOAH! Boss, I want! I'm interested!"

"Little Yang. Let me have it! Endless, you f\*ck off!"

"I'm interested. I want to upgrade my mount!"

Everyone flooded up the party channel and contested for it. Even though there were many mounts in the Chaos Realm, they were mostly Gray-Silver, and Yellow-Gold. Violet-Platinum tier mounts were still a rare hunt.

As the party chat were heading nowhere, Zhang Yang decided to make things easier for them. "The mount is suitable for melee

attack types. Hunters should not join in, since it would effect your own character's balance. When you're still fighting, the pet dies, and vice-versa. Let the melee classes have it."

Since Hunters have [Beast Taming] skill, they could use their battle mount as a pet to attack, just like Zhang Yang and his Thunderhawk. On the other hand, it made Hunter's lose their advantage of gaining the HP boost. It was fairly important to have high HP when facing a strong boss with powerful AoE skills. Besides that, separating both Hunter and their pets will split the target in two, increasing the load for the healers.

Secondly, if a battle mount is used as a pet to attack, the hunter's original pet will be ignored, causing the Hunter to lose its primary attack power.

Hence, Hunters should only aim for ranged attack type battle mounts. In that case, the hunter could mount his battle pet and in the same time, use the class-specific pet to attack. That way, it would fully utilize the Hunter's special class advantage.

Fatty Han obediently listened to Zhang Yang and withdrew from the raffle draw. Hundred Shots was in luck. Just a few days back, he had caught himself a Violet-Platinum Windy Wolf mount. It was a magic attack type and could cast wind blades that strike from a distance. Its attack power was on par with Wei Yan Er's Winged Tiger. Hence, Hundred Shots withdrew from the raffle draw as well.

Eventually, only Endless Starlight, Lost Dream, and Mountain Mover rolled for the mount. The winner was Mountain Mover, but

Zhang Yang did not immediately summon him over. After all, Zhang Yang would have to defeat the boss first before capturing the little critter.

"Let's go!" Zhang Yang did not need to make any preparations. It was just a Violet-Platinum boss. If he still had [Berserker's Heal] he would not even need come up with any game plan. The boss had only two skills. The first was an attacking type and the second was a healing skill that could be interrupted! It's nothing but a walk in the park.

"CHI!" The Rat King squeaked so loudly that Zhang Yang's ear drums rang long after.

Despite being as large as an elephant, the rat's movement speed was as fast as lightning. With a quick scurry, the rat had rushed towards Zhang Yang! He did not even have any spare second to activate {Charge}!

Both the rat and the Guardian started duking it out. The little girl waited for a bit and entered the battle with her axe raised high in the air to strike down on the rat from the sky.

Zhang Yang, Felice, and Thunderhawk produced an explosive DPS that went over 40,000. The little girl had equipped her new axe and had upgraded her DPS limit to over 60,000! Just 3 minutes into the battle, the party had hacked away the Rat King's HP below 10%. With a quick cast of {Crash Magic}, the Rat King's digging animation was interrupted. Zhang Yang delivered a barrage of attacks and finished the poor King off.

## Chapter 558: The 12 Chinese Zodiacs

---

The loot that was dropped by the boss was worth looking forward to. There should be some Level 100 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment to pick up. These equipment should be able to provide his party members some quick, short-termed power-ups, as they would be able to instantly equip these equipment without having to wait.

Wei Yan Er was as impatient as ever, as were her hands. Even before the corpse of the boss had touched the ground, she had already picked up every single piece of loot, including the coins of course, from the ground. This little brat then grinned like a money grubber.

The boss dropped a total of 4 equipment. One was a pair of pale-greenish leather pants, another was a pair of gray-silver cloth armor gloves, the other one was a long bow made from animal bones, and the last one was an earthly yellow heavy armor helmet.

Right before Wei Yan Er was about to display the equipment, one piece after another, Zhang Yang, however, said, "Little brat, just ignore those Yellow-Gold equipment already and stop wasting time!"

"Tsk!" Wei Yan Er pursed her lips as she wanted to start by posing the links to the Yellow-Gold equipment just to tantalize Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue. Since that Zhang Yang had said it out loud to skip the Yellow-Gold equipment, it would have been pointless for her to do that anymore.

So, the leather pants and the cloth armor gloves were shoved straight into Zhang Yang's inventory without being inspected by any of them at all. What a tragic fate these two equipment had.

The three of them began to turn their attention towards the long bow.

[Regrudge, Ancient Skeletal Bow] (Violet-Platinum, Bow) (1)

Ranged Attack: 1,582 - 2,182

Attack Interval: 3.6 seconds

DPS: 672

Equip: Adds 7% damage.

Equip: Adds 0.7% Critical Rate

Equip: When you hit a target, there is a chance of increasing your Attack Speed by 10%. Lasts for 10 seconds. The effect cannot stack.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

Note: According to legend, Regrudge was a strange beast in the

ancient time. It was powerful and always thirsty for blood. The beast was then slain by a brave Beastman warrior. A Dwarf craftsman extracted the toughest part, it's spine, from the corpse and made it into a long bow.

Zhang Yang kept the bow in his inventory. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han would have to settle it among themselves on who gets to keep it. Then, he turned his attention towards the final piece of equipment on the ground, the dirt-yellowish helmet.

[Cobalt Helmet] (Violet-Platinum, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +706

Strength: +202

Agility: +100

Equip: Increases your Maximum HP by 1,400 points.

Equip: Decreases received damage by 196 points.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 100

While Mythical Tier equipment added both Offense and Defense, this Violet-Platinum Tier equipment only added Defensive attributes. After all, there would always be a difference between equipment of two different Tiers. So one must not be asking for too much from them!

Zhang Yang took the helmet and shoved it into his inventory, not bothering to be gentle with it. As the equipment had not been identified yet, its attributes were still no match to the attributes of his [Titan Helmet].

After picking up every single piece of the loot from the ground, Zhang Yang summoned Mountain Mover over to his position. The strategist was already holding his [Sealing Leash] up the moment he arrived. Then, he began the process of capturing the [Mount] for himself.

However, his luck was not that good. It took him nine attempts to capture the baby mouse. He had thought that he was about to fail in capturing that [Mount], which caused him to panic for a little back there.

Mountain Mover knew his own capability. He knew that the elite battle style of this small party did not suit his personal battle style at all. So he went back to Morning Town after he acquired the [Mount]. Then he went off to start training his new [Mount].

The three of them proceeded forward. They went up and down various mountains and hills of various heights.

Zhang Yang and the ladies had been encountering countless mice-like monsters in the previous mountain area. Meanwhile, this new mountain area they just set foot on were full of buffaloes in almost every corner of the place. The buffaloes were dark green in color. Each of them was equipped with only one Skill called {Eyes of the Death God}. Although this name sounded like the name of the Skill {Glare of the Death God}, it could only cause 10,000 Shadow Damage. It was far from the {Glare of the Death God}.

As they killed their way through the mountain area, they finally stumbled across a wild Buffalo King. There was a small calf right beside the Buffalo King. More importantly, it was a Violet-Platinum Tier [Mount].

The three of them exchanged happy, shocked looks.

Although it was really easy to capture [Mount] after entering the Chaos Realm, most of the [Mounts] were limited to the Tier of Yellow-Gold, Gray-Silver or even to Tiers as low as Green-Copper and Black-Steel. But, it was really a shock for them to come across so many Violet-Platinum Tier [Mounts] in a single day. How amazing is that?

Zhang Yang had come up with a deduction, based on the remaining mountains ahead of them. He said, "There are still 10 more mountains to climb. The first mountain was a mountain littered with mice. The second mountain was crawling with buffaloes. Are you seeing what I'm seeing here? 12 mountains, the first two being mice and buffaloes. Isn't this based on the 12



Chinese Zodiacs? Are we going to see tigers, rabbits, dragons, and snakes, and other members of the 12 zodiacs? I can't help but feel that each mountain would provide us with a Violet-Platinum [Mount], along with their guardian Violet-Platinum Bosses!"

If everything that Zhang Yang said was true, then they had really struck jackpot this time!

Having a possibility to acquire at least 12 pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment and 12 Violet-Platinum Tier {Pet Mounts} was undoubtedly going to be a great 'power-up' to his guild.

"That's great! I'm planning to catch myself a dragon pet! I will be wicked awesome!" Wei Yan Er began to drift in her own imagination.

The only way to find out if Zhang Yang's deduction struck true was to proceed forward.

It only took a few minutes for Zhang Yang and the ladies to take down a Violet-Platinum Tier boss. Unfortunately, the boss did not drop any Heavy Armor this time. It only dropped a piece of Violet-Platinum Tier Cloth Armor that went to Han Ying Xue. The equipment was a pair of boots. Meanwhile, the Violet-Platinum Tier [Mount] on this mountain was captured and brought away by Lost Dream.

The small party went on to the next mountain. The third mountain was full of ferocious tigers. It was as Zhang Yang suspected! There was a Tiger King and a Tiger King Cub right at

the top of the mountain! That Tiger King Cub was the [Mount].

Meanwhile, the fourth mountain was full of Mashimaro-like creatures...

However, the 'dragon' mountain that Wei Yan Er had been looking forward to so earnestly turned out to be a major disappointment. There were no signs of ancient dragons, the kind found in Ancient Chinese folklore and mythology, nor any Western-styled winged lizards. Instead, the mountain was full of Raptors!

Those were dinosaurs! They were not to be trifled with!

Wei Yan Er fell into a bottomless pit of despair. She lumbered about like a zombie for a period of time before she returned to her place among the living. When light returned to her eyes however, the little brat unleashed hellfire and fury upon every Raptor that was in her field of vision.

The next mountain was the snake mountain. As expected, the whole mountain was full of snakes. The following mountains contained horses, goats, monkey, chickens, dog, and pigs.

Zhang Yang had assigned all 10 members of his party to a Violet-Platinum Tier [Mount]. Other core players like Galileo and 10-party-Killer of Lone Desert Smoke also got to step up in the mount upgrade spree. They got to switch their [Mounts] out for better ones!

The only unfortunate thing about this was that all of the [Mounts] they had acquired were all ground-types. None of them were capable of flying in the air. Even though the chickens had wings, they were nevertheless categorized as ground-type [Mounts]. They could only flap their wings about.

Well, one should not be too greedy after being handed such wonderful 'freebies'. By acquiring these Violet-Platinum Tier [Mounts], the overall strength of Lone Desert Smoke had been exponentially increased! Although these [Mounts] were flightless....[Flying Mounts] carried a whole new meaning to the term 'rare'. This was completely acceptable. It would not have made sense if the game handed over 10 powerful [Flying Mounts] to the gang out of the blue.

Furthermore, this was just a Level 100 beginner's map. Most of the Chaos Realm still remained unexplored. So players would still stand a chance of stumbling across some [Flying Mounts] in the future.

Before Zhang Yan and gang had even gotten to the Treasure, they had already encountered so many other surprises. They were not even at the pirate's lair yet. At this point, the party did not know what to expect from the treasure chest and were painfully curious.

Daffodil Daydream did not leave the scene after acquiring her Flatline 'Chicken'. This 'Chickobo' turned out to be a Magic-type [Mount]. The two of them made a great pair.

As [Pet Mounts] had been extremely rare in the previous stages of the game, players would simply capture any [Mount] they come

across, without taking a look at the Tier or Attributes. Having a [Mount] of any kind was already sufficient for players to earn the bragging rights. In a crowded city or Territory, these players would already be the center of attraction. With a slightly flashier Mount, they would even draw the attention of the opposite sex and start new love stories.

Due to the exceeding rarity of [Mounts] back then, Han Ying Xue was already fortunate enough to own a Melee-Type [Red Gold Crab].

Truth to be told, although the Tier of [Red Gold Crab] was not that low, Han Ying Xue rarely sent the crab into battles. The main reason that Han Ying Xue always stayed behind at a safe distance, healing the other party members. So, what good would the Melee-type [Red Gold Crab] do to her, when it won't be approaching any monsters? The only 'function' it did was to raise Han Ying Xue's Maximum HP after she was mounted on it.

Under those kinds of circumstances, many players actually had [Mounts] that were not 'compatible' with their styles in combat. Because of the exceeding rarity of [Mounts] back in the day, the players had no choice but to take whatever they were given.

Han Ying Xue had also switched her ground-type [Mount] to a 'horse'. It was a Magic-type [Mount] named [Flaming Scarlet Tempest].

Currently, the horse was still young and small. Han Ying Xue simply could not see the potential of its growth just yet. But they could get some clues on that aspect by looking at the attack pattern

of the boss they had encountered when procuring it.

The two ladies had summoned their new [Mounts] for them to get experience points. After they cleared out all 12 mountains of the '12 Zodiacs', Han Ying Xue's [Flaming Scarlet Tempest] had reached the level of 78. Meanwhile, Daffodil Daydream's [Chickobo] had also reached the level of 55. Both [Mounts] were capable of 'mounting' already, and they had also acquired some extra Skills while they were leveling up.

Regrettably, for Zhang Yang, his luck was not that good. Upon killing the 12 bosses, they had picked up a total of 17 Violet-Platinum equipment. However, only the first boss dropped a helmet that he could really use. Although there were also 3 other Heavy Armor equipment, the attributes on one of them was more inclined to Offense. So, Wei Yan Er would a more suitable owner. The remaining two Heavy Armor equipment were more onto Defense, however, the attributes were more concentrated on Intelligence. In that case, it would be more suitable for Endless Starlight to have them.

Since Endless Starlight was the main Tanker in clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress, Zhang Yang decided to give the two 'defensive' equipment to him. His intention was to increase the efficiency of his guild in clearing the dungeon.

For that, Endless Starlight was touched to the point that he had tears streaming down his face. He had even expressed that he would give his body to Zhang Yang first if he ever loses his mind and changed his sex. That really gave Zhang Yang the creeps as

goosebumps began to spread across his skin!

After walking through the mountains of the '12 Zodiacs', Zhang Yang and the three ladies had arrived at a lake. This lake was a great, inland lake. However, it wasn't so vast that Zhang Yang and the ladies could not see the other end of it. They could also see very clearly that there was a fortress built right in the middle of the lake!

This fortress had probably occupied about 10% of the surface area of the entire lake. The fortress was built with woods of great buoyancy. There were iron lock hooks holding the woods all together tightly. It went up and down with the waves.

"Haha! This place looks more like a water-bed!" Wei Yan Er blinked her eyes repeatedly, "Sis, I want a water-bed!"

Zhang Yang suddenly had an idea and he said, "Alright! Let's have one water-bed in each of the rooms back home!"

Well, he was thinking that he might get really 'pumped' if he rams Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu on the water-bed, bouncing them all up and down.

Han Ying Xue glanced at Zhang Yang. Her face was telling Zhang Yang that she too, was looking forward to it. She seemed to have read Zhang Yang's mind correctly.

"Huh? Why would you suddenly be so generous?" Wei Yan Er was

suspecting Zhang Yang instead. She thought that Zhang Yang was just messing around with her.

"How could you suspect my sincerity! I've always been generous!" Zhang Yang looked far into the distance as he began to look for a way in, then he said, "This is most probably the lair of that Blackbeard Ditch. He is indeed worthy to be called a pirate. He even built his lair on water!"

"So, how are we going over to the fortress?"

"We shall fly over! It's an entire lake beneath us, so there shouldn't be any more of those monstrous trees we saw before!"

TL Note: No translation error there for that severely underwhelming Level 100 bow. 672 DPS? Fufufu...

# Chapter 559: The Pirate's Old Lair

---

The four of them summoned out their own [Mounts]. However, right before they could fly into the air, they were greeted with countless of arrows from the direction of the fortress. One brief moment later, the four of them were left with hundreds of holes on them. Their HP bars were reducing so rapidly that they were terrified to see it with their own eyes!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} and his [Heart of the Death knight] at the same time as he started to panic, then he quickly said, "Retreat!"

Shoof shoof shoof!

Arrow continued to rain upon them endlessly, one wave after another. There were so many arrows flying through the sky at the same time that they looked like a swam of locusts that blotted out the sun!

Under the supporting protection of {Vanguard's Aggression}, the damage that the 3 ladies received had been reduced by 10%. However, they were still losing their HP at an insanely fast rate. Fortunately for them, they were already ambushed the moment they left the ground. So, it did not take long for them to return back on ground.

It was actually unnecessary for them to get back on the ground. As long as they do not fly too high up in the sky, they would not be shot at. The situation was actually similar to the trees.



"So, those trees grow underwater too?" Wei Yan Er was amazed.

"There should be."

"How can there be such 'trees' under the water?" Wei Yan Er was very eager to dig deeper into the logical explanation on this topic.

Zhang Yang frowned. That was because they were in a game after all. It wouldn't be weird, even if there was a bunch of cabbages growing nicely in the clouds! After deciding to ignore the little brat, Zhang Yang summoned out his [Mythical Turtle]. It had been quite a while since he last brought the Turtle out for fresh air. Water area environments was where the Mythical Turtle could unleash it's full potential --- most of the [Flying Mounts] were not able to go under water.

Han Ying Xue summoned her [Red Gold Crab] as well. Each of the [Mounts] were assigned to carry two persons as they began to 'sail' across the lake over to the fortress.

It was natural for Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue to be on the same 'boat,' as they were siblings after all. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang took Daffodil Daydream on his 'ride'. The little lady felt safe and sound as she was leaned on the back of Zhang Yang when they were on the way over to the fortress. She blushed all the way through.

Considering that all [Mounts] can only provide their owners the ability to breath underwater, The [Red Gold Crab] and the

[Mythical Turtle] had to travel above the surface of the water. That way, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream wouldn't drown.

The four of them were able to see everything that was happening beneath them, as the water of the lake was crystal clear.

As expected, there were countless 'Spiky Treants' all over the lake floor. Their branches were as bristly as ever, and they seemed completely at home in the water.

"I didn't know there is such trees that is amphibious!" Wei Yan Er widened her eyes a little as she spoke, "Let's plant some of these trees in our swimming pool!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Then, you better watch out! Those spikes will surely poke right through your butt!"

"You jerk..." Wei Yan Er muttered in low voice.

Although the lake was vast, the entire journey across the lake to the fortress was just about 4 to 5 kilometers. It only took a few minutes for them to approach the fortress as [Mythical Turtle] and [Red Gold Crab] were both agile swimmers.

Maybe the pirates had been overconfident about their elusiveness. The base was barely fortified. After looking around carefully, Zhang Yang could only see a few pirates with dark clothing and wretched faces. They were sitting casually at the high tower. It seemed that they were supposed to watch out for any sign

of intruders outside of their fortress.

However, players and monsters would only engage into battles based on the mechanism of the aggro system that the system had provided all along. So, as long as players could stay out of the aggro range of the monsters, they could avoid the battles with the monsters. Therefore, the four of them were basically clueless of their presence as they snuck around the guards stationed on the outpost towers. It was considered as a successful stealthy infiltration.

"The leader of these pirates must be living in the largest house of all. That means..." Zhang Yang hopped over onto the 'deck' and took a look around the surroundings. Then he pointed at a very large wooden house that was not far from them. "That should be the one."

"Let's get moving!" Wei Yan Er was excited as she began to whirl her axe around. Other than those weird and unexplained phenomena, this little brat would only be interested in coins and battles. Since she could fulfill her own lust for battle and also earn some coins along the way, Wei Yan Er would always be very happy slaying monsters to level up.

"Who goes there?" one of the pirates who looked like an Orc suddenly popped out from a wooden house. Well, he was an Orc indeed! Although his mouth had uttered an inquiry, his hands were not as courteous. He swung his black giant axe mercilessly across at Zhang Yang without any signs of warning.

Ding!

The giant axe was deflected away as Zhang Yang raised his shield and blocked the attack. He could not help but to wonder, why did the monster target him at first sight, even when he was not the closest to it? Was it because his face was so ugly that the monster could not stand the sight of it, and had to attack him to vent out the discomfort?

"It doesn't matter what you do, you're as good as dead!" The Orc revealed a row of filthy yellowish teeth as he smiled. Only god knows how long has it been since he last brushed his teeth! That foul stench from his mouth could really 'knock' people out!

The monster pointed at Zhang Yang before he diverted his attention over to the 3 ladies. His eyes were rolling around randomly and he said, "What a shame. I have no interest in you ugly people. But you girls should be worth at least a couple hundred coins!"

Ugly?

"You're the one who is ugly! You ugly horse... Orc!" Han Ying Xue and the other two ladies were enraged by his words. They pointed their fingers at the Orc in rage. Their rage were fueled well enough for them to begin the battle.

[Blackbeard's Crew] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 1,150,000

Defense: 1,200

Attack: 7,623 - 9,623

Skills:

[A Nibble of Death]: Heavily strikes a target, causing 150% Melee Attack of Physical Damage to the target.

[Pirate's Madness]: A pirate is filled with the spirit to take on an adventure! A pirate would be willing to burn up his own life span in exchange for incredible power! Upon activation of this Skill, the pirate would lose 10,000 HP in every second. However, all targets within the range of 3-meter radius from the pirate will receive the same amount of Shadow Damage. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: They are the crews of Blackbeard Ditch after all. They fear no death. Every single one of their hands are tainted with blood!

"Just die! Human!" the Orc pirate let out an intimidating shout. Then, he began to raise his large axe up high in the air before he swung it straight at Zhang Yang.

Bam!

Though Zhang Yang's {Block} was still under the cooldown period, that did not stop him from using his 'Supporting Attacks'. With a heavy slam right in the pirate's face, Zhang Yang knocked the Orc off a few steps back. The two fangs that jutted out from his lips broke off from the impact.

"You filthy human! How dare you!" The Orc screamed in rage as his entire body turned bloody red. He was losing 10,000 HP in every passing second. However, every time when he lost his HP, a bright red light would radiate out about 3-meter radius across the surroundings.

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er were instantly hit by the radiance as both of them received damage. Zhang Yang received an amount of '-5,114' damage while Wei Yan Er received an amount of '-9,822' damage. The little brat did not receive a full amount of damage from the radiance because she had one Mythical Tier equipment that could absorb damage.

That was the {Pirate's Madness}!

Indeed, that pirate looked like he was tormented in madness. So this was a powerful Skill that would cause destruction to both sides at the cost of sacrificing one's own HP. Furthermore, the HP bar of the monster was long enough for it to use this Skill. A player would not last as long.

The fire power of the small party was already powerful enough as it was. They became even more powerful after Daafodil Daydream joined in. They put down the pirate with ease. The pirate had dropped a few coins and a few [Inscribed Cloths]. Other than that,

the dead pirate also dropped a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment.

"Stinky pirate! You must be blind! I'm a pretty lady! Not some ugly human!" Wei Yan Er still wasn't willing to let it go as she continued to mutter at the dead pirate's body. She still wanted to correct the pirate, even though he was dead. She wanted to prove she was a pretty lady who could stun people with her looks.

"Stop wasting your life and keep moving!" Han Ying Xue kicked the little brat in the butt and ran off.

Although the fortress seemed a poorly attended, there were monsters lurking around the houses. They would ambush the players from concealed, hidden corners. Therefore, Zhang Yang and the ladies had no choice but to endure the annoyance of being ambushed by pirate after pirate.

Some wooden houses only had one pirate lurking in them. Well, some had two, or even three filthy pirates in the houses, ready to ambush any players who came by the houses.

The weird part about this was that if the house only had one pirate in it, the pirate would look neat in terms of clothing when he came out to block the players. However, if there were at least 2 to 3 pirates in the house, they would look messy, as if they just got out of their bed. Some of them did not even had clothes on them! They were stark naked, and their butt folds were as visible as day! Fortunately, the game had placed mosaic boxes over the filthy 'vital' parts of the pirates.

Wei Yan Er could not understand this, so she asked, "Do these pirates love to sleep in the buff? They're just like cousin sis!"

Han Ying Xue was instantly enraged at the little brat for mentioning it out, so she humped, "How could you compare these filthy monsters with me, a pretty and elegant lady?"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he spoke suggestively, "Well, we interrupted them at the wrong time. We've committed a crime for intruding upon their 'fun' time!"

Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream spat at him for making such a lame joke. Meanwhile, the little brat blinked with her large eyes as adorably as ever in her cluelessness.

After clearing out the path and proceeding forward for another one and a half hour, the four of them finally arrived at the largest wooden house in the entire lair of the pirates. The place really looked like a house that belonged to someone important. There were already 4 elite Tier guards standing at the front of the entrance.

Zhang Yang could already unleash the potential of his 'Supporting Attacks,' because his equipment had reach the standard. There as no reason at all to be afraid of the 4 elite Tier monsters. So the four of them charged straight up to engage. Zhang Yang's [Sword of Devourer] managed to cause about 30,000 damage to one of the monsters right in front of him. His rage bar went through the roof right after that strike. Without any hesitation, he immediately activated his {Horizontal Sweep}.



Four yellow numerical values popped up on top of the 4 elite Tier monsters. Unfortunately, there were too few targets in range. So, the special effect of the replicated Skill on the [Sword of Purging Devourer] was not triggered.

"Kill him!" the four pirates were struck by surprise. So they were enraged as they began to shout out loud. They swung their swords and axes towards Zhang Yang the moment they detected Zhang Yang's presence.

"In your dreams!" Zhang Yang stomped the ground and activated his {Thunder Strike}. Electricity flickered across the 4 pirates as they received Movement Speed reduction effects. Zhang Yang became their primary target as he began to lead them around like a herd of cows.

Wei Yan Er swung her axe towards the monsters as she launched her swift and fierce assaults. After she had switched her old axe with a new one, her damage output had increased drastically. It was almost twice of her previous damage output! After all, weapons brought the most change on players' Attack power.

The 4 pirates were taken out, one after another, neat and quick. Zhang Yang and the ladies gained quite a substantial amount of experience points from killing these monsters. The two [Mounts] that had not yet reached Level 100 were leveling up continuously. One of them had reached level 89 while the other had reached Level 75.

The four of them entered the house. All they saw before them was a grand, ornately furnished living room. The place gave people the feeling that the room was vast and spacious.

The ladies were dismounted automatically at they were in an indoor environment. Only Thunderhawk was still flapping its wings about idly. The wind the wings stirred up had blown Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream's skirts up, revealing their panties!

"The pet is as perverted as it's owner! You perverted hawk!" Han Ying Xue muttered.

Daffodil Daydream was holding her skirt down with both of her hands as she was blushing in shame.

What the hell! How did that become Zhang Yang's fault, then? That was just wrong!

They had to proceed without the 3 [Mounts] that they had brought along. There were no signs of any monsters in the house. Zhang Yang and the ladies began to split up so that they could cover more ground in searching the house for the other half of the Treasure Map.

However, Zhang Yang was the only one who had accepted the related quest. So, only he would be able to recognize the unique appearance of the other half of the Treasure Map. The other half of the Treasure Map would only look like a normal piece of parchment in the eyes of Han Ying Xue and the other two ladies.

They did not accept the quest, after all. However, Zhang Yang would see it as a piece of Treasure Map that glowed dimly.

That was the system's setting. Quest items would all radiate in a dim light so to serve as a beacon so that players would be able to spot them more easily. If players could still miss out on them, then there wouldn't be anything left to say.

After just a brief moment, Zhang Yang found the other half of the Treasure Map in a sealed drawer.

However, this was a S-rank quest. So the question was, will they be able to obtain the other half of the Treasure Map so easily?

## Chapter 560: Snowman Snow

---

However, the two pieces of the Treasure Map were right inside Zhang Yang's inventory.

He took out the two pieces of Treasure Map and pieced them together. They produced a sudden, blinding flash of light, seamlessly forming into one complete Treasure Map without any indication that it was once in pieces.

"Hahaha!" suddenly, the gang heard a long laugh. A shadow appeared out of nowhere and forcefully relieved Zhang Yang of his Treasure Map. Zhang Yang was struck by a fist. He received a blow so great that his HP dropped all the way down to 1!

The shadow vanished and reappeared at a spot 10 meters away from Zhang Yang. It took the form of a tall, imposing hulk of a man. This man was clad in a thick set of clothing. His jacket had been left undone, leaving his large belly exposed. His thickset, beefy face and broad cheeks were half-covered by a thick, long beard. He looked a little like the legendary warrior, Zhang Fei.

That man now held the Treasure Map in his hands!

Looking at the name and title above his head, this was the leader of the pirates, Blackbeard Ditch!

What the hell! This quest was not as simple as expected! The boss had come over to snatch the Treasure Map away from Zhang Yang himself!

"I have waited for more than 10 years, and a new thief finally presents himself!" Ditch was laughing out loud, "I knew it. Since you stole the first half of the Treasure Map, you will surely be back for the other half! So I had been expecting you!"

[Blackbeard Ditch's Illusion] (Summon)

Level: 130

This was actually not the real boss, it was just an illusion of Ditch.

"You thieves! I shall allow you pathetic fools to live a little longer. After I take the ancient Treasure for myself, I shall have my own sweet time with you all!" the illusion of Ditch strode out of the house, calling over his shoulder. Then, the illusion went flying into the sky with a shoof.

"Argh! That fat bastard!" Wei Yan Er was so mad that she began to shout. She was a money grubber, after all. Of course, she would be very fond of treasures and treasure coves. Of course, she would burst into rage knowing that the only lead to her favorite treasures had been taken by the boss, right in front of her eyes!

‘Ding! The objective for your quest: The Pirate's Treasure Map has changed! You must reclaim the Treasure Map back from Blackbeard Ditch! Stop him from getting the ancient Treasure and becoming an unstoppable dark force!’

Zhang Yang suddenly received a system notification.

Initially, the quest had required him to steal the map, and now, the quest wanted him to snatch the Treasure Map from the hands of Blackbeard Ditch himself!

Zhang Yang quickly brought up his quest list to take a good look at the quest description. The description had changed slightly. The description of the quest now clearly stated that there was a secret passage in a corner somewhere nearby them. Blackbeard Ditch had been going through the secret passage in and out, to resupply.

Without further ado, Zhang Yang hustled the ladies to move their \*sses immediately. They followed the description of the quest and arrived at the west side of the lake. After climbing over some huge rocks, they found themselves standing at where a river branched itself out into two smaller rivers.

Apparently, the rocks were just an illusion. Magic had formed them, capable of deceiving the untrained eye.

A huge pirate ship was parked in the smaller branch of the river. The moment Zhang Yang and the 3 ladies arrived, the pirate ship began to drift slowly along the current. The two water-type [Mounts] had to swim with all their might just to catch up, where they snuck onboard from the back.

"Intruders!" one elite Tier pirate spotted the four of them sneaking about and immediately attacked. The pirate swung his

cutlass about while charging at them. The pirates are a merciless folk. They did not discriminate by gender. The first target this pirate went for was Daffodil Daydream.

Zhang Yang quickly ran between the two of them. He raised his shield and deflected the blow.

After a flurry of attacks, the pirate buckled beneath the heavy firepower of Zhang Yang's small party. The huge amount of experience points gained gave the two new [Mounts] a level each.

Cutting their way through the deck, the four of them eventually found a cabin door. They broke it down and entered the cabin.

However, the interior of the cabin was considered as an indoor environment. So, other than Thunderhawk, all [Mounts] were automatically banished into their respective owners' inventory.

"Hehe, I think I smell the scent of a woman!"

"Me too! I smelled it too!"

Four greenish fireballs hovered around the dark corner of the cabin. There were two skeletal pirates oogling at the 3 ladies. The ignited green flames within their eye sockets flickering with excitement. One of them began to speak, "Ah, I knew it, women! I smell leaking blood, the type of bleeding that only women are capable of!"

Leaking? Woman?

Zhang Yang instantly understood. He could not help but frown. These 'hardcore' game designers sometimes go way overboard.

"You dirty swines!" Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream had also understood what the skeletal pirate talked about. Women would bleed for a few days, every month. The only one who did not understand the meaning of that was Wei Yan Er. Without wasting any time or breath, she charged up to the two skeletal pirates and swung her axe at them.

Zhang Yang quickly followed, charging over, while swinging his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at the two skeletal pirates. After a flurry of attacks, he finally managed to grab hold of their aggro.

"These Spectral monsters really do have sensitive noses! They should just go and play the role of blood-sucking zombies!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. Han Ying Xue owned her body as much as he did, of course, Zhang Yang was aware of how it was 'inconvenient' for her at the moment. It was most probably the best time for him to replenish his 'ammunition' in these few days. On the other hand, he would be deprived of her body for the same period of time. He had mixed feelings about the whole situation.

"Fresh blood! Delicious fresh blood!" the two Spectral monsters were screaming as if they were confirming what Zhang Yang had just said. Their screams were accompanied by the clinks and clanks of blade meeting blade. They fought back and forth, up and down the cabin, stirring up a small hurricane within the room. The entire cabin was shaking violently, barely containing the turbulent



battle.

After a brief moment, the two Spectral monsters fell to the blades of Zhang Yang's small party. The four of them continued to proceed forward. There were all sorts of pirates who appeared soon after to block their way. The pirate ship was like a hodgepodge of pirates from different races.

About 2 hours later, they finally cleared their path and reached the end of the first floor. It was as they suspected. There was a boss standing guard the entrance to the second floor of the deck.

This boss was a tall, middle-aged man, with a small trilby that seemed to have worn out its use. The man was sloppy and unkempt, not giving a mind about his appearance.

Zhang Yang and the ladies would have thought that this man was a fisherman if they hadn't seen the name and title stated on top of the man's head.

[‘Snowman’ Snow] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 13,000,000

Defense: 3,540

Melee Attack: 17,739 - 21,739 (Determined as Physical Attack, but causes Frost Damage)

Skills:

[Blizzard Storm]: Summons a storm of blizzard to attack the enemies. Causes 10,000 Frost Damage to all enemies within the effective range of the Skill. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Snowman Transformation]: Transforms into a snowman. Increases 50% Frost Damage dealt. Immune to all Frost Damage and Frost Attacks. Reduces 50% Physical Damage received. However, increases Fire Damage received by an additional 100%.

Note: One of the three generals under Blackbeard Ditch. The user of 'Snowy Snow' Devil Fruit. Has the power to control snow and frost.

After reading the description of the Skill {Snowman Transformation}, Zhang Yang could not help but to widen his eyes a little. Then he said, "This boss might drop a Fragment of the [Snowman Inheritance]."

[Inheritance] was the most sought out thing in the entire game, thanks to Zhang Yang's 'demonstration' of it.

Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream instantly perked up, as neither had activated any linking quest for any [Inheritances]. The little brat quickly asked, "What Class?"

"Class B."

"Humph! I don't want to even consider a low Class [Inheritance]!" Wei Yan Er immediately sighed discontentedly as she shook her head again and again.

"I'm a Pyromancer, after all. I'm afraid that this [Snowman Inheritance] is not suitable for me, at all." Daffodil Daydream had a more down-to-earth character. Unlike the little brat, she would consider things based on a more practical point of view before making any decisions.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "This [Snowman Inheritance] caters more for Physical-types. When you activate the {Inheritance Transformation} for this [Inheritance], you will basically have the similar ability that the boss has when it activates its {Snowman Transformation}. But, you will have more HP and a higher Attack power after you 'transform'. Honestly speaking, it would really suit for little brat!"

"No! Don't even think about telling me what to get for my [Inheritance]!" Wei Yan Er shook her head as if it was one of those handheld whirling drums(1), "I'm not such a cheapskate! I won't go for a mere Class B [Inheritance] just because I can't get a Class S [Inheritance]!"

"Our little brat is such an aspiring youngster. Such lofty ideals and dreams! Haha!" Zhang Yang laughed

Wei Yan Er was happy for a brief instant. However, the next things that Zhang Yang brought up immediately angered her again, "Unfortunately, she just can't seem to get the chest she wants, and she also can't seem to get the butt she wants either! Would any man really have an eye for her?"

The little brat was unpredictable. She actually said, "If no one wants me, then I will rely on you!"

Tsk! Is that her way of hitting on someone?!

"Alright, alright, let's go to the boss then!" Han Ying Xue quickly said. Naturally, she wouldn't want the little brat to throw herself onto Zhang Yang. She could still argue or fight with Sun Xin Yu till the bitter end. However, to fight for a man's favor with this little brat wasn't something she was prepared for. Prevention would be better than cure.

"Just like how we always do it, heal me accordingly and we should be fine. There's not much to discuss about. Also, remember to dodge the {Blizzard Storm}. Let's do this!" Zhang Yang swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] as he charged at the boss.

"Are you the thieves that Captain was talking about?" Snow swung his fist at Zhang Yang's blade. His fist was beginning to freeze up with frost as he was at it. It was like an armor coating over his entire fist.

Boom!

‘-25399!’

‘-12822!’

The moment the fist clashed with the blade, sparks flew. Zhang Yang and the boss received damage at the same instant. However, the damage that Zhang Yang caused upon the boss was two times higher than the boss’s damage value.

"Not bad, I can’t believe that you’re actually this capable!" Snow retracted his fist. His hand was covered with frosty air. Apparently, he was shocked, "It seems that I should fight you more seriously!"

Chiang chiang chiang!

The boss started to cover his body up with snow. In no time at all, he looked like a walking snowman.

{Snowman Transformation}!

Well, that’s really unfair! This was supposed to be the ultimate Skill of the boss. How could the boss use it at such an early stage of the boss battle? Zhang Yang had no idea how long this Skill would last. If this Skill could last for 2 hours, as long as a player’s {Inheritance Transformation} Skill, then it would become impossible to defeat the boss!

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er swiftly casted 5 layers of {Cripple

Defense} onto the boss. However, the boss had already obtained a 50% reduction on all Physical Attacks thanks to his {Snowman Transformation}. Even Zhang Yang got far stronger all of a sudden, his normal attacks would only cause 12,000 to 15,000 damage.

When one door shuts, another opens. It was fortunate for Daffodil Daydream to tag along after she had acquired her [Mount]. She was a Pyromancer, after all. Knowing that she could double her damage dealt on the boss, Daffodil Daydream cast her fire balls over and over again in excitement. Each of her attacks could cause about 28,000 damage!

Daffodil Daydream was not the only one enjoying her double damage. Felice was also experiencing the same thing!

Initially, Felice could already cause up to 20,000 damage with her {Fire Missile}. After her Attack was doubled, she could deal about 40,000 damage. So basically, her DPS had already exceeded 20,000!

Zhang Yang could usually rely on his damage output in getting hold of the aggro of his target. However, he now had to use his {Provoke}-like Skills to prevent the boss from going after Felice instead.

"Ice age!" the boss suddenly let out a thunderous roar. The next moment, the entire cabin had been transformed into a land of ice and snow. The floor was suddenly buried in snow. Countless, sharp, spikes of ice started raining down the entire area. The hail of icicles was intense and unrelenting! One could only escape this only if they knew how to walk through a rain shower without

getting hit by a drop.

"Retreat! Retreat at once!" Zhang Yang said in a hurry.

While the boss was under his {Snowman Transformation}, there was a 50% increase on the Critical Rate of every single Frost Skill that he had. So, this {Blizzard Storm} could basically cause about 15,000 damage every time it hits a target. Even though the equipment on the ladies were already considered to be very powerful, they would still have to drop by the Graveyard if they ever get hit by 4 to 5 of those spikes.

Although Zhang Yang had shouted to the ladies to retreat, he did not move a muscle at all. The {Blizzard Storm} would be channeled with the boss as the central anchor. If Zhang Yang retreats with the ladies, the boss would follow, along with the {Blizzard Storm}. That could possibly wipe the party out.

Fortunately this {Blizzard Storm} was only going to last for 10 seconds. After 10 seconds, the phenomenon faded without a trace. Han Ying Xue and the two other ladies rejoined the battle. Meanwhile, Felice had stayed and fought against the boss. She took the full brunt of the impact. However, thanks to her 5,000 Magic Defense, she only lost about 100,000 HP. That would still leave her with half of her HP bar untouched.

As the battle continued, although Snow was behaving like an authentic Mythical Tier boss while he was in his {Snowman Transformation} form, he could not make up for his disadvantage over his total amount of HP. About 3 minutes later, the boss let out a miserable scream and collapsed onto the ground. The party

earned massive amount of experience points and quite the number of loot.

The four of them did not feel excited at all. It was really no big deal for them. Furthermore, the boss was only a Level 130 boss. The equipment that the boss dropped were basically Level 130 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, without the Special that reduces 20 levels from the Requirements. The equipment were like tasteless, bland chicken to them, and they did not even spare anything a glance. Zhang Yang shoved everything into his inventory.

However, the boss had also gave them a pleasant surprise --- a fragment of the [Snowman Inheritance]!

This was one of the Class B [Inheritances]. There were a total of 6 pieces of fragments for this [Inheritance]. In order to activate the linking quest for the [Snowman Inheritance], one would have to gather all 6 pieces of the fragments to form a complete piece. Since that the little brat was not interested with it at all, Zhang Yang had placed the fragment in his inventory. He could just give it out to any of his core members in the guild as a reward for achieving something for the guild.

Any player that had the {Inheritance Transformation} Skill on them would be the most valuable asset to every guild. It did not matter if it was in Zhang Yang's previous life or this current life. Even if players only had Class C [Inheritance] on them, they could still easily get recruited into a guild by simply posting 'Class C [Inheritance] Player in need of a guild'. Some top guilds would even politely request for such players to join them. The richer



guilds would even pay the players with fixed salaries!

When a thing is rare, it becomes precious. After all, a player with an {Inheritance Transformation} were so rare and valuable to a guild!

This piece of [Snowman Inheritance] fragment could not be bought or found in any forms of shops. So Zhang Yang decided to keep it for the elite players as a token of incentive. He wanted to make sure that the person who would be receiving this should be a member that had a strong sense of belonging in the guild. Furthermore, that player should also be quite skillful. After all, Zhang Yang would be giving out a Class B [Inheritance]. He just wanted to make sure he had given it to the correct member. Even in his previous life, a guild could laugh heartily if they could really gather 10 players with a Class B [Inheritance]!

"Haih! If this is a Class A [Inheritance], perhaps I would have forced myself to take it!" Wei Yan Er shrugged as she spoke.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Actually, you still have a chance to get a Class S [Inheritance]!"

"Really? How?"

"Delete your account, restart the game as a Spellcaster, a Knight, a Hunter, or a Thief!"

" ... "

# Chapter 561: Crimson Flame of the ‘Blazing Flame’

---

After taking out ‘Snowman’ Snow, the four of them arrived at the second floor of the cabin.

As the special note of the first boss had stated that Snow was just one of the three generals serving under Blackbeard Ditch, Zhang Yang and the ladies knew that they would still have to defeat two more general bosses before they could actually face Blackbeard Ditch himself!

The monsters on the second floor of the cabin were also similar to the monsters on the first floor of the deck. Other than the pirates of different races and species, there was also a new type of monster: Pirate’s Parrot.

[Pirate’s Parrot] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Attack: 7,381 - 11,381

Skills:

[Dive]: Charges down from the sky, causing 150% Physical Damage to the target. Causes the target to fall. The target will be able to get back to their feet after 1 second.

[Parrot's Infection]: Infects the target with a virus, reduces target's damage dealt by 10%. There is a 10% rate of causing the target to have a fever once every 3 seconds. The target will descend into a chaotic state and cannot attack. Lasts for 15 seconds.

Note: Parrots are the symbol of pirates, how can a pirate ship be a real pirate ship without a parrot on it?

The irritating thing about these parrots was that they would come in a pack of 3 or 4. Because they were small, they could attack one target at the same time. Furthermore, these parrots certainly belong to the Agility-Type classification. Their movements were extremely agile. Zhang Yang could not keep up with their speed, and was not even able to use his Supporting Attacks.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang and the ladies were powerful enough to take it all. Zhang Yang could still endure the assaults from 3 to 4 monsters at the same time. Zhang Yang and the ladies proceeded forward without much of a problem, although the parrots greatly hindered them. It took them more than 3 hours to arrive at the end of the floor. Finally, they came face to face with the second boss, Crimson Flame!

Surprisingly, this pirate looked like well-dressed, muscular, middle-age man with a high collar around his neck. He looked

more like a cocky general instead of an atrocious pirate!

[Crimson Flame of the 'Blazing Flame'] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 13,000,000

Defense: 3,540

Attack: 17,739 - 21,739 (Determined as Physical Attack, but cause Fire Damage)

Skills:

[Parrot Summoning]: According to rumors, before Crimson Flame was a pirate, he used to be a parrot seller. He has an amazing ability of communicating with parrots. Summons parrots based on the number of players on his aggro list.

[Roaring Flame Transformation]: Transforms into 'Blazing Flame'. Increases 20% Fire Damage dealt. Immune to all Fire Damage and Status Restriction Skills received. Reduces 50% Physical Damage received. However, increases Frost Damage received by an additional 100%.

[Blazing Drift]: When Crimson Flame enters its {Blazing Flame

Transformation} form, his body will be flowing with blazing lava. All enemies that touch him will receive 10,000 Fire Damage.

Note: One of the three generals under Blackbeard Ditch. The user of 'Blazing Flame' Devil Fruit. Has the power to control fire.

Zhang Yang was surprised and happy at the same time, after taking note of the {Roaring Flame Transformation} Skill on the boss description. He knew that there was a very high chance that the boss would drop a fragment of the [Roaring Flame Inheritance] upon defeat!

Did they come across King Solomon's mine or something?

Back in the mountains of '12 Zodiacs', it was still reasonable to get few pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment that were dropped by earlier bosses like the Tiger King. It was simply because there were 12 bosses back there. However, they also got a few pieces of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment and one Violet-Platinum Tier [Mount] for every boss they slew! That alone was already more than enough for them to come to the island!

Now, this boss was even more generous. He even dropped a fragment for a Class B [Inheritance].

A Class B [Inheritance]! Any guild would like to have their hands on [Inheritances] of such Class. They had actually stumbled across 2 Class B [Inheritance] in a row, like freebies! What kind of luck would that be?

Well, this was definitely a treasure trove!

Even if the quest actually ends here, Zhang Yang was already contented. After all, he and his little party of ladies had already gained more than enough for the trip.

If the system is so generous, as if the girl that you adored for N years suddenly accepted your 'mating call', would you still pretend to be a decent guy? Of course you would just take the shot!

Zhang Yang let out a battle cry and charged towards the boss.

"Snow... that imbecile..." the boss humphed coldly as blazing flames started igniting across his entire body. It seemed that he was already transformed into his {Roaring Flame Transformation} form. Just like the first contact with the previous boss Snow, Zhang Yang swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] while Crimson Flame swung his fist. It seemed that this boss was as brave as the last boss, Snow. They were both powerful warriors who did not fear meeting their enemies head-on. Things were a little different for Crimson Flame. Instead of being covered with frost, the blazing flames on his body instantly formed a barrier that looked like a forcefield around his fist.

Boom!

The fist and the blade clashed with each other. Zhang Yang was sent a few steps back by the impact of that punch. Crimson Flame charged in and threw another flaming fist at Zhang Yang, not even giving him a moment to catch his breath!

The great battle started off. Wei Yan Er, Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were already in their positions.

However, Daffodil Daydream felt out of place. She was able to cause double damage to Snow in the previous boss battle. But now, she could only stare at the boss, throwing ineffective fire attacks at Crimson Flame. All she could do in order to help was to summon out her Battle Companion to provide some support on their damage output. Meanwhile, she could only stand at a corner and make sure that she was still alive by the end of the battle.

On the other hand, although all Fire Attacks that Felice had on her were ineffective against the boss, the little lady could still transform into her humanoid form. She could still attack the boss effectively with her normal attacks. Although her damage output had been heavily affected, it was way better than Daffodil Daydream who could not do a single damage to the boss.

Pak! Pak! Pak!

The boiling lava on the body of the boss was dripping all over the floor, forming a sea of lava beneath his legs. Those flames that sprouted off the magma could cause 10,000 Nature Damage to whoever who touches them. Although 10,000 damage wasn't that much, receiving 10,000 damage every second could still be terrifying. Even Zhang Yang wouldn't dare to stand still and let the flames burn him for nothing. So he moved around agilely while kiting the boss along.

Fortunately, the lava required some time before it could turn the ground into a sea of blazing flames that started scorching players. Zhang Yang only needed to move to another spot once every 10 seconds. However, they could not afford to prolong the battle. Eventually, the entire floor available to them would be up in flames.

Daffodil Daydream was basically 'riding shotgun' for this battle while Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Felice were all sharing the wheel to poor effect. Nothing was being carried out efficiently in the battle. The only one that could still promise a full effect from its Basic Attack was Thunderhawk.

A brief moment later, the boss suddenly let out a roar, "My little birdies, come and meet your guests!"

Shoof! Four elite Tier Parrots puffed out of thin air. They dive bombed Han Ying Xue.

It could not be helped. After all, the monsters had been spawned right in the middle of the battle, without any sign of warning. Without a Tanker and other DPS players blocking off the parrots, their first target would naturally be the Healer, Han Ying Xue.

However, the words of the boss struck the four of them with the impact of a thunderbolt. So great was the impact that foam started leaking out of their mouths. They almost fell to the ground in epileptic fits, almost drowning in their own foam, right before the boss, there and then.



Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Charge} and clashed into one of the Parrots. The moment he came into contact with the Parrot, he stomped his feet heavily onto the ground and activated his {Thunder Strike}. That instantly reduced the movement speed of all four Parrots. 3 seconds later, Zhang Yang's {Horizontal Sweep} was ready to be dispatched. He activated {Horizontal Sweep} and swiped his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at the four Parrots. Instantly, all of the parrots received more than 50,000 damage and they immediately turned to Zhang Yang.

Daffodil Daydream finally found her use for the battle. Felice had also transformed into her Dragonhawk form and started to attack the parrots with her AoE attacks. Everyone turned to eliminate the parrots. They all understood. If they do not kill the monsters as swiftly as possible, they would only be wasting Han Ying Xue's efforts. The risk of being overwhelmed by a second wave of Parrots also grew, the longer they leave them be. If the second wave of Parrots ever gets summoned and reinforces the first wave, it would be the last straw that breaks the camel's back.

Fortunately, these parrots were not immune to Fire Attacks. They did not have the ability to reduce Physical Attacks by 50% as well. After the four of them focused their full firepower on the Parrots, the Parrots were taken down, leaving nothing but scattered feathers all across the floor.

It was really frustrating to see the boss' Fire Damage Immunity and also the ability to reduce Physical Damage by 50%. It was a huge dampener to the firepower of the entire party. However, as a Violet-Platinum Tier boss, the Attack Power of Crimson Flame was not particularly high. The HP bar of the boss was reduced down to 50% before lava had even covered half of the ground.

But, the {Roaring Flame Transformation} of the boss was truly visually awe-inspiring.

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er could feel that they were plunging their weapons into a pile of lava. It was soft, and there was hardly any sensation of their hard weapons hitting other hard surfaces. It was just like a kid slapping away at a pile of mud! Every time a blade slid across the boss, the body of the boss would break like how a plastic bag would. Lava would ooze out of the cut and drip onto the floor. Every single drop of the lava was boiling hot!

Wei Yan Er seemed to be a little interested in the boss, "Interesting, this boss is like a lava man!"

"The boss would probably be dropping a piece of a fragment for the [Roaring Flame Inheritance]. So you better think it through carefully. Or else you will regret it after I hand it over to other members of our guild!"

"Tsk! I'm not a child anymore! Why would I be crying over that kind of trivial matter?" Wei Yan Er frowned a little while she looked at Zhang Yang. Still, her expression did betray a hint of uncertainty.

Zhang Yang did not specifically demand for Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and the other gang members to get a Class S [Inheritance] or a Class A [Inheritance]. There was only a total of 6 Class S [Inheritance] in the entire server. So it would be wise not to waste time on that. Meanwhile, although Class A [Inheritances] were not

as unique as Class S [Inheritances], you would stand a better chance coming across a dancing panda in a bamboo forest.

In his past life, only Imperial Sky, Crimson Rage and The Radiance had players with Class A [Inheritance] in their guilds. Furthermore, Imperial Sky had two players with Class A [Inheritance], making them indisputably the Number One guild in the entire game!

Unfortunately, Sun Xin Yu had always been a loner. Although she was the only Thief with a Class S [Inheritance], she had never joined any guilds. Otherwise, Imperial Sky's position could have been challenged!

All that considered, it would already be enough for Zhang Yang's party members to get at least a Class B [Inheritance]. Getting a Class A [Inheritance] would require luck. Insisting on getting a Class A [Inheritance] would only make one miserable. After all, everyone had witnessed the power that high Class [Inheritances] could offer. No one would be generous enough to sell a fragment of Class A [Inheritance]!

After a flurry of attacks from Zhang Yang and his small party, the boss managed to pave two thirds of the floor in the cabin with lava. That was the moment the last hit struck and the four of them took down Crimson Flame. The boss dropped a few Violet-Platinum Tier equipment and a few Yellow-Gold Tier equipment. The Violet-Platinum Tier equipment did not have any reductions in their Required Levels, as this boss was not a Top Tier boss. Zhang Yang shoved everything into his inventory. As predicted, the fragment for the [Roaring Flame Inheritance] appeared on the ground!

It was a Class B [Inheritance]!

Even Han Ying Xue was a little shocked, then she said, "Well, this place sure is a place full of surprises and treasures! We have gotten two invaluable fragments of [Inheritances]! I wonder what other treasure awaits us further ahead!"

Getting a fragment of an [Inheritance] was as good as getting a full set of it. The fragments would resonate and call out to each other. It would only be a matter of time before players can get the full set. Two fragments of two different [Inheritance]? Zhang Yang still couldn't believe that they were greeted with such generous gifts upon killing the first two bosses.

Zhang Yang nodded absent-mindedly, more confused than ever. He had never heard of an island with such a name in his previous life!

# Chapter 562: 'Light-Speed' Light

---

Only one person would reject such great gifts.

Zhang Yang shoved the [Inheritance] fragment into his inventory with joy. The only disadvantage was that this fragment must be carried along with him. He could not put it in his bank or the warehouse of his guild. That would take up one precious slot in his inventory for a period of time.

If One Sword Stroke and his other fellow 'friends' ever knew about this 'ordeal', they would definitely give Zhang Yang a good beating! Who would be unhappy about having part of their inventory taken up by treasures?

"Sigh... what a stingy boss... just like noob tank over there. He didn't drop anything good for me. No good equipment, and not even a single [Skill Book]. Stingy!" Wei Yan Er was scolding the dead boss and ostensibly criticizing Zhang Yang, with her hands planted on her waist. Zhang Yang was annoyed to hear that coming from the little brat and ground his teeth together.

The four of them then proceeded through stairs as they made their way to the third floor of the cabin. They just had to defeat one more general before facing the final boss - Blackbeard Ditch. Since his generals were all Violet-Platinum Tier, Blackbeard Ditch had to at least be a Mythical Tier boss!

The third floor of the cabin was basically identical to the previous floor. Other than a bunch of filthy pirate monsters, there

was still a bunch of Parrots. The four of them slashed their way through the floor. The little brat was getting addicted to slashing up the monsters. She even leaped into the air, her eyes cold and glowing evil red.

Zhang Yang nervously sent a private message to Han Ying Xue. He said, "Little brat is turning into a total maniac. I'm worried for her future husband."

"Hey hey hey! Don't you dare have any ideas!" Han Ying Xue hissed. She was acting like a hen trying to protect its chick. "If you dare to do anything on Yan Er, I shall 'snip' 'snip' you!"

Zhang Yang could feel a chill running up his spine. He liked the little brat, but as a younger sister figure, not the romantic kind of love! Furthermore, the little brat was a little slow and immature. Only god knows when she would grow up. So, why the rush then?

"Rest assured, even if I become a 100 year-old hoodlum, and even if little brat is the last female on earth, I will never have any ideas on her!" Zhang Yang swore as earnestly as he could, "Happy now?"

"Humph! Only an idiot would really feel more relieved after hearing those cliché lines! I better stop the little brat from coming home so frequently!"

"...why do I have a feeling that you're not telling me everything. It's like you have something else in mind...or someone else? Oh, haha! You must be jealous of the Zhao Sisters! Wait, you don't want the little brat bringing them to our home, right? What the

hell! Why take such a roundabout fashion there? You could have just told me straight! You really took me for a ride there!"

As they were having their 'sweet' talk, the party rushed forwards like a hot knife cutting through butter. They had no fears or worries of crossing swords with Elite Tier monsters. Their power turned tons of monsters into tons of experience points. Each of their experience bars were rising up at an unrealistic rate.

More than two hours later, they stood before the third boss.

Unlike the previous two bosses, this boss was called 'Light'. He had a tall and slender body, so slender that he could pass off as a skeleton in the dark. He wore pale-yellowish clothes. More importantly, he stood on the ground like a bamboo pole. He looked like he was in his mid 30s, with two small whiskers above his mouth. Wearing a pair of brown-tint glasses, he looked wretched.

[‘Light-Speed’ Light] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 39,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Attack: 31,653 - 37,653 (Determined as Physical Attack, but causes Fire Damage)

## Skills:

[Motion of Lightning]: Moves to another place in an extremely short period of time. That is enough for him to avoid most attacks!

[Light and Shadow Transformation]: Transforms into 'Light and Shadow'. Increases 50% Nature Damage dealt. Immune to all Nature Damage and Nature-based Skills received. Reduces 50% Physical Damage received.

[Ray of Fatality]: Fires a deadly beam and causes 40,000 Nature Damage to the target. With the target as the central point, fires countless beams into the surrounding, causing 40,000 Nature Damage to all targets within the range of 20-meter radius.

Note: One of the three generals under Blackbeard Ditch. The user of 'Shadow and Light' Devil Fruit. Has the power to control light.

A Mythical Tier boss!

A Mythical Tier boss before the final boss? Furthermore, this boss would also probably drop a fragment for the [Light and Shadow Inheritance]. However, Zhang Yang could not remember from his previous life on whether this [Inheritance] was Class A or Class B.

But there was one thing he was very sure of. When the core players of the guild get their hands on these high Class



[Inheritance], Lone Desert Smoke could really lay the first brick to becoming the real and powerful Number One guild in the China Region, or even Number One in the entire world!

When it really goes down to that, Zhang Yang could launch a direct assault on any large Region that irks him! With a large number of players activating their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills at the same time, they could really level down an entire empire within days! They could just lay waste to that particular Region and interrupt them in their leveling progress!

"Silly Yu, that's a Mythical boss!" Han Ying Xue prodded Zhang Yang's back with her fingers as she spoke softly.

"Stop acting cute! It doesn't suit your style!" Zhang Yang smiled, "Should we summon Fantasy Sweetheart and the others over, or should I just activate my {God of War Transformation} Skill for this guy?"

"Just activate your {God of War Transformation}. This boss can release AoE attacks like how electricity spreads. If we clump the area up with more people it'll be harder dodging them." Han Ying Xue said.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought. His {God of War Transformation} could last for 2 hours. After killing the boss, they would still have to clear the monsters on the fourth floor. If the number of the monsters are as many as it was on the third floor, then they should be able to push on much quicker under the support of his {God of War Transformation}. The 'Transformation' should still last for another 30 minutes when they reached the final

boss - Blackbeard Ditch.

That should suffice!

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey out from his inventory. Although this Yellow-Gold Tier [Mount] could only provide very limited support in contrast to the powerful party, the boss had immunity against all Nature-based damage. Thunderhawk would be helpless against the boss. Zhang Yang would have to use Whitey in that battle. So he nodded and said, "I'm starting the battle."

Upon activating his {God of War Transformation}, streams of light, in 7 different colors began to radiate from the back of Zhang Yang, as a pair of magnificent wings sprouted out of his back. He levitated into the air grandly. Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were completely mesmerized by the Zhang Yang's appearance.

Only Wei Yan Er was criticizing Zhang Yang that his wings were not real, as she continued to blame Zhang Yang for betraying her and snatching away her [Inheritance].

Shoof!

Thanks to his {God of War Transformation}, Zhang Yang's movement speed had exceeded the speed of many [Flying Mounts]. In just a blink of an eye, he had arrived behind the boss. Swinging his [Sword of Purging Devourer], he drew first blood.

"What a daring devil you are. You actually dare to defy me and use your weapon against me!" Light was speaking at such a slow pace that people would feel anxious listening to him. However, his movement speed was actually faster than the movement speed of Zhang Yang. In a flash, he had moved at a spot, 10 meters away from Zhang Yang.

That should be the {Motion of Lightning} of the boss. It did not bring shame to the word - 'Lightning'.

Light raised up his index finger as light started to gather around the tip of his index finger. The light formed into a chicken-egg-sized light ball. With a phew, the ball of light went straight at Zhang Yang!

{Spear of Obliteration}!

Zhang Yang immediately raised his right arm. He then threw out the sword from his hand, which later formed into the shape of a spear and went right through the middle of Light's chest. He did not flinch in the face of the oncoming laser.

Obviously, the {Motion of Lightning} of the boss also had a cooldown period. If that was not the case, no one would stand a chance against this boss. When that strike from the {Spear of Obliteration} landed on the chest of Light, blood oozed out from the stab wound and it caused 108,922 damage to Light. Although Light attempted to dodge the attack, he failed to do so, as he could not use his {Motion of Lightning} at that particular moment.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had already raised his shield and held it up in front of him. With his {Block} activated, 'Clang!', the beam of light was deflected away and pierced a hole the size of a fist in a wall. There, the beam vanished.

"You imbecile!" Light had taken a hit which he had not expected it. He finally started to turn serious. A beam of light flashed across the eyes behind the pair of brown glasses. A golden light flashed across the body of the boss, and turned the body translucent!

The boss had activated his {Light and Shadow Transformation}!

Every boss in this place was ferocious and deadly! Unlike the bosses they had encountered before in other maps, they would already activate their ultimate Skills the moment the battle begins. The other bosses would only activate their ultimate Skills, such as {Berserk} when their remaining HP drops to 20% or 10%. With these bosses using their powerful Skills the moment the battle begins, players would surely struggle against them!

But, who should be afraid now?

Zhang Yang had a Class S {God of War Transformation} Skill!

With a wave of his hand, he threw the {Glare of the Death God} straight at the boss. This time, the god had eyes for Zhang Yang. The {Glare of the Death God} was finally not resisted by the boss!

"What is this!" Light let out an angry roar as he realized that

there was a wretched-looking dark skull forming at the top of his head.

Zhang Yang and the ladies began to unleash hellfire upon the boss. Because the boss was affected by the {Glare of the Death God}, they were only focused on hitting the boss as many times as possible, regardless of the damage.

‘- 390,000!’

‘- 390,000!’

...

The three DPS players, two Battle Companion, and one [Mount] surrounded the boss as they launched their assaults at the boss as aggressively as possible. Although the rate of triggering the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} was as low as 10%, they still managed to trigger it several times in a row! Light was receiving a series of damage that reached up to 390,000 damage! Furthermore, these damage were directly inflicted upon the boss. It would still be futile even if the boss activates his {Light and Shadow Transformation}.

That felt way too good!

"Now this is what we called a ‘Boss-Killer’ Skill!" Daffodil Daydream praised.

Zhang Yang, sighed, saying, "It would have been great if the rate of resisting the Skill would be more kind."

"When things are already so good, you should stop asking for more! Theoretically speaking, if you can last for 10 hours against the assaults of a boss, even if the boss is a Celestial Tier, they would still be taken out by this {Glare of the Death God}. If their rate of resisting is not high, then what is the point of bosses and tiers, then?" Han Ying Xue was surprisingly rational.

"You bastards!" Light let out a thunderous shout that shook the sky in rage. The battle had just begun not long ago, and the boss had already been dealt heavy damage. He was very mad and pointed at them with his index finger. A blinding beam of light shot from the tip of his finger. It went right through the body of Wen Yan Er.

--- {Ray of Fatality}!

Instantly, the little brat received 40,000 damage from that strike. Then, countless beams of lights shot out from her body.

Even though Zhang Yang could fly, he could not outrun the Skill. He was struck by one of the beams and received 40,000 damage, just like Wei Yan Er. But, with his {God of War Shield} activated, his Passive Damage Immunity had reached 40%. Together with the other of Damage Absorption abilities of his equipment, Zhang Yang only received a total of 21,114 damage.

That 20,000 damage was a mere fraction of his 5,380,000 HP.

Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream and Felice were attacking from the rear, using most of their ranged attacks. They were not caught up in the spread attack of the {Ray of Fatality}. However, Whitey, Wei Yan Er and the other battle companions could not avoid their fate. Without the {Iron Build} to boost its Maximum HP, Whitey only had over 36,200 HP, even when with the blessing of {Vitality Aura}. It was instantly killed!

The Battle Companion of Wei Yan Er was only a Yellow-Gold Tier. Without having any Violet-Platinum equipment on, Reina's HP was even lesser than the total HP of Whitey. She was also instantly killed.

However, they could not contribute much in providing more damage output to the firepower of the party in the first place. That was not their main purpose anyway. They were there to trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God}. It did not matter if they were sacrificed while trying to accomplish the main goal!

## Chapter 563: Blackbeard Ditch

---

Since Zhang Yang had activated his {God of War Transformation} Skill, he basically did not require Han Ying Xue to heal him at all. The 'Transformation' Skill boosted him with an additional 75% HP. He also got to use his {Shield Wall} once, every two and a half minutes. Those circumstances should be enough to keep him alive well enough until they slay the boss!

Unfortunately, the [Titan Chest Plate] was only a Level 80 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment. The special effect of the piece had begun to deteriorate after he reached Level 100. When he is able to reach Level 110, the special effect should get deteriorated even more because of its attributes that are based on percentage ratio. After all, this [Titan Chest Plate] was merely a knockoff instead of a Godly equipment.

Still, the boss was not easy to deal with. The {Light and Shadow Transformation} provided the boss the special attributes to reduce any Physical Damage that he receives by 50%. Since Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er mostly relied on Physical attacks, they were having a difficult time in bringing down the HP bar of the boss. The {Motion of Lightning} was even more irritating. This Skill was basically similar to the Skill {Block}. It could allow the boss to dodge against any form of attacks --- other than Skills that state otherwise, for instance, the Skill {Killing Cleave}.

Furthermore, the cooldown period for the {Motion of Lightning} was extremely short. The boss could actually use it once every 10 seconds!



Sometimes, when the boss was lucky enough, he could dodge 3 to 4 attacks at the same time with the {Motion of Lightning}, giving the party a hard time!

Fortunately, Zhang Yang was also insanely powerful in his {God of War Form}. The boss was no threat to him. So it is only a matter of time before they bring down the boss.

"You imbeciles never stand a chance against me!"

"I am invincible!"

"Allow me to crush your skulls with my might!"

The HP bar of the boss reduced rapidly as he constantly roared. In less than 20 minutes, he was close to dying.

"Haha! A super boss should drop something nice!" Wei Yan Er could no longer hold her greed back. She actually went up to the boss and tried to dig around his pockets!

Zhang Yang could not help but to wonder, would this little brat still probe her husband's ever single pocket for money, every single day after she gets married?

Zhang Yang's imagination started going wild. He suddenly had an urge to use a time-travelling device to take a peek on how the little brat would do in the future, 10 years from now.

"No! No! This is impossible!" Light was struggling for his life. His rate of activating the {Motion of Lightning} increased by a notch. He could use it once every 5 seconds now! Most of the super Skills that Zhang Yang and his ladies cast missed their target.

Zhang Yang let out an angered cry and activated his {Indiscriminate}. With a full Rage bar ready for use, he activated his {Killing Cleave} in an attempt to end the boss once and for all!

‘-422,986!’

{Killing Cleave} was unblockable and undodgeable! The {Indiscriminate} ensured that every single hit that landed on a target with HP bar lower than 20% would surely be a Critical Strike for 10 seconds!

Unfortunately, the boss had that one special attribute to reduce any Physical Damage received by 50%. Although it was a Critical hit, the {Killing Cleave} only caused half of its potential damage. The Critical Hit was completely nullified!

Still, that damage was no small amount. A damage of 420,000 would be more than 1% of his HP bar! He only had about 2% HP left, and this strike had almost ended him! Now, Light only had about 1% HP left!

{Dance of the Heaven and Earth}!

The little brat could not stand letting Zhang Yang triumph over the boss all by himself. So she activated her super Skill to end the battle.

Upon entering the Chaos Realm, there was a tremendous increase in the amount of HP for both players and bosses. An amount of 100,000 damage was once a great deal, but it no longer had such power in the Chaos Realm. The Basic Damage of Zhang Yang's {Indiscriminate} alone could already reach up to 400,000 damage, without it being a Critical Hit!

With a swift {Killing Cleave} from the little brat, the last drop of HP was taken out. He let out a miserable cry and collapsed onto the floor of the cabin. The loot burst out of his body like a ruptured water balloon.

Zhang Yang did not waste any single second. He quickly said, "Little brat will stay behind and pick the stuff up. The rest of us will head on! We can take a look at the loot while on the move!"

He had already set the Item Distribution mode to All-Pick.

Of course, Wei Yan Er had no beef with that, and she made her way to the items and picked them up with joy.

The party then charged on to the fourth floor of the cabin. Since Zhang Yang had already activated his {God of War Transformation}, the party did not have to hold anything back. Instead, they charged forward with everything that they had in attempt to blitz through the floor. Zhang Yang lured a large

number of pirates into one spot and activated his Skills repeatedly. Upon activating {God of War's Crushing Strike}, {Horizontal Strike}, {Thunder Strike}, and the triggering of the special effect of his {Sword of the Purging Devourer}, Zhang Yang was hitting the monsters as hard as a tsunami! In just a brief moment, the pirates were all wiped out, and the party gained a substantial amount of experience points.

Wei Yan Er had also begun to post the attributes of the loots one by one. She said, "The boss had dropped a total of 2 Mythical Tier equipment, 3 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, two [Skill Books], and a piece of a fragment for an [Inheritance]. So which one do you guys want to start with?"

Zhang Yang was swinging his sword about as he spoke, "Forget about the Violet-Platinum Tier equipment. We cannot afford to wait until we're all Level 130 just to equip them. Let's look at the Mythical Tier equipment first. We will move on to the [Skill Books] after that. Since that the [Inheritance] is just a Class B, I'll assume that none of you would want it. So let's just forget about it too!"

"You really are hard to please!" Wei Yan Er shrugged and said, "Well, I'm an easy going person after all. Fine, fine I'll please you."

She looked into her inventory and moved her hand around. Then, she took out a piece of equipment and posted its attributes. It was a cute pair of pink panties. However, this panties would not be visible if the player equipping it is also equipped with a Chest Plate or a Robe.

[The Flowery Panties of Light's First Love] (Mythical, Cloth

Armor)

Defense: +32

Vitality: +1,926

Intelligence: +905

Spirit: +393

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 3,800 points.

Equip: Increases Maximum MP by 1,800 points

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 3.5%.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 130

Special: Reduces 20 levels of the Required Level.

Note: There's nothing that Light can't steal.

The attributes of this equipment were top Tier. It even had additional Maximum HP, additional Maximum MP, and also large

increase in Damage! This equipment also reduced 20 levels from its Required Level. Based on its attributes alone, this panties was almost perfect in all aspects!

However, the name of this equipment was also one strong reason that Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were frowning hard upon seeing it!

"Cousin sis, Daffodil! Which one of you will take this?" Wei Yan Er asked.

The two ladies hesitated for a moment. It was powerful, and based on that alone, there was no reason to decline it. However, the name alone was repulsive enough! Well, this was a second-hand good after all. Furthermore, it had been stolen and stowed away by a wretched middle-aged man for god-knows how long. Only god knows what he would have done with it, or if he had worn it himself!

Zhang Yang laughed at the two ladies and he said, "You two just toss for it. Whoever loses, take the equipment!"

The two ladies nodded. After tossing for it, Daffodil got a smaller roll. She was forced to keep the panties.

If other players were to see how the two ladies were pushing away such a great pair of panties, they would definitely be frowning hard! The name was the only issue there! They could have just ignored that aspect! It was a Level 130 Mythical Tier equipment after all. The best part about it was that players could

already equip it when they reach Level 110! It should be one of the most powerful equipment for players around Level 110!

Wei Yan Er moved on to the second equipment and post its attributes up. Then, she suddenly said, "This is mine, noob tank! Don't you dare snatch it from me!"

[Light Beam Protector's Greaves] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +2,012

Strength: +931

Agility: +340

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 4,000 points.

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 3.5%

Equip: Absorbs 384 Damage when struck.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 130

Special: Reduce 20 levels from the Required Level.

A high Tier equipment that boosts Attack and Defense at the same time! Even though one could not see whether this equipment was more to Offense or Defense, it would still be a powerful piece!

The trousers Zhang Yang had was also a Mythical Tier equipment, along with a Level 120 Mythical Tier Greaves. Although the Greaves was 10 levels lower than the [Light Beam Protector's Greaves], the difference between the attributes of these two equipment were not really that much. Therefore, he did not intend to fight the little brat. He only nodded and agreed to let the little brat have it.

Wei Yan Er gave a sweet smile at Zhang Yang and said, "That's more like it! I shall put more good words about you to Cousin sis, so that she will be more gentle with you!"

"Of course, it's necessary!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud.

Han Ying Xue stared at the little brat incredulously, and she said, "Am I not gentle?"

"We haven't even taken a look at the [Skill Books] yet!" Wei Yan Er switched the topic by waving a book with a red hard cover about. She threw it over to Zhang Yang, "Now this is yours, noob tank!"



## [Skill Book: Superior Thunder Strike]

Use: Teaches you the {Strengthened Thunder Strike}.

Required: {Thunder Strike}

Required Level: 100

Thunder Strike was basically an exclusive Skill that only Guardians had. Since Wei Yan Er couldn't learn the Skill for her own usage, she generously gave it to Zhang Yang without hesitation.

Zhang Yang immediately took the [Skill Book] and held it against his body. He had not heard of this Skill before. So, he learned it to find out what the Skill could do.

[Superior Thunder Strike (Passive)]: Strengthens your {Thunder Strike}, increasing your Movement Speed Reduction rate up to 90%. Duration is extended for another 10 seconds. However, the target will regain 10% movement speed every second. Within the period of time, the target has a 1% chance to experience a "Torn Hamstring" effect. When the target does so, the target will not be able to move at all for 5 seconds.

Awesome! This Skill should be useful!

This Skill only acted as a strengthening factor to his {Thunder Strike}. Zhang Yang did not have to spend additional rage points

and wait for Global Cooldown among Skills. Upon learning this passive Skill, he would still be using his {Thunder Strike} as per usual, however, it would have more powerful effects on his targets. That would make him even more powerful!

"So what's the other [Skill Book], then?" Han Ying Xue was looking at the little brat, her eyes glittering.

"Hmm... unfortunately, this one is not yours as well... cousin sis." Wei Yan Er shook her head and took the other [Skill Book] out from her inventory. Then she said, "This one is for sister Daffodil!"

After receiving the [Skill Book] from the little brat, Daffodil Daydream tapped it on her and learned the Skill. That was also an 'Enhancement-type' [Skill Book]. After she had learned the Skill, she posted it onto the party channel.

[Superior Explosive Flame]: When your {Explosive Flame} causes damage, you will gain an additional effect. Increases your next chanting speed by 50%. Lasts for 3 seconds.

{Explosive Flame} has a 10-second cooldown period. So, the user could increase their next chanting speed for their next spell by 50%, every 10 seconds. Although it wasn't really some sort of super powerful Skill, Pyromancers and Spellcasters used this Skill quite often. Furthermore, it was like a free enhancement to a user of {Explosive Flame}. Why would players with the Skill wouldn't want it then?

Although Light was a Mythical Tier boss, the [Inheritance] he

dropped upon his death was merely a Class B [Inheritance]. However, Zhang Yang and the two ladies were amazed by it. Only Wei Yan Er was feeling discontented as she continued to complain. She really wanted a Class A [Inheritance], after all.

The moment they were done distributing the loots, the party was almost done clearing up the monsters on the fourth floor. Soon after, the four of them finally arrived right in front of the final boss, Blackbeard Ditch.

This heavily-bearded man was scratching his ears and cheeks in anxiety. At the same time, he was tossing and turning the Treasure Map around, gazing at it intently. He would put it on the table for a while, and then toss it into the air just to see what would happen. It seemed that he had not discovered the secrets that were hidden in the map, as he looked annoyed and anxious at the same time.

[Ditch, Leader of the Blackbeard Pirates] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 130,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Attack: 40,204 - 52,204 (Determined as Physical Attack, but cause Shadow Damage)

Skills:

[Blastoff]: Quakes the ground, causes 50,000 Physical Damage to all targets within the range of 40 meters radius.

[Darkness Transformation]: Transforms into the form of Darkness. Increases 50% Shadow Damage. Immune to all Shadow Damage and Shadow Skills. Reduces 50% Physical Damage received.

[Devouring Darkness]: Devours all targets within the range of 40 meters radius and digests them. Players must kill the Blackbeard Ditch's Illusion that spawns before then, in 30 seconds. If they succeed, they can escape the Darkness, causing 100,000 Damage to Ditch. If the players fail, they will die immediately, healing Ditch by 1% of his maximum HP.

[Dark Arrow]: Randomly attacks a target in range, causing 40,000 Shadow Damage to the target. Range: 3 - 40 meters.

Note: This is the Captain of the Blackbeard Pirates, the man that sails fearlessly across the boundless seas, unanimously agreed upon the sole holder of the adjective - 'Brutal'! Ditch is the user of the Dark-dark Fruit, he has the special power to control Darkness.

"100 million HP!" The four of them glared intensely.

Because the boss had the Skill {Devouring Darkness}, he had a chance to recover 1% of his HP every time one player falls to his {Devouring Darkness}. It was a total amount of 1,300,000 HP that the boss could heal! So, how difficult would Blackbeard Ditch's

Illusions be, then? If the game has made it too powerful, then the boss would be invincible!

At that moment, the {God of War Transformation} of Zhang Yang would expire in 36 minutes.

Thanks to the {God of War Transformation}, the total amount of DPS Zhang Yang could reach was about 100,000 damage. However, because the boss had the ability to reduce 50% on the Physical Damage that he receives when he is in his {Darkness Transformation} form, Zhang Yang could only deal about 50,000 damage in every second. It would still require about 43 minutes to empty out the total amount of 130,000,000 HP that the boss had on him.

But, they still had a shot at killing the boss within 36 minutes. That being said, Zhang Yang's [Glare of the Death God] would have to be successfully activated. Furthermore, upon entering the critical stage of the battle, Zhang Yang's Attack would dramatically increase when the HP of the boss drops below 20%. The rest of it would depend on the other party members. None of them knew exactly how dangerous and powerful the {Devouring Darkness} was!

Furthermore, if the rate of activating {Blastoff} was too high, then Han Ying Xue would have trouble healing up everyone. Only Zhang Yang would not require her attention. He had his {Shield Wall} to heal himself.

Zhang Yang gave some thoughts about it, then he said, "When you are hit by the boss's {Blastoff}, just retreat immediately. Don't

go back to hit the boss before your HP is healed back to full. If the cooldown of this {Blastoff} is brief, just stay away until we figure it out."

{Blastoff} could cause 50,000 Damage. Even though Zhang Yang had an abundance of HP, he could not sustain more than a few strikes from that Skill, if he was not in his {God of War Transformation}.

To kill a super boss, one must summon a large number of players to do it!

## Chapter 564: Ferocious Battle with Blackbeard

---

Furthermore, all players that are joining the boss battle should be up to a certain standard. At the very least, they should be able to kill the illusion of the boss within the 30-second time frame. If they fail to kill the illusion, they would only end up aiding the boss by healing the boss 1% again and again, if they were to die one after another. That being said, 100 players getting killed by {Devouring Darkness} would already heal the boss completely! By then, it would be better to give up on the boss battle rather than torment oneself.

The three ladies seemed to have understood the danger of the Skill. They nodded to express their acknowledgment.

Zhang Yang took a deep breath. With a flap in his wings, he flew up into the air like a god and dove down towards the boss. In the blink of an eye, Zhang Yang had arrived before the boss and started with his assaults. With a shoof, he activated his {Charge} and swung his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at the boss.

‘- 98,772!’

Right after the blow, Zhang Yang’s Rage Bar went over its regular capacity!

‘- 222,408!’

Unfortunately, the {Frost Strike} did not cause any Frost Effects on the boss --- If the Skill could cause a Frost Effect on the boss, Zhang Yang could delay the boss from entering his {Darkness Transformation} form for 10 seconds, at the very least. That would have given Zhang Yang more time to cause a great deal of damage to the boss, theoretically.

"Huh?" Ditch was a little astounded. A strange dark light flashed across the eyes of the boss as he threw a powerful punch towards Zhang Yang, pushing Zhang Yang a few steps back. "It's you! If you have made it here, that means, Light and Snow are dead? Humph! What a bunch of useless imbeciles!"

Suddenly, the entire body of the boss quivered as he set his eyes upon the Treasure Map that he was holding in his hand. He could not help but to shout in shock, "I see! I got it! The Treasures is hidden beneath this island, all along!"

Ditch laughed boisterously as he rolled the Treasure Map up and pushed it into one of his sleeves. He glared at them murderously and said, "You f\*cking boy, I'm going to get the Treasure. I have no time to deal with you. Just die and save me the trouble already!"

The air began to rumble.

The boss was suddenly shrouded in a barrier of darkness, as streams of dark energy surged and circled around his body. All of the sudden the dark energy flew up into the sky, piercing through the floors of the previous four levels. If one were to look up, layers after layers of holes could be seen. However, the light would never reach the floor of this battle. The dark energy was a rampaging,



violent concentration of abyss incarnate. It was like a black hole, drawing in everything, including light. The sunlight from outside would be completely dissipated before even touching the ground.

Dark shrouds were beginning to gush out into the surroundings, engulfing the entire cabin into darkness. The dark energy filled up the floor of the cabin up to the knee levels of Zhang Yang and the ladies.

{Darkness Transformation}!

Zhang Yang charged up to the boss and activated his {Destructive Smash}. However, his sword felt like it had been stuck into a pile of mud. The cut only managed to cause a small part of the dark shroud to disperse. It seemed like the body of the boss had transformed into a dark shroud. Spooky!

‘-102,242!’

With the boss’s ability to reduce 50% of all Physical Damage that he would receive, Zhang Yang could only deal about 100,000 damage to the boss with his {Destructive Smash}.

{Glare of the Death God}!

With an uneasy sense in his chest, Zhang yang threw his best boss-killer Skill onto Ditch!

A dark skull began to form on top of the boss’s head. The skull

revealed a wretched smile, looking extremely spooky as well.

"What the hell is this?" Ditch was very surprised by what he saw. His 'instinct' told him that this skull was extremely dangerous!

The super boss on every map would have their own 'Personalities'. It was the developer's idea to implement such a system, to bring the characters of the bosses to life. The way the bosses talk and react should all be compatible to the standard of being a 'person'. Therefore, this boss could also show fear, excitement, anxiousness and other complex 'emotions'. So, it would not be possible for Ditch to act like a player who realized that he was being casted with a Skill. However, the boss would still be capable of receiving 'secret notifications' from the system to know that the {Glare of the Death God} would pose a deadly threat to him!

After witnessing that the {Glare of the Death God} had taken effect, Han Ying Xue and the other ladies cheered. Without wasting any of their precious time, they began to launch their assaults at the boss as rapidly as they could. They were trying to maximizing the chance of triggering the special effect of the Skill before time ran out.

‘-1,300,000!’

‘-1,300,000!’

Numerous damage values popped up on top of the boss, forcing him to act in a hurry. Ditch swung his fist, shrouded by dark

energy, straight towards Zhang Yang.

A Level 130 Mythical Tier boss was so much stronger than Zhang Yang. The impact from every single punch from the boss trembled across Zhang Yang's entire body, making Zhang Yang stagger back each time he was struck by the fist. His left hand that was holding the shield rang with numbness. He could barely hold the shield up with his arm, right after the series of punches!

Within 7 seconds, the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} had already been triggered for as many as 10 times. The HP of the boss had already dropped by 10%! Ditch roared in rage as he crossed his clenched fists together, before spreading his arms wide, double backhanding the areas beside him. His fists collided into the empty spaces to his left and right.

Bam! Bam! Crack!

The very air right in front of Zhang Yang and the ladies suddenly began to crack, like how a mirror would crack. Then, the cracked space shattered into pieces. The pieces shot out at the four of them like sharp blades!

{Blastoff}!

The four of them received a basic damage of 40,000 Physical Damage. Other than Zhang Yang, the 3 ladies only had about 60,000 to 70,000 HP. They were only left with approximately 40% HP remaining. It had put them in perilous positions. The ladies were so shocked that they kept backing up until they were more

than 40 meters away from the boss. They could not afford to be struck by the boss's {Blastoff} or {Dark Arrow}. If they did, they would be instantly killed!

Han Ying Xue quickly healed herself up. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were using their own [Bandages] in an attempt to heal themselves up as quickly as possible. They wanted to reengage into battle to channel their damage output on the boss.

However, right after Han Ying Xue healed up the three of them back to their full health, the boss did it again. He spread his arms wide, and once again backhanded the empty spaces to his left and right, just like before! The space within 40-meter range from the boss was shattered completely!

"It was just 11 seconds after he used that Skill!" Zhang Yang said. So that was the time interval when the boss would use his {Blastoff}.

"Hahaha! What a bunch of weaklings! Just for me!" Ditch let out a good laugh as he revealed his teeth, some of which were blackened. The stench of booze came right out from his mouth. With his fists colliding into the empty spaces around him once more, Ditch had shattered the entire cabin to ruins with his {Blastoff}. He actually turned the 'Indoor Environment' straight into an 'Outdoor Environment'!

As time passed by, he kept repeating what he did to activate his {Blastoff}. The space around him continued to shatter. The scene was grand and spectacular!

After 3 consecutive {Blastoffs}, Felice and Thunderhawk had to retreat. They only had about 180,000 HP on them. Three {Blastoffs} in a row was enough to send them outside Death's doorstep.

"There is no way we can pull this off!" Wei Yan Er was hanging her head dispiritedly. She was a Melee-type player. She would require 4 seconds in order to get in range in order for her to whack the boss. Then she would require 4 seconds to get out of the effective range of the {Blastoff}. Meanwhile, the boss had already activated {Blastoff} for 3 times. First, it took 11 seconds for the boss to strike out with {Blastoff} again, and the second time, it only took the boss 9 seconds before he activated his third {Blastoff}!

Within the shortest period of cooldown, Wei Yan Er was only be able to run up to the boss and hit the boss for 1 second before she needed to start running away from the boss. There was more running than hitting!

"Tremble before me! Tremble before the despair of Darkness that is brought upon you!" The boss continued to laugh. He would just throw his punches at Zhang Yang and activate his {Blasoff} once a short while to cause havoc to the surroundings. The battle was ferocious at that point, that no words could properly describe it.

If Zhang Yang had not activated his {God of War Transformation}, if he did not have the knockoff version of heavenly powerful [Titan Chest Plate] with him, he wouldn't have stood a chance against the continuous assaults from the boss. Unless he calls upon the best Healers from his guild to take turn and heal him, Zhang Yang had to activate his {God of War

Transformation} in order to survive the onslaught of the boss.

Wei Yan Er could almost do nothing to the boss at that stage. Meanwhile, Daffodil Daydream, Felice and Thunderhawk could still continue channeling their damage output on the boss. The furthest range attack for Ranged players and NPCs was 30 meters. If they needed to be 40 meters away from the boss to be safe from the impact of {Blastwave}, all they needed to do was to run 10 meters away in order to get out of the danger zone. Running over the distance of 10 meters would only require 2 seconds. So they would still have enough time for 3 spells before running off to wait out for the {Blastoff} to end.

However, the boss was not consistent. Sometimes, it only took 8 seconds for him to strike again. But sometimes, he would waited up to 15 seconds before activating {Blastoff}. If any of them were careless enough to get hit by a {Blastoff} in the face, followed by a {Dark Arrow}, they would be as good as dead.

As long as they were still alive, they could still deal some serious damage to the boss over time.

"I will eat you all!" Ditch suddenly let out a roar as he began to merge himself into the dark shrouds around him. Then he devoured Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream who had coincidentally went up to the boss to deal some damage.

All Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er could see was a pitch black shroud covering the space in the cabin. They could not see Zhang Yang and Daffodil Daydream, nor could they see any signs of the boss! Felice and Thunderhawk were left idle by the side.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang found a shadow standing in the middle of the sea of darkness. The shadow looked similar to the appearance of the boss.

[Blackbeard Ditch's Illusion] (Summon)

Level: 130

HP: 300,000

Defense: 0

Attack: 10,000 (Determined as Physical Attack, but causes Shadow Damage)

Skills: None

Zhang Yang could not afford to waste any of the 30-second time frame. With a flap of his wings, Zhang Yang charged forward as he began to swing his [Sword of Purging Devourer] at the illusion. He gave the illusion a good normal swing from his sword, closely followed by his {Horizontal Sweep}, causing two large numbers of damage to the illusion.

‘-95,221!’

‘-197,234!’

Zhang Yang had almost killed the illusion instantly after the two strikes.

His DPS could theoretically reach up to a total of 96,000 damage upon activating his {God of War Transformation}. It would only take a brief instant for him to slay a monster with only 300,000 HP.

With another strike from his sword, Zhang Yang caused another high value of damage to the monsters. A yellow colour value of ‘-92,243!’ popped right on top of the monster. The monster then opened up his arm and vanished into thin air. Right after that, Zhang Yang was instantly teleported out from the temporary dimension he was in and reappeared at the position where he last stood before being devoured.

There was no sign of the boss.

Zhang Yang understood it. Unless the 30 seconds were up, or all of the illusions were destroyed, the boss would not reappear back in the cabin.

"Haha, noob tank! Why didn't you get digested by the gastric juice of the boss?" Wei Yan Er laughed.

"I'll have you know that my body is superhuman! The boss knew he would suffer indigestion the moment he couldn't chew my hard flesh up, so he made the wise choice! He spat me out right away!" Zhang Yang was laughing while he tried to troll the little brat.



The time frame of 30 seconds was about to come to an end. Daffodil Daydream had finally reappeared back in the cabin. She had lost about 20,000 HP as she was battling the boss's illusion. It wasn't bad at all for her. It meant that she only got hit twice by the illusion while she was killing it. Judging from her DPS that had was only up to 10,000 damage, her performance was nothing short of a miracle!

She could not kill monsters with one or two hits like how Zhang Yang did. While she was in that solitary space, she could not get any healing support. Daffodil Daydream had to move around agilely while using her Status Restriction Skills to maintain a certain distance between the monster and herself. Under those sort of circumstances, she could still maximize her damage output. That required serious skill. She was indeed worthy of being one of the top 10 Spellcasters in China, during Zhang Yang's previous life!

The moment Daffodil Daydream reappeared, the boss had also reappeared close by her. Because two of his illusions were slain, Ditch had lost over 200,000 HP. However, this amount of HP that he lost was totally insignificant compared to his full bar of 130,000,000 HP!

By the standards of Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream, they were able to kill each of the Blackbeard Ditch's Illusion that was spawn before each of them within 30 seconds. However, if Han Ying Xue were to be devoured by the Skill, she would definitely be dead. As she was also aware of that, she had maintained a gap of more than 40 meters away from the boss throughout the entire battle.

Under the oppressively powerful {God of War Transformation}, the HP bar of the boss was reducing swiftly! Victory was at the tip of their fingers!

# Chapter 565: Darkness Inheritance

---

7 minutes before the {God of War Transformation} duration ran out, the HP bar of the boss had finally been reduced down to 10%!

Although the assaults of Daffodil Daydream, Felice, and Thunderhawk could not stay consistent, as they had to stop their assaults and run away from the boss, the three of them were still able to provide a certain standard of damage output at the boss. Furthermore, they were attacking with their Magic-type attacks, so their damage dealt on the boss were not weakened by the {Darkness Transformation} of the boss. They could still deliver half of their firepower even though they were required to move around constantly.

The DPS of these 3 Magic-type attackers had exceeded 10,000 damage. Even though they could not perform at full capacity, they could still deal a total amount of 15,000 damage in every passing second. That amount of damage should not be underestimated!

"You god damn f\*ck! Why aren't you dead yet! Why are you still alive!" Ditch began to lose his patience as he started roaring in rage. After multiple attempts of bringing Zhang Yang to the brink of death, Zhang Yang would still somehow get back to full health! At the same time, Zhang Yang would also use some mysterious sort of method to reduce the boss's attack as well! The boss could not fathom that as he began to question how Zhang Yang could pull off such annoying stunts!

Of course, these were all possible because of Zhang Yang's {Shield Wall}! As the special effect of the [Titan Chest Plate] actively kicks

up, Zhang Yang could recover 5% of his HP every single second!

"This is the difference between a man and a god! Ditch! You're just a man, and I'm a god! Bow before me and worship me!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud. The moment his {Shield Wall} was ready, he immediately activated it without any hesitation. The three transparent shields appeared and went around him, shielding him from all forms of attacks.

"This again!" The boss could only shout in rage helplessly. At first, he thought that he was way more powerful than Zhang Yang. He thought that he could have taken out Zhang Yang with ease. However, now that Zhang Yang had activated his {Shield Wall} repeatedly, the boss was totally helpless against him. He could only watch Zhang Yang heal himself back to full health each time he was about to die.

"Surrender your will to me, Blackbeard. Be a Battle Companion to one of my followers and I shall let you live!" Zhang Yang struck a price for the boss. The patch for the Battle Companion had stated clearly that any AI type NPCs that has certain intelligence of their own could potentially become a Battle Companion. That also included all powerful bosses in the game.

Ditch was a Mythical Tier boss after all. Even though his HP bar and Attack would not be as powerful as they were when he was still the boss, but a Mythical Tier would always triumph over others who were lower in Tier. Furthermore, the boss also had his powerful Skill - {Darkness Transformation}!

Since Zhang Yang already had Felice as his Battle Companion, he

wouldn't have any need of recruiting Blackbeard as his Battle Companion. His other party members, however, might need to switch to a better Tier Battle Companion. The Battle Companions that they had were only Violet-Platinum Tier at best. Some of them even have Battle companions who were just Gray-Silver Tier. Having Ditch as a Battle Companion would definitely boost one's power level!

"Hahaha! You must be joking! I'm the man who is going to become the Pirate King! I shall serve under no one!" Ditch gave out a manic laughter as he smashed both of his fists into the empty spaces beside him. The rate of activating {Blastoff} had just increased again.

Daffodil Daydream and the others could no longer channel their damage output on the boss. Now, Zhang Yang was the only one who could kill the boss!

"Your answer is clear enough. Then, you die!"

Zhang Yang let out a thunderous battle cry as he activated his {Indiscriminate}. With his Rage Gauge full, he activated his {Killing Cleave}.

‘-563,391!’

A very high value of damage appeared right on top of the boss. Zhang Yang widened his eyes a little, as he was shocked to see that amount of damage he caused on the boss. That was a hit, under the circumstances where all Physical Damage received by the boss had

been reduced by 50%! The amount of damage would not be so high even if it was a Critical Hit! He quickly brought up the battle logs to have a look at the records. As expected, his {Killing Cleave} had triggered the Lucky Strike! Furthermore, his {Indiscriminate} had ensured that his {Killing Cleave} would deal a Critical Damage to the boss, causing Zhang Yang to deal 6 times of the initial amount of damage he was supposed to deal!

The sensation could not be described with words anymore!

Reducing over more than 500,000 HP with one hit was a little heavy on the boss, even though Ditch had a very long HP bar. Ditch was struck so hard that he was forced to take a few steps back. His eyes were murderous. He then let out a thunderous roar as he began to direct his fists that were shrouded in dark energy, straight towards Zhang Yang.

It was merely an attempt to delay the inevitable!

Felice had also reacted. She let out a cute roar as she transformed into her Humanoid form. Then, she charged up to boss, stabbing her lance at the boss repeatedly, trying to aid Zhang Yang.

--- she activated her {Absolute Defense} that made her practically invincible for two minutes.

Although the little lady was obedient, however, should Zhang Yang be in any form of danger, she would definitely step out of line to protect him. Zhang Yang could not do anything about it. After all, a Battle Companion had equal rights as a player, having their

very own decision-making powers.

It was a fortunate thing that Felice would charge up and aid him in bringing down the boss. Unlike that super whiner Messick, he would have run away the moment he sensed any danger! He was a totally hopeless, unreliable Battle Companion!

"This... this is just outrageous!" Ditch's eyes were beginning to turn red. Well, he had already gotten his hands on the Treasure Map, and he had also found out the whereabouts of the Treasure. But, here he was being beaten up by a bunch of unknowns to the point that he could not do anything in return!

With Felice joining in, the HP bar of the boss reduced even more rapidly. The {Blazing Dragon's Spear} of that little lady could cause Fire Damage, which dealt a full amount of damage on the boss without being affected by the Physical Damage Reduction attribute. It would be unwise to underestimate the damage she's capable of dealing on the boss!

7%!

5%!

3%!

"No! No!" Blackbeard was finally panicking! He swung his two fists in an even faster manner, as if he was beating a drum. Bam! Bam! Bam! He continued to shatter the air around the area,

pummelling Zhang Yang!

It was a futile, last 'ditch'!

2%!

1%!

0%!

"Argh!" Ditch let out his final scream. The dark shrouds flew back into the boss, and the surroundings were restored back to normal. Zhang Yang and the ladies could see the wreckage of the cabin once again. It really made them feel as if they had been marooned on an island for quite some time.

"Time to reveal what's in that pile of loots!" Wei Yan Er went up to the dead boss with joy. She had been bored to death, watching the battle from the sidelines. She was definitely in a mood to look at the loots now.

"We should get a total of 4 Class B [Inheritances], including the drop from this boss!" Daffodil Daydream spoke excitedly. After all, 4 Class B [Inheritance] would really improve the power level of the core players of Lone Desert Smoke.

"Haha! You were wrong!" Wei Yan Er corrected Daffodil as she picked up the loots.



"Hmm... the boss didn't drop any fragment of a Class B [Inheritance] at all?" Daffodil Daydream was crestfallen.

However, when Zhang Yang looked at the joyful face of the little brat, he knew that something was not quite right. It suddenly clicked to him, and he said, "The boss did drop a fragment for an [Inheritance]! However, it was not a fragment of a Class B [Inheritance]!"

"How can you such a smart monkey, noob tank?" Wei Yan Er curled up her lips into a smile.

"Could it be Class A [Inheritance,] then?" Even Han Ying Xue was shocked to hear it.

Ditch was the final boss after all. It would make perfect sense that he would drop the fragment of a superior Class of [Inheritance].

"You're right! It's a Class A [Inheritance] fragment!" Wei Yan Er began to giggle. She revealed a dark piece of a metal fragment in her palm. It was a head of a sculpture. It seemed that the sculpture had been broken into a few pieces and this was the head of the sculpture.

[[Darkness Inheritance Fragment Piece (1)] (Inheritance Class: A)]

Description: N/A

"It is really a Class A Inheritance!"

Wei Yan Er was so happy that her eyes had been squeezed into a single, horizontal line by her smile, and then she said, "Haha, this [Inheritance] is mine!"

"Alright, alright, it's yours!"

The other three of them were fine with it. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had already gotten their own Class S [Inheritance]. Furthermore, this [Darkness Inheritance] was not suitable for a Spellcaster. So Daffodil Daydream did not dream about having it at all. Also, the Class S [Inheritance] for the Spellcaster Class had yet to be revealed. Daffodil Daydream still stood a chance at acquiring the Class S [Inheritance] for herself.

So currently, Lone Desert Smoke already had 2 players with Class S [Inheritances], 1 player with Class A [Inheritance], and 4 players with Class B [Inheritances]! With more time, Endless Starlight should be able to enter the Level 130+ Map. Then he should be able to activate the linking quest for the Class B [King Kong Inheritance]. Of course, there was also Sun Xin Yu's Class S [Shadow Dancer Inheritance]! When everyone could finally get their hands on their own [Inheritances], Zhang Yang's party would be unstoppable!

Zhang Yang was excited and eagerly looking forward to seeing this dream come to fruition.

Upon knowing that the little brat had acquired a fragment of a Class A [Inheritance], Fatty Han and the others congratulated the little brat. Lost Dream, Hundred Shots, and Galileo began to beg Zhang Yang the moment when they discovered that there were still 3 more Class B [Inheritance] on Zhang Yang. They wanted to decide on and acquire an [Inheritance] for themselves as soon as possible.

Recently, Fatty Han had been on a mad rampage. With his powerful Class B [Inheritance], he was more powerful than Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and the others, even if he does not activate his {Vampire Transformation}! He could even tank against a boss when he transforms! Everyone was admiring that fatty. So, they had decided not to wait for Class A [Inheritances] to appear anymore. They believed that the 10% different in the Attack between Class A and Class B [Inheritances] would make little difference.

Lost Dream, Hundred Shots, and Galileo were basically the core members of Lone Desert Smoke. So Zhang Yang did not reject their requests, naturally. He informed them that he would pass the fragments to them once he reaches the Territory.

"Don't get overly excited just yet. We should carry on with the rest of our loot!" Zhang Yang rubbed Wei Yan Er's head as she giggled about the [Inheritance] fragment in her arms. It was actually pretty scary to see the little girl hugging a head in her arms...

Wei Yan Er was not happy with Zhang Yang rubbing her head, so she gave Zhang Yang a fierce stare all of a sudden. She slapped

Zhang Yang's hand away and said, "You bus tart! Can't you just let me be happy for a moment? Don't spoil my mood, please!"

The little brat then threw all the loot onto the ground altogether. There was a total of 3 equipment and 1 [Skill Book]. Among the 3 pieces of equipment, one was a dark-green shield. Although the craftsmanship of the shield looked simple and plain, the shield radiated with some sort of powerful aura. The other two equipment was a staff that coral-red in color and a robe that was aqua-blue in color.

Zhang Yang picked up the shield. He was looking forward to see how powerful it was.

[The Guewitt's Shield] (Mythical, Shield)

Defense: +3,276

Vitality: +3,210

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 6,400 points.

Equip: Absorbs 1,150 damage when being hit.

Equip: When you use {Block} successfully, you will automatically use {Shield Bash} on your target without consuming any Rage Points. It does not trigger the Global Shared Cooldown period.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 130

Special: Reduces 20 levels on the Required Level.

Note: This is the shield that was once used by the legendary hero, Guewitt. However, tens of years ago, the Nth generation of Guewitt was robbed and killed by Blackbeard Ditch. So this shield had been in the possession of Blackbeard Ditch ever since.

"This shield really boosts a great deal of HP!" Daffodil Daydream praised it profusely, "Futhermore, the special effect seems very promising! It lets you automatically use a free {Shield Bash}!"

Well, that was true!

Ever since the developers had patched the game, players have had trouble in handling the Global Shared Cooldown system. Zhang Yang had to abandon some of his weaker Skills that only could attack a target at a time. With this shield, his {Shield Bash} no longer required him to wait out for any Global Shared Cooldown. That being said, he could now shove in another Skill without having to waste any of his Rage Points while blocking regularly.

With his current Basic Attack, Zhang Yang could already deal approximately 10,000 damage in a single hit, even when he could only cast one layer of {Cripple Defense} on the target. He could

even reach up to about 50,000 damage in a single hit when he activates his {God of War Transformation} Skill!

Unfortunately, he would be required to reach Level 110 before he can equip the shield. Zhang Yang was currently at Level 106. He would still need to grind another 4 levels to reach the Required Level!

His focus for the coming days should be on leveling himself up. He shouldn't sway from his conviction on this. He should only think about other matters after he reaches Level 110!

# Chapter 566: Ancient Creatures

---

Along with the [Cobalt Helmet], Zhang Yang had finally gotten two pieces of equipment out of this quest. It was better than nothing.

The next item would be the coral-red staff.

[Coral Staff] (Mythical, Staff)

Magic Attack: 4,711 - 5,511

Equip: Increases both Damage and Healing Efficiency by 14%.

Equip: When you have succeeded in releasing a spell, there is a certain rate that the target would be stuck by corals. The target will not be able to move at all. Lasts for 5 seconds.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 130

Special: Reduces 20 levels from the Required Level.

Although Daffodil Daydream was amazed to see it, she said, "Sister Snow, I already have the [Epicormic Branch of the Tree of Life]. You should have the staff instead!"

Her staff was also a Mythical Tier equipment. Although her staff was only Level 110, it wouldn't be too far behind than the [Coral Staff].

Han Ying Xue did not act like the hypocrite she sometimes was. She simply took the staff and shoved it into her inventory. She couldn't equip it just yet, as she had not met the Required Level to equip it, just like Zhang Yang.

The final piece of the equipment did not have the Special attribute that reduces the Required Level. As it was a Level 130 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment, it could only be shelved in The Little Merchandise Shop. They would already be able to equip a Mythical Tier equipment by the time they reach Level 130.

Zhang Yang took up the [Skill Book] as that was one of the items worth looking at.

[Skill Book: Superior Indiscriminate]

Use: Teaches you the Skill: Superior Indiscriminate.

Required: Indiscriminate.

Required Level: 100

"Huh? Another 'Enhancement-type' [Skill Book]?" Zhang Yang



spoke out loud in surprise as he patted the little brat who was still floating on cloud nine with her [Inheritance] fragment, "Little brat, come back from your wild dream and look at this. Or else I'm using it for myself!"

Wei Yan Er finally snapped out of her wild dream and snatched the [Skill Book] away! Then, she quickly tapped it against herself and learned the Skill. She did it so swiftly as if she had believed every word Zhang Yang said. After that, only did she take a good look at the description of the Skill.

[Superior Indiscriminate]: Increases the effect's duration of your {Indiscriminate} by 5 seconds.

The initial duration of the {Indiscriminate} was 10 seconds long. That being said, any physical attack from the players would surely be a Critical Strike. After the duration of the Skill becomes 15 seconds long, that would be a 50% enhancement to the Skill, even though it was just merely a 5-second extension!

"Wow, this is really a good place. There were so many [Mounts]. So much equipment, so many [Inheritances], and so many [Skill Books]! This is a land full of treasure!" Han Ying Xue could not hold in her money-grubbing face anymore as she continued to say, "We should just conquer this map and never share it with others!"

Zhang Yang only shook his head and said nothing. He had not heard of this place in his previous life. There had to be a significant change in the storyline of the quest that he had accepted earlier on. Or else, why would such a place be hidden from a bunch of hungry guilds that would devour its 'treasure' for their own benefits? It

appeared that Zhang Yang might have picked up a unique quest, after all.

Zhang Yang picked up the Treasure Map from the dead body of the boss. Because he was the only one who had accepted the quest, the little brat and the other two ladies could not pick the quest item up.

‘Ding! You have acquired an item: The Pirate’s Treasure Map!’

‘Ding! You have slain Blackbeard Ditch and reclaimed the Treasure Map!’

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: The Pirate’s Treasure Map, acquired 5,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have automatically accepted a quest: Access to the Treasure!’

[Access to the Treasure!] (Difficulty: D-rank)

Description: You have reacquired the Treasure map! After a close study on it, you have discovered that the location of the Treasure is located in Baroque Island itself! Warrior, it’s time to harvest the fruits of your victory! Move forward and claim the endless wealth that you have been promised!

Zhang Yang gently touched the Treasure Map. The Treasure Map then emitted out countless beautiful colorful lights and formed a

hologram of the entire Baroque Island! Right at a corner of the map, a large red dot was blinking. It had to be indicating the exact location of the treasure!

A curved pathway leading to the treasure appeared on the Treasure Map. The four of them followed the map and arrived at the location in no time at all. Almost immediately, they found an entrance to a secret tunnel beneath a huge rock.

"I wonder what the treasures would be!" Wei Yan Er was pumped up with excitement, "I'm not that greedy, just give me tens of thousands of gold coins! That should be enough!"

"Yan Er, you have a big goal in life..." Han Ying Xue began to 'educate' the little brat with a life lesson, "How would tens of thousands of dollars ever be enough! You must at least ask for millions of dollars!"

The eyes of the two money grubbers flashed with gold and money as they were looking forward to see what the treasures would be.

Zhang Yang could not help but frown. Everything that these two would ever think was just money, and nothing else.

If the difficulty of this quest was D-rank, should they assume that this quest would be extremely easy then? The four of them took their time. About half an hour later, they arrived at the front of a cave after running through a series of twists and turns.

"So, where is the treasure?" Wei Yan Er blinked while staring into the cave. The cave wasn't really that big. A huge, black stone tablet right in the middle of the cave. The black stone tablet was enshrouded with strange dark light. The surroundings were totally empty.

Zhang Yang also felt strange about it, then he said, "Could they be underneath the huge stone tablet?"

"Lift it up, then!" Wei Yan Er was definitely a violent girl. Right after she said that out, she immediately ran up to the stone tablet and put her hands on the solid stone tablet, carrying out her own suggestion.

"Stop!" the illusion of a Stone Giant was suddenly projected out of the stone tablet. It was shouting at Wei Yan Er with a furious face.

"Aiyah! Who are you to tell me what to do? Why would I stop if you say so?" Wei Yan Er frowned, as she could not lift the stone tablet at all. She grabbed her axe and swung it straight at the stone tablet.

Kuang!

A loud crash resounded across the entire area. Although the stone table seemed to have been very solid, it couldn't really take much of a hit, after all! After a series of sparks burst into the surrounding, the stone tablet was cleaved into half by the little brat and her axe.

"You ---" the Stone Giant looked at the little brat. He could not even speak anymore.

"Humph! You stinky stone monster! What can you do to me?" Wei Yan Er pushed up her chest as if she was trying her best to push her pair of boobs 'higher' up.

Suddenly, the cave began to rumble.

The entire island began to tremble along with it. Countless rocks fell from the ceiling of the cave, crashing down upon Zhang Yang and the 3 ladies.

"Where's the treasure?" Wei Yan Er moved the scattered pieces of the rocks on the ground to look beneath that black stone tablet. She did not find any treasure chest or other loots beneath the piles of broken stone and bricks. Instead, she discovered countless of mystical patterns. Being players who had already played the game for quite a long time, they immediately recognized that those patterns were actually part of a large magic circle. They were standing on top of the magic circle all along, ever since they stepped into the cave!

From above their heads, dust and broken stones began to fall upon them. Meanwhile, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were dejected. They had longed for treasure and yet, they did not manage to get what they wanted, at all.

"Sigh..!" the Stone Giant was no longer angry. It sighed in resignation, and said, "It seems that no one will be able to escape

what that is to come!"

"Mr. Stone Giant, what is this all about?" Zhang Yang stepped forward and asked the Stone Giant, "Isn't this a sacred place where Pirate King Roger buried his treasures?"

"Pirate King Roger? Buried treasures here?" The Stone Giant stared at him incredulously, then he shook his head and said, "What kind of nonsense is that? How did you even come across such an absurd rumor! My fellow Adventurers, you cannot be more wrong than this. It wasn't a bunch of treasure that was buried beneath that stone tablet. Demons were!"

The Stone Giant continued to explain, "Many years ago, so many years that I have lost count of it! We were following Captain Roger to sail across the seas, across the entire world! We conquered one region after another. When we came across this region, we also discovered this mysterious island. Captain Roger had also studied the terrain of the island very closely. That was how he stumbled across this hidden place. It was then when we realized that the seal was about to be broken! A large army of Ancient Creatures appeared, and we fought many battles and lost many of our brothers! By the end of it, we managed to annihilate the army of the Ancient Creatures! Captain Roger had given up 30 years of his life to stabilize the seal! Ever since then, the Ancient Creatures had remained in their own realm."

"So what was the deal with that Treasure Map then?" Zhang Yang took out the Treasure Map that led them to this location.

"This map contains the foul scents of those Ancient Creatures!"

The Stone Giant was shaken up pretty badly. Then he said, "I finally understand! It must be one of their schemes! The foul Ancient Creatures that were sealed away must have created this map with their dark magic! Although they were sealed, they could still depend on the power that passes through the seal! They used the emotion "greed" in people in order to destroy the magic circle of the seal and release them!

Wei Yan Er quickly turned her head to another direction and she began to whistle and pretend as if nothing had happened.

Boom!

As they were talking, the entire island was shaking more and more violently. It wasn't just the falling dust and rocks anymore. The ground was beginning to crack, and the cracks began to expand further into the surroundings. Dark-red, boiling lava started oozing out of the cracks.

"No time to lose! These Ancient Creatures are about to break the seal! Go, go as quickly as possible! Bring the news to every corner of the earth! These Ancient Creatures cannot be brought down by just a few of you! You will need an army to fight off such foul and evil army of creatures!" The Stone Giant was panicking as he continued to say, "I shall create a temporary portal. Just go!"

The moment it finished talking, the Stone Giant began to chant a spell. A small portal appeared right before Zhang Yang and the ladies.

"Quickly! Go! Get out of here!" The Stone Giant urged.

Boom!

A loud explosive sound was heard. The next thing that Zhang Yang and the ladies saw was a gigantic cockroach appearing right in front of them all! Followed by a second one, a third one!

[Zergert Cockroach King] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 12,500,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 17,739 - 21,739

Skills: N/A

If it was just one or two of these Zergert Cockroach Kings, Zhang Yang would have stayed behind to slay them all without any fear. However, more foul cockroaches were sprouting out at every passing second!

Who would dare to stay back and fight?



"Let's get out of here!" Zhang Yang quickly shouted.

The three ladies could not afford to delay any further. They quickly ran towards the portal. After they went through the portal, the ladies arrived at the Teleportation Circle in White Jade Castle.

Zhang Yang looked at the Stone Giant and he said, "Mr. Stone Giant, how about you?"

"I was long dead!" Stone Giant revealed a slight grin as if he was content having a stranger like Zhang Yang actually caring about him. "I'm just a residue of my soul that was bound to the seal. My purpose was to warn anyone who set foot into the cave. But... it doesn't matter anymore. Don't blame the little girl for all this. Even if she did not act recklessly, the seal that Captain Roger put upon the stone tablet was going to fade anyway. It would only hold for another few years. Well, it's not really a bad thing that the seal has been broken. By breaking the seal, at least you know what's coming now! Warrior, if you have the courage and the power, just get back here and destroy the magic circle on this soil. You can do it after the magic seal has totally faded!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Access to the Treasure! Acquired 100,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! The Stone Giant has a quest for you: Preventing Future Trouble, will you accept it?’

Accept!

"Leave at once! My power is fading! I cannot hold the portal for much longer!" The Stone Giant roared.

At the same instant, one of the Zergert Cockroach King had sensed the presence of Zhang Yang. It immediately let out a screech and swung one of its thorny legs towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang quickly went through the portal right before the leg hit him. Right after he went through the portal, he arrived at the White Jade Castle as well. The portal behind him immediately collapsed and disappeared.

‘Server Announcement: Large-Scale Legendary Quest: The Invasion of the Ancient Creatures has been activated! Countless Ancient Creatures will appear on Baroque Island, among the Camarro Islands. They will arrive at 7 pm, 3 days from today. These monsters shall depart from the island and launch their assaults on the entire world!’

‘Server Announcement: All players can participate in the Legendary Quest, contributed in stopping the invasion of the evil Ancient Creatures. During the battle, players can get [Insect Shell] of the Tiers, Violet-Platinum, Yellow-Gold, and Gray-Silver. Players can exchange these [Insect Shell] over to the Event Merchant in all Main Cities for equipment. The best Tier of the equipment will be Violet-Platinum!’

‘Server Announcement: These Ancient Creatures will probably be divided into 8 different forces when they are attacking the Main Cities. They will arrive at the Main Cities of each Region through portals! If the monsters manage to annihilate 3 or more Main Cities

in each large Region, all players from that Region will receive a penalty of -1 level for the next Main City (starting from the 4th Main City) that falls! On the other hand, if the players can defend 3 or more Main Cities in each large Region from falling, all players from that Region will receive a reward of +1 level! Additionally, if players can stop the monsters by the portals in Ten Barren Seas, all players of that Region will receive a reward of +4 level!

At that moment, the server was echoing the announcement repeatedly. It notified everyone about the upcoming Large-Scale Legendary Quest!

"Zhan Yu, was it you who did it?" before Zhang Yang could even catch his own breath, he received a private message from Snow Seeker.

"What do you mean was I the one who did it? I have been a clean and good man! I would never go to the club!" Zhang Yang attempted to make fun of Snow Seeker. Crimson Rage has always been really weird. Snow Seeker's fellow members of her guild were all bad girls. As the leader of the 'bad girls', Snow Seeker was surprisingly decent and upright. Zhang Yang would only fear the seduction that those 'Bad girls' like Perfumed Water, but he was very fond of making fun of Snow Seeker.

Snow Seeker was stunned for a moment, then only she realized that her wordings had a little ambiguity in them. She shrugged off his tease. Then she said, "I meant the Server Announcement about the Legendary Quest! Don't tell me you have nothing to do with it!"

"... It really had nothing to do with me! It was Yan Er that little

brat that did something to trigger it!" Zhang Yang laughed. The moment when Zhang Yang and the ladies discovered the location of the 'treasure' had triggered the Legendary Quest. The only thing that would change was how the Legendary Quest would be triggered.

"You guys are real troublemakers!" Snow Seeker let out a sigh, then she said, "Let's discuss on how to stop the invasion of the Ancient Creatures, then!"

Zhang Yang nodded. Of course, he knew that one guild would not be capable of completing such a large-scale quest all alone! The only way of getting through this would be to combine the power of players from all of China!

So, Zhang Yang said, "Let's join up with Greensleeves Prince, One Sword Stroke, and the other guildmasters. We can't complete this Legendary Quest with only our guilds! We need every possible help that we can get!"

# Chapter 567: The Legendary Quest

---

The Ancient Creatures would drop different Tier of [Insect Shells] upon their deaths. Those [Insect Shells] could be exchanged for equipment of ranging up to the Tier of Violet-Platinum. Although the amount of [Insect Shells] required for a particular equipment from the Event Merchant still remained unknown, it would always be best to collect as many [Insect Shells] as possible. It would be even better if the players could collect better Tiered [Insect Shells]!

The eight armies of the Ancient Creatures had departed from the Baroque Island. They were going to reach the Territories of the eight Main Regions through their portals within the Chaos Realm. That was mainly because the best places to lay siege on were the Territory Gateways of the eight Main Regions in the Chaos Realm!

More importantly, the Territory Gateways were all strategic locations that could really serve as a defensive line between the Chaos Realm and the outside realm of the game. Therefore, the Ancient Creatures would not be able to invade any further, as long as the defensive line of the Territory Gateways were not broken.

Meanwhile, as the Baron of Morning Town, Zhang Yang would have the main control over everything in the Territory on behalf of Lone Desert Smoke. He could just remove anyone or any guild that he was not fond of, from the Territory. After all, players that were incapable of defending against the hordes of Ancient Creature. They would perish instantly if they were to face the large army of the Ancient Creatures head on!

That could really remove a lot of unwanted troublemakers!

Furthermore, if they could fend off the Ancient Creatures by the walls of the Morning Town, all players would be able to receive +4 levels reward when the war is finally over. Although the reward might seem to be a little bit less interesting for the players who were still below Level 50, the reward was really appealing for those high-level players! It was an extremely rare occasion where they had a chance of receiving such great rewards!

Ever since players had reached Level 80, they would be required to grind for about 10 days before they could level up again. In such circumstances, +4 levels rewards could aid these players by saving up to 40 days of grindings!

On the contrary, if the players could not fend off the invasion of the Ancient Creatures from breaching the walls and lay siege upon the main lands of their respective Main Regions, players would be receiving a penalty of -1 level for every Main City that falls if more than 3 Main Cities in their Main Region lands were to fall. That being said, players would experience a total of -5 levels, if all of their Main Cities in their Region lands were to fall! If one were to look at the difference between the results of being successful in defending the Main Cities and the results of being a failed attempt to defend the Main Cities, it would be a gap of 9-levels!

Furthermore, not only one or two players would be affected. Every single one of the players in the entire Region would be affected!

9 levels would mean 90 days, a total of 3 months of training and

grinding! No Region could afford to suffer such a fate, as they were currently locked in a tight competition in claiming the top position in the Chaos Realm. To fall behind by 3 months, the guild would not be able to grab any resources at that point!

Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker invited Greensleeves Prince, Sword of Light, One Sword Stroke and other guildmasters from Top Tier guilds to join into a temporarily created party. Then, they began to discuss on how to handle the large-scale battle that was to come in 3 days.

Apparently, if they could just defend against the Ancient Creatures within the interior of the Territory by using the walls, houses and other buildings as their 'funnels', then they would be able to minimize the number of casualties while maximizing the benefits that they would earn! Therefore, the guildmasters tried their best to play the 'card of friendship' with Zhang Yang, trying to win his trust over, so that they could gain a good position for their own guilds.

Just like the old saying, everyone for himself, and the devil take the hindmost. Of course, Zhang Yang would look out for his own guild first. Currently, the Lone Desert Smoke already had over 3000 members who had managed to reach Level 100. After positioning them at the best strategic spots, Zhang Yang moved his attention towards his most trusted Allied guild, the Crimson Rage. After arranging the members of Crimson Rage into the best positions left for them, Zhang Yang then moved his attention towards the Sky High, Radiance, Sunset Amber and the rest of the guilds.

The other guildmasters could not make any changes to Zhang Yang's arrangement. After all, the Morning Town belonged to Zhang Yang.

Fortunately for them, the number of players who had entered the Chaos Realm was not really that high yet. Although Morning Town was not a big town, the place could still take in about ten or twenty thousand players. That was almost the amount of all the players in China Region who had reached Level 100.

Of course, that number was merely 10% of the number of players in all of China Region! Most of the players could only head for Ten Barren Seas through the portals and prepare for the assault! However, they would not have any form of tenable defensive positions. They were bound to suffer greatly.

Players with even lower levels could only stay at the Main City as the last defensive line of the city. However, players who were Level 70 or below would only be wasting their time by doing so, as the monsters from the Chaos Realm should all be at least Level 100 or above. The Level 70 players would be restricted by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game and they should not be able to deal much damage to the monsters of Level 100 and above. They should be working hard on gaining additional levels instead.

Even though Lone Desert Smoke, Imperial Sky, Crimson Rage and other top Tier guilds represented the most powerful forces in the entire China Region, but their numbers were far lesser than the total number of players in the entire China Region. Therefore, after they were done discussing, the guildmasters went to the forums as one. They posted with the purpose of gathering as many



top Tier players by the portal of Ten Barren Seas, so that they could to act together as one in defending against the army of Ancient Creatures! They attempted to recruit more muscle to stop any monsters from attacking the Main City. Everyone was striving to get the +4 levels reward.

After all, the outcome of this war would affect every single player in an entire Region! Therefore, the post was being jacked up with tens of thousands of comments. The administrators of the official forum were forced to lock down the original post and repost it as a new post.

It wasn't just the China Region. The other 7 main Regions were also gathering their best players at the same moment!

The outcome of this war would become a decisive factor for every single Region!

It all came down to how they would handle the battle against the hordes of Ancient Creatures. It would determine the very standings of the different Regions.

The most unlucky Region was naturally, the Japan-Korean Region. As their Territory Gateway had already been conquered by Zhang Yang, they had no tenable defensive positions, whatsoever! They could only crouch behind at the portal of Ten Barren Seas. It was a ridiculously sad case for them, as they had already lost their 'first line of defense' even before the hordes had arrived!

Every guild had ceased their attempts at clearing the Hardcore

Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress, as they were getting ready to face the hordes in a legendary battle that had yet to happen before in history! Players with [Inheritances] had reserved their {Inheritance Transformations} so that they could transform in 3 days time. Meanwhile, the system had given players 3 days to get ready, ensuring players with [Inheritances] could grab the opportunity to go all out and unleash their full potential.

Since Wei Yan Er, Hundred Shots, Lost Dream, and Galileo had already acquired their very first pieces of their [Inheritance] fragments, the four of them had begun their search for the remaining pieces of their [Inheritance] fragments elsewhere. However, 3 days did not seem to be enough for them to collect all the fragments of their [Inheritances]. They would also have to complete the quests for the [Inheritances] in order to acquire the [Inheritance].

Therefore, the four of them stood no chance at all at showing off their [Inheritances] in three days.

Zhang Yang took his [Cobalt Helmet] and [The Guewitt's Shield] over to the Identifying Shop to be identified. Even though he could equip the helmet, he had not reach the Required Level for the shield just yet. He must first reach Level 110 in order to equip it. However, it would be impossible for him to reach Level 110 in 3 days.

Zhang Yang had another secret weapon. He still had the expedition army of White Jade Empire that currently stood guard at the Winst Castle. So, he decided to move the troops back to Morning Town. After all, that large army belonged to the China

Region. So there was no reason for them to look after the Territory Gateway of the Japan-Korea Region for them.

Rockovich was truly cooperative. After Zhang Yang told him everything that was happening, he immediately mobilized his entire army to Morning Town via the Teleportation Circle. Rockovich had also informed Zhang Yang that he had reported the situation back to Queen Serena. Queen Serena might send more troops over to support the defense at Morning Town!

Anything that should be done or could be done had already been done. All they could do now was to wait!

3 days of the in-game time was just 1 day in real life. Although players could feel that the time was ticking by really slowly, in reality, one day could pass in the blink of an eye.

‘Server Announcement: The Ancient Creatures have begun their invasion of the world!’

Right after the Server made the announcement, countless monsters emerged from Baroque Island. The hordes of monsters were divided into eight different forces as informed earlier on by the System, as they started to advance towards the eight Territory Gateways.

The Camarro Islands were the Territory Gateway of the North America Region. The players of the North America Region were the first to encounter the assaults of the Ancient Creatures Army. However, it did not take long before the other Regions like Europe

Region, South America Region, and Australia Region began to face the terrifyingly massive army of the monsters at their own doorsteps.

When it came to Winst Castle, the monsters went straight through it straight without facing any form of resistance, the other seven Territory Gateways were already engaged in a fierce battle with the Ancient Creatures!

Zhang Yang stood on the castle wall of his own Territory while observing the battle. The Defense of Morning Town had been leveled up to Level 4 at the moment. The Defense and the Magic Defense of both the City Gate and the City Walls were as high as 8,000 points. The HP bar for each of them had reached up to 100,000,000 HP! If the opposition side of the siege did not bring along some catapults in their attempt to bring down the Defense of Morning Town, it would be a total nightmare for them. The opposition side would be wasting all 3 hours just bringing down the City Gate!

However, Zhang Yang's confidence was shaken up a little when he saw the massive horde of Ancient Creatures that covered every inch of the entire land, outside the walls of his territory.

Upon entering the 10-kilometer mark from the Territory walls, these Zergert Beasts started to slow down. They began to enter a disciplined formation while marching towards the Morning Town. Looking at the number of the monsters marching towards them, anyone would feel a chill up their spines.

"What a massive horde we are looking at!" Greensleeves Prince

said softly as he gazed

at the far side of the battlefield. His eyes were filled with hope and expectancy instead of fear. After all, this was just a game, not a real scenario. The larger the number of the monsters they face, the more rewarding it would be for them!

Of course, it would also be natural for the battle to be even more difficult!

"We have no room for optimism!" One Sword Stroke was looking worried. The number of the monsters seemed to be a little too much for them to handle. Even if there were over 200,000 NPC army standing by in the Territory waiting to support them in battle, their numbers would still be not enough compared to the massive army of the Ancient Creatures.

"Wu -----" the strange sound of a clarion was projected over a brief moment. The monster hordes began to charge in increasing speed. The appearance of these monsters was beginning to become clear to the players.

These creatures were totally different from those giant cockroaches that Zhang Yang saw three days back in the cave. The massive army of monsters before them were beast monsters, they were humanoid in shape, and were about 2 meters tall. In fact, instead of beasts, they looked more like wild dogs that could stand humans! Their mouths dangled open to reveal their rows of sharp teeth that were as long as half a foot! The sides of their mouths drooled. With their two claws in front of their bodies, everyone could see the reflection of the moonlight on their sharp claws.

Anyone would feel a chill up their spines upon taking in the sight of those claws.

[Zergert Beast] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 105

HP: 100,000

Defense: 1,100

Melee Attack: 6,884 - 8,864

Note: The lower ranked members of the Zergert Race. Of course, the low ranking would only be by Zergert Race standards alone. Beware of their claws. Those claws can easily slice through and crush rocks!

Although these were all Level 105 elite Tier monsters, their HP bars were not as abundant as they had expected. 100,000 HP was no longer a high amount of HP to most of the players at the current stage of the game. After all, the expedition on the Dragon Throat Fortress had been going on for many days. Many guilds had also managed to clear the first 3 to 4 bosses in the Hardcore Mode. Most of them also possessed at least a Level 100 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment.

But the number of monsters... was a little daunting!

"It seems like we're going to have a hell of a time ahead of us!" everyone whispered to themselves.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Upon entering the 1-kilometer mark from the Territory walls, the Zergert Beasts started to accelerate! It was like countless kangaroos leaping and charging towards the Territory at an incredibly fast speed! Their ability to leap was astounding! They could leap over a hundred meters! The Zergert Beast Army was so densely packed that the entire land was covered in dark shadows! They instantly touched down directly in front of the Territory walls!

The battle has commenced!

# Chapter 568: Sword of Purging Devourer, a Shock to the World

---

Zhang Yang operated the Magic Cannon himself. Beams of blinding lights blasted from the cannon barrel and smashed in the midst of the clumped up, massive army of the Ancient Creatures. Every single one of the Zergert Beast that stood in the range of the beam were vaporized! There was nothing left of them!

This Magic Cannon is indeed a powerful weapon for sweeping up a large horde of monsters!

Unfortunately, this Magic Cannon could only fire a maximum of 10 shots in a day. It did not matter if they were in a Territory Conquest or otherwise, the limit of shots would still be 10. Upon leveling up the Territory's Defense to Level 4, Zhang Yang could finally place 4 Magic Cannons on the walls of Morning Town. That being said, they only had a total of 40 shots from the Magic Cannons per day.

Although the number of shots was still far from enough to take care of the Zergert Beast army, Zhang Yang consoled himself by saying that if he were to fire off 40 shots a day, he would definitely die of exhausting! So, by comparing himself to the 4 Magic Cannon, they would perform to their utmost best till the end of their days!

"Let me do it! Let me do it!" Wei Yan Er could not resist the urge of playing with the Magic Cannon anymore. She quickly asked Zhang Yang to hand over the controls to her.



Zhang Yang laughed and said, "What sort of 'cannon' are you playing with?"

Wei Yan Er did not get the hidden meaning that Zhang Yang tried to imply. She had already taken over the Magic Cannon in excitement. She aimed the muzzle of the cannon at the closely packed monsters and let out a series of blasts! In just an instant, countless Zergert Beasts were taken out by the repeated blasts from the Magic Cannon! They were basically reduced to dust by a single blow!

The little brat was truly enjoying the moment. She let off the remaining 35 shots from the Magic Cannons out without any consideration. As she couldn't get enough of the fun yet, the little brat complained, "What a useless bunch of Magic Cannons! They could only fire so few shots?"

Han Ying Xue giggled as she gazed at Zhang Yang. She seemed to be thinking of something else.

After being 'tormented' by blasts of magic beams, about tens of thousands of the Zergert Beast were blasted into pieces! Unfortunately, the number of monsters the little brat took out was merely an insignificant number when compared to the total number of monsters that were about to invade their Territory! Other than that, the monsters that were killed by the Magic Cannon blasts did not drop any loots at all. In other words, although it was really fun to kill the monsters with the super powerful blasts of the Magic Cannon, there was nothing to be gained.

"Kill!"

The monsters had reached the walls of the Territory. These creatures that looked like wild dogs had incredible leaping ability! With just a single leap, they could already cover half the height of the wall! If they could assist each other in jumping into higher heights, then they would have jumped over the walls of the Territory!

However, players were already stationed on the walls. They started to fire away the moment the monsters arrived at the wall. There were Tankers stationed right on the front lines of the wall. Just in case any of the monsters really did jump onto the wall, these Tankers would be able to push the monsters back off the wall with their shields. Other than that, there were also other Melee-type Classes like Thief and Berserker supporting them!

Meanwhile, the Range-type Classes were lining up from the rear as they unleashed their AoE attacks upon the monsters right below the walls. They did not have to worry if their attacks would hit or not because the monsters were so closely packed together! Any AoE attacks that they simply release would hit not only one, but a whole bunch of the monsters!

The battle had temporarily turned into a stalemate. However, these Zergert Beasts were not merely an army or morons who would just attempt making their way through the walls by jumping over them. Many Zergert Beasts had diverted their attention to breaking down the City Walls and the City Gate with their sharp teeth and sharp claws. They were attempting to bite their way

through into the Territory Gateway!

Although the Defensive HP and the Magic Defense of a Level 4 Castle Defense were decent, they would not be able to hold long against tens of thousands of crazy 'wild dogs' biting and gnawing at them. The HP bars of the City Gate and the City Walls were reducing so rapidly that it pained Zhang Yang very much!

After all, that gate and walls would require a substantial amount of money to rebuild later! The cost of repairing them would depend on the amount of damage they sustain. The more damage taken, the more money he would have to spend to repair them.

If these walls and the gate were to be completely destroyed, Zhang Yang would need to reconstruct everything from the scratch! Reconstructing and repairing were two very different things. The money involved would be completely different! If repairing a 99% damaged City wall requires 1,000,000 gold coins, reconstructing a new City Wall would require 2,000,000 gold coins!

Furthermore, repairing any Defensive Facilities would be forbidden during a battle. It could only be done after a battle. Even if Zhang Yang was willing to take out a million gold coins at the spot, he would still not be able to repair the damage done to the Defensive Facilities of his Territory. That was just the way the game is designed.

"Sigh! If only that [Forbidden Scroll] had not been used for some meaningless purpose!" Han Ying Xue suddenly brought it up.

Zhang Yang and the others immediately turned their eyes over to Wei Yan Er. They looked at her, until she felt uneasy and a self-conscious. Then, she acted innocently and said, "Why are you guys looking at me like that? It was Sister Sun who used that [Forbidden Scroll: Scourging Doomsday]! Not me!"

"Without your 'encouragement', would that icy queen really do it?" Zhang Yang pointed his finger at her.

"How could you make an accusation based on that kind of assumption?!" Wei Yan Er curled her upper lip in a show of skepticism as she continued to say, "If you are out to condemn someone, do your research first! I'm not talking to you anymore!"

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu! The City Wall is about to collapse!" Snow Seeker came up to Zhang Yang from not far away, with a worried face. No one had ever thought that the monsters would be so numerous! They first thought that they had the advantage over the terrain. They had believed that they could have held the monsters outside of the wall for a longer period of time. But, they were wrong! No one had ever thought that the City Walls would be collapsing so soon!

"That's about right! Be prepared to charge with all your might!" Zhang Yang raised the sword in his hand high up in the sky. The only way of securing the chance of picking up the [Insect Shells] that are dropped from the monsters would be by getting within Melee-range as they die. As no one would know how many players would be attacking the same monster at the same time, that would mean that many players would have the chance to pick up the loot

dropped by the same monster that they are attacking. It would definitely become a chaotic scene when it comes down to picking up the loots! Therefore, players who were within the melee-range of the monsters that dropped the loots would stand higher chances of picking them up!

80%, 60%, 30% ...

The remaining HP bar of the City Wall was reducing with every passing second. However, when the remaining HP of the City Wall was reduced down to 10%, a hole opened up in the walls, enough for the monsters to pass right through!

"Kill! Kill them all! Leave none of them alive!" Players had already rushed up to the hole, their weapons drawn. The moment they saw the monsters charging in through the hole, they leaped into battle and gave their all. The clanging sounds of weapons were filling up the quiet streets of the Territory as swords and claws met. Blood started flooding the ground, and miserable screams were heard over and over again. The sound of them murdering each other quaked across the heavens.

Zhang Yang hopped on Thunderhawk and said, "It's time for us to get going too!"

Among Zhang Yang's party of 10, only Sun Xin Yu was absent. Her place had been taken up by Galileo for the moment. The party went off into the skies as they dived towards the horde of monsters on the ground.

Upon receiving the news that the wall had been breached, Rockovich could no longer sit on his \*ss. He commanded the 200,000 White Jade Empire troops to join the chaotic battle by the wall. Although most of the soldiers in the army of NPC were just Normal Tier soldiers, they were doing fine as a backup army. They became the perfect human shields for the players. It was much better than having no backup from the NPCs.

Rockovich was truly a Mythical Tier boss. His attacks could already reach up to half the Attacks of Zhang Yang whenever he activates his {God of War Transformation}. Every single hit from Rockovich produced shockwaves that spread across the area. Every single smash with his hammer would cause massive damage to the monsters and sent the monsters flying tens of meters away.

"Let's go! We shall follow our 'boss' and push forward!" Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he patted Thunderhawk and flew close to Rockovich. He picked on the monsters that had already been struck by the Shockwave Effects of the boss and killed them all. Feeding off Rockovich's leftovers with one or two hits was enjoyable.

{Horizontal Sweep} may be classified as an AoE-type attack, but it was limited, in the sense that its attacks would only go through one layer of enemies. Even if a large number of enemies was within its range, its attacks would only strike the ones directly before Zhang Yang, and not go on striking anything else behind them. Be it 10 or 100 monsters within the range, there would hardly be any difference. The attacks would never reach anything beyond the first row. However, {Blast Wave} worked differently. It would strike any and all things within its stipulated range!

With the monsters being very closely packed together at the moment, Zhang Yang struck out with his {Blast Wave} instead of {Horizontal Sweep}. Instantly, a sea of numerical values popped across the heads of the closely packed monsters again and again. The amount of damage dealt on each of the monsters was more than 5,000 damage! Furthermore, the replicated ability of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] was triggered without any care in the world. Instantly, a series of damage befell upon the monsters like a ‘domino effect,’ as the damage values popped above their heads repeatedly.

Although the basic damage of the {Blast Wave} was merely above 5,000 damage, the Special Effect on the [Sword of Purging Devourer] was still kicking in like a boss! The Special Effect was triggered repeatedly without any pause, until all the monsters within the range of {Blast Wave} was cleared out completely!

All members of his party could clearly see the damage dealt on the monsters every time the Special Effect of the sword triggered. They also could see how all the monsters died with their own eyes. Meanwhile, the other players around could only see the HP bars of the monsters being emptied out the moment Zhang Yang swung his sword. From their perspective, Zhang Yang had taken out all the monsters single-handedly in mere seconds, like they were nothing!

What kind of sorcery was that!

Everyone could not help but look over at Zhang Yang. They were looking at him with admiration and dread!

--- this man was a one-man army. He was killing the monsters at a rate that was even more ferocious than the Boss!

Zhang Yang shrugged. It was only the Special Effect of his [Sword of Purging Devourer]. That Special Effect had once been on a Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon. It wouldn't do much for the other players even if he shared the attributes for the [Dark Enigmatic Sword] to the public. If a Level 100 player went on to equip a Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon, the player would be severely underpowered, and there was no chance of the Special Effect showing up in their hands!

When a player is below Level 80, there would be a 2% rate of triggering the sword's Special Effect. However, when the player exceeds Level 80, the rate of triggering the sword's Special Effect would drop to 1%. When the player reaches Level 90, the rate would go as low as 0.5%! The rate would become 0.25% when the player reaches Level 100!

Furthermore, other players would not have an Ancient weapon like the [Sword of Purging Devourer] to 'devour' the Special Effect of other weapons. The sword could even be upgraded further up in Tier as the seals on the sword are unsealed!

Therefore, other players would only be envious of him.

However ... destruction always pursues the great! After today's battle, someone would be complaining to the officials that Zhang Yang was like a Bug in the game, out of spite. If the Special Effect of the [Sword of Purging Devourer] was to be nerfed, then Zhang Yang would suffer a great loss!



"Hahaha! That weapon of noob tank is sure powerful!" Wei Yan Er quickly patted her [Winged Tiger] and flew out to pick up as many [Insect Shells] as she could. Although the elite Tier monsters only dropped Gray-Silver Tier [Insect Shells], they could be exchanged for quite a number of Gray-Silver Tier equipment. They could always sell the equipment for money.

"Such a shame, that the weapon is bound to noob tank. Or else, I would have borrowed it to have fun with the monsters!" Wei Yan Er sighed as she said.

"If I ever lent it to you, it would most probably be like taking advantage of an incident to take Jingzhou, without returning it! I would never get it back, ever!" Zhang Yang blurted out.

"Humph! You better stop discrediting my reputation!" The little brat growled at Zhang Yang. The gang could only chuckle.

Under the violent assaults from Rockovich and Zhang Yang, every single one of the monsters that got through the wall were annihilated. The monsters also dropped numerous loot on the ground, including a countless amount of [Insect Shells]! Everyone enjoyed the substantial amount of experience points as they stared at their rapidly rising experience bars.

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh. As usual, online games were all about having high levels!

This spot had become a holy land for players to level up. Judging

by the rate of monsters coming and dying, most of the players would probably level up once after just one day! However, such excitement and joy of leveling up would only be understood by the high-leveled players. Back in his previous life, Zhang Yang was still at Level 20, wandering about, while the top players activated the first Legendary Quest!

Of course, they did not have an insanely powerful player like Zhang Yang back then. Furthermore, Zhang Yang had activated the first Legendary Quest much earlier compared to the timeline of his previous life, because of his 'foresight'. Therefore, the number of players who had reach Level 100 and above were so much lesser than it was in his previous life!

Although that might make defending the Territory much harder, there would be fewer players to divide the experience points equally. Everyone was hooked on the fact that they were earning more experience points than they ever could in such short amount of time. They were all hoping that this battle would last until they were 20 Levels higher than the monsters. By then, any more than 20 levels, it would be pointless, as they would no longer earn any experience points.

"Boss!" Wei Yan Er's sharp eyes and nose detected the presence of a boss from a distance, like a treasure hunter.

# Chapter 569: Frenzied Attacks

---

It was not just a boss, it was a large group of bosses!

Unless it was a Legendary Quest, it would be very hard to imagine dozens of bosses charging at you in such manner!

There was a total of 13 Zergert Beasts with wings on their backs, hovering in the sky. These Zergert Beasts were a few times larger than the normal sized Zergert Beasts. Their skins were traced with golden, runic lines. Their fangs looked extremely terrifying.

[Zergert Beast King] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 108

HP: 3,240,000

Defense: 1,800

Skills:

[Mangle]: Mauls the target with their sharp teeth, causing 150% Physical Damage to the target.

[Rushing Pounce]: Lunges towards a target from afar and pins the target down to the ground. Stuns the target for 5 seconds. Range: 3 - 20 meters.

"Here comes the Yellow-Gold equipment!" Zhang Yang smiled gently as he hopped on to Thunderhawk and flew towards the bosses.

However, Zhang Yang was not the only one who had such thoughts. Mellow Venom from Crimson Rage, One Sword Stroke from Imperial Sky, Sword of Light from Radiance and other top Tier Tankers of China had flown into the sky to engage the bosses on their [Flying Mounts]. They were merely Yellow-Gold Tier bosses after all. It was a free gift given by the system! Anyone would want to fight for it!

Zhang Yang struck one of the Zergert Beast King with his {Spear of Obliteration} while his Thunderhawk shot a blast of {Thunder Ball} at another Zegert Beast King. Felice, on the other hand, threw her {Fire Missile} straight at the third Zergert Beast King!

The Attack of Zhang Yang, Felice and Thunderhawk altogether were extremely powerful. The three bosses immediately followed Zhang Yang, Felice, and Thunderhawk.

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu, please spare a monster for us!" Mellow Venom had a wide grin on her pretty face. Other than Zhang Yang, everyone was only able to get one boss to follow them. Some even came back with nothing! Although they were envious of Zhang Yang for getting three bosses to follow him, this was Zhang Yang's Territory, literally! Who would dare to defy him?

However, the bad girls from Crimson Rage had been a bad

influence on Mellow Venom ever since Zhang Yang last saw her. She was used to be honest and decent, but now she was just as rotten as them! Mellow Venom threw a {Provoke} on one of the bosses as she attempted to snatch that boss from Zhang Yang.

Unexpectedly, the boss actually fell for that woman's {Provoke}! It immediately turned its \*ss around and charged towards Mellow Venom!

What the hell! A sexy wink can actually secure the aggro of a Yellow-Gold boss?

Zhang Yang reacted promptly as he countered Mellow Venom's attempt at stealing his boss by throwing his own {Provoke} at it. Immediately, the boss turned back to him!

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu! How can you hog it all!" Mellow Venom bit her sexy lip as she spoke. She sounded a little grumpy. Because the cooldown for {Provoke} was 10 seconds long, she couldn't do anything within that period of time. She could only bring back the boss that she lured earlier on back to the large Crimson Rage unit that awaited her.

Zhang Yang did not bother about the piteous eyes that Mellow Venom threw at him at all. He knew that she was trying to make him feel guilty for trying to snatch the boss back from her. She hoped that if any new bosses appeared again, he would be too embarrassed to snatch the bosses from her again. However, Zhang Yang was a totally different type of man compared Fatty Han and Endless Starlight. He was basically immune to any form of seduction from a woman!

Endless Starlight had also managed to get a boss to follow him back. Along with that boss, Lone Desert Smoke had managed to secure the aggro of 4 bosses in total! It was like smacking the other players from other guilds right in their faces, saying that they were noobs! However, they couldn't say anything about it, because Zhang Yang was the owner of the Territory. Zhang Yang had absolute control over everyone in the Territory. Anyone who gets on Zhang Yang's nerves would risk being listed as a blacklisted person, never to use the Teleportation Circle of Morning Town ever again! That would be extremely troublesome for any player, losing access to the only Teleportation Circle in the Chaos Realm!

Witnessing Zhang Yang and his guild taking on the 4 bosses, other than Crimson Rage trying to steal a boss from Zhang Yang once, no one would dare pluck at the whiskers of a sleeping tiger.

The four Yellow-Gold bosses were considered a bonus for Lone Desert Smoke. With ease, the bosses were brought down, one after another. However, the bosses did not drop any loot, other than a few pieces of golden [Insect Shell]!

"Wu wu wu... why didn't these bosses drop anything valuable for us! These bastards! They're actually stingier than the noob tank!" Wei Yan Er complained grumpily.

Although they took out the bosses with ease, there were still some casualties. After all, the monsters were like a suffocating tidal wave. Fortunately, the dead players could just run all the way back here to resurrect themselves. As long as they did not die more than 10 times, the durability of their equipment should not hit 0

just yet. They should be able to fight the battle that is yet to come.

However, the City Wall of the Territory was soon completely destroyed by the horde of monsters as they began to gush into the interior area of the Territory! There was no way of repairing the destroyed City Wall. So Zhang Yang would have to reconstruct the facility from scratch all over again.

The number of player casualties began to rise tremendously as they were starting to lose their ground. There is an old saying, a large number of ants could kill an elephant! Furthermore, these were not ants! These were a large horde of elite Tier monsters! Their attributes were not far behind the regular players' attributes! Fortunately, the players still had their backs covered by the large army of NPCs, providing them some time to regain their breaths before reengaging into battle. Rockovich was really ferocious and violent. He went all out with his hammer as he continuously smashed it against the ground, creating endless shockwaves across the horde of monsters charging at him. The monsters were pushed back by the shockwaves, unable to even get close to Rockovich!

More and more freeloaders positioned themselves beside him, finishing off the monsters gleefully. It was their chance to earn even more experience points.

Players would need to hunt all over the lands and mountains for the monsters in order to grind their levels. In other words, they would be wasting half of the time just running around, looking for monsters and bosses. However, in this battle, they only had to sit back and wait, while monsters came up to them! Furthermore, the

amount of experience points earned from killing an elite Tier monster was so much more than the amount of experience points earned from killing a normal Tier monster. That was why this battle was the best possible moment for the players to grind their levels.

The monsters had the edge in numbers. The players had the luxury of resurrecting themselves an unlimited number of times.

Once every three hours, there would be a new wave of Yellow-Gold bosses spawning among the horde of the monsters. The number of bosses in each spawn differed. The numbers ranged from 10 to 20. Every time they appeared, a contest of snatching the bosses would occur among the players. Whoever who acts fast would have the loot from killing the bosses.

Although Morning Town stood right in the middle of the path which led to the portal of the China Region, there were simply too many monsters to handle. The moment the City Wall collapsed, the monsters gushed in continuously, like huge tidal waves. The defenders were unable to grab hold of each monster's aggro. A number of monsters managed to pass through as if the players never even existed in the first place. The leaks were sporadic and inconsistent. At times, only 3 to 4 monsters got past the defensive line of the players.

After all, the system had programmed the monsters to go through the portal that connects the Chaos Realm and the China Region so that they could conquer the eight Main Cities of the eight main Regions. Therefore, the monsters would go straight through the portal if their aggro is not attracted by any of the



players on the battlefield.

Zhang Yang and the others could not possibly stop every single monster from getting past their defense line. It was humanly impossible for them to achieve that.

On the other side of the portal, there was a massive amount of players standing by at the Ten Barren Seas. Although those players were only Level 80 to Level 99, they definitely had the advantage in numbers. Furthermore, the Level Gap Suppression Gap function of the game would not be in effect. In other words, tens of millions of players could actually drown the monsters if each of them spat once on the monster!

One day had passed. Everyone was hungry and tired. They had lost count of the number of monsters that they have slain. However, these so-called Ancient Creatures have been in the dark, sealed up for eons. They have spent the entire time in a massive orgy, reproducing their kind and stacking up their numbers. Although millions of them had already fallen, the waves kept coming relentlessly. It was as if they came from an unlimited supply!

Zhang Yang let the Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er take turns in going offline for their break and having some food. No one could predict how long the battle would last. It would definitely affect the performance of the players in battle if one was to starve.

‘Server Announcement: The first wave of the Ancient Creatures Invasion is about to come to an end. However, their leaders are greatly displeased. They have decided to send a stronger and

vengeful wave of Ancient Creatures in the next wave!’

Upon the announcement, the monsters stopped coming. Half an hour later, only piles of dead monsters were seen all over the Morning Town. The dead bodies were so closely packed that the entire land had turned dark! The Skin Flayers were very happy during the entire time of that moment. As they were too stressful in fighting off the monsters, they could not find any chance of cutting the skins from the dead monsters. So now, they took their sweet time as they harvested their goods from the ancient corpses with their little knives.

"That was just the first wave? Are you kidding me?" Zhang Yang tensed up, his face dead serious. Although players could repeatedly move back to their dead bodies and resurrect themselves as many times as they wanted to, players would only start off with 20% HP and 20% MP. They would be very vulnerable.

That was merely the first wave of the monsters. If they did not have Rockovich as the center pillar of their defensive line which held off most of the monsters, the players would have drowned in the massive wave of monsters!

Meanwhile, the system had stated clearly that the second wave of the monsters would be even more powerful! Inversely, the army of NPCs had sustained great losses, so they wouldn't be able to provide any effective support for the players in the upcoming wave.

It was fortunate enough that Rockovich was still mighty and powerful. Although he had taken up so much damage that he had

only 24% HP left when the first wave ended, he was different compared to normal NPCs. The moment he disengaged from battle, his HP began to recover on its own rapidly. In just a minute, Rockovich had recovered back to his full health state.

Buzz, buzz, buzz!

Suddenly, everyone could hear the deafening sound of wings, buzzing at a high frequency, coming from the sky. Every single player in Morning Town raised their heads up as they gazed into the distant sky, where the sound was coming from.

What they saw were dark clouds moving towards Morning Town.

About 10 Kilometers away from where the players were standing, there were countless Insect-type monsters buzzing their wings, flying towards Morning Town! These monsters were deep-red in color, with six legs and a pair of wings on their backs. They looked similar to cockroaches, but their heads were many times larger than the heads of a cockroach! Each of them was about 4 to 5 meters long!

As the monsters were about to descend from the sky into Morning Town, the entire sky was blacked out by their shadow. Darkness fell upon the players!

[Zergert Cockroach] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 115

HP: 300,000

Defense: 1,200

Melee Attack: 7,623 - 9,623

Skills:

[Earth Dig]: When the Zergert Cockroaches are heavily wounded, they will burrow into the ground and cause their enemies to lose track of them. They can recover their HP during battle.

Note: Zergert Cockroaches are the soldiers of the Zergert Race. They are ferocious and brutal. They love to kill but also know how to protect themselves.

"What the hell! These monsters can fly in the sky, fight on the ground, and they can even go underground and hide! These monsters are more like some sort of flying amphibian that can survive in the sky, on the ground and even underground!" Fatty Han wheezed.

However, other than the aerial army, there was also a massive army of the same Zergert Beasts from wave one on the ground. Their number was so massive that they looked like a land of darkness! In other words, players would be facing the army on the ground like how they did in the first wave of the monsters, along with a sky-full of other enemies!

This was not a one-plus-one situation we are talking about here! For example, during a battle between two players slaughtering each other up, player A could just slaughter up player B when the HP bar of player B is left with 20%. However, if player B suddenly had help from player C, and the two of them are equally strong, then player A would never be able to take out player B, even if player A went all out, trying to take their enemy down together with them!

That is the how the change in quantity affects the quality of the troops!

"Gururu...!" the Ancient Creatures were making some strange sounds. Instantly, the massive aerial army in the sky began to dive towards Morning Town, as they began to launch a uniformed assault towards the players on the ground.

"Kill one, you earn back the cost! Kill two, you earn more!" Fatty Han shouted out like a hoodlum as he drew the string on his bow, aiming at the Zergert Cockroach horde in the sky. He repeatedly released his arrows towards the horde in an attempt to get the aggro of the monsters. The Zergert Cockroaches came at Fatty Han the moment they made contact with his arrows.

Endless Starlight quickly went in between Fatty Han and the horde and kited the monsters that were coming for Fatty Han. Then he said, "Brother fatty, please cut down on the number of monsters you shoot! My tiny little limbs cannot kite too many monsters!"

"Haiyah! Monsters of this standard, little Yang could tank against hundreds of them! How can you be such trash!" Fatty Han waved his hand flippantly.

Not only was Endless Starlight silent upon hearing it, even Zhang Yang frowned hard when he overheard it. He could kite a few dozen elite Tier monsters, but hundreds of elite Tier monsters? Hmm... Zhang Yang might have to activate his {God of War Transformation} in order to do so!

The battle raged on.

Because there were forces coming from the sky, the defense line of the players began to collapse. They were divided into many 'fragments', surrounded by the Zergert Beasts. Furthermore, the cockroaches were also bombarding them from the sky. Several players were sent to the graveyard with each volley.

The massive army of the monsters began to cover both the land and the sky. They were basically unstoppable! No player could hold their ground against the horde any much longer!

"This is outrageous! It's just too difficult!"

Everyone sighed as they could no longer see any hope of winning the battle.

Yes, why would the battle be so difficult? Zhang Yang thought about it. After pondering over it, he finally understood!

When the first Legendary Quest was triggered back in his previous life, it would be 10 more months from now! By then, there would be many more capable players. The players should also have acquired better Tier equipment by then!

Upon activating the Legendary Quest by 10 months earlier, the number of players eligible for entering Chaos Realm was minimal. There were only about 100,000 players from China Region who were capable of entering the Chaos Realm at this point. Furthermore, the equipment levels and Tiers of several players had yet to be updated to the standards of the map. Only a few players had managed to acquire some Violet-Platinum Tier equipment which they had earned by taking down the first five bosses in the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress.

Under those circumstances, it would be natural for the monsters to triumph over the players. Zhang Yang and all other players had managed to pull through because they had Rockovich and his army of 200,000. Without that additional support, the players might have already been overwhelmed.

"Little Yang, should we be using our {Inheritance Transformations} now?" Fatty Han asked Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang thought about it, then he shook his head, "The duration of our {Inheritance Transformation} Skills is only 2 hours, no more, no less! That wouldn't be enough for us at all! Furthermore, even if we transform, that would only increase our individual power levels. It would still not be enough to take on so many monsters..."

"Then what should we do?"

"There are too few of us! Everyone, fall back to the castle for now! We shall take the terrain and buildings to our advantage to avoid the assaults of the monsters in the sky. We shall focus only on the monsters on the ground. Let's leave the monsters in the sky to the players guarding back at the Ten Barren Seas!" Zhang Yang informed.

Hundred Shots gave a command and all members of Lone Desert Smoke began to move into the buildings all across Morning Town to avoid the cockroaches in the sky, preventing their backs from being scratched by the monsters. The players from other guilds had also realized that and they began to follow suit as well.

The cockroaches in the sky did not dive down to stop the players. Instead, they continued to fly for the portal that led to the Ten Barren Seas. Their numbers were so abundant that they looked like dark clouds blotting out the sun. However, there would be tens of millions of players waiting for their arrival!

As the total number of monsters was still the same as the total number of monsters in the first wave, half of the army was basically flying over the Morning Town, leaving the other half down on the ground. In other words, the number of monsters Zhang Yang and all players had to face was only half of the number of monsters that they had to battle in the first wave of the horde. Therefore, the pressure on Morning Town was reduced tremendously, and the players were able to fend the army off without much trouble!



# Chapter 570: All Out Attack

---

Some 10 hours later, Sun Xin Yu finally joined in. When she had logged off at the Territorial Hall Teleportation Points. It was the place that Zhang Yang and the guild had been protecting with their lives. So, when she logged into the game, she was not attacked by any monsters. She would have been shredded into pieces if she were to appear on the streets!

‘Server Announcement: Edo Castle (Japan-Korea Region) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Creatures!’

The server announcement popped out, 38 hours into the battle.

The first major city had fallen.

Zhang Yang and his teammates shared a look and smirked.

The main reason why the main city of the Japan-Korea Region had fallen was due to their lack of, or rather the total absence of their primary defense line, Winst Castle. Due to the fact, there were no fortified defenses whatsoever in the Japan-Korea region, the cockroaches were able to waltz into the mainland. The first wave was still bearable, as only foot soldiers marched in the first wave. However, the second waves had those flying cockroaches joining in. Due to the enemy dominating both the sky and the land, the perfectly guarded Ten Barren Sea was breached. The Ancient Creatures were able to directly swarm their City.

"Hehe, Zhang Yang. I think the Japan-Korea players are cursing

your name to the high heavens by now," said Lost Dream happily.

"Noob tank. People say, "When all fingers are pointed at you, even if it is for nothing, you are a dead man." I think you should go to the temple and get yourself a lucky charm from the head monk!" said the little girl. Zhang Yang had expected it since the little girl had never been "nice" to him.

"We might need to try harder on our end too. The creatures are too strong," said Zhang Yang as he activated a {Blast Wave} and stunned more than 10 creatures. The sword procced its effect and struck them again.

"Sigh...When will this battle end?!"

"Hey. Think about it this way. The longer we fight, the more experience points we get. We won't have to look for EXP, EXP comes to you!"

"Plus! There's a ton of Gray-Silver Insect Shells!"

The experience points gained from this battle were tremendous. After one whole day and night of fighting, Zhang Yang had gained enough experience points to reach Level 107, while the others had already gain whole new levels. The main reason that Zhang Yang was able to gain such an amount of experience points was due to his sword. The sword's passive effect was so strong that it could clear waves of monsters with a {Horizontal Sweep}!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. "You know, I have a bad premonition that the Sword of Purging Devourer will be nerfed after this battle!"

"It should have been nerfed much earlier!" the little girl snorted. "All you have to do is to cast {Horizontal Sweep} and you could kill a wave of monsters in a few seconds. I would have taken several minutes to do the same! It's too unfair! Hmph!"

Zhang Yang grinned sheepishly. He realized that his sword had indeed given him a massive advantage compared to anyone else in the game. The Echo effect of the Sword of Purging Devourer would produce a power that rivals that of a nuke when paired with the {Blast Wave} AoE attack.

"Hehe. Might as well use it till I'm satisfied before the system nerfs it."

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han were in charge of kiting the monsters around. Their job was to lure monsters to the entrance of the hall to allow Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, the two door guardians to block them, while the attackers kill them all with AoE skills. The strategy was by far the best and most effective method to ensure minimal death and a high kill rate.

‘Server Announcement: Andong Castle (Japan-Korea Region) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Creatures!’

...

‘Server Announcement: Gelma Castle (India Region) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Creatures!’

...

As the battle went on, many other major cities of other region were overwhelmed by the Ancient Creatures. While Japan-Korea region had lost two of their major cities, other regions had only lost, at most, one. On the other hand, Europe, North America, and China had not lost any cities for now.

At China’s end, Lone Desert Smoke had stationed many of their own members in the Ten Barren Sea to help Zhang Yang relay news about the situation back there. So far, players had the advantage in numbers. Since they were not being held back by their Levels, the troops were able to defeat them without a hitch. That being said, players dying was a hindrance as well. The graveyard was located rather far away, hence, the time taken to run back to their bodies took a while, allowing the monsters to gain a temporary advantage. If prolonged, or if the number of monsters rose, both the player’s side and the monster’s side would be evenly matched. The moment the players fail to stem the flow of monsters, they would be overwhelmed.

‘Server Announcement: Takeshi Castle (Japan-Korea Region) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Creatures!’

The little kid Galileo started cracking up, "Japan-Korea have just lost another major city! Right now, they should be struggling to keep the last one up. If they lose another one, all of them will lose a level as well! Imagine the pressure and stress! Even I would pull all

my hair off my head!"

Everyone humored him and laughed along.

The main purpose of a Territory or a major city was not to reduce the forces of the Ancient Creature. It was to divide the incoming force into several smaller groups to share the burden and reduce the total attack force. When a force of several 100,000 is divided equally, the resulting smaller groups would be easier to defeat. As they say, United we stand, divided we fall. Divide and Conquer. That's what this battle was all about.

Even though the system had not made it a contest, region players competed against each other in an unspoken manner. The first one to crumble would be the one to face the greatest shame.

The fire of war was lit up, and like wildfire, it continued on raging. After 10 hours, the number of monsters that were invading had started to show signs of letting up. It was the ending of the second wave. However, right then, a loud battle cry was heard coming from the front line. It was the final burst of battle cry, which led to the fall of Rockovich, the great general. Unfortunately, he had fallen to the monsters.

The general had a simple principle. Defending Morning Town was as good as defending White Jade Empire itself. Even with his last breath, the NPC had taken a step back. He had shown the utmost bravery any soldier could ever have. However, despite having 100,000,000 HP, the poor general was unable to face the attack from both the air and the ground.

The brave general's death was not in vain. He had tanked several of the monsters for innumerable players to finish off. Without him, the DPSers would have already been overwhelmed, and their death rate would have been much higher!

"Your death shall be remembered, and your deeds shall be passed on. Rest in peace. General Rockovich, for you, are the bravest general of the White Jade Empire." Fatty Han saluted the man as he gazed into the distance.

Roughly half an hour later, the second wave of monsters was wiped out. Several minutes later, reports came in from Ten Barren Sea stating that all of the monsters had been successfully killed.

And so, the damage suffered by all regions were as such: Japan-Korea Region: 3, India Region: 2, Africa Region: 2, Australia Region: 1, South America Region: 1, North America Region: 0, Europe Region: 0, China Region: 0.

‘Server Announcement: The Ancient Creatures will start their final attack!’

After the system notification had ranged for several minutes, the earth rumbled as tiny pebbles on the ground started to dance around. The sound of a stampede could be heard from afar. As the creatures got closer, the earth trembled wildly like an earthquake.

Here it comes...

Players with flying mounts had jumped on their mounts to zoom into the sky. Their jaws dropped at the sight that greeted them.

800 huge elephants, as measuring roughly the size of a mountain were making their way to the fortress. Imagine an entity the size of a mountain, galloping on their megatonne feet towards you. Multiply that by 800. That was the fear the players were experiencing. Several seconds later, all the players, even the ones on the ground could see the incoming giants as clear as day.

A single of them would already be a huge problem to deal with. However, 800 though...

Each of them was at least 1km tall. That sort of size would hardly require any explanation as to how powerful they might be. With 800 of them were stampeding towards you, earthquakes would be the least of your problems.

[Zergert Mammoth] (Violet-Platinum, Beast)

Level: 125

HP: 50,000,000

Defense: 3,300

Melee Attack: 15,246 – 21,236

## Skills:

[Earthquake]: Shakes the ground and deals 30,000 physical damage to all targets within 40 meters. Causes the targets to fall and unable to engage in any action for 5 seconds.

[Stomp]: Tramples a target, deals 150% melee physical attack to the target and all nearby targets.

[Thick Hide]: Increases 100% Defense for 30 seconds.

Note: The mammoth is the strongest infantry of the Zergert. Massive power and brute force are enough to trample their enemies.

800 Violet-Platinum boss... The players were either lucky or extremely unlucky...

Without a doubt, even Zhang Yang would be killed, even with the God of War Transformation.

The boss was not alone. Being shadowed by the massive mammoth, there were countless of leaping Zergert Beasts on the ground and swarms of Zergert Cockroach in the sky. If Rockovich was revived back to full health, he wouldn't be able to stand for any longer either...



The earth rumbled as the sky was blown away by the cries of the creatures. The sky was completely separated into two sides; the light of players, and the darkness of the Zergert. No wonder the battle had been classified as a Legendary Quest.

As the mammoths approached, a new boss appeared behind them.

The best way to describe them would be: octopuses. Giant, slimy, octopuses. They were walking on eight-tentacle like legs, each of them measuring close to a few hundred meters in diameter! Their appearances were outstanding enough, but since they had been eclipsed by the giant mammoths, players could only see them once they got much closer to the base. The number of those monsters was much lesser than the mammoths, roughly 80 of them. They were much stronger, however.

[Zergert Cthulhu] (Mythical, Beast)

Level: 130

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Melee Attack: 30,653 – 38,654

Skills:

[Mind Control]: Forces all beings within 40 meters of the caster to attack each other.

[Sunder]: Severs the lifeforce of a Zergert creature, killing the target to restore 20% HP of another Zergert Creature.

Note: Cthulhu are the brains of the Zergerts. All of the Zergerts are controlled by the Cthulhu.

...

Oh lord. 800 Violet-Platinum tier bosses and 80 Mythical tier bosses. The stress and pressure was enough to send weaker soldiers frothing in their mouths.

How would they fight?

Zhang Yang almost folded his face into two with a frown. For the lack of a better plan, Zhang Yang had no choice to give up Morning town.

"Everyone! We are retreating! Retreat to Ten Barren Seas! Move! Now!" Zhang Yang cried. He had switched his chat mode to "Shout" mode to relay the message to everyone around him.

"Aye aye."

The little girl had quickly acknowledged the threat and followed Zhang Yang's command.

Every player rode their mounts and flew to the teleportation point. Those without flying mounts had used their scrolls to teleport to White Jade Castle. It would be useless for them to run on their regular mounts. By the time they were only 30% to the teleportation point, the monsters would have caught up to them and turned them into mincemeat.

...

Everyone had evacuated the town and within a few minutes, the stampede arrived. Within seconds, the town was completely flattened to the ground, with no buildings left standing. Luckily, the town was already damaged, to begin with. It matters not if the town was destroyed or not.

The problem now was, how does Zhang Yang plan to fight such a massive force?

# Chapter 571: Fallback

---

Albeit having died countless of times, players in the Ten Barren Sea had obtained a luxurious amount of experience points and a number of Insect Shells. Some of them who were luckier had managed to haul in a good number of Yellow-Gold Insect Shells. As a result, they had only died and lost 10% of their equipment durability.

It was a worthwhile trade. Hence, everyone was prepared to face the monsters. They had set camp outside the portal and were attacking all the monsters that came out of the portal.

Just when the atmosphere was reaching its boiling point, dark rays blasted out of the portal. Players who were camping all around the portal were startled and attacked the spot without giving any second thoughts.

There were more than 100,000 players camped outside the portal. Behind the front lines were more than a million of them. Since the monster's pathway was only limited to the portal, they were bottlenecked into it. When a monster pops its head out, it would be killed, instantly. Even though it would still be dangerous to loot the item drops, players were still getting experience points. The loots were on a first come first serve basis. Hence, when anyone attempts to loot, they would be struck by players as well.

"D\*mn! Which stupid idiot is attacking me!"

"F\*ck me. I was killed by players instead of monsters. Sigh.

Luckily, I had just leveled up. I only lost 4% of my experience points!"

"Bastard"

Humans were amazing sheep. When they see the front liners attacking, the players behind them would jump on the bandwagon and attack the black light coming out of the portal. Even though a majority of players were still under Level 100, anyone without strong equipment would surely be killed by several hundred simultaneous attacks.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

More than ten dark lights that had managed to escape to the sky were shot down. Just when the players had come closer to loot the items, they were surprised to see that the dark lights were none other than players themselves! In a fit of haste, they had turned around to pretend they had seen nothing. If the dead player was someone prominent in the game, they might have incurred their wrath and would be a whole lot of trouble. However, even if the player would want to have his revenge, how could he search for the one guy who killed him? It was a sea of players, there was close to a million of them!

Once the news spread out that the dark lights were players, players from outside the portal stopped attacking blindly. In truth, Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Rage, Imperial Sky, and other guilds who were still in the portal had spread the news of the oncoming third wave of monsters. However, since the start of the game, there were a total of 2,000,000,000 players worldwide. China alone

had taken up to 200,000,000 players!

Even though half of that of that colossal number were players lower than Level 50 and were ineligible to participate in the Legendary Quest, there were still close to 80,000,000 players in Ten Barren Sea. With such a large number of players, it would take a super-charged megaphone to deliver a single message. While many pairs of eyes were locked onto the portal, the public channel was filled with constant scolding and chitter-chatters. It was as noisy as a night market.

As a result, the first batch of players who had tried to escape was unfortunately killed.

When Zhang Yang's crew had arrived at the portal door, the sea of mega monsters was only less than 1 kilometer away from them. Zhang Yang tried his luck. He jumped onto the Thunderhawk, turned on his name tag and all the titles and switched to the public channel and shouted. "Brothers and sisters of China! The monsters are coming now! This wave of monsters is extremely strong! Please work together! We must stop the monsters here and now! We will take the Level +4 reward as well as be the greatest nation amongst all others! Let the bastards of Europes, North America, and India eat our dust!"

In the beginning, his voice was completely overwhelmed by the noisy environment. However, when players had spotted Zhang Yang's name was coming up in the public channel, they kept quiet, stopped their argument, and listened. Within half a minute, the entire area around the portal, as well as the islands around fell silent. It was so quiet that you could hear the sound of everyone's

beating pulse, not to mention their ragged breathing!

Zhang Yang repeated his words over and over until all players were responding with a burning vigor.

One Sword Stroke, Greensleeve Prince, Snow Seeker, and the rest of the guildmasters nodded their heads as they acknowledged Zhang Yang's position. If someone else were to speak, people would not even care about you. Zhang Yang was someone. He was the idol of everyone in China and the level of admiration towards him was unrivaled.

RAAWWWR!

1 kilometer might seem far for a normal person. However, for mountain-sized monsters that could cover 100 meters with each step, it was merely a few strides away. A gigantic head emerged out of the portal. The portal adjusted its size to match the entity that was moving through it. Judging from the size to which the portal had enlarged, the monster that was passing through it was frightening.

"My lord...just how big is this monster! The portal just keeps on growing!"

"F\*ck! It's a Violet-Platinum boss!"

"Crap! What level is it? I can't see it!"

When the creature appeared in Ten Barren Sea, everyone started throwing their opinions into the public channel. There was even someone who was standing on the other half of the island could spot the monsters.

"Arghh!" The Zergert Mammoth growled deafeningly and stomped its gigantic furry legs to the ground.

WHAM!

A massive quake struck the land and a sea of players was dealt with 30,000 damage. The ground cracked and many players fell to the ground. After only 1 second, there were countless of white lights floated away. Those were players that had been instantly killed by the boss' stomp attack.

30,000 damage was nothing but a scratch for Zhang Yang. However, Level 70, 80 players that had equipped themselves with top-tiered Violet-Platinum or Yellow-Gold equipment had trouble pushing their maximum HP to 30,000.

"KILL!" Still, death was nothing to them. All they had to do was to revive, repair their broken equipment and, come back to the spot again and again.

After the first attack from the Ancient Creature had ended, countless of wooden arrows, Frost Arrow, Fire Missiles burst into the air and shot down towards the boss. Berserkers and Thief class players had no choice but to charge into the wave of monsters bravely. As long as they land a single hit, they were eligible to



claim the loot. If they were lucky enough to land the killing blow, it would be 50% experience points for them alone.

It was, after all, a Violet-Platinum boss.

For players under Level 100 who had not even managed to enter the Dragon Throat Fortress, fighting a Violet-Platinum boss was a rare attempt. Hence, when a sea of Violet-Platinum boss appeared to them, everyone got hyped up and fight on like a mad dog.

There was a saying, an elephant can squash an ant effortlessly, but falls to a sea of ants. Even though the mammoth boss was as large as a mountain, the number of players that could attack it in close range was close to a thousand. In the same time, the players that could attack it afar could reach 100,000 and more.

Even if 99% of all the players there could only deal 1 damage, one wave of attack would be close to 100,000 damage! The amount of accumulated damage was not to be looked down upon.

Sadly, even though there were many players around, as many as a thousand players had perished with one boss attack.

Zhang Yang locked its gaze to the mammoth and commanded Endless Starlight. "Go and kite that boss. Do not let it roam around freely! Fantasy, take care of Endless."

Endless Starlight had a flying mount. Kiting the boss from the sky could help reduce the death rate by a large number if he could

control its aggro properly.

"Boss, that's just one boss. There're still hundreds of them still inside the portal!" cried Endless Starlight as he rode his giant hornet towards the boss.

"It won't matter. If it's too much for you to handle, run. You'll be fine even if you're killed. As long as the killing blow is not from a player. Come on, the repairing fee is nothing but a few gold coins!" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Dummy, could our people hold the line?" asked Han Ying Xue after Endless Starlight has left with Fantasy Sweetheart.

"Obvious not." Zhang Yang said with a straight face. "800 Platinum-Gold boss and 80 Mythical boss is something that we are not capable of stopping."

"Then, why did you ask Endless Starlight to go on like that! I thought we actually have a shot at winning!"

"Hahaha. It's called strategy and morale. If the lord of a city professes his weakness at the beginning of the siege, how would his army fight with their lives on the line? Right now, we should try to reduce the enemies' number as much as we could. After the front line is breached, we can still rely on defensive strategies to wipe them all!"

"As I recall, isn't there a celestial boss in the main city? Let them

reach there, and the boss will kill them all with a swift ulti attack!"

Zhang Yang shook his head. "In this kind of story-based quest, NPCs will provide help but we cannot rely on them as the main force. Back then, when Princess Serena dominated all seven kingdoms, why didn't the so-called celestial bosses come out to defend their cities? I strongly feel that the battle has been left to the players. Only when victory is at hand, the NPC will come out to clear the dust for us."

"...That...doesn't make any sense," said Daffodil Daydream.

"Sigh...If you want a more logical explanation...gimme a sec. If there are too many monsters, the strong would not want to waste their soldiers. They would try to do something sneaky like assassination or poison-work to reduce the enemy forces. All in all, this is just a game. Let's just strap in and survive this." Zhang Yang shrugged and everyone else had no choice but to accept his reasoning.

Undoubtedly, there were many players attacking the boss. Even though the boss had a staggering HP of 50,000,000, players were still able to inflict a significant amount of damage even if they only dealt 1 damage each.

Just when players had hopes of killing the first boss, echoes of "arugh" were heard from the portal. Seven mammoths had just made their way through the portal, followed by the battalion of creatures behind.

Just when they thought the seven was more than enough, the same growl was heard again and more than 10 mammoths had emerged out of the portal, followed by the Zergert Cthulhu behind.

"It's a hit! A hit each, I'm telling you! No need to fight for the boss. There's one for everyone!"

"Hit? There's so many bosses, one of them is enough to knock your head off your neck. How do we fight?!"

"I think I need to wear glasses in the game, for I am seeing several hundreds of Violet-Platinum boss!"

"Relax, you're vision is fine. I'm seeing a few Mythical bosses here!"

Right then, players finally understood why Zhang Yang had warned them earlier. This wave of monsters is indeed strong. In fact, they were strong as f\*ck!

# Chapter 572: The Melancholic of Sword of Light

---

Well, with many bosses, come many drops. Investors would even walk through the valley of shadows just to earn 100% or 200% profit deals. In comparison, equipment damage that players had to pay on death was nothing compared to the chance of obtaining a boss' loot!

Hence, after a short session of panic and confusion, players made a huge come back when they realized the benefits of rushing up to the bosses.

Such a scene had made even the calm Zhang Yang shocked. It was something he had never had expected. Zhang Yang could not help but shake his head in disappointment. A fool would always commit a fool's deed. They knew nothing about the danger of the boss, hence the absence of fear. The space in their hearts had been completely filled by greed. F\*ck logic!

However! It was good!

Is it not greed that causes most wars? Greed and the will to live are yin and yang. Both emotions could instill a zealous fervor that would drive a man to fight.

The burst damage inflicted by hundreds of bosses at the same time was of nuke-level. After each wave of attack, players would die at the rate of a few 100,000s at a time. It could not be helped. The Zergert Mammoth AoE attacks were too strong. One stomp

could kill as many as a thousand players. Note that there 800 of them were spread across the islands, enhancing their overall killing power.

"Dive! Dive into the sea! Fan out! Try not to group together! The damage dealt by the mammoth would be reduced by half in the water." Zhang Yang soared into the sky and bellowed to everyone around him.

One man's voice is nothing but as tiny pop in the midst of an explosion. However, when 40,000 players scream their lungs out, it was an explosion above another explosion. Their voices could even dampen the noisy cries of the monsters.

During times of war, soldiers would be extremely receptive to one man's voice, their commander. Instantly, players around ran into the water and forced the attacking monsters to split up.

Zhang Yang smirked and switched to the party channel. "Follow me. We're going to kill a straggler."

His party members nodded. Zhang Yang had taken this time, while many players were still alive and kicking to sneak away to kill some bosses. It was to pick off the strong ones to lighten the load. In a way, it was doing the other players a favor. Zhang Yang original plan was to hunt the boss himself so that other would be able to snatch his loot! The few bosses that had died previously had only dropped Silver-Gray, Yellow-Gold, and Violet-Platinum Insect Shells. Since the officials had revealed that the highest tier equipment available for trade was the Violet-Platinum, a Mythical boss would drop a Mythical Insect Shell. In that case, those higher

tiered bosses would be dropping Mythical equipment!

Zhang Yang did not want to hunt for Insect Shells, so, he had led his team of 27 Lone Desert Smoke members with flying mounts to search for stragglers.

"There!" cried Sun Xin Yu as she raised a jade-white hand towards the corner of an island. There was a Zergert Cthulhu that had wandered far off from its original position. Zhang Yang had guessed that a party of players must have thought that they could kill it once they had successfully lured it away from the bulk of the swarm. So much for their smart idea.

"Let's go!"

Zhang Yang shot down to the boss as quickly as he could. The Cthulhu boss was already on its way back to the swarm. If it makes it back, it would be extremely difficult to draw it out again.

Pew!

The Violet Thunderhawk zoomed across the sky, leaving a trace of blue light trails and brought Zhang Yang to the boss. Once he was in range, Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss, successfully inflicting it with a wound that it spewed grayish brown blood out. The spear had dealt close to 26,000 damage to it.

A split second later, an axe flew past Zhang Yang and struck the boss. Even though Zhang Yang had not observed the resulting

damage value, he knew that it was lower than Zhang Yang's since the boss was not provoked by it and charged towards Zhang Yang instead.

Zhang Yang turned his head and glared at the axe-thrower. It was Sword of Light, the guild master of Radiance. Others had already spotted this fat piece of cake.

With the overall success of the war, one must have no civil war in one's nation. Zhang Yang stopped his attack and said, "Sword dude. I propose that we fight the boss together. As for the loot, let us compete with our total damage dealt. The winner shall have the first pick. If it's an even number, we shall divide it equally. If it's an odd number, the one with the higher number shall have one equipment extra!

"I agree." Sword of Light was not stupid, he too shared the same view and neither of them should be fighting each other for a boss loot. He had a team of around 30 members, hence, he should have the upper hand.

The two guilds parted ways. Each heading to either end of the boss and started their attack.

Even though only their guild masters had spoken, there was a burning sense of competition brewing in the atmosphere. Neither of them wanted to lose to the other guild! Especially the guild Radiance. They had always been eclipsed by Lone Desert Smoke and had never gotten the chance to stand out. Even if they win the boss fight, it wouldn't prove anything. Still, at the very least, they would not want to lose to Lone Desert Smoke in DPS fight.



Both guilds divided their own members into different positions. Naturally, the tanks stood in the front and the healers heal from behind, while the attackers attack from the sidelines.

After fighting for a short period, Sword of Light felt that something was off. His Rage was not adding up normally! It was something that had never occurred to him before!

He realized the reason behind the odd situation. He had not been attacked by the boss.

A Warrior has 3 ways to regenerate Rage points. The first being time. Rage will regenerate slowly over time. If that was too slow, a Warrior could also inflict damage via their normal attack. The stronger the damage inflicted, the more Rage points he will recover. Lastly, a warrior has to receive damage to restore their Rage points. The higher the damage inflicted on them, the higher the Rage point regained. A successful {Block} could also restore Rage points, but it required a Warrior to be targeted in the first place. The active skill {Blood Rage} can also restore Rage points, however, it had a one minute cooldown period, hence one shouldn't rely on the skill to restore Rage points.

Tanks can only use a one-handed weapon, and their armor was mostly defense oriented. They would have 30% or even 50% less attack power when it comes to a Spellcaster and Berserker with equipment of equal tier. A tank will mainly rely on attack to restore Rage points, as they had 30% extra regeneration via attack.

However, the God of War Inheritance belonged to Zhang Yang alone, only he would have the ability to equip a two-handed equipment.

Since Sword of Light had never been struck by the boss, so he could only rely on his normal attacks to regenerate his Rage. Sword of Life's weapon was strong. It was a Level 100 Violet-Platinum axe. One axe attack would score 30 to 40 Rage points. However, his axe had a 2.8-second attack interval. During that time, he could have already unleashed 3 skills. However, {Destructive Smash} costs 45 Rage points! {Thunder Strike} and {Cripple Defense} could be cast but only the two of them could be cast. He would not have any more Rage points to cast the third skill.

It was a waste of global cooldown time, which led to lesser aggro gain, and the boss would never attack him. With such a derailed cycle, the aggro value would only drop lower and lower which would lead to the boss completely ignoring him. The gap would only widen.

Sword of Light started to panic. When the attacking class is competing with the opponent, he too was competing! However, what could a tank compete with? Obviously, the aggro generation rate! Sword of Light immediately cast the costless {Provoke}. Technically, {Provoke} should not work on a Mythical tier boss, but surprisingly, the Zergert Cthulhu had taken the skill and turned towards him to attack.

With a single attack, it attacked Sword of Light by over 23,000 damage, causing Sword of Light to recharge all of his Rage points!

With moments to spare, Sword of light quickly sent out all the skills that could generate the most aggro and take his place at the top of the aggro list.

{Provoke} worked by inflicting 99% of the aggro inflicted from a previous attack and forcing the monster to attack the caster for 2 seconds. If Sword of Light wants to maintain his position at the top of the aggro list, he has to generate adequate aggro value to compensate for the 1% aggro. If he not, once {Provoke} ends, the boss will turn back to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang noticed how Sword of Light was struggling and had decided to unequip his shield. At most, he will compete as an attacker instead of a tank! Who has set the rule that a tank cannot be an attacker? No one. However, Zhang Yang never had the chance to do so. Luckily for him, he had a free punching bag to fully let loose.

Zhang Yang had never wanted compete for China's best tank. Even if he had not wanted to, he was sitting on the King of Tanks throne. Even if he had not realized it, he was looking down on the others. Sword of Light had always wanted to compete with Zhang Yang, but Zhang Yang had never had the thought of it.

The weak will only seek to compete with others to prove that he is better than others, while the strong will only seek to be stronger than his own past self.

Sword of Light heart tightened the moment when his {Provoke} ended. The boss had not turned his back and had continued to attack Sword of Light instead of Zhang Yang. Sword of Light

relaxed a little, but when he spotted that Zhang Yang was nowhere far from him in the aggro list, his heart sank a little. Zhang Yang could overtake him at any moment! Sword of Light could never let his guard down, even for a fraction of a second.

Sword of Light sighed in disbelief. It was the first time in his gaming life that he had ever performed well for a tank.

TPS or Threat Per Second and DPS, Damage Per Second are different mechanics. DPS is used to measure an attacker's prowess and TPS is used to judge a tank's. A tank's TPS may be high but he might be performing poorly as an overall combatant. Surely, a good tank would have high TPS.

Sword of Light had discovered that his TPS was at most 18,000, which was an extremely high for a tank. It was similar to that of a DPS that exceeds 18,000! His TPS would not be something that any player could reach easily.

Sword of Light was overjoyed. His normal TPS achieved was usually 12,000. However, the pressure of Zhang Yang's presence in the field had increased his TPS generation by 50%. As expected, motivation derived from pressure.

However, Zhang Yang is no ordinary player!

Sword of Light checked the aggro list and bit his lips in anger. Zhang Yang was only behind him by about 1,000! Zhang Yang was in the same situation that he had been earlier on, the boss was not damaging him, so Zhang Yang should not have enough Rage to

attack! However, Zhang Yang was still able to tailgate Sword of Light closely. If it was Sword of Light who was in that position, he would surely fall back!

As expect China's number one tank!

"But, I will defeat you!" Sword of Light muttered verbally. He glared at Zhang Yang not with hatred, but with a competitive mindset. His eyes froze at the sight of a shieldless Zhang Yang.

Not wearing his shield? What's going on!?

If a tank wears the exact same equipment with an attack, the tank could deal only 50% to 70% of the damage of an attacker. A tank can only inflict high TPS value by relying on aggro generating skills. A shield is a tank's trademark!

All skills and attack can only inflict increased aggro value when equipping the shield! A tank without his shield would be nothing but a severely underpowered attacker!

However, Zhang Yang could still generate enough aggro by inflicting damage as an attacker! It only meant one thing, Zhang Yang could have easily defeated him if he had his shield on!

Sword of Light had been blowing his own hot bubble, while Zhang Yang had no intention of fighting him on even grounds! He was in his own world!

With that, Sword of Light was distracted and had slowed down by half a beat in attacking.

Even though Zhang Yang had been attacking the boss, he felt bored, since he could not use {Shield Bash} to increase his attack. His DPS was around 25,000, while Sword of Light had been fighting with 100% concentration but only could cough out 18,000 TPS.

It was not that Sword of Light was weak, on the contrary, his aggro controlling skill was so strong that he could be one of the top 10 tanks in China. However, the person he was competing with was Zhang Yang, the man with the God of War Inheritance! He had a 50% attack boost passive skill and the little girl's {Strength Aura} which was a 12% Strength bonus. His weapon was a Level 120 Mythical tier Two-Handed Axe. His DPS was so strong that even the little girl would have to bow her head to him! As such, no other tanks without powerful Inheritances could compete with his TPS power.

Zhang Yang had been pulling his punches. If he had gone all out with the boss, Sword of Light would have been facing the boss' arse all day long!

Since Sword of Light had missed an attack chance, Zhang Yang had managed to surpass Sword of Light's skill cast by 1. The poor Sword of Light who had been struggling to remain a hair-breadth ahead of a shieldless Zhang Yang immediately fell apart and lost his lead.

The boss immediately turned around to Zhang Yang and hurled

its thick foot at Zhang Yang.

"What!?"

Zhang Yang was surprised to encounter the boss attack. His hands flipped to his back in a flash and he equipped his shield. With extreme reflex, Zhang Yang raised his shield and protected himself.

{Block}!

Sword of Light had finally awoken from his distraction and gave Zhang Yang a weak smile. Inside, his heart was crumbling. Lord have mercy. How could a tank have such brute attack power!? Sword of Light should not have been worried about aggro if it was against the DPS of a half-\*ssed attacker!

Just when Sword of Light decided to give up his own competition, his eyes locked onto Zhang Yang's hands.

"Y-You're using a Two-handed weapon!" cried Sword of Light as he had only then discovered the oddity. However, Sword of Light saw the bigger picture. How could a tank use a two-handed weapon? He had always thought that Zhang Yang's sword was a little too big. However, he had realized that if it was a one-handed sword, it should have a lower attack power! Zhang Yang should not be able to have such a high attack!

"Well, yeah!" said Zhang Yang as he blocked the boss attack. In

his "shielded" status, he had the attack from {Block's} reflect damage, and {Shield Bash} which could increase his attack power. Furthermore, he could fully focus on the boss and had nothing need to be distraught about.

Sword of Light lost his mind. All this time he had been fighting beyond his limits, and Zhang Yang was not even trying. Just when, he had thought of something and asked Zhang Yang, "Did your Inheritance give you the ability to use a two-handed weapon, and increase your damage? If so, how much bonus damage does it give?"

"Both. I have a passive skill that adds 50% attack damage!" Zhang Yang had no intention of hiding his secrets. All kinds of Inheritance will be explored thoroughly, sooner or later. Zhang Yang was not afraid of his secrets being leaked out. It was not something to be so secretive about, to begin with.



# Chapter 573: Sharing the Loots

---

"S class inheritance!" Sword of Light cried out loud as he sucked in a deep breath.

Sword of Light would not have much trouble obtaining a C class Inheritance. He had done his research all about Inheritance. Although the information he obtained from the official site was not adequate, the official had released a few notices about the bonus attack that each Inheritance would provide. For example, the bonus attack passive that Zhang Yang had just revealed. According to official database, only an S class Inheritance could provide such a staggering amount of attack boost. An A class Inheritance would only provide a 45% attack boost, B class 40%, C class 35%. Deduct 5% for each descending tier and Z class Inheritance would only have 5% attack boost. Hence, the lowest Inheritance Sword of Light had allowed himself to obtain was a B class Inheritance.

Sword of Light was pretty lucky himself. He had managed to obtain pieces of the "Gaia's Warrior" Inheritance Fragment which was a Class B. However, his fragments had been sitting in his inventory since Sword of Light had failed to defeat the last boss to obtain the last piece.

He wanted to finish the quest and proceed on with the Inheritance quest as soon as possible to obtain the Inheritance upgrade and further strengthen himself. However, there were only around 2,500 Level 100 players in Radiance. Even though he had sortied a large group of Level 100 players, he had never once succeeded in killing the boss.

It could not be helped, the level difference between the boss and his guild members was too great. Like Zhang Yang's case, without a [Forbidden Scroll] to reduce the boss attack, or to increase the defense of the party, it would be impossible for Sword of Light and his guild to defeat the boss.

If they had problems with a B class Inheritance, what about an S class Inheritance? As such a thought suddenly crossed over his mind, Sword of Light had great admiration for Lone Desert Smoke. Someone had already defeated the boss for an S class Inheritance while they had trouble even defeating a B class Inheritance boss. That was the difference of strength between the two guilds.

There was no way he could have figured out that it was all thanks to Felice's berserk spree during the battle of the black dragon. Due to that misunderstanding of him defeating the dragon all by himself, a boss of an S class Inheritance quest, which had led to Sword of Light's misconceived grasp of Lone Desert Smoke strength, the shame of it was so great that he could just find a wall and bang his head until he passes out.

If Zhang Yang could read his mind, he would have been snickering, or perhaps shaking his head in disappointment.

Sword of Light felt a chilling fear down his spine as his guild members were all frowning at how crazy Lone Desert Smoke members were!

In the total damage output list, Lone Desert Smoke had

dominated the board by having 66% of the total DPS while Radiance had only 34%. If was more than half! Lone Desert Smoke only had 28 members. Three of them were tanks, 3 healers, and 22 attackers. Radiance, on the other hand, had 2 tanks, 4 healers, and 23 attackers.

Although they had more players on their side, one or two non-attacker class should not have made much difference whereas Radiance should have the upper hand by having one more attacker! How could Lone Desert Smoke manage to create such a big difference in DPS when they had one less attacker!

What's the point of continuing the fight? They would be only creating shame for themselves.

In the DPS list ranking, Zhang Yang ranked absolute first. Coming up next in descending order was Fatty Han, Daffodil Daydream, Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream, Ghostly Leaf, Hundred Shots, Galileo, Dominance Unparalleled, and the 10th place, was Tang Dynasty Reverie.

What a shame. The strongest, most admired attacker in Radiance, Ghostly Leaf had been pushed down to 6th place. What a shame...

"Chicaculala!"

As the players pushed each other strike harder and faster, the Zergert Cthulhu had made a piercing noise that threatened to turn everyone's brain into jelly. All of the sudden, everyone lost control

of their characters and started to attack one another.

It was the boss's mind control skill. Luckily, the skill required the boss constant channeling to induce the effect successfully and continuously. As such, many low-players, attackers and healers alike started turning against each other.

{Warrior's Will}!

Both Zhang Yang and Sword of Light simultaneously activated the skill and headed to the boss to interrupt the boss' channeling. Since the two of them were the closest to the boss, they had started attacking each other. However, since their status removal skills were activated almost instantly, they had managed to escape the skill, holding back their weapons from each other's throats and diverting its trajectory to the boss instead.

Unlike the guild masters, the other members had dispelled their debuffs a few milliseconds after. They were all players around Level 100, all classes by then should have status removal skills.

Once everyone had dispelled the skill, the boss stopped its channeling and hurled its hairy legs at Zhang Yang. The legs were hard and long, like a carapace of a spider. The legs had long spikes that were sharp and deadly.

The boss had {Sunder} that could restore a Zergert Creature by 25% of its HP at the cost of sacrificing another Zergert creature. It was an extremely convenient skill. The boss could basically restore all of his HP by sacrificing five monsters.

Zhang Yang had already kited the boss further away from the portal. However, the number of monsters on the island were overflowing. There would be strays that had made their way to where they were. Hence, Zhang Yang had dispatched several teams, each complete with a tank and a healer to hunt and kill the strays. It was imperative to prevent strays from getting too close to the boss and becoming his "food".

The boss had a staggering 100,000,000 HP. In spite of that, 50 over players were able to hack away his HP like a hot knife through butter. The boss' most annoying skill was {Mind Control}. Luckily, the skill had a 2-minute cooldown which was only double that of Zhang Yang's {Warrior's Will}, allowing him to easily counter the boss.

However, Sword of Light was unlike Zhang Yang. For his level, Zhang Yang had already obtained more skill points than he should actually have. It was all thanks to many First Clear Achievements and other feats that he had accomplished. Sword of Light's SPs were all gained via normal means, hence, his skill {Warrior's Will} was not yet maxed out. Other players, either in Radiance, or Lone Desert Smoke were unlucky to have lower SP. Hence, their status removal skills could not be maxed out to lower the cooldown time. At most, they could only dispel one of three occurrences. When they could not dispel the skill, all they could do was to let their characters roam around, killing their own friends.

However, players were not as dumb as monsters. Once they had understood the boss's mechanics, it was easier to judge the boss' movement and skill activation timing to preemptively leave the skill radius. Sadly, it took them several tries to get a hold of the

boss' timing.

As such, the boss' strongest skill was easily countered by Zhang Yang. At most, the boss had only delayed the player's DPS timing by diverting their attacks momentarily.

70%...40%...10%...

After what that seemed to be a draggy, time consuming, barrage of attacks, the boss was finally killed. Its mountain-sized body hardened into brittle stone before turning into dust. However, no matter how well animated its death scene is, the players' sight were all fixed on the boss loot.

"Guild master Zhan Yu. After you," said Sword of Light calmly. As a guild master, he must maintain his posture and mannerism. His short, momentarily lapse of control was but a spark of something greater. It created a burning determination in his heart to surpass Lone Desert Smoke. To surpass Zhan Yu!

The boss had dropped a total of five equipment. Two among them were Mythical tier, and the rest were Violet-Platinum equipment. Zhang Yang shook his head and sighed. If only there were three Mythical loot, Zhang Yang could have gained two Mythical equipment. An extra Violet-Platinum equipment would not do much for him since Level 130 was still a long journey ahead.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Sword of Light, why don't I take two items and you have the rest?"

Sword of Light rolled his eyes. Without thinking, he had already known that Zhang Yang would take the only two Mythical tier equipment. Only an idiot would trade two Violet-Platinum equipment for a Mythical tier. Sword of Light shook his head and said, "Stick to the agreement earlier. As guild masters ourselves, we must show an example to our members!"

Zhang Yang sighed and picked up one of the Mythical tier equipment, while Sword of Light picked the other. As for the Violet-Platinum equipment, Zhang Yang did not need even to examine the equipment to pick them. On the other hand, Sword of Light had thoroughly checked the equipment before taking one of them. The last Violet-Platinum equipment belonged to Zhang Yang by default.

"Noob tank! Did we get anything good?" When it comes to their own gang, the little girl would shamelessly claim dips on anything that applied to her. On the other hand, when there were other players around, the little girl was proactive enough to act befittingly to her lower position to make sure that Zhang Yang gets the respect he deserves.

Zhang Yang smiled and shared the equipment's properties.

[Zergert Cthulhu's Fang] (Mythical, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 1,927 – 2,527

Attack Interval: 1.7 seconds.

DPS: 1,310

Equip: Increases damage by 14%.

Equip: Grants a chance to inflict {Confusion} on a target with every successful attack. Target will be unable to control its movement for 5 seconds.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Reduces the Level Requirement by 20 levels.

Zhang Yang added, "The other Mythical tier equipment was a Cloth Armor glove."

Everyone else immediately understood his actions. No matter what type of class a player is, a weapon held the most influence in a player's prowess. Hence, in a situation where Zhang Yang could only pick one item out of the haul, Zhang Yang had picked the weapon instead of armor.

The dagger was a Thief's weapon. After both Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream rolled for it, the item was won over by Lost Dream.

"Feeling down?" asked Han Ying Xue in a private message to Zhang Yang.



"Why should I be?"

"Because your mistress' gift has fallen into someone else's hands!"

Zhang Yang snorted. "Since when were you the legit wife and she was the mistress?"

There was a loud crowd cheering from the side of Radiance. It was most probably Sword of Light sharing the equipment properties to all his members see the first Mythical tier equipment they had ever laid eyes upon.

"Tsk. What a bunch of loser...Why are they getting all excited about a Mythical tier equipment!" said Fatty Han pretending to be someone who had already seen it all.

"Haha! Fatty bro! You did drool and pop your eyes out when you first saw a Mythical tier equipment, didn't you?"

"Huh!? I'm just a cool and calm guy. Would I be that outrageous?"

"Hehehe. I did record your reaction then though. How about I post it on the forums? That said, Fatty bro is a popular guy. Perhaps there would be a line of chicks waiting to express their admiration towards you!"

"Endless Starlight. Have you been constipating recently?" Fatty Han asked with an evil grin.

"Huh? Yeah. I actually am. But, why'd you ask?" Endless Starlight cocked his head.

"Because when I'm through with you, you won't be getting any constipation for the rest of your life!"

# Chapter 574: Reinforcement

---

Even though they had successfully killed a boss, the number of monsters flowing out of the portal door did not ebb. Sadly, the players' killing speed was not as fast as the monster spawn rate. Hence, players had beginning to lose their advantage even though the monsters were bottleneck through the portal. Slowly, yet surely, the monster had gained the battle superiority and had pressured the players to the edge of retreat.

For better or worse, the monsters had made their way to the mountains and deeper into the lands. The player's death rate had far exceeded the revival rate. Players who had just revived themselves were immediately torn to shreds.

The problem was the mammoths. Its powerful stomps were killing players who had just revived themselves. It was a complete bloodbath. Whenever a player revives, they would only start with 20% HP. It was not a mystery that they were instantly killed by the stomps of the mammoths.

They were losing.

"What should we do now?"

Everyone could see the sea of monsters that was coming from the horizon. The darkened sky that signified their doom was made worse when hundreds of giant figures emerged out of the horizon.

"Fall back. We kill them as we retreat," said Zhang Yang. "There's

nothing that we can do but buy some extra time with our lives. We should at least slow them down until they stop spawning. When that happens, it's our time to strike hard."

"Easier said than done!"

Monsters were an issue. Several players could still manage to hold it up by a thin line. Even if the players were killed, at the very least, they could bring down many monsters with them. The bosses would be another issue.

A strong boss would be a stronger killing machine compared to a magic cannon. Even though the Zergert Cthulhu were Mythical tier bosses, they were positioning themselves behind the mammoths as their supporters. Every minute, they would take one small monster and tear out their souls to heal the mammoth. It was {Sunder} and it could grant the mammoths an ever-regenerating body!

The previous Cthulhu that Zhang Yang had managed to kill earlier was only by luck. No way that they could kill the Cthulhu if it was "paired" up with a mammoth.

In a strategic formation, the Zergert army had crossed the Ten Barren Sea and left behind a mass of dead bodies of both monsters and players.

Right after the border of Ten Barren Sea, the monster army split into eight smaller battalions and made their way to eight different directions. Each battalion of monsters still contained many

monsters and bosses with them, but they were far more manageable now.

"Each major city will face an attack of 100 Violet-Platinum bosses and 10 Mythical tier bosses. That's their plan!"

"What a scary formation!"

"D\*mn that Cthulhu thing! It could heal the mammoths! A perfect tank and a healer formation! How are we supposed to defeat them?"

"It's impossible. There's no way we could get close to that thing! We'll be dead when the elephant thing takes a single step!"

Everyone started exchanging ideas. However, even though the monster army had indeed been split apart, each of the mammoths was a problem to deal with. No matter what strategies players came up with, there would always be a flaw.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily as he gazed the battlefield from the skies. "It's a pity. We might not get that Level +4 reward."

Based on the current strength of the players, Zhang Yang had foreseen that the monsters would inevitably reach the city gates. It was impossible for them to hold the defensive line in Ten Barren Sea, hence losing the best result and reward. The next tier of rewards that they could aim for would be the Level +3 reward."

"Are you seriously still thinking about rewards now?" Han Ying Xue crossed her arms under her breasts. Unsupported, they would completely envelop her arms, but that was another story..."Hello?" She snapped her fingers, annoying Zhang Yang. "Wake up! It's not the time to dream about palaces, gardens, and the 72 concubines. Be satisfied with your own temple!"

Zhang Yang laughed at her joke. "No matter. The monsters dividing up is a good thing. For better or worse, it is still far manageable than having one massive army."

When the mammoths were in a line formation, their destructive power was unparalleled. It was not the mammoth and Cthulhu formation but only mammoths. Back at Ten Barren Sea, when all 800 mammoths grouped up, it was as if the pantheon of gods had descended to lay waste on the earth.

However, when the monsters were divided into eight different battalions, even though their attack power was still unbelievably strong, it was possible for players to fight with hope.

The monster came to a flat road and players had retreated down further to set up their absolute defense line. There, players would use the same bottleneck strategy to hold the line. However, even when their total attack power was reduced down to only 1/8, the battalion of monsters was still able to trample their way through the line and move on into the city. The players had failed to take into account that by allowing the monsters to clog up, their stomps would stack, causing even more devastation.

Several hours later, the monster army arrived at the city gates.

Players then split up to defend their own cities of origin. Since there were free Teleportation points in between cities, players were able to maneuver in between cities with great speed to replenish defenses in different cities.

There were NPC there who joined in the battle. However, according to the NPC themselves, the Empire's army had left the city to suppress an uprising. They had left a few days ago, and would take a few days to return! Well, obviously that was a scripted. The system clearly wanted players to rely on themselves to win the war. If they cannot do that, they would have to wait for the reinforcements to arrive. While players were forced to wait, the monsters were already knocking on the main gates.

Players immediately burned their pockets to set up the portable magic canons. A city was not the same as a Territory. A city could have unlimited numbers of cannons. Hence, when thhhe number of cannons had reached over a hundred, the damage inflicted with a simultaneous attack would be as equally devastating to the monsters. Unfortunately, when the cannons were fired, it had drawn the attention of the flying cockroaches in the sky.

As such, groups of valiant players had put all their efforts in hopes to protect the one thing that could aid them.

‘Server Announcement: Bahamas Castle (Africa Region) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Creature!’

...

‘Server Announcement: Hangul Castle (Africa Region) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Creature!’

...

As long as the war was still going on, the server channel would announce castles being torn apart by monsters. As such, Japan-Korea Region had suffered the highest damage, with FIVE major cities lost. On the other hand, North America had finally popped its cherry by losing one city. The only two great regions that had not lost a single city were China and Europe.

‘Server Announcement: All Ancient Beings have initiated their final charge. Heroes, press on, and victory shall be in hand!’

Zhang Yang sighed in relief. Finally, after a continuous chain of bad news, something good has come. From here on out, the monsters will cease spawning. Killing them now would drastically reduce their overall strength!

With such news in hand, players cheered on and started their final sprint. Though the monsters no longer had reinforcements, a great number of them were already clogged up outside the city gates.

‘Server Announcement: Elrond Castle (Europe) has been overwhelmed by the Ancient Beings!’

Unfortunately for Europe, they had just lost their first city,



making China the only region that was still unblemished!

Now that the war had almost come to a climax, Zhang Yang did not hesitate to unleash his powers. Zhang Yang leaped down from the castle wall and activated his God of War Transformation in midair. Then, he flew into the swarm of monsters and laid down his attacks. He had even risked his life to draw the attention of a few mammoths and Cthulhus to draw them from the cities.

After he had dealt with a portion of the enemy, Zhang Yang headed for the portal and teleported to the city that was most vulnerable or in need of an immediate assistance. Right then, all of China's players shared the same view on war. All eight cities represent eight levels. The first three were bonuses and the last five was a loss but could still be saved.

Fatty Han led the charge, persuading all of the players in China to use their Inheritance Transformation skills to lay waste to the monsters. Sadly, there were no guilds that could expend [Forbidden Scrolls]. As only a handful of players had surpassed the Level 100 threshold, they were unable to farm the scroll. They were not just rare, but diverse in variety. A [Forbidden Scroll] came in single attack types, supportive types, AoE damage types like [Scourging Doomsday]. Not every [Forbidden Scroll] could be used this situation.

‘Server Announcement: Ono Castle (Japan-Korea Region) has been overwhelmed by Ancient Beings!’

That announcement should bring joy to China players. However, since the monsters were coming in at great speed, none of them

paid much attention to it, as they were too busy saving their own cities!

The number of monsters that had entered the city premises did not mean that the city had been overwhelmed. Instead, the entire city could be flattened to the ground and remain alive, as long as the main palace still stands. Before the dominance of Queen Serena, each major city was a Kingdom on its own and had a King or a ruler residing in the main palace. Although there were no kings or queen in other city's palaces besides White Jade Castle, the palaces still signified the life of the cities.

The monsters pushed on, finally crushing the walls and spilling into the city.

Every 1 to 2 hours, the system would notify the fall of a city. The region that had suffered the worst damage was Japan-Korea. They were left with only one city. All players, including the ones who had just reached Level 50 had made their final stand there. It was their last city. The last piece of fabric to protect their dignity.

The best region that had all cities still standing was China. However, out of 8, 6 of them had already lost their city gates. Europe region players were doing a good job at maintaining their position ever since they lost one city.

‘Server Announcement: White Jade Empire Army is on their way back to the city. They will arrive to provide reinforcements in 3 hours.’

...

‘Server Announcement: Hangul Kingdom Army is on their way back to the city. They will arrive to provide reinforcements in 3 hours.’

...

Players’ eyes glinted with hope as the system notification rang in their ears. It was a certain victory if they could last for another 3 hours! The empire’s or kingdom’s army was as strong as a Celestial boss. Since almost all major city’s Kingdom rulers were Holy tier, it was enough to completely suppress the incoming monsters’ attack!

1 hour...

2 hours...

3 hours!

When one of China’s city was on the brink of falling, one player on his flying mount cried out jubilantly. "They’re here! Help has arrived! We’re saved!"

Zhang Yang got hold of the news and quickly made his way back to White Jade Castle. He soared to the sky on Thunderhawk and gazed upon the earth. There were rolling clouds, followed by tiny dots, coming at great speed from the horizons. They were soldiers

riding towards the castle, with a huge flag behind them. The emblem of a soaring griffin was imprinted on the flag. It was the emblem of White Jade Empire, and they were coming to help Zhang Yang.

# Chapter 575: Preventing Future Trouble

---

Amongst the crowd of soldiers, a single figure zoomed into the sky. It was the beautiful heroine, Queen Serena. The Meteor Sword in her hands gleamed with an intense brightness. The glow spread across her entire character. Flying through the air, she glowed like a fireball. Following closely behind her were the dragon knights. With her leading the charge and a total of 10 ferocious, mighty dragons behind her, it was the perfect wallpaper for anyone's desktop.

"Pray that you live long enough to regret the day you decided to raise arms against my kingdom!" Serena gathered her strength and swung her sword with the might of an Ascended boss. The sword sent out a ray of light and morphed into a large green dragon. The green dragon crashed into the battlefield and flew through the ranks of the enemy. All that the dragon touched instantly turned into dust, even the strong mammoths!

As expected of Queen Serena! She was someone who Zhang Yang could rely on whenever things get a little out of hand.

The moment Queen Serena made her appearance, players who were attacked by the monsters cheered out loud, celebrating their savior. Even though Emerald Kingdom and Black Dragon Kingdom had no rulers, White Jade Empire itself as a whole had a god-like boss taking care of them. With the Empire's army coming in from behind, the fall of the Zergerts was only a matter of time.

Zhang Yang stepped back and called out to his party. "I'll take my leave now. I'll be heading to the Chaos Realms."

"Why?"

Everyone cocked their head. Now that Queen Serena has made her appearance on the battlefield, was it not the time to pounce on the stray bosses and obtain loot?

Zhang Yang simply shook his head as they pebbled him with questions. He had no time to explain and hurriedly tore a [Teleportation Scroll]. "I have a quest. It has something to do with destroying or sealing the Ancient Creature Lair Portal."

"Couldn't that wait until the war is over?"

"Sure, it can. By the time the war finishes, the system would announce the same quest to everyone else in the world. However, we have the advantage of knowing this. I will head to the Baroque Islands first. Since the end of the battle is almost near, I won't make much of a difference in the outcome. Hunt and kill as much as you want for now, when I get there, I will summon you guys over." Zhang Yang explained.

Zhang Yang knew that time was short as it was already proven in his past life. The player who had delivered 90 messages all around the Chaos Realm was the player who had initiated the quest. However, he was not the player who had obtained the final reward. Hence, in the forum where Zhang Yang had read about it, he had posted his frustration. In truth, the system had given the quest initiator a head start. However, the ability to seize the chance would depend on the player himself. When the third wave

starts, it would not be wise for an attacker like Zhang Yang to leave the battlefield. On the other hand, when the situation is under control, and everyone else is busy indulging themselves on rampaging bosses, Zhang Yang decided to take the chance to leave the place and get a head start.

Zhang Yang confidently believed that he was better than all players in the world, in terms of battle prowess. However, the main character in the battle was Queen Serena, the god-like boss. Everyone else, with or without Inheritance Transformation skill would only be tiny specks of dust. The only thing that they can do would be attempt landing the killing strike in order to obtain the boss' loot.

In such a situation, it all depends on luck. If Queen Serena's attack lands and kills a boss that was next to you, you'll strike the jackpot. Otherwise, good luck, bro.

Zhang Yang had concluded that even if he remains on the battlefield, he would not be able to get a single item. Why not save his time and proceed on to Baroque Island, first? To put in comparison, the system had allocated 100 Violet-Platinum bosses and 10 Mythical tier bosses to each major city in the White Jade Empire. With such a "nice gesture" the end reward for the Legendary Quest should be even better! Zhang Yang had no idea what the quest would end up giving him, but the Treasure Chest? He would surely obtain it!

Just as he was waiting for the system to teleport him away after tearing the [Teleportation Scroll], the magic circle did not appear and Zhang Yang was greeted by the system notification,

"The Teleportation point of Morning Town had already been destroyed." When the monsters had attacked, Morning Town was the first "city" to fall. Hence, Zhang Yang's Territory was gone. The destruction of the Teleportation point should have been known to him, but it had only crossed his mind when he tore the scroll.

Zhang Yang sighed in disappointment and shot to the sky on the Thunderhawk. Currently, it was still the swiftest mount in the entire game. That is, if nobody were to activate their class A Inheritance Transformation skills. Their movement speed would be much faster than a Mythical tier battle mount. However...who would do that? Probably someone with their head between their groin.

Two hours later, Zhang Yang arrived at Ten Barren Sea. Without slowing down, Zhang Yang zoomed through the portal and entered the Chaos Realm.

‘Server Announcement: The Ancient Being’s Invasion has been stopped. The system will now hand out the rewards and penalties to players based on the number of lost cities.’

‘Server Announcement: Japan-Korea Region has lost all main cities. All player will have 5 Level Deduction! India Region has lost seven main cities. All players will have 4 Level Deduction. Australia Region and Africa Region have lost 5 main cities. All players will have 2 Level Deduction. South America Region has lost 3 main cities. No rewards nor penalties shall be invoked. North America Region has lost 2 main cities. All players will have 1 Level



Reward. Europe Region has lost 1 main city. All players will have 2 Level Reward. China Region has not lost any main city. All player will have 3 Level Reward!’

‘Server Announcement: Special Quest: Preventing Future Trouble, has been activated. All players that had participated in the war of Ancient Creature are eligible to take the quest and obtain luxurious rewards!’

At the same time, all players that had fought during the battle had received the quest, "Preventing Future Trouble".

[Preventing Future Trouble] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: Even though the Ancient Beings have been annihilated, the origin of the threat remains. The leader of the creatures, Queen of Blades, Quesara is still alive. She currently resides on Baroque Island, planning to recreate the land of the Zergerts. She will close the portal and restore her powers in order to launch an attack in the far future. Adventures, steel yourselves and defeat the demonized Queen of Blades. Destroy the portal that connects both worlds and save the land! Good luck.

Completion: Destroy the Portal 0/1

Quest Reward: Skill Point +3, Luck Point +3, [Rising Dragon Strike], [Medal of Bravery]

[Rising Dragon Strike (Passive)]: All magic or normal attacks will

grant a chance of unleashing a dragon to deal 10 times the damage of the attack that had triggered the skill. Deals 10 times the damage to all targets in a large area.

[Medal of Bravery] (Mythical, Accessory)

Equip: Increases 1000 Relationship points with all allied NPC.

Equip: Increases all damage and healing rate by 5%

Use: Grants you Invincibility from all attacks and effects for 10 seconds.

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Reduced Level Requirement by 20 Levels.

Note: The medal that signifies the bravest among all braves.

The rewards alone, made all players drool a river.

SP and Luck points were good, but the skill - {Rising Dragon Strike} was strong! It was a passive skill at that, too! Not only could it deal 10 times the damage, it was also an AoE skill!

What an OP skill!

Like automated robots, all players had taken out [Teleportation Scrolls] and tore them up. However, they were all greeted by the system notification that informed them of the destruction of the Teleportation point in Morning Town. After a short moment of panic, everyone summoned their mounts and charged towards Ten Barren Sea. Those who had flying mounts were grinning from ear to ear as they naturally had the advantage of speed.

"As expected of the big boss who could foresee the future! He has given us 2 hours of a head start!" cried Endless Starlight.

"Haha!" Zhang Yang laughed as he rode the Thunderhawk. "It's not going to be that simple. The quest is an S class difficulty. We have all used our Inheritance Transformation skills. It would be the ultimate challenge for us to kill the boss within 2 hours!"

"Well said! There's even a chance that we will get ourselves killed when the boss reaches 1% HP. Fresh arrivals might even end up stealing the last hit!" said Fatty Han.

"Enough with your crap. You just had to jinx it!"

Be it by luck or pure effort, Zhang Yang had bought 2 hours for Lone Desert Smoke to obtain fame and fortune!

There was one more advantage that Zhang Yang had earned from the system. Baroque Island was not visible on the map. The quest had not provided the exact location of Baroque Island either. Hence, players would have to spend some time searching for the location of the place!

As Zhang Yang flew towards the island, Zhang Yang took out The Guewitt's Shield.

After three days (in-game time) of constant fighting and killing, Zhang Yang had reached Level 108. With the levels gained from the battle rewards, he had reached Level 111 and is now able to equip The Guewitt's Shield.

[The Guewitt's Shield] (Mythical, Shield)

Defense: +4,680

Vitality: +4,564

Equip: Increases 9,360 maximum HP.

Equip: Absorbs 1,644 damage on attack.

Equip: Automatically activates {Shield Bash} with every successful {Block} instance. This {Shield Bash} will not cost Rage points. Is not affected by Global Cooldown.

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Reduces Level Requirement by 20 Levels.

Note: A legendary shield that once belonged to the Guewitt family. However, the shield had fallen into the hands of Ditch, the Blackbeard Pirate when one of Guewitt's descendent was traveling in the sea.

Zhang Yang equipped the shield, gaining a massive boost to his HP and Defense.

HP: 186,760, Defense: 5,240, Damage Absorption: 3,882!

Powerful! Tanky!

Take 10,000 physical damage and hurl it at Zhang Yang. First, the damage would go through his Defense, deducting 5,240 damage. Reduce another 20% of the resulting damage and you will have 3,808 damage. Lastly, the damage will have 3,882 damage absorb, resulting in NO DAMAGE! In the end, no damage under 10,000 can get past Zhang Yang's thick skin!

Zhang Yang had loved the shield and caressed it, as he had just obtained a new toy to play with. Compared to the strongest shield that he had obtained in his past life, the Guewitt's Shield was just one tier below it!

With this new powerful shield in hand, the Queen of Blades should be easier to defeat!

Zhang Yang zoomed through the skyline like a railgun projectile, leaving a trail of blue light in his wake. A flying mount would not

be affected by the terrain effect, hence, even though the geography of the land was treacherous and difficult to trek through, Zhang Yang had arrived at the outskirts of Baroque Island without much delay.

When Zhang Yang had left the place a few days ago, the green island was still brimming with life. Now, it had been turned into a brown colored wasteland. There was a crater at the center of the island. It looked like the island had been ripped apart from the inside and something come bursting out from it, like a huge, ugly, popped zit. All the plants were dead and rotten. There were no animals, no plants, no grassy plains, but only a huge, violet colored, pulsating portal.

On the rim of the portal, Zhang Yang could see traces of lines that resembled a huge circle of magic runes. It was the circle that Zhang Yang was supposed to destroy. However, Zhang Yang did not zoom in immediately, as there was something huge standing next to the portal. It was several hundred meters tall. The "thing" had a female humanoid face and a woman's upper body and a serpent's lower half. Its hands were not hands, but long mantis-like blades that were sharp enough to gleam in the air. Although no clothing covered her upper body, her carapace-like skin was enough to "censor" her well-developed chest.

[Queen of Blades, Quesara the Queen of Zergert] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 500,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Melee Attack: 40,204 – 52,204

Skills:

[Queen's Roar]: Stuns all target within 40 meters and causes 10% HP loss every second (not exceeding 20,000 damage each tick) for 5 seconds.

[Omnislash]: Continuously slashes at a target, dealing 100% melee physical attack for 10 continuous attacks. Can be interrupted.

Note: The queen of Zergert. A leader with a true sense of leadership and justice. Has the ability create Zergert lifeforms.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. Half a billion HP would be a drag. Furthermore, her attack was just too strong!

The skill {Queen's Roar} was a skill specially created to counter a sea of players while the skill {Omnislash} was meant to instantly kill a single tank. Zhang Yang had equipped a new shield and gained massive Defense capabilities. However, since he had surpassed Level 110, the effect of the Titan's Chest Plate had been weakened.

Enroute to the island, Zhang Yang had run some tests and found

that the {Shield Wall's} recovery rate was only 2% HP per tick. He had also removed the Titan Wall shield. {Shield Wall's} extended duration was reduced down to only 10 seconds. As a conclusion, {Shield Wall} would only last for 10 seconds and only restore a total of 20% of his HP, which was a total of 72, 828 HP if he was mounted with a battle mount. Naturally, he could opt to use the Titan's Wall to extend {Shield Wall's} duration in exchange for lower maximum HP. Even though that would result in a total of 30% healing rate, the actual HP healed would be the same as Guewitt's Shield.

A tough choice...

Zhang Yang thought about it as he flew to the island. Now that the islands'"shooting trees" were all gone, he could fly around the island without being bombarded by pricks. He then put on the [Party Summon Order] and summoned Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and the rest of his core party member.

He had made some rearrangements to the party. He had Endless Starlight sit this one out, bringing in Galileo to replace him. This boss did not need two tanks, but more attackers to bring the battle to a quick end.

Even though he felt a little left out, Endless Starlight was an understanding man and accepted the change without voicing out any complaint.

When everyone gathered together and saw the boss' properties, they could not help but draw a collective breath. The boss was really strong. Luckily, none of them were under-leveled and they would be able to deal proper damage without being suppressed. If



not, it would just be as bad as Fatty Han's Inheritance boss.

"Let's get started. There's not much time left, and I don't know how long it will take for other players to get here. We have to kill the boss first before we can destroy the portal," said Zhang Yang.

Even though destroying the portal was the only way to complete the quest, everyone believed that it was impossible to skip killing the boss. Zhang Yang had explained that it was likely, that only a particular item drop from the boss could destroy the portal.

"Let's go then!" Han Ying Xue patted Zhang Yang's back and smirked.

Zhang Yang shook his head and collected his composure. With dilated pupils, Zhang Yang zoomed to the boss.

## Chapter 576: Queen of Blades

---

"No! Leave! Wretched beings! You don't belong in this world!" cried Quesara as spotted Zhang Yang approaching her. She brandished her blade arms and slithered towards Zhang Yang.

Even though the boss was classified as a melee attacker, her blades were several meters long. Zhang Yang was not sure of it, but he was certain that her attack range would be far greater than any ranged attacker!

BUMG!

Zhang Yang first raised his shield to block the incoming blade. With a long bang, the Thunderhawk and him were sent flying several meters away. If the Thunderhawk had not been a Violet-Platinum tier mount, Zhang Yang would most likely have been sent flying even further away.

The Thunderhawk flapped his wings vigorously and shot towards the Queen of Blades. Zhang Yang brandished his sword and dealt a strong blow that caused the creature to wail in pain. With a quick thought, Zhang Yang activated {Glare of the Death God}.

"Come on...please work!" Zhang Yang muttered as a shroud taking the form of a black skull appeared on the boss' head. The skull grinned and seeped into the boss' character.

F\*ck yea! No resistance!

Everyone cheered and started to attack vigorously.

‘-5,000,000!’

‘-5,000,000!’

...

The skill – {Glare of the Death God} was a skill that would only work on a percentage basis. 10% of the boss’ 500,000,000 HP would be 50,000,000! The best part of it was that the skill is triggered by every hit!

"Such a powerful boss-killer skill!"

It was a skill that had come with the S class Inheritance!

Zhang Yang felt extremely grateful since he had obtained the skill while completing the Inheritance. If he had killed the Black Dragon without undergoing the Inheritance quest, the skill book might not have dropped! It was a miracle for such a powerful anti-boss skill to exist. Such a miracle would not happen twice! The skill had to be a Unique skill. Like an S-class Inheritance, it would never appear again, ever!

Then again, since there were five more S class Inheritances, that probably meant 5 more ridiculous Skills!

"Puny bugs! I will squash you!" cried the boss.

The Queen of Blades was surrounded from all angles. It had taken only 3 seconds to proc all 10 hits of the {Glare of the Death God}! For a normal Mythical boss, 5 million was more than their usual maximum HP. With 500 million HP, the boss would most certainly be enraged if 10% of her HP is hacked away within 10 seconds!

"WIIIIIIII—" The boss closed her mouth and sucked in a deep breath. She then let out a loud screech that shook the air around her. The resulting sound wave that spread out was so powerful that the waves were visible to the naked eye.

Thud! Thud! Thud!

Everyone was immediately stunned by the attack and stars circled above their characters. Each of them had taken different amounts of damage, but it was equivalent to 10% of their own HP.

{Queen's Roar}! A stunning skill that deals 10% HP as damage every second, for 5 seconds!

The damage was calculated by percentages, and cannot be deducted by Defense nor damage absorption! It was almost equal to an AoE version of {Glare of the Death God}! It even had a stunning effect!

What a pity, a player's skill will never be as strong as a boss.

Zhang Yang activated {Warrior's Will} and managed to dispel the debuff on him by the second tick. Luckily, the skill had a maximum limit of 20,000 damage per tick. The amount of damage was not too high, both of which Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart could heal without a problem.

Everyone else moved on just as quickly and dispelled the debuff. Now, another problem awaited them. If the skill {Queen's Roar} had a short cooldown, their ability to dispel debuffs would be all for moot.

"Weaklings. I own the world! Sooner or later, I shall rise again and will bury all living beings beneath the very land you walk on!" The Queen of Blades hurled herself towards Zhang Yang and activated a skill.

{Omnislash}!

‘-22,504!’

‘-22,504!’

...

The boss moved around, swinging her blades around as if there was a high-speed V12 engine in her body. In less than half a second, she had already landed two hits on Zhang Yang. There was a progress bar on the boss' character, and it had only made a 20%

progress. It was obvious that she still had 8 more strikes to go!

Zhang Yang immediately retaliated with {Crash Magic}. He dug his sword into the boss' side and planted it deep. The damage inflicted on him was less than 30,000. It was due to the 20% damage reduction of the God of War Inheritance.

The sword attack landed and the skill {Crash Magic} was cast, but the boss merely grunted a little and continued to slash Zhang Yang.

"F\*ck!" Zhang Yang instinctively activated {Shield Wall} to protect himself. Even though {Crash Magic} had a 10 seconds cooldown, it could not keep up with the boss' ridiculous speed!

"BREAK!" Sun Xin Yu ran towards the boss and gave a {Low Kick}. The boss' {Omnislash} was interrupted but after 3 to 4 seconds later, the boss blades glowed up and another {Omnislash} was cast. Lost Dream swooped in and broke the skill channeling.

The skill was repeated for the fourth time when Zhang Yang himself could interrupt the boss.

He quickly formulated a plan and said, "Both the little girl and I will interrupt the first boss skill. Ice cube, Daffy, both of you will handle the third. Lost Dream, Galileo, both of you stop the third. Make sure to time your hits!"

"Got it."

Everyone nodded their heads without any objection.

"Little Yang! Why didn't you assign any tasks for me?!" said Fatty Han as he felt a little offended.

"You're in charge of attacking since your attack is strong. Whether or not we manage to kill the boss in time, depends on you!" said Zhang Yang as he came up with the best thing that Fatty Han loved hearing, compliments.

In truth, Zhang Yang had not assigned Fatty Han any other task due to the speed of the {Omnislash}. It was so fast that Zhang Yang had counted 4 slashes in one second. Judging by Fatty Han's standards, sending out a {Silencing Shot} within 1.5 seconds would be a miracle. Zhang Yang would sacrifice a goat to the gods as thanks. The problem was that in 1.5 seconds, the boss could have and would have dealt 6 slashes, dealing more than 100,000 damage to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang could not possibly explain it to him since Fatty Han was a prideful man at times, and has his priorities in the wrong places. Like a woman during her monthly "visit", but Fatty Han annoying behavior was eternal.

Zhang Yang has known Fatty Han his whole life. He knew how to pacify the fatty easily. Fatty Han bought Zhang Yang's sweet talk and smiled all the way as he drew his bow and attacked the boss with everything he had to impress the people around and not let down his brother.

Fatty Han had a B class Inheritance. Even if he did not rely on the Vampire Transformation skill, he still has a 40% damage increase passive skill which was only 10% weaker than Zhang Yang's. As such, B class Inheritances were rather impressive too.

Not long after, the boss roared again, releasing a powerful sound wave that stunned everyone. As such, Zhang Yang took 20,000 damage head on because {Warrior's Will} was still on cooldown. The boss then landed blade after blade as she attacked Zhang Yang.

During the effect of {Queen's Roar} when everyone was stunned for 5 seconds, the boss would not use {Omnislash}. If she had, the boss would have been incredibly difficult to kill. Players might have to rely on [Forbidden Scrolls] or to use sheer numbers and defeat her. Naturally, with the Transformation skill, the boss would be a cakewalk.

The problem was that neither Zhang Yang nor Fatty Han were ready to use their Transformation skills. They had used it to defend their cities back then. If they had not, China might have already lost one or even two major cities!

After the 5 second stun, Zhang Yang HP had speedily dropped below 200,000 HP. Both Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were startled by it and had immediately prioritized on healing him instead of others.

Han Ying Xue had a Level 6 {Life Aura} which increased everyone's recovery rate by 18%. Daffodil Daydream had her



{Recovery Aura} to heal both the HP and MP of everyone in the party. With countless of HP recovery bottles and [Bandages], the team's healing power was strong and could keep the party alive for some time.

The battle continued on sluggishly for another 10 minutes when Zhang Yang's skill, {God of War's Shield} that provides 20% damage reduction ended. The amount of damage he took increased from over 20,000 to as high as 29,000. The increase of damage taken had Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart crying for help. Luckily, the two of them were the guild's top healers. They had equipment that had been fully catered to increasing their healing powers, and a skill tree-full of powerful healing skills. Zhang Yang had to activate {Shield Wall} at every possible moment to allow the healers to catch their breaths.

After a brutal one hour, the boss' HP had finally dropped below the 50% threshold.

Zhang Yang prayed hard as he cast {Glare of the Death God}.

FUUSH!

A black light zoomed towards the boss character but it bounced off the boss' character. The light turned into a cloud of black smoke and dispersed.

Resist!

"CRAP!"

This boss had been designed to take on the efforts of entire regions. Even though she only had two skills, they were strong enough to keep herself alive while killing everyone in sight! The problematic {Queen's Roar} can only be countered by players' own status removing skills, but if those skills were left on cooldown, there was nothing else that they could do but to take it head-on.

On the other hand, while {Omnislash} was a skill powerful enough to instant-kill a tank, it could be interrupted with sharp reflexes. If Zhang Yang misses his timing, the skill might end up killing him before Zhang Yang could even cry for help. The situation had never been so intense before that it was mentally taxing. If either one of them accidentally messes up the interruption cycle, the whole team will inevitably be killed.

In one hour, even though the team had managed to hack away 52% of the boss HP, 10% HP had been removed by the OP skill {Glare of the Death God}. This meant that, if they continued on with their pace, they would only be dealing damage that is equivalent to 42% of the boss' HP!

Naturally, when the boss enters the 20% HP threshold, the damage caused by players around will increase greatly. {Killing Cleave} can only be used during that period, which would grant a massive boost in DPS. However, it would only last for 10 seconds, with a 30-second cooldown duration. Players will still have to put their backs into it.

They would have to wait for another hour to use the {Glare of the

Death God} again! Naturally, by then, even if the skill fails, the boss would not have much HP left.

The atmosphere of the entire party was intense. Paint a mental picture where you can see everyone walking on a thin wire across a valley. The chances of them failing their own duties were so high that it would most definitely cause the entire team's death! To last for another hour would put such a heavy mental burden that they would need counseling after finishing the battle!

"Come on guys! Fight hard! Focus! Think about the reward! The reward!" cried Zhang Yang as he tried to lighten the atmosphere.

# Chapter 577: To Whom It Belongs

---

"We will win!"

"Yes, we will. We have killed an Ethereal boss before. Why are we shaking our butts for a Level 130 Mythical boss?"

"Hehe! Good one!"

Everyone encouraged each other and occasionally joked around. Being exposed to a long duration of mental stress could put a toll on a person's psyche. Jokes and occasional teasing would help a lot in lightening the atmosphere.

Zhang Yang was fully focused all the time. {Block} was never on cooldown as it was one of the skills that he would use the moment it became available. At least, {Block} has a 100% success rate. It was a pity that his current level of Strength was pretty much useless. The boss was far stronger than he is. Supporting Attacks could not be applied to a stronger enemy. {Block} was the only other defensive move he had to nullify an incoming attack.

"Die! Die! Die!" The Queen of Blade screamed. Her bladed hands gleamed with intense killing aura and grazed Zhang Yang shield. The intense crumpled up emotion of frustration of not being able to kill a single player had left the Queen of Blade flustered with anger.

"We were gods in ancient times! You are nothing but food to us! You are nothing but weaklings that will be our slaves!"

"I shall burn your pathetic souls with my fiery rage!"

"The strongest of mortals poses no threat to me! I am a god! The world's strongest human poses no more threat to me than its strongest bug!"

The boss screamed and threw insults at the party as she kept her blade busy.

"Dummy! I'm running out of Transmuted MP pots!" cried Han Ying Xue.

"What!?" Zhang Yang frowned. The party had only been able to last this long, all thanks to Han Ying Xue's mighty healing power. Han Ying Xue had a 75% reduced mana consumption to all skills and a HP to MP conversion skill to support her MP usage. Be it MP potions, or {Recovery Aura}, she would run through them all like water, or else she would lose track of her healing tempo. MP potions were not the best method of recovering MP, but she had been left with no choice. As the Transmuted MP potions were running out, she might fail to heal during critical moments, leading to a catastrophic failure of the entire party.

The boss still had 12% HP remaining. With victory so close that you could almost taste it, Han Ying Xue's bad news was truly devastating to the entire party.

"Huh?"

Zhang Yang heard a sound coming from the sky. He gazed up and saw a group of players flying in on their mounts.

He zoned in on one of the players and discovered the identity of the entire group of players.

Hell's Knight, Level 105, Male Human, Sacred Knight, Paragon, Europe Region.

The Hell's family.

Technically, even though all Level 100 players can roam around the Chaos Realm to search for Baroque's Island to destroy the portal and end the war, the system had not provided the location of the island, and they would have to scour for it the old-fashioned way. It had only been two hours since the end of the battle of the Ancient Creatures, yet the European players have managed to find such an obscure place! Zhang Yang had taken the same amount of time to reach the island because he already had the location in mind! How did they track down the location of Baroque Island that quickly!? The answer was Dusk Phoenix.

Dusk Phoenix had a tool to track down specific players. She had a hunch that it was Zhang Yang who had initiated the Legendary quest and by tracking him down, she would be able to catch up to him!

Zhang Yang scanned over all the players in the area and did not find Dusk Phoenix among them. Was she truly that traumatized

when it comes to him, or was she sneaking about?

The situation had taken a turn for the worst the group of European players arrived at the scene.

"Haha! I remember a certain phrase, ask for Cao Cao and he shall arrive on time! What a coincidence!" cried Hell's Spellcaster, sitting atop on a giant snow condor. There was a trace of hatred embedded in his voice.

The group had lost the S class Inheritance Milkmaid Deity to Zhang Yang, and now truly hated Lone Desert Smoke. Now that they were in a huge pinch, it would be the best time to strike them!

There were over 30 of them there. It should be all available members of Paragon who possessed flying mounts. Lone Desert Smoke had a similar amount of flight-capable players in his guild, but since the [Party Summon Order] could only bring in 9 players at a time, it was all he had with him at the moment.

Radiance, Crimson Rage, Imperial Sky, and other strong guilds had their eyes on Lone Desert Smoke. Hence, if Zhang Yang had led all the players of Lone Desert Smoke to Baroque Island altogether, he would be leading them to the treasure trove! Zhang Yang had purposefully brought in the team, silently, and discreetly to make sure that the strong guilds could not track them.

However, he had carelessly forgotten about the European woman – Dusk Phoenix. She could track him down!

10 from Lone Desert Smoke, against 30 from Paragon. There was a boss then as well! How does Zhang Yang plan to solve the mess?

Zhang Yang was thinking furiously in his mind and came up with a plan. The opponent must be thinking that Zhang Yang's party was having a tough time, which was true enough, and had plans to seize the opportunity to kill them and snatch the fame, fortune, glory from them!

Zhang Yang grinned to himself and calculated the timing of the boss' attack. In one fluid motion, he leaped on to the Thunderhawk and zoomed towards Paragon's party. The boss' aggro was locked to Zhang Yang. Hence, when he flew up into the sky, the boss had followed with a speed that rivaled that of the Thunderhawk!

At the speed of light, Zhang Yang zoomed through the sky, leaving a trail of blue light. The Violet Thunderhawk was, by far, the only Mythical tier mount. Within seconds, Zhang Yang arrived at the group of players and activated {Blast Wave}. He had only managed to stun 5 of the enemy.

The sword had unfortunately remained "silent" and did not trigger its echo effect. However, it did not matter. Zhang Yang was not here to take them on!

Hell's Priest eyes narrowed and widened immediately when he understood what was going on. "STOP! DO NOT DISPELL THE STUN!"



He was too late. Three out of them had already instinctively dispelled the skill and had swung their weapons, chanted their spells, moving around Zhang Yang. Only two of them had obeyed Hell's Priest and had remained motionless in their original positions.

By that time, the Queen of Blade had already arrived at their position. After a swift attack, the creature shrieked.

{Queen's Roar!}

A blast of intense sound wave spread all around, stunning everyone including Zhang Yang, for 5 seconds, while reducing their HP by 10% a second.

Those of them who still had available status removal skills had quickly removed the debuff right after the first tick. However, those who have used their skill to dispel Zhang Yang's stun would have to "eat" the skill head-on, losing 50% of their HP as a result.

The three Paragon member who had acted on instinct quickly regretted their decisions as they finally understood why Hell's Priest had asked them not to dispel the stun.

Zhang Yang grunted as he swung his sword with the might of his ire!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

‘-59,332!’

‘-54,228!’

‘53,900!’

‘-56,772!’

...

Even though all players around there had boosted their HP through {Shared Life} with their flying mounts, all non-tank players had a maximum HP of only 80,000 to 90,000, at most. Zhang Yang’s powerful {Horizontal Sweep} had dealt enough damage to cleave half of that amount!

The three who had freed themselves from the {Blast Wave} were stunned once again, immobilized for good this time. After taking in Zhang Yang’s {Horizontal Sweep}, all three of them were left with only less than 30,000 HP. They died before the Queen of Blade’s {Queen’s Roar} could finish its skill effect.

While stunned, players cannot engage in any actions such as taking in a bottle of potion. The players could only watch as Zhang Yang approached them at a high speed, the blade of his large sword coming for their throats.

The Violet Thunderhawk speed through the airspace and targeted the enemy’s healers. He swung his shield left and right,

bashing their heads to interrupt their chanting. The only skills they could cast were the instant cast skills like {Regeneration} and {Holy Shield}.

Unfortunately for them, the Queen of Blades's {Queen's Roar} were damage incarnate. The damage could not be reduced by any defensive means. {Regeneration} could buy some time. Unfortunately, {Queen's Roar} procced once a second, while {Regeneration} heals once every 4 seconds.

They were not heading for hell's door. The door was heading for them like a truck.

Zhang Yang had planned everything from the moment he cast {Blast Wave}. As long as they use their status removal skills, they would fall for his trap and die.

"Bastard! Kill him!" One man in Paragon cried and led the other players behind him to charge towards Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was not frightened, instead, he played along and shot through their ranks, ending up behind them. Gutsy moves like these only came from people who felt no fear, only the confidence of killing each and every enemy player. Only Zhang Yang could perform in such a manner, inflicting great pain and humiliation on his victims.

Even though the original plan had deviated, the boss had only less than 12% left. Zhang Yang could leave his party to handle the remaining battle on their own.

‘-1,203!’

‘-803!’

‘-0!’

Arrows ‘thonked’ off Zhang Yang’s chest, doing little to no damage. The highest damage that was dealt by the ranged attackers was only 1,000 and above. Zhang Yang’s all-round Defense prowess had prevented any damage below 10,000 to cause any damage to him!

"F\*ck. His’s too tough!" There were a few Thief class players who had approached Zhang Yang from behind. However, the boss already took up that space. It would be suicidal to stand between Zhang Yang and the boss.

Dual wielding Thieves would not be able to scratch Zhang Yang by normal attacks alone. Unless they activate their skills, their normal attacks would only be toothpicks trying to penetrate a Kevlar vest. Zhang Yang grinned and whacked the f\*ckers away. One by one the Thieves were sent flying away, leaving one or two broken teeth behind at where they stood.

Shush!

Zhang Yang instinct tingled violently and Zhang Yang quickly took his shield and held it over his back, even though he could not see what was coming at him. The boss had attempted to stab him

but Zhang Yang managed to block the attack. Zhang Yang was sent flying forwards. Somehow, by knocking him forwards, he was taken out of the path of several magic missiles from the enemy.

Technically, attack skills cannot be dodged, or at least, it was humanly impossible. It's like trying to dodge an arrow in real life. However, Zhang Yang had been propelled by the boss. It was lightning fast. It allowed him to 'dodge' the attacks!

Everyone was shocked and thought that Zhang Yang had done it himself, until someone cried out.

"It was only luck! Kill him! Do not stop!" cried Hell's Warrior.

# Chapter 578: Certain Defeat

---

A coincidence? Did they think that it was really a coincidence that he dodged the attacks because he had timed {Block} perfectly?

Zhang Yang smirked. Although he could not deny that the 'dodge' was completely unintentional, the fact that he could sense danger without even looking behind should be proof that he was not an ordinary player.

Another blade came and he borrowed the boss' knockback effect to flee from two Berserker and one Thief. This time, he did not use {Block} and took the damage directly.

"..." Was it another coincidence?

Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the attacking team did not wait for verbal orders from Zhang Yang and proceeded to counterattack. Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream, Wei Yan Er, and Galileo made up the melee team. Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, Daffodil Daydream formed the ranged team. Both teams targeted one player at a time and started wiping them out with deadly efficiency.

Even though the ranged team had one member less than the melee attacker, their damage was still overwhelming since Fatty Han had a B class Inheritance. Fatty Han took the lead while Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream followed closely. Their combined damage was strong enough to kill anyone off unless they activate their emergency skills.

Thud.

The three players from before who were tricked to use their status removal skills had died and fallen from the sky. Both the melee and the ranged team had managed to kill one player at the same time. Lone Desert Smoke's side had taken only 5 seconds to kill 5 members of Paragon.

"Ignore Zhan Yu! Kill the weak ones!" cried Hell's Knight.

When a player dies in the hands of another player, they will lose all experience points gained at their current level. Amongst the five players that were killed 5 seconds ago, one of them was at 92%, on the verge of leveling up. His death would throw his progress back by 9 days (real time)!

Hell's Knight decided that it was stupid to fight a tank first, so when the other members of Lone Desert Smoke joined in the fray, he decided to target them instead.

It was the three-sided chaotic battle. Zhang Yang had unleashed his full potential. He was monitoring several things at once. He had to use {Sacrifice} on Han Ying Xue, to inflict Supporting Attacks to disrupt the enemy's spellcasting, while swinging his sword around to deal damage to both the boss and the European players, as well as making sure to use {Block} to counter the boss' attack. His mental capacity was at 99% during then.

He had to do so, or else, he might lose his team players! Death in a chaotic battle is a fickle thing. There is a saying in olden schools

if martial arts. A grandmaster may die in the hands of a petty quarrel of greenhorns. Even though Zhang Yang may have the strongest Defensive armor around, and possessed the highest HP amongst many others, he would still die if he were to take the attack of a few players simultaneously! Anyone present in Baroque Island should either be extremely strong or on par with Zhang Yang's equipment! Additionally, there was still one more variable to account for, the boss, Queen of Blades.

She was a rather helpful presence. Her {Queen's Roar} could deal, at the very least, 10% HP to all players, even if they were to activate their status removal skill. On the other hand, if players had used their status removal skill to save themselves from Zhang Yang's constant use of {Blast Wave}, they would take 50% HP as damage and be killed by Lone Desert Smoke's focused fire.

At the second wave of {Queen's Roar}, 20 players had died at her hands. Amongst the 20 who had fallen were Wei Yan Er, Galileo, Fantasy Sweetheart, Daffodil Daydream, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, and Lost Dream. The rest were casualties of Paragon. The unluckiest player was Lost Dream. He had already left the battlefield with {Vanish} but was 0.0001 second too late to move out of the {Queen's Roar} skill range.

The few people that were still standing on the battlefield were Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Han Ying Xue. Paragon still had the six Hell's Family members and one extra side player. The boss still had 11% HP remaining.

"Zhan Yu! I call for a truce!" cried Hell's Warrior. "If we continue this squabble, neither of us is going to kill the boss! We should kill



the boss first and decide on the rewards later!"

"Haha! I don't think so! I think the best way is to end this petty "squabble" is by ending you all!" Zhang Yang zoomed in without hesitation. Even though Zhang Yang had lost a lot of members, they were still evenly matched. He still had Felice with him! On the other hand, the boss' HP was almost reaching 10%. His {Glare of the Death God} was almost ready to be used. If the skill is not resisted, killing the boss would be as simple as nailing a nail down her head!

"Hmph! Cocky bastard!" Hell's Knight scoffed. "So be it. If you want to die together, I shall deliver your wish! It'll be my pleasure!"

Hell's Knight zoomed towards Zhang Yang and immediately banked hard to target Han Ying Xue. His plan was the most orthodox method of PvP. Target the enemies' healer first. In this situation, after losing Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang would have no means of restoring his own HP and will be taken down, either by the boss or by Paragon.

All surviving Paragon member swarmed in and surrounded Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang bumped into the boss and "forced" her to follow him like a dog on a lease. With rocked speed, Zhang Yang then shot towards Han Ying Xue and cried, "Woman, it's time for our show!"

"Alright!"

They reached out to grab hold of each other's hands.

{Blizzard Sky}! {Lunar's Dew}!

Shring!

The entire battlefield was instantly covered with a thick layer of snow. A big moon emerged behind Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, illuminating the area, around 30 meters from where they stood!

Immune! Immune! Immune!

Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had gained 30 seconds of invincibility and would not take any form of damage from either the boss or Paragon. {Blizzard Sky, Lunar's Dew} could only deal 5,000 Chaos damage per tick. It was barely a tickle to post Chaos Realm players. However, it totaled up to 150,000 damage, which was still something that no one could ignore.

All seven Paragon members quickly ran out of the skills' radius, however, before they could, the boss had used {Queen's Roar}. Everyone, besides Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue was stunned for 5 seconds.

If they had only taken the boss' skill, they would only lose 50% of their HP. Fortunately for Zhang Yang, they were stunned within the range of {Blizzard Sky and Lunar's Dew}. After taking 5 seconds of the paired skill damage and the boss' {Queen's Roar} damage,

the total attack that they had received per person was around 70,000 to 80,000.

Right then, as Paragon was about to leave the paired skill attack radius, Sun Xin Yu swooped in and carved them up.

Lone Desert Smoke had been fighting the boss for more than 2 hours. It was not a mystery if they had a better understanding of the boss' mechanics than Paragon. Sun Xin Yu had only appeared after all Paragon had been stunned and proceeded to kill them. As such, they were all sitting ducks, waiting for their deaths.

After spamming her blade, there were still 2 survivors remaining. The two of them quickly retreated. Sun Xin Yu quickly gave chase and Zhang Yang stopped the paired skill immediately to attack the other player with a {Spear of Obliteration}.

"URGH!"

"ARGHH!"

Two loud grunts were heard, followed by the two of them falling off their mounts.

"Such a waste of life. Humans will always be despicable!" the Queen of Blades scoffed.

"Dummy! Use the glare thing!" cried Han Ying Xue. She had just only consumed a bottle of MP potion. Without Fantasy Sweetheart

to help with the healing, Han Ying Xue would only last for half a minute before her MP is drained.

"Alright then." Zhang Yang flung out his arms and cast {Glare of the Death God}.

A cloud of black smoke floated above the boss' character and morphed into a grinning skull!

Success!

"Hell yeah!" Everyone cheered. The boss still had 11% HP left. Without the help from {Glare of the Death God}, they would not be able to kill the boss in time. The success of the skill was truly a lifesaver. Even the ice queen, Sun Xin Yu could not contain her happiness and she smiled a little.

"Kill it, quick!" cried Zhang Yang frantically.

Three players, with their own Battle Companion, and battle mount attacked with everything they had. Han Ying Xue was well within the danger zone, healing Zhang Yang with all her might, praying hard that the boss would not use {Queen's Roar} during this intense moment. Since the boss had just only used it, it would be another 10 seconds or so before she uses it again.

‘-5,000,000!’

‘-5,000,000!’

Lines and lines of powerful damage texts ticked up on the boss' character, greatly pleasing Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu.

"Little Yang. Hold on for a little longer! We're coming back!" Fatty Han shouted at the top of his lungs in the party channel.

Zhang Yang frowned. "Fatty Han is coming back now. The Paragon members should be coming back at the same time! We have to be faster! We cannot allow them to take advantage of the situation!"

Zhang Yang kited the boss as far away as he could from the dead bodies of the Paragon members. It would be most unfortunate if the boss death happened at the same time as their revival. They might have the opportunity to snatch the loots! They had the "qualifications" to loot since they had attacked the boss.

"No! No!" cried the Queen of Blade as she knew death was approaching. Still, her cries and constant mockery would do nothing to stall her death!

Seven seconds later, all of the {Glare of the Death God} trigger hits were used and the boss still had over 1,300,000 HP left.

Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu bit down their frustration and went crazy.

They were able to kill all 30 members of Paragon because of their

carelessness and the boss' assistance. If all of the enemies returns, the same method would not work again. The chances of Lone Desert Smoke winning a 10 v 30 PvP match would be extremely slim!

After all, Paragon was the top guild in Europe! Their prowess was not something that Lone Desert Smoke could shrug off lightly. However, it would not be the same if Sun Xin Yu or Wei Yan Er had Inheritances!

1,100,000!

800,000!

500,000!

200,000!

When the boss' HP has reached below 200,000, the first 5 players of Paragon had just revived in time. With haste, they took a bottle of Healing Potion and quickly made their way towards the boss.

100,000!

30,000!

0!

"ARGH!" the Queen of Blades wailed as she fell to the ground, creating a powerful tremor and dropping a heap of loot next to her dead body.

"Ice cube! Take! Take! Pick! Quick!" Zhang Yang was so nervous that he could not even finish his sentence properly. His hands were busy sweeping up the loot as well. Not a single item must fall into their hands!

By the time the 5 players of Paragon had arrived, Zhang Yang stopped looting and quickly cast {Heroic Leap}. Unfortunately, he only managed to stun 3 of them. At the same time, he quickly cast {Brutal Smash} to stun the fourth player. Felice quickly morphed into her human form and stunned the last stray player with {Dragon Spear Barrage}.

"Haha! Good job, Felice!" cried Zhang Yang. Sun Xin Yu seized the opportunity to loot all of the drops and left nothing but the dead body of the boss for Paragon.

By then, Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, and the rest of Lone Desert Smoke had revived themselves and joined the team.

"Zhan Yu---!" Hell's Warrior snarled angrily and bellowed. "HAND OVER THE LOOT!"

"Please, don't be childish. You're not a 3-year-old little kid. If our positions are reversed, would you hand over the loot if I ask nicely?" Zhang Yang scoffed and shrugged.

"Bastard!"

"Kill him! Spare no one! We will kill them until they drop all their equipment!"

"Kill them!"

Everyone gripped their weapon tighter. The boss Zhang Yang had just killed was a Legendary quest type boss! The item drops from the boss had to be powerful!

Now that the boss was gone and all the loot was secured, Zhang Yang could relax a little. However, when he heard that all Paragon members wanted to kill him. He directed all his frustration that had been built up since the beginning of the Ancient Creature war, all the rage and wrath towards the Paragon.

"If you plan to attack, you should have said so earlier. Now...I'm afraid you have absolutely no chance to win."

"Boss! We're back!" cried Endless Starlight. As if fate had dictated his destiny, just when Zhang Yang needed help, the entire battalion of Lone Desert Smoke had arrived from all corners atop their flying mounts. Back when Hell's family had arrived at the island and started threatening Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang had Endless Starlight to gather all Lone Desert Smoke members to come to his rescue. At the same time, Snow Seeker, Greensleeves Prince, and other guild master had noticed the guild's sudden sortie and had followed them as well. Right then, the entire island Baroque was filled with top players of China.



"R-Run! Run now!" All the European members' faces turned white at the scene. They had all been killed once and had lost all of their hard earned experience points. If they were to be killed again, they might drop their equipment, which will be of an even greater loss.

However, it was futile to escape now.

Endless Starlight, Snow Seeker, One Sword Stroke, and other powerful players had rushed into the battle and turned all members of Paragon into burger patties.

"The portal!"

Since the battle loot had all been taken, the body of the Queen of Blade had disappeared away. There was no evidence of a boss battle ever happening here. The other guild members knew nothing. All they could see was the bright, pulsating portal.

Shush! Pew! Bam!

All newcomers launched their attack on and on, however...

Immune! Immune! Immune!

All attacks dealt on the portal had not made a tiny scratch!

Zhang Yang grinned.

# Chapter 579: Shadow Dancer Inheritance

---

Snow Seeker frowned in annoyance and stopped attacking. "The only way to break this is to use a special tool, am I right? Mr. guild master Zhan Yu?" said Snow Seeker with a forced smile.

Zhang Yang shrugged and looked the other way. "Beats me. I just got here not too long ago and was fighting the European bastards!"

No one, not Snow Seeker, not One Sword Stroke could have bought his lie. Especially when he had pointedly looked away like that! However, with no around to say otherwise, there's no other way but to accept his lie. Even though guild masters had smuggled spies into guilds of others, they were not able to smuggle secrets to all corners of the world.

"Find the clue! The quest had mentioned something about Quesara the Queen of Blades. Find her and we'll find the way to destroy the portal!" said One Sword Stroke, cool-headed as always – unless it was Zhang Yang or Liu Wei dealing with him. With a swift snap of his fingers, several members of Imperial Sky had soared to the sky and spread out across the entire island.

The other guild masters had also made the same decision.

The island area was too huge. It may be time-consuming to search the entire island for a single boss with only around 10 people. They did not know what the boss looked like in the first place. In their minds, it was something huge, while others thought that she was a human queen. The search would take up more time

if they stumble upon another boss and not the Queen of Blade. Still, that was what Zhang Yang wanted them to do!

To prevent a scenario of other guilds getting the jump on them, each guild had left 5 players behind. Additionally, they had made an agreement to stay away from the portal gates. If either one side breaks the agreement, that guild would face the wrath of 55 players of 11 different guilds.

Zhang Yang pretended to search and led his team to a quiet corner. With a huge smile on his face, "Let them be. Let's take a look at our haul!" Zhang Yang took out several items from his inventory and showed it to everyone.

"I have here, 2 items. One is a ring, and the other is the portal-destroying item."

[Mercury Star Ring] (Mythical, Ring)

Vitality: +482

Strength: +226

Dexterity: +226

Equip: Increases attack and healing rate by 3.5%

Equip: Increases 450 maximum HP.

Equip: Absorbs 192 damage on attack.

Equip: Increases 50% Frost damage dealt by your weapon

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: Made from the fragments of an asteroid. An indestructible ring brimming with the brightness of a star.

"Noob tank, I think this ring should be yours, as you have the skill - {Frost Strike}." Wei Yan Er was the first to voice out.

Based on the ring's properties, the ring would suit a Knight, a Warrior, a Thief, or a Hunter. The ring's effect was good since it increases attack and Vitality. Any class would benefit from the ring, but not as much as Zhang Yang, since he had the skill {Frost Strike}.

Although Zhang Yang could benefit from the ring's effect, {Frost Strike} had a 60 seconds cooldown rate. Although raising the attack by 50% would increase the average DPS by a significant amount, it was only good for PvP. In a battle with players, {Frost Strike} could then be used as a nuke attack to deal heavy damage in

a short amount of time.

Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and other members who suited the ring nodded to agree with Wei Yan Er.

"I'd say, only guild master has reached Level 110. You're the only person in the guild who can immediately equip the ring! We would have to grind for a long time before we can reach your current level!" said Daffodil Daydream. Zhang Yang was Level 111, the highest leveled player in Lone Desert Smoke and in the world, while the second would be Level 107. However, to gain 3 levels and reach Level 110 would take as long as 1 whole month! (real-time).

That would take 90 days in the game and if an equipment takes that long to equip, it would be a waste, as it would be gathering dust in the inventory!

Zhang Yang smiled and took the ring for himself. He would only equip it after Identifying it in the city.

The second item that he had found was the most important item. A small, palm-sized, black colored bomb.

[Goblin H.E Bomb Mark III] (Quest Item)

Use: Destroys the portal and perhaps maybe, the entire island itself? The bomb was made to be extremely powerful but was accidentally created to be slightly stronger than it should have. If calculations are correct, the bomb would turn everything within a

10km range into a pile ash. You are strongly advised to run away as far as possible during the activation of the bomb. Tick tock goes the bomb, you should run or lose your dome!

Note: Product of the Globin Tech Engineering (™)! Quality that you can trust!

Bound.

Huh?! Bound?

Zhang Yang was left speechless. He had not paid attention back then when he picked the item! However, if he had not picked the item, the European players might have picked it up instead, and all of Zhang Yang's efforts would be for naught.

"Hmm...Now that we are in the same party as Little Yang, would the system count us in the completion of the quest if Little Yang is the one setting the bomb up?" said Fatty Han.

No one could have predicted that the bomb will be bound. Now that it has come to this, Zhang Yang had no choice but to be the bomber man. As it seems, no one in the party had any objections to it. After all, Zhang Yang was the person in charge and the leader of their party. Without his guidance, none of them would have had a chance to stand here. Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue had nothing to say, since Zhang Yang was their man. Anything that is his, would be theirs as well!

"I don't think so. The skill {Rising Dragon Strike} is too strong to be made available for everyone. I think that is why the bomb has been made to be bound to only one person." Said Zhang Yang dejectedly.

"What a shame..."

Zhang Yang had taken out the items he had looted, and the next few items were all in Sun Xin Yu's inventory.

Sun Xin Yu casually took out three items and showed them to everyone. They were a white, silvery gown, a grayish white glove, a necklace with an emerald stone, and a fragment of what seemed to be part of a weapon.

"Is that an Assembled Weapon Fragment, or an Inheritance Fragment?" Zhang Yang had not paid any attention anything else except for the broken metal piece.

The cold ice queen suddenly broke into a dazzling, warm smile. She had such a broad grin that Zhang Yang immediately knew that the item had to be something. She then posted the item's properties on the party channel.

[Shadow Dancer Inheritance Fragment] (Inheritance Class: S)

Description: NIL

Class Restriction: Thief.



Oh d\*mn! Everyone gasped at the sight of it. They have managed to find another S class Inheritance!

In the party of 10, Lost Dream and Sun Xin Yu were the only two Thief class players. However, Lost Dream had already started off with the Snowman Inheritance, and although he had only collected four pieces of the Inheritance fragment, he was almost done with it.

If he had not chosen to undergo the Snowman Inheritance, he could still voice out and roll the dice against Sun Xin Yu for the S class Inheritance. However, things were difficult, now!

"Let Frost Night have it," said Lost Dream as he swallowed his pride hard. He consoled himself that a B class Inheritance was only 10% weaker than the S class Inheritance. As for the Transformation skill, it would be the same 3-day cooldown duration for both B and S class. If that was not the case, he couldn't have held it in!

Sun Xin Yu nodded politely and took the Inheritance fragment for herself.

Zhang Yang never knew much about the Shadow Dancer Inheritance and had only just found out that it was dropped by the Queen of Blades. Sun Xin Yu must have had hidden close by the battle back then. When the boss was killed, she must have instantly swooped in and picked all the drops, including the S class Inheritance, thus becoming the only player in China to obtain an S

class Inheritance!

In this lifetime, as destiny would have it, Sun Xin Yu would still be the same player obtaining the S class Inheritance!

Lone Desert Smoke has now amassed a total of 3 players with S class Inheritance. Even though the two of them had not yet completed their quests, the team could be strong enough when all three of them reaches Level 120. Bosses would crumble beneath their feet when that time comes!

A guild with 3 S class Inheritance holders! If it was in Zhang Yang past lifetime, people all over the world would be laughing their butts off at that very idea! To have more than 1 S class Inheritance player in a single region was already a ridiculous idea, lest even mention about having 3! Now, what if all of them happened to be in the same guild?! Imagine BMW making 6 super limited-edition cars, and half of them ends up being owned by the same family...

Zhang Yang was so happy that he could fly. Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu were his women. Even though both of them still had their internal strife as they were still fighting over him, Zhang Yang strongly believed that even the toughest walls can be brought down with time, as long as that wall doesn't fall when all three of them are in bed! The two female monkeys would rip his 'banana' to shreds, in that case!

Sun Xin Yu did not stop posting more descriptions on the party channel.

[Queen's Attire] (Mythical, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +32

Vitality: +1,926

Intelligence: +905

Spirit: +393

Equip: Increases maximum MP by 1,810.

Equip: Increases maximum HP by 3,850.

Equip: Increases all damage and healing rate by 3.5%.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Level Requirement lowered by 20 Levels.

Note: An attire befitting that of only a Queen! A dress brimming with the aura of a royalty!

Without rolling for the item, the dress was taken by Han Ying

Xue. It could not be helped, she considered herself Queen and found no reason to give the equipment away to anyone else. However, as a compensation, the next Mythical tier equipment that the party found would be given to Daffodil Daydream and Fantasy Sweetheart.

The last two equipment were Violet-Platinum, battle companion specific only. The items were rolled for and distributed accordingly.

After all drops were distributed, it was time to end the quest.

Everyone rode their flying mounts and left the area. Zhang Yang alone had returned to the portal and made his presence on the public voice channel.

"ahem I have some bad news for everyone around here. The tool to destroy the portal is in my hands. I have but only one advice to give you all. Run."

After that, Zhang Yang promptly pulled the trigger bar on the bomb and tossed the ticking explosive towards the magic circle.

‘Ding! The Goblin H.E Bomb Mark III has been rigged to explode in 60 seconds. Based on the calculation of the Globins, the blast radius will reach an area of 60km. Please get to a safe place to avoid being vaporized!’

‘Ding! Time left to detonation: 59 seconds!’

‘Ding! Time left to detonation: 58 seconds!’

...

# Chapter 580: The Devastating Assault of the God of War

---

The moment Zhang Yang flung the bomb, every single player on Baroque Island received the same System Notification. Everyone hopped onto their [Flying Mounts] and ascended into the sky as possible as they could and flew towards the direction away from the island while cursing Zhang Yang --- because Morning Town had not been reconstructed yet, everyone still did not have access to the Teleportation Circle of the Territory.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he hopped on his Thunderhawk and fled like the others.

What the f\*ck! These goblins had such shoddy handiwork! With 11 seconds still remaining on the counter, a sudden loud bang that shook the heavens went out far into the surroundings. The next thing happening was a gigantic mushroom cloud, rising from the center of Baroque Island, blooming straight up towards heaven!

Then, a powerful shockwave, as strong as a Level 13 hurricane spread out from its central point. The powerful impact shot right through every single player who was still in the blast radius, reducing everyone's HP bar down to 1 HP!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Radiance of the God of War} to recover his HP bar back to full. If anyone were to jab at him with a needle at that moment, Zhang Yang would be dead, and that would be a devastating blow to his progress.

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Preventing Future Trouble. Acquired 10,000,000 experience points!’

‘Ding! You have received a reward: Lucky Attribute +3, Skill Point +3!’

‘Ding! You have learned a New Skill: Rising Dragon Strike!’

‘Ding! You have received an item: Warrior's Honor (Medal)!’

After a series of sweet system notifications rolling across Zhang Yang's ears, he became the person to have benefited the most in the Legendary Quest!

He acquired 1 Skill Point upon reaching Level 110. Furthermore, he was rewarded with 3 additional Skill Points! Zhang Yang added all of the Skill Points that he had just earned into his {Eagle Eye}, raising the level of the Skill up to level 8. Now, Zhang Yang could ignore 85% Defense of his targets! He also equipped the [Warrior's Honor (Medal)] up the moment he got it. The item gave him a boost of 5% to his Attack.

[Heart of the Death Knight] could only provide 3 seconds of invincibility after the player holding it reaches Level 110. However, the player could clear out any Negative Effects upon activating the [Heart of the Death Knight]. The 3-second invincibility was more like a bonus power up to the player. The effect of this item was basically the enhanced version of (Warrior's Will).

With the [Warrior's Honor (Medal)] included, Zhang Yang had over 3 anti-Status Restriction Skills at the moment.

A Guardian with high Attack, that happened to be immune to Status Restriction Effects. How oppressive was that?

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile like an idiot as he was very content with his current achievement. Then he said, "You guys go ahead, I need to meet the God of War to learn a new Skill!"

--- It wasn't the special Skill for Guardians, instead, it was a New Skill for his [God of War Inheritance]!

After parting ways with his party members, Zhang Yang went straight to Ares, The God of War.

"Mortal, your improvement has been very slow and disappointing!" after being awakened by Zhang Yang once again, Ares began to express his disappointment. "When I was your age, I was slaughtering hundreds or maybe thousands of Low-Tier gods from hell!"

What the f\*ck! If your dad was not the God Zolanor, would you still be all-powerful as you were back then before you died? F\*ck you and your dad!

Zhang Yang tried to smile meekly as he said, "My great God of War, now that my Strength has increased a little more, does that mean that you can teach me a new Skill now?"



"Alright, since you aren't really as stupid as a pig, I shall put aside my pride and guide you in your request!" Ares gave a gentle touch on the forehead of Zhang Yang with one of his fingers. A stream of light with seven colors emanated from Zhang Yang's forehead and flashed down across his entire body.

Zhang Yang felt a dull pain in his head. Then he found another new Skill on his Skill list.

[God of War Devastation]: Delivers a devastating blow to the target, causing 300% Melee Physical Damage. When you are in your {God of War Transformation} form, 1 EP can allow you to attack one additional target. However, it will consume 1 EP for doing so. Required: Melee Weapon. Consumes: 45 Rage Points. Cool Down: 1 minute.

... 300% Melee Attack of Physical Damage was most probably the best additional Damage attribute for a weapon to have at the current stage of the game! It would become an absolute advantage over opponents in a PvP battle. The only unfortunate factor was that the cooldown of the Skill was a little longer than expected. So it might not be a Skill that he would commonly use in a boss battle!

However, whenever Zhang Yang was in his {God of War Transformation} form, this Skill could potentially become an AoE attack as well! Using 1 EP would let Zhang Yang attack an additional target. That being said, Zhang Yang could attack up to 100 targets at the same instant, as he has over 100 EP when his EP bar was full!

After all, Zhang Yang could deal over 500% additional Damage when he activates his {God of War Transformation}. If he could deal another additional 300% damage with that Skill while having the ability to increase the number of his targets by spending more EP, his attack would be as powerful as the blast from a Magic Cannon! This Skill could officially be deemed as an AoE Skill!

That was awesome!

It was definitely worthy to be called one of the Skills of a Class S [Inheritance]! There were only 6 Class S [Inheritance] in the entire world. If the Skills of a Class S [Inheritance] were not powerful enough, it would be another overrated piece of crap!

After teaching Zhang Yang the New Skill, Ares went back into the cave and continued to drift in his own sweet dream. Once again, he did not give Zhang Yang any information about the Goddess of War. Zhang Yang could only summon his Thunderhawk and make his way back to Morning Town.

Reconstructing the Territory would require the owner to be there in order for the reconstruction process to be carried out.

Zhang Yang had to take out a total of 20,000,000 gold coins in order to reconstruct the Territory back to its former glory. In just a blink of an eye, Morning Town had been completely rebuilt. On the other hand, Zhang Yang only had to spend 2,000,000 gold coins to rebuild the Winst Castle which only had a Level 1 Defense.

After the incident of the Ancient Creatures' Invasion, the players

from Japan-Korea Region now hated Zhang Yang to their cores! A few high Tier guilds from Japan-Korea Region had provided the best Thieves they had to offer to form a special party called the 'Onikiri'. The purpose of this party was to assassinate Zhang Yang at any possible, appropriate time.

Well, if they were going to assassinate him, why would they be advertising their goal of assassinating someone, then? They even posted a challenge on the forums, saying that they would kill Zhang Yang over and over again!

Zhang Yang could not help but frown at their stupidity. All they wanted to do was to cover up their incompetency! Now that all cross hairs of the Japan-Korea players were aiming at Zhang Yang, the incompetency of their own players would be overshadowed by the current happenings, and they would not feel too embarrassed at the very least.

So that concluded the Legendary Quest. The main focus of the eight main Regions had been diverted back to clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. This time, Crimson Rage accumulated all their best forces and took down another 6 bosses in a row, scoring themselves a 10/15 on the progress of clearing the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon. They overtook the sub-guild of Lone Desert Smoke by 3 places as the top 10 achievers on the dungeon progression!

Zhang Yang only found out about it later. It seemed that the main Tanker, Mellow Venom of the Crimson Rage had completed the quests for her Class B [Inheritance]. She had acquired the [Petrification Inheritance]!

The strength of an [Inheritance] could not be judged by its Class. It could only be judged based on how compatible it was with a player! If a Spellcaster went on to get a Class B Physical-Type [Inheritance], it would become worthless to the player. It would be even better if that player had a Class D Magic-Type [Inheritance]

Although this [Petrification Inheritance] was just a Class B [Inheritance], after considering the power-up that this [Inheritance] could provide to a Tanker, it could even be worthy of a Class A [Inheritance]!

Without the ‘transformation’, there would already be a passive Skill that increases the Defense of the player by 100%!

For the DpS type players, even if a Berserker is equipped with a full set of Heavy Armor, a Level 100 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment would only provide about 420 Basic Defense. It would only provide 840 Basic Damage, even if the Defense was doubled. It wouldn’t affect the player much at all! However, for a Tanker, because Tanker could hold a shield, a Level 100 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment could provide 2,820 Defense. With the [Inheritance] doubling her Defense, she would gain over 5,640 Defense. That amount of Defense would be even higher than that Zhang Yang had when he is equipped with a Level 130 Mythical Tier Shield!

More importantly, this would be a passive Skill that could maintain its effect all the time, unlike the {God of War Shield} which would only last for 10 minutes! She could just use the passive Skill without even having to transform!

Therefore, the Crimson Rage had no trouble in clearing 6 stages of the dungeon in a row!

If they had to rely on the {Inheritance Transformation} Skill, they would have only cleared out the monsters and one boss in the period of 2 hours. They would be lacking endurance.

"Crimson Rage have done a very good job of hiding their 'secret'! They actually completed the quests for the [Petrification Inheritance] underground. Now, they have managed to strike an impression!" Zhang Yang smiled vaguely.

Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes backward at Zhang Yang. She complained, "As the number one Tanker, you haven't even joined the Dungeon Clearing! Not even once! If you did join back then, we might have taken out at least 10 bosses by now!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "I don't want everyone to rely on me all the time! A powerful guild requires everyone to work together, not relying on one or two powerful 'superhumans'!"

"However, the Crimson Rage must have given up a lot just to take down the final boss of the Class B [Inheritance]!"

"That may be true. Since they do not have Class S [Inheritance] in their guild like us, they must have used some powerful items like a [Forbidden Scroll]!" Zhang Yang gave some thought on it, then he smiled and said, "Sigh... If I have known better, I should have gone over there and helped Crimson Rage out myself! Then, I should be

able to claim the [Forbidden Scroll] as my reward for helping them!"

"Yea, right! Dream on!"

...

After that, Zhang Yang did not join his party in Clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress. Other guilds have only managed to clear out the first 10 bosses at the moment. The last 5 bosses were the real pain in the \*ss. Zhang Yang did not see any urgency in going all out to clear the dungeon just yet.

On the second day, the special effect of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] was nerfed, as expected! Zhang Yang had actually foreseen it, as he had overdid it with the sword during the battle with the Ancient Creatures. The official only added one restriction on his sword: The replicated attacks will not trigger further replicated attacks. In other words, the special effect of the sword would not be triggered two times anymore and so forth. Zhang Yang could only cause two times of damage on his targets, at most.

Well, he really did overdo it during the battle with the Ancient Creatures. There were many players who were so envious of him that they had flooded the officials with complaints.

Zhang Yang was on his way to the The Plagued Land.

The Plagued Land was basically the source point of where the

Spectre was created. Although the level gap of the map was only Level 150 to Level 18, deep within the map, there was a sacred lair for the Spectre --- Malevolent Tower. It was the sacred lair where the 'Wraith King of Death, Madravich - Leader of the Seven Wraiths' rested. It was a Celestial Tier boss!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, 7 Top Tier guilds had joined hands in attempting to bring down this boss. By the end of it, they could not even enter the Malevolent Tower! None of them survived the slaughter of the Skeleton army right before the entrance of the tower!

Of course, Zhang Yang was not there to challenge the Celestial Tier boss. He was there for the one particular item, the [Book of the Damned](1).

Initially, he would have waited until he reaches Level 150 before he was worthy of challenging the monsters across the map. However, ever since he had acquired the [Friendship Jade], getting the [Book of the Damned] had become the easiest quest item for him to acquire --- provided the monsters do not tear him to pieces first!

Zhang Yang ran along towards his destination as he tried to fend off the monsters that attempted to take his life. He only used his Status Restriction Skills as frequently as possible to get away from the monsters. Finally, after 7 to 8 hours of running and avoiding monsters, Zhang Yang finally entered The Plagued Land that was filled with Spectres.

After equipping his [Friendship Jade], Zhang Yang immediately

turned into a white boned skeleton. When he lifted his head and looked across the land, he realized that all Spectres had turned into green-name monsters. It meant that he had become one of those skeletons!

The experience was as if he had just walked into his own garden. Zhang Yang then summoned his Thunderhawk and flew straight towards the Malevolent Tower. Because it was the motherland of the Spectres, there were no signs of any living beings at all. Only a few variations of Spectres roamed about. Zhang Yang could now roam in peace. If there were any living monsters about, he would still be under attack, and the [Friendship Jade] would not have worked its wonder.

Zhang Yang made his way to a valley full of skeletons and bones without any obstacles in his path. He kept Thunderhawk back into his inventory first. Then, he pretended to be a Spectre, acting like one, shambling like one as he made his way to the large tower right in the middle of the valley. The tower was so tall that it shot through the sky! Zhang Yang could not even see the top of the tower from where he was!

That was the Malevolent Tower, the lair where the Celestial Tier boss 'Wraith King of Death, Madravich' rested in! That was also the place where the Spectre kept the [Book of the Damned]!

TL Note:

1. Klaatu Barada Nikto, anyone? Not the one from The Day the Earth Stood Still, the one from The Army of Darkness, heh.



# Chapter 581: Shadow Clone

---

The external walls of the tall tower were dark green in color. Each of the floors was 100 meters tall, and the friezes jutted out under the cornices so immensely that they looked like giant umbrellas that were overlapped with each other.

Right outside the high tower, countless Spectres wandered around the area. Their Tiers and Levels were randomized. Some were just Skeleton Soldiers, the lowest Tier of all, and some were Necromancers of extremely high Tier. There were also a few Skeleton Dragons among the monsters roaming around! The number of monsters in the area was similar to the number of Ancient Creatures that Zhang Yang had faced a few days back. Furthermore, these foul monsters were literally rotten to their core. It would really send a good chill up the spine by just looking at them!

Zhang Yang entered the Malevolent Tower cautiously. Because he had the [Friendship Jade] to disguise himself as one of the Spectre monsters, Zhang Yang was just a weak Skeleton Soldier in the monsters' eyes. None of the Spectre looked at him for any longer than 1 second as they passed by him as if he was one of their own. So, Zhang Yang snuck his way through the horde of closely packed monsters in the area and entered the tower like it was nobody's business.

As he turned around to have a look at the monsters, what he saw was an army of Spectre closely packed together roaming around. He could not help but to wonder, how many monsters were there to slay in order to get here if he had come here without his [Friendship Jade]. He would definitely need to reach Level 150 first

before he could slay all these monsters. Or else, the Level Gap Suppression function of the game would kick in to slap him in the face. By then, it wouldn't do him much good, even if he activates his {God of War Transformation}.

The stairs in the towers were made of skulls. The weak-hearted ones might find them terrifying. They might not even want to set foot on the steps!

Zhang Yang was not born to be bloodthirsty. He could not help but frown intensely. Then, he took a deep breath as he gathered his courage and went up the first step of the stairs. Zhang Yang then began to make his way up to the highest floor of the Malevolent Tower. Along the way up, what he saw could be described as a living hell.

The lowest floors such as the first floor and the second floor were 'producing' the lowest Tier of the Spectre --- the Skeleton Soldiers. Countless of white boned corpses were dropped into a pond filled with dirty water. In the meantime, there were also countless of 'newborn' or rather, 'newboned' Skeleton Soldiers crawling out from the pond!

However, not every corpse could become a Spectre.

One must be filled with hatred and grief in order to become a Spectre. That way, the hatred and grievances would only manage to latch onto the corpses and get molded into a new form of 'life'. Some of the Spectre was born with only grievances without any sense of emotion and intellect. That would only turn them into the lowest Tiers among the Spectre.

For instance, ghouls are born with only the resentment and would only attack to 'feed', while the Skeleton Soldiers would be born with only the will to 'massacre'.

However, some of the Spectre may be born with some intellect remaining from their previous life. Some might even have the memories of their previous life intact with them. Those would be Spectres belonging to the middle Tier and high Tier. For example, a Wraith, a Wraith King or even the leader of the Wraith King with the highest Tier!

Unlike the Skeleton Soldiers that were 'cheap', the chance of coming across a high Tier Spectre was as rare as the chance of coming across the hair of a phoenix and the horns of a giraffe. Therefore, the Spectres decided to build a 'man-made' factory that was filled with hatreds and grievances --- the Malevolent Tower.

Upon stepping onto the fifth floor of the tower, Zhang Yang could witness the Spectres tormenting humans, orcs, and even elves! They were torturing them without giving them any moment of relief! The hatred, the rage right before death! Those were the biggest source of grievances! Upon death, they would be turned into Spectres. Most of them had a better chance of becoming high Tier Spectres!

Even though Zhang Yang had a mind that was as strong as steel, he could not help but feel the chill up his spine. He was also cursing the designers of the game who had actually thought these scenes up. Those designers must be more hardcore than the hardcore. It was like a hellish nightmare that would haunt a

person for quite some time!

After walking through the nightmarish stairs for about half an hour, Zhang Yang finally found himself on the highest floor of the tower. The floor was spooky as hell. However, there were no longer any signs of those torture equipment and facilities. Instead, the place was like the compound of a palace!

More precisely to say, the place looked more like a huge library. There were rows of bookshelves across the space of the floor. There were all sorts of books on the shelves. Zhang Yang believed that a number of books in the library of White Jade Empire might not even get close to the number of books in here.

Zhang Yang snuck in cautiously as he looked around for the [Book of the Damned]. Although he had no idea what the book looked like, there should be an indication or hint if it is a quest item.

The Malevolent Tower was really spacious. The diameter of the tower was about 1 kilometer wide. Because the stairs were designed at the center of the tower like how humans had their spines right in the middle of their body, Zhang Yang found himself at the other end of the tower after he walked along the wall of the tower for half a circle.

There, he found the large shadow of a man sitting on a throne. The man looked intimidating enough, as he was, seated upon his throne. Zhang Yang could also see that the man was so much larger than the size of regular men. He would tower over them even while seated.

This man wore a long robe that had the color of the moon. He had a violet-red staff in his right hand. There was also a towering, tall hat on top of his head. From a certain point of view, this man looked like some sort of high priest!

[Wraith King of Death, Madravich - Leader of the Seven Wraith]  
(Celestial, Spectre)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Attack: ???

Skills: ???

Suddenly, Madravich turned his eyes and glared at Zhang Yang without any warning. However, what he saw before him was merely a small, weak skeleton soldier. So Madravich did not care about his existence at all. He moved his eyes away from Zhang Yang after a brief moment of glaring.

Zhang Yang could feel an intense chill straight up his spine. He even took a step back in fear. Fortunately, the boss did not see right through his disguise.

Zhang Yang continued to look around for clues. He discovered that there was an exquisite desk about 30 to 40 meters away from the boss. There was also a thick book placed neatly on top of that desk. Zhang Yang could see the book was flashing over and over again as if it was taunting him to go over and take it.

That must be the item he had been looking for --- [Book of the Damned]!

Zhang Yang made his way quietly over to the desk. He took a peek at the boss. Seeing that the boss had not realized his presence, Zhang Yang reached over to the book in an attempt to take it.

However, the [Book of the Damned] could not be kept in the inventory immediately. Instead, a progress bar appeared on top of the book. It was like opening a chest! It would take 12 seconds for the progress bar to fill up!

"Huh?" Madravich set his eyes upon Zhang Yang once again. His eyes turned murderous in an instant as he began to let out an intimidating roar, "You are just a pitiful human, and yet you dare dream to lay your hands on the treasure of the Spectres!" he raised the staff in his hand and aimed it at Zhang Yang. A dark ghastly gas spewed towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang's disguise had been seen through!

‘-1,982,375!’

A large damage value appeared on top of Zhang Yang's head.

'Ding! You died! The durability of your equipment has dropped by 10%!

Holy god!

After releasing his soul, Zhang Yang quickly made his way back to his dead body from the Graveyard.

Haih... it seemed that the quest item was not easy to acquire, even with the help of the [Friendship Jade]. Zhang Yang started coming up with a plan.

Looks like the boss would not attack if he does not touch the [Book of the Damned]. Furthermore, Zhang Yang would not have to take out this Celestial Tier boss in order to get the item. As long as he stays alive for 12 seconds, Zhang Yang would be considered to have completed his quest even if he dies after getting the [Book of the Damned].

Theoretically, both [Warrior's Honor] and [Heart of the Death Knight] could provide Zhang Yang with 13 seconds of invincibility. However, the two items could not be used at the same time. So Zhang Yang would have to choose [Warrior's Honor] over the other one. So, how about the two seconds that is not covered by the invincibility?

Should Zhang Yang let Felice activate her {Absolute Defense} and tank against the boss?

The boss could deal almost 2,000,000 damage in a normal hit! Although that had something to do with the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, that function would also apply to Felice. That 1% of the damage that Felice would receive might reach up to 20,000 Damage!

Furthermore, that was just a normal attack of the boss. There was no way knowing if the boss had other Skills that would inflict more damage than that! If the boss really did have some deadly, powerful Skill that could instantly kill Felice, Zhang Yang would not last for 12 seconds!

The cooldown period of {Absolute Defense} was 12 hours long as well. Zhang Yang did not want to wait for another 12 hours before he could try again if he fails. So he tried to think of another way.

After reaching his dead body and resurrecting himself, Zhang Yang did not use any [Bandages] or [Snacks]. The reason was simple. He couldn't even survive one normal hit from the boss. There was no point of healing himself at all if he ever gets touched by the boss.

Upon activating the [Warrior's Honor], Zhang Yang had become invincible for the next 10 seconds. Without wasting any precious time, he reached his hand over to the [Book of the Damned] once again.



"Persistent. Do you seek death? Because that is what you're going to get!" Madravich humphed coldly as he pointed his staff at Zhang Yang again. The dark gas flew at him again.

‘Immune!’

Even if the boss is a Celestial Tier and all-powerful, he could not hurt a player who has an Invincibility Effect on him. That strike did not do anything to Zhang Yang!

"Stubborn!" the boss was furious, he began to gather countless beams of dark light by the tip of the staff. There was a 3-second progress bar appearing right below his head. It seemed that the boss was chanting for a spell! The damage of this Skill should be immensely high!

3 seconds later, the boss had finally unleashed the spell upon Zhang Yang. The dark light shot out from the tip of the staff like a laserbeam! That beam then dispersed into hundreds of dark arrows and landed straight upon Zhang Yang.

‘Immune!’

‘Immune!’

‘Immune!’

However, that would not do a thing. If players could be hurt when they were invincible, they wouldn't be called invincible

anymore!

5 seconds, 6 seconds!

The duration of Zhang Yang's 'Invincibility' was ticking off as every second passed. 2 seconds before the 'Invincibility effect' of the [Warrior's Honor] expired, Felice flew straight up to the boss in her Humanoid Form. She then activated her {Absolute Defense}, followed by her {Dragon's Spear Barrage}!

"Argh ---" Madravich turned to Felice the moment he received Felice's attack. More furious than ever, the boss pointed his staff at Felice and shot out another dark shroud from his staff. The dark shroud surrounded the little lady and caused a value of damage.

‘-10,244!’

Fortunately, the damage was not too much for Felice to bear. Felice had over 180,000 HP. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang only needed to hang on for another 3 seconds!

Madravich seemed displeased to have been prodded by Felice. He raised his staff again as the dark light began to charge up around the tip of his staff again. The 3-second progress bar appeared once again right above his head.

3, 2, 1!

‘Ding! You have acquired an Item: Book of the Damned X1!’

Zhang Yang could feel the joy rushing up his head. He quickly tore off a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] as he was ready to get the hell out of that spooky place with Felice! As long as the magic circle could form completely, they should be able to escape without a problem.

At the same time, the progress bar below the boss's head had also filled up. The boss shot out a dark light from the tip of the staff again. The attack then dispersed into hundreds of dark arrows just like the first time and rained upon Zhang Yang and Felice like a storm!

‘-10,334!’

‘-22,102!’

‘-11,034!’

...

Each of the arrows could cause about 10,000 damage on Felice. Some of the arrows caused up to 20,000 damage on her --- the effect of Level Gap Suppression worked randomly (200%, 300%, 400%). It almost killed Felice on the spot!

Zhang Yang was shocked. He quickly waved his hand and kept Felice back to the Battle Companion Slot.

"How dare you! Thief! Die!" as Felice was no longer there for the boss to target, he turned around and shot a dark shroud at Zhang Yang.

Upon tearing the [Teleportation Scroll], the magic circle for the teleportation would take up 10 seconds to activate. Felice was taken out of the picture when there was still 9 seconds left. There was no way for Zhang Yang to get away anymore.

‘-1,023,873!’

A damage value of over one million popped up on top of Zhang Yang's head. Zhang Yang was instantly killed. He was sent to report himself back at the Graveyard again.

"Hehe!" Zhang Yang looked at the [Book of Damned] in his inventory as he grinned --- getting a quest item at the cost of 20% durability of all his equipment wasn't really that bad at all! Especially when the quest reward would benefit him greatly!

Zhang Yang resurrected himself at the Graveyard before he tore another piece of [Teleportation Scroll]. In another 10 seconds, he had teleported back to Morning Town. Then, he used the Teleportation Circle in the Territory to get back to White Jade Castle. He summoned his Thunderhawk and flew straight towards the tower of Skill Mastery. He looked up for Grand Magus Anthony Faylon, who was studying Spells at the top of the tower.

"Hmm, have you gathered all three of the items?" Anthony seemed surprised. Then he said, "It surely had to have been

difficult for you to have accomplished this at your current level of Strength!"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Materials for the Instrument, received 10,000,000 experience points. Quest Assessment: Perfect!’

Huh? Just like that?

Zhang Yang quickly asked, "Sir Anthony, shall we move on to the next step?"

Anthony nodded and said, "I will create an instrument, a vessel! We shall attempt to cleanse Calina's soul of her resentment! However, I have no confidence that this would work..."

"As long as there's a glimpse of hope, there is a way!" Zhang Yang said.

Anthony nodded as he was persuaded by Zhang Yang's words. Then he began to move his hands around the three items. Countless rays of light began to gather around the items. In just a brief moment, a staff that was Milky-White in color was formed in the air. Looking at the shape of that staff, Zhang Yang could not help but have some dirty thoughts in his mind. A ‘vibrator’!

"Hold this ---" Anthony was speaking in a weak voice as he seemed to have strained himself a little in making the staff, "Find a way to infiltrate and get close to Calina. Use this on her and try to rid her of the anger that rages within her heart!"

‘Ding! Grand Magus Anthony Faylon has a quest for you: Calm the Rage! Do you accept? This quest is linked to a huge arc of the Main Story Quest. Complete the main story linking quest to obtain a luxurious reward!’

Zhang Yang took the ‘vibrator’ from Anthony and said, "I shall try my best! However, Calina is so powerful. It would be very difficult for me to get near her!"

"Then I shall teach you a Spell. When you have mastered it, this Spell shall increase your survivability!" Anthony touched Zhang Yang on the forehead as he spoke. The scene was just like how Ares had touched Zhang Yang’s forehead.

‘Ding! You have learned a New Skill: Shadow Clone (Level 1)!’

Well, this was more like it! So, this was supposed to be the actual reward of the quest that had put him through so much hardship!

Zhang Yang quickly brought up his Skill list to take a look at the Skill description.

[Shadow Clone] (Level 1): Summon an illusion of your exact copy. The illusion will support you in attacking your enemies and repeat every movement of yours. The illusion will have the same amount of HP as you. However, it can only deal 10% of your initial amount of damage that you can deal. Upon each level up of this Skill, the number of illusions that you can summon will increase by 1. The illusion can last for 2 minutes. Cooldown: 2 hours.

What an incredible Skill!

If any opponent ever sees 11 Zhang Yangs in a PvP battle, the opponent would surely be pissing in their pants!

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile in joy. Unfortunately, he had already spent all his newly acquired Skill Points on {Eagle Eye}. So he had no Skill Points left to level up his {Shadow Clone} for the moment.

Hence, it did not really matter that much, as long as his guild could take the 'First Clear' for the Hardcore Mode of Dragon Throat Fortress. They would be able to get one additional Skill Point upon achieving that. Furthermore, there were numerous Main Story Quests and Hidden Side Quests all over the game. Some high Tiered bosses might also drop rewards that would give Skill Points as well. So high Tiered players should not have to worry about not having enough Skill Points to spend, at all.

## Chapter 582: Warlord Hachir

---

In this quest of delivering the ‘vibrator’ to Calina, Zhang Yang’s [Friendship Jade] would not be able to work its wonder. This would be due to the fact that this fallen wind ranger was a Demonic Baron. Zhang Yang could only put the quest aside for now. On the other hand, Zhang Yang was also unable to complete the other quest where he would have to send a letter to the Spider Kingdom. Both quests involved traveling into maps that would be too highly leveled for him to set foot in.

Therefore, Zhang Yang’s focus should only be on leveling himself up, nothing more.

During the day, he would just grind for higher levels. During nights, he would join his guild in clearing the Dragon Throat Fortress.

For most of the players, the time between 10 pm to 7 am was the best time for playing. After all, most of the players were social workers with normal jobs. Not many of them earned their income through playing the game all day, like Zhang Yang and his gang.

They were unable to do that because it would be very difficult and inopportune for players to pick up gold coins in the game. If players ever wanted to earn extra money, they would have to slay some monsters and earn some equipment. However, they wouldn’t be able to get high Tiered equipment without a high enough level!

Of course, it would benefit them a lot if they ever want to be



crooked businessmen. Even then, they would require a good IQ and mind to be able to swindle money. Not everyone is born to be a trickster.

Fortunately, because the in-game time and the real time has a ratio of 3:1, one night in real time was equivalent to one full day in the game. That amount of time was enough for players to clear dungeons for quite a while.

Zhang Yang trained Felice and Thunderhawk to Level 111 during his daytime. [Pet Mounts] and Battle Companions would basically increase in Tier once in every 10 levels. So, when the both of them had leveled up to Level 110, these two had gone through a process akin to switching their Level 100 Mythical equipment with Level 110 Mythical equipment. Their attributes had shot up by a notch.

Currently, the total HP of Felice was 237,590 (With Vitality Aura) when she is in her Humanoid form. Her Defense had reached up to 4,840, and her Attack had a range of 30,531 - 36,531. When she is in her Dragonhawk form, her total HP would be 179,830 (With Vitality Aura), her Defense would reach up to 4,840, and her Attack would range from 17,777 - 21,777.

In her Humanoid form, she had far more HP than Zhang Yang, even when he's mounted!

It could not be helped. Felice's strength, in her human form, was all due to her complete set of Mythical tier equipment along with the addition of a shield. Zhang Yang, yet to have found himself a complete set of Mythical tier equipment, was far weaker than Felice. However, thanks to the Identified and equipped [Mercury

Star Ring], he had pushed his maximum HP to 194,150, allowing his HP to be almost, but not too close to Felice's.

After all, there was only one advantage that players had over their battle companions. Players could put on equipment that had Special attributes which lowered the Required Level by 20 levels.

The attributes of the [Violet Thunderhawk] were rather high as well. With {Iron Build,} which increases its Maximum HP by 30% and the boost from Zhang Yang's {Vitality Aura}, the HP of Thunderhawk was a total of 233,780 HP. The only reason for it not being able to exceed Felice's HP was merely because Felice had an extra Shield equipped.

Judging from that point of view, Felice was basically like Zhang Yang! She could also be considered as another holder of [God of War Inheritance]! Not only could she equip a two-handed weapon, she could also wield a shield! Her apparent relationship with the Goddess of War included, it wouldn't be any surprise if she could do all that.

Agitated by the previous performance of Crimson Rage, Fatty Han and the other guild members went all out, with their explosive potentials and took out the 8th boss of the dungeon. After being stranded there for a few days, they finally broke through the boss' blockade and was 8/15 to completing the dungeon!

However, they were still 2 bosses behind the Crimson Rage. That was the first time Lone Desert Smoke had been ditched so far behind by other guilds in a contest of killing bosses!

Therefore, the forum went into chaos as many people discussed the matter. There were topics like ‘The new tide is rising, the new dynasty is coming!’, ‘Crimson Rage! Cheers for the Strong Roses!’ and ‘Lone Desert Smoke, are you guys no longer the best?’ all over the forum. The arguments were rampaging across the forum pages!

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at their antics.

After all, most of them were not even regular players, they were just there to put a comment in. The contest on clearing the Hardcore Mode of Dragon Throat Fortress was not just merely based on the number of bosses one guild could slay. As the Chaos Realm had just recently opened up to the players, it would be the best opportunity to obtain [Inheritances]. Those who understood the flow of the game would know, the Classes of [Inheritance] that a guild has would define their strength! The more powerful [Inheritances] they had in their guild, the more powerful the guild would become!

Well, when Mess Up Your Mama was leading on the progress of clearing the dungeon at the beginning, they only had 2 players with Class C [Inheritances]. With the {Inheritance Transformation} Skills supporting them in battle, they managed to obtain the ‘First Clear’ of Hard Mode for the dungeon. Furthermore, they were able to stay ahead of others during the early stages of the Hardcore Mode contest. They had stayed as the lead until Fatty Han managed to get his Class B [Vampire Inheritance]. Together with the rest of the guild members of Lone Desert Smoke who were eager to clear the dungeon, they finally overtook Mess Up Your Mama’s progress!

Meanwhile, Crimson Rage was experiencing a similar situation. They relied on the Class B [Petrification Inheritance] of Mellow Venom to clear out 10 bosses in total. With that, they were now the leading pioneers!

From that point of view, Tankers would be the most important role in clearing dungeons.

Although both of the [Inheritances] were Class B, Fatty Han's [Vampire Inheritance] would only be strong enough to tank against a boss head-on. However, Mellow Venom could rely on the passive Skill that came together with her [Petrification Inheritance] while tanking against a boss. That was how the Crimson Rage managed to take down 6 bosses in a row!

Therefore, most people believed that Crimson Rage would be the victor and would acquire the 'First Clear' of the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress by the end of all this. Their supporters were massive in number! Because everyone believed that Crimson Rage would be unshakable, with Mellow Venom leading the way! However, Sword of Light would have 'Pui'ed at them saying that, "What's so powerful with a Class B [Inheritance]? That Zhan Yu has a Class S [Inheritance]! That is an exclusive [Inheritance] for the Warrior Class. If that [Inheritance] cannot match the power of the [Petrification Inheritance], that's what I call a joke!"

Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, and the others were still searching for the missing pieces of their [Inheritances]. Therefore, although Zhang Yang had joined up with the Exploration Group of his guild, the Lone Desert Smoke still could not unleash their full potential.

Without Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Lost Dream, Hundred Shots and Galileo, the DPS force of the Lone Desert Smoke did not really strike much of an impression to the public.

"Don't worry! I'm here! One against 3 is not a problem to me!" Fatty Han thumped his chest proudly while saying it. The girls at the sidelines were screaming like a bunch of crazed girls.

After everyone had gathered around, the party of 50 players went forward into the dungeon with vigor.

Upon seeing Mountain Mover speaking and swallowing back the words on the tip of his tongue from time to time, Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at him. Then he said, "Mountain, I think it's best for you to command us. It doesn't matter if we're in a dungeon or on a battlefield. I'm just one of your humble Tankers. My hands, your will!"

After hearing what Zhang Yang had to say, Mountain Mover began to smile with confidence. Like one of the old sayings, two tigers cannot live on the same mountain. If Mountain Mover was to be the commander of the party in the dungeon, he would need absolute power over the party. Zhang Yang knew that. That was why he had said it out loud in front of everyone.

The Refresh period of the dungeon would commence in 3 days time. The party managed to clear out the first 8 bosses. So currently, they were stuck with the 9th boss.

[Warlord Hachir] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 105

HP: 50,000,000

Defense: 2,820

Attack: 30,126 - 36,126

Skills:

[Poisonous Blood Infection]: Randomly infects 3 targets with infected poisonous blood, causing 10,000 Nature Damage once in every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds. When the targets are infected, the poisonous blood will continue to infect all targets within the range of 10 meters with the infected target. However, all infected targets will not be able to infect each other any further.

[Infectious Wound]: Weakens the target, increases 50% damage that the targets take. Lasts for 10 seconds. Will only apply to the target with the boss' highest aggro. Cannot be undone.

[Warlord's Wrath]: Sends a conical blast out, causing 200,000 Damage to all targets within the effective range. The Damage will be shared among the number of targets struck.

[Hysterical Drive]: When the HP of the boss is reduced down to 10%, Hachir will enter his Hysterical Drive mode. His Damage will

increase by 50%. His Movement Speed will increase by 100%.

[Madness]: When the battle exceeds 10 minutes, Hachir will enter his Madness form. Both his Damage and Movement Speed will increase by 10 times.

Note: Hachir is the Infamous Executioner of the Dragon Throat Fortress. He kills without mercy, without sparing a single blink.

It was a Red-bodied Orc. The Orc was humongous. It towered over the party of 50 like a giant. The Orc had an axe in both of his hands. Its eyes were completely red as well! By the looks of it, this Orc had obviously been corrupted by the Demons and was now a loyal 'dog'. That was the backstory of the Dragon Throat Fortress. Every single Orc in the fortress had been infected by the Demon's blood and they were now loyal servants of the Demons. That would be more than enough reason for players to slaughter them!

"We have encountered the boss once yesterday. I believe that everyone is aware of the difficulty of this battle." Mountain Mover started talking. "I shall say this once again. All Melee players stay on one side while all Ranged players stay on the other side. Anyone who gets infected by the {Poisonous Blood Infection} needs to get away from your party members as far as possible the moment you realize it. There will be a 3-second gap for you to move. If you can't run away in time, just ask yourself if you're a pig! After the effect of {Poisonous Blood Infection} is over, you will return to the formation from the right. When you're infected, run left! Don't forget! I want this in a single flow, or not people running into each other from opposite directions! Secondly, everyone needs to stay together as closely as possible when the boss uses this Skill. No one

can survive the {Warlord's Wrath} alone ---"

"Guildmaster would survive~!" someone suddenly shouted, causing everyone to laugh.

Mountain Mover was shocked to see that the amount of HP that Zhang Yang had on him was a total of 190,000 HP! He could only quietly scold Zhang Yang for being insane. Although the Attack of the boss had reached up to 200,000 damage, a normal Tanker with 20% Passive Damage Immunity could reduce the damage received down to only 160,000 damage. So it was possible for him to take that hit alone.

Mountain Mover was used to seeing Endless Starlight's HP which only reached up to 90,000 HP. Now that a 'beast' had joined his ranks, Mountain Mover could not help but feel isolated from the world. He felt that Zhang Yang was no longer human!

He smiled and said, "Alright, other than guild master, no one else can take this hit alone! Players with the lowest HP amount would only have about 35,000 HP... hmm? It's 43,000 HP! What the..."

--- Zhang Yang also had Level 6 {Vitality Aura} with him. That had enhanced the Vitality of his entire party by 24%. Mountain Mover was 'moved' once again as he could not get used to it.

"Hmm, so the player with the lowest HP would have 43,000 HP. That means, we need 5 players to share the damage of the {Warlord's Wrath} in order to prevent anyone from dying. Therefore, everyone, especially those who are infected by the



{Poisonous Blood Infection} should maintain appropriate distance with each other from the boss and the party teams. Make sure you don't take the hit from the {Warlord's Wrath} all alone!"

"Roger!"

Everyone replied in unison.

"Lastly, this is my request to the Tankers!" Mountain Mover turned his attention towards Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. Then he said, "Which one of you will be kiting the boss?"

"Boss is here! Of course, it will be him! I shall cheer for him from the sidelines!" Endless Starlight quickly pushed the responsibility away. It would really be a joke if he did not do so. Just look at Zhang Yang's equipment. They were in another realm compared to Endless Starlight! Furthermore, Zhang Yang was well equipped with tons of insanely powerful Skills. He not only excelled in his Defense but also in his Attack. His Attack might even embarrass the other DPS players around him! Therefore, other than Zhang Yang, who else was more suitable at kiting the boss?

Endless Starlight was not the kind that would wear himself out unproductively!

Zhang Yang laughed and he said, "Alright, I'll be the one who tanks and kites!"

"Good. Guildmaster will be our main tank!" Mountain Mover

continued to talk, "After about 3 hours of experimenting, we all know that the {Infectious Wound} will only be activated once every 30 seconds. The boss will be granted a 50% increase in its damage output. Tankers might be in trouble at that point. But uhm ---"

He took a second glance at Zhang Yang's HP. Once again, that amount simply broke all logic.

## Chapter 583: Two in a Row!

---

Before players manage to acquire equipment that would meet the minimum requirement for these bosses, any boss battle would become even harder than flying into the sky with bare hands! No matter how hard you try, you would not be able to kill the boss at all. However, of course, when the level and Tier of the equipment are way "overspecced", the battle would be child's play. The bosses would be crushed within minutes! The players had the 'software' of skills and willpower but lacked the 'hardware'. Hardware can never be completely solved by good gaming skills or the strong will to win.

Crimson Rage managed to announce their might to the world all because of Mellow Venom. Her {Petrification Transformation} Skill indeed came handy whenever they engage a boss. Her transformation Skill was basically like a Mythical Tier equipment that would support her with a high value of Defense. Furthermore, there were also some hidden Inheritance Skills which still remained unknown to the others. She could use her Skills to boost the attributes of her equipment to a whole new level of power.

There were a total of 7 Mythical Tier equipment that Zhang Yang had on him. [Sword of Purging Devourer] and [Warrior's Honor] were not Defense-type equipment. They did not contribute anything to Zhang Yang's Defense, whatsoever. However, a shield would be an essential equipment that all Tankers should have. Zhang Yang had a Level 130 Mythical Tier Shield. That one shield alone had boosted most of his Defensive attributes! His other equipment had also contributed in bringing up his Defense.

Compared to the power-up that Mellow Venom gets from her

{Inheritance}, Zhang Yang would surpass even that!

Mountain Move could not help but smile bitterly. If Zhang Yang had joined them earlier, he would not have had to suffer and wrack his brain trying to get the party to work together.

However, he thought of it from another perspective. If Zhang Yang had joined them earlier on instead of running around in the open world, completing Main Story Quests, he would not be this powerful. If not for that, what chance did they have against this boss?

"Alright, everyone. Time to get in position! We shall take out a boss today!" Mountain Mover said.

Everyone scattered out like a spider web. Zhang Yang raised up his shield and sword, and then he said, "I shall count from three to one, and then we shall charge!"

Three, two, one!

Zhang Yang took the first step and charged towards the boss with large steps, followed by Felice and Thunderhawk. Unfortunately, he could not mount Thunderhawk, even if he wanted to. Players could not be [Mounted] in a dungeon. Or else, his Maximum HP would have reached up to 350,000 HP! The boss would be toyed around by him!

Business as usual, Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} at

the boss and caused 29,802 damage to the boss. He now had a solid hold of the boss' aggro.

"You rats! Can't get enough and back for more?" The boss let out an intimidating roar as he charged at Zhang Yang. With the axe in hand, the boss aimed at Zhang Yang's neck and attempted to hew it off.

‘-14,113!’

Zhang Yang did not use {Block} in order to see how much damage he takes. It would give him a good estimation.

"Just about 14,000 damage?"

"Are you kidding me? The boss caused about 20,000 damage to Starlight!"

"This is our guild master we are talking about! He's all-powerful and mighty!"

Everyone went on about it while Endless Starlight slumped over. Then he said weakly, "I'm also quite powerful, alright?"

The battle has begun. Everyone went to their own position as they started carving up the boss.

Zhang Yang did not have to care so much about holding back

anymore, as he needed to lock the aggro of the boss to himself. All he needed to do was to steadily attack the boss and maintain the boss's aggro. After looking at the Top DPS list, Fatty Han would need to double the damage he was dealing with the boss in order to catch up with the damage Zhang Yang did!

"What the hell! How can guild master deal so much damage to the boss? That's terrifying!"

"That's right! Brother Han used to say that if anyone exceeds the damage he deals on monsters or bosses, he would pay 10,000 gold coin to the person. Now, guild master left him in the dust!"

"Yea! His face is pale, alright!"

Fatty Han could no longer take it all in silence. He attempted to defend his dignity, as he said, "Little Yang is my brother! I'm just letting him! If I activate my {Vampire Transformation}, no one will ever match me! I shall be able to kill anything that stands in my way! Repressing little Yang would be a walk in the park!"

Everyone laughed.

After a brief moment, Hachir began to activate his Skills. He threw out his {Poisonous Blood Infection} and {Warlord's Wrath} at the party. Fortunately, although it caused them to panic momentarily, they all had experience in handling such situations. They moved around, as briefed by Mountain Mover.

The worst threat came from the {Infectious Wound} of the boss. The Skill would increase his attacks by 50% additional damage on the Tankers. As players that were afflicted by the side effect of the {Infectious Wound} would keep bleeding, they would require a Healer to take care of them.

They also had taken out the boss within 10 minutes. Or else, if the boss ever gets the chance to activate {Hysterical Drive}, even Zhang Yang would be instantly killed by the boss! It made perfect sense that not everyone could deal high damage like Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, and Wei Yan Er! Therefore, taking out the boss within 10 minutes proved to be a little more challenging than expected.

Under those circumstances, the party had to focus more on dealing damage to the boss rather than healing themselves. It heavily depended on the part of the tanker, if the tanker is tough enough, they would be able to lash out without much worry.

If they were more focused on healing, the Tanker would have no pressure at all. However, if the DPS of the party was not strong enough, it would be impossible for the party to take out the boss within 10 minutes. By then, the party would be wiped out by the boss upon activating its {Hysterical Drive}! Meanwhile, if they did not focus on healing, the Tanker would be having a hard time kiting the boss. Either way, would lead them to perish by the end of the battle!

Now that they had a super Tanker Zhang Yang, the problem has been solved! With his Defense, even if Zhang Yang was affected by {Infectious Wound}, the boss could only deal about 25,000 damage to him. Zhang Yang would only receive a total of 130,000 damage

without using {Block}. After all, he had over 190,000 HP...

Upon solving the worst problem in battling this boss, everyone only needed to focus on dealing as much damage as possible to the boss, according to plan.

The DPS of the party was not weak at all. With Zhang Yang joining in, the boss lasted about 8 minutes before it let out a miserable roar, collapsed onto the ground and stay dead. Of course, upon the death of the boss, tons of loot dropped from the dead body of the boss. Lone Desert Smoke had progressed to 9/15!

"Just that simple, huh?" after clearing the 9th boss, everyone was having a hard time believing it. They had been busting their butts, trying to bring down that boss. Past attempts had ended up with wipeouts after 10 minutes, or before the boss even activates {Hysterical Drive} or {Madness}. Why were things so different now? The boss went down like there was no difficulty at all!

Some of them even suspected that they had selected the wrong mode of the dungeon! Was it Hard Mode?

The boss dropped a total of 3 Violet-Platinum Tier equipment. One of them was an exclusive equipment only for the Battle Companions. Zhang Yang did not try to fight his party members over the equipment. The equipment he had was already more than enough to clear out all of Dragon Throat Fortress. It would be wiser to let others upgrade themselves so that they would become more powerful in order to support the guild.



After all, one could not just rely on himself to make a guild powerful. He should look at the bigger picture and take the path that leads to the guild getting powerful as a whole, rather than himself. That being said, the guild members were the key to making the entire guild strong and powerful!

Therefore, increasing the standard of the overall guild members would be the best method!

After distributing the loots among themselves, the party continued to push on. They killed every single monster that got in their way as they made their way to challenge the 10th boss.

Zhang Yang was not interested in tanking against weak monsters. He left them to Endless Starlight. After all, this second-in-command Tanker would want to shine once in a while. He would not be willing to sit on the bench like a backup!

The monsters were not as numerous as there were in the open world. However, each of the monsters was extremely powerful. They must be the elites of the elite Tier! They were basically as powerful as mini-bosses. It took about one to two minutes for the entire party to take down one of them.

Zhang Yang was slicing and dicing the monsters in front of him when he struck out with his {Destructive Smash}, he suddenly felt his right arm getting a little hot. A strange feeling shot straight up his chest right after that!

"Ang ---" a large figure of an eastern-styled dragon burst right out

from Zhang Yang's sword and attacked two of the elite Tier monsters right before him!

‘-289,930!’

‘-317,820!’

Two extremely high damage values popped right on top of the two monsters. Everyone stared wordlessly at them!

That was... the {Rising Dragon Strike}!

Although the damage of the Skill was quite terrifying and it could deal 10 times of the player's normal damage within a long range, the rate of it activating was extremely small! It only got triggered once after Zhang Yang entered the dungeon and went through many battles!

The most tragic part of it was that Zhang Yang had no control over when to trigger it!

Sigh, it was such a waste for the Skill to trigger on weaker monsters.

After a small, intriguing incident, the party continued to push on. They took about another two hours to cross over some twists and turns before they finally arrived at the boss stage for the 10th boss.

Although they had defeated the boss in Normal Mode and Hard Mode before, the boss in Hardcore Mode could not possibly be as simple. Not only would the boss have enhanced Skills, the boss would also have one or two additional New Skills. It would not be wise at all to bring forth the tactics that were used to defeat the boss before in Hard Mode, even though it was the same boss with similar behaviors.

Zhang Yang did not say a word as he followed every instruction and command from Mountain Mover. He allowed the commander of this party to work at his full potential. The party was going through a process of trial and error.

Dungeon exploration could be an extremely boring thing, as players would have to face the same boss over and over again. If they ever encounter some bosses that were too powerful for them to handle, they would be forced to repeat battling the same boss over and over again until they manage to clear it. Well, it would be frustrating for most of the people to repeat the same thing over again and again.

The party was wiped up by the boss several times. As everyone began to feel exhausted, they sat down and took a break by a safe spot. They cracked some jokes and laughed to ease some tension. A few of the girls on the party came up with songs and dances to cheer the boys up a little bit. After just a while, everyone was refreshed.

After a few more attempts, the party had a clearer picture of the boss.

With Zhang Yang as the main Tanker in suppressing the assaults from the boss, the party had nothing much to worry about except getting the right tactics for bringing down the boss. As long as they applied the appropriate tactics and methods, bringing down the boss would not be an issue at all. It would just be a matter of time.

One night had passed. The party managed to slay the 10th boss right before it was time for most of the party members to log out of the game and get to work. By killing the boss, Lone Desert Smoke had caught up to Crimson Rage's progress. That had put a huge question of doubt on whether Crimson Rage would still triumph in the contest of securing the 'First Clear' title of the dungeon.

Zhang Yang did not stay in the dungeon for the following days. Instead, he went on to help the little brat in completing the quests for her [Darkness Inheritance]. They spent hours taking down some mini-bosses. Even though the little brat and Han Ying Xue could have completed the quests all by their own, but Zhang Yang wanted her to get her [Darkness Inheritance] as soon as possible to boost the Strength of his guild. With his aid, the progress of completing the quests became much quicker than expected!

With how Crimson Rage and Lone Desert Smoke were rampaging across the dungeon stages, other guilds were not willing to be left behind. They started to send their own members with [Inheritances] to the front lines. It did not matter if it was Nihilum (Mess Up Your Mama) and Paragon from Europe Region, or Blood Legion and Exodus from the North America Region, these top Tier guilds had caught up with the China Region's progress.

As the contest in clearing the dungeon drags on, more players would acquire [Inheritance]. Even though anything lower than Class C [Inheritances] did not provide players with {Inheritance Transformation} Skills, but they still gained a certain amount of power-up. Furthermore, they would also acquire some New Skills from their newly acquired [Inheritances,] as well. Surely, they would become significantly more powerful.

With the addition of players with [Inheritances], every guild that took part in the contest in clearing the Hardcore mode of the dungeon had managed to progress up to 10/15 in no time at all.

However, the difficulty of the boss battles in Dragon Throat Fortress would become entirely different after 5 bosses. That being said, the difficulty of killing the last 5 bosses would increase drastically, compared to the previous boss battles! After breaking through an extremely difficult situation, they were forced to face another even more difficult situation where they had no way of breaking through just yet. The 11th boss had become their new obstacle in clearing the Hardcore Mode of the Dragon Throat Fortress.

Since many players had used their {Inheritance Transformations} during the battle with the Ancient Creatures, when the cooldown for their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills are over, the contest would take place on a whole new level.

# Chapter 584: Frost Lord Maron Curse

---

After accompanying the little brat in slaying a few mini-bosses, the three of them had to stop at the quest where they were required to slay the Lord of Darkness 'Mordock' --- The final boss for the Class A [Inheritance] quest was much more powerful than Vampire Count Ferra. They could not take on the boss just yet!

Over the next few days, Hundred Shots, Galileo and Sun Xin Yu had already completed the preliminary quests before the final quest for their [Inheritances]. Now, each of them only had to kill the final boss of their own [Inheritance] questlines before they could acquire their [Inheritances].

Zhang Yang could only choose to leave Sun Xin Yu in the basket as the boss she needed to kill was a Class S [Inheritance] boss. Unless Felice goes wild again like she did before, the boss would not be going down anytime soon. That dragonhawk lady was really a nightmare when she went berserk!

Since they were still incapable of slaying the final bosses for Class S and Class A [Inheritance] quests just yet, but they would still have a glimpse of hope in taking down the final boss for Class B [Inheritance] quests. As long as Zhang Yang has his {God of War Transformation} ready at hand, and some luck in triggering the special effect of {Glare of the Death God}, everything should work accordingly like how it did during their battle with Vampire Count Ferra. They would really stand a high chance of taking down the boss and completing the quest.

Though Vampire Count Ferra was a little subpar as final boss for

Class B [Inheritance] quest, Zhang Yang now had quite a number of upgrades on his equipment. With his {God of War Transformation} activated, the total amount of his HP would reach up to 7,650,000 HP! That would be almost double the amount of HP he had back when they were taking on Vampire Count Ferra!

After some considerations here and there, Zhang Yang decided to help Lost Dream and the other 2 members get their Class B {Inheritances} first. When they have 4 Class B {Inheritance Transformations} and 1 Class S {Inheritance Transformation} ready, the Lone Desert Smoke should be able to take down the last 5 bosses of Dragon Throat Fortress in a row!

Zhang Yang brought Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream and the other party members along as they departed for the quest. They endured much pain and suffering while battling against the high leveled monsters. After struggling for half a day, the party finally arrived at their destination. The Frost Lord Maron Curse was standing in the middle of the marshland of Haccerlant's Basin.

It was a large creature formed from frost and ice. It had a humanoid appearance that was hundreds of meters tall. The angular, clear, glass-like frost on the surface of the body threw off star-shaped reflections of iridescent light as the beast moved about, stoically shaking the loose snow off itself. It was such a sight to behold!

Frost Lord Maron Curse (Ethereal, Elemental)

Level: 150

HP: 150,000,000

Defense: 9,950

Attack: 75,409 - 95,409 (Determined as a Physical Attack, but deals Frost Damage)

Skills:

[Frost Aura]: Reduces 50% Movement Speed of all targets within effective range. There is a 1% chance of freezing the target. Freeze effect lasts for 5 seconds. When frozen Targets are struck by Maron Curse, the Critical Rate on the targets is increased by 50%.

[Frosty Edge]: Summons frosty pikes from above, raining down upon all targets within the area of 10 X 10 meters. Causes 50,000 Frost Damage to all targets once every second. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Ice Ring]: Unleashes a ring of frost, causing 30,000 Frost Damage to all targets within the range of 20 meters. Targets will be afflicted with a freezing effect which will last for 5 seconds. When frozen Targets are struck by Maron Curse, the Critical Rate on the targets is increased by 50%.

[Frost Spawn]: The boss vanishes and summons the same number of Frost Spawns as the number of players on his aggro list. These Frost Spawns are meant to annihilate all enemies within the site. After 3 minutes, Maron Curse will reappear. Each Frost Spawn that



is left alive will heal Maron Curse by 1% of his HP bar.

[Frost Build]: Immune to all Frost-type attacks and Frost-type Status Restriction Skills. However, Fire Damage will increase the damage received by the boss by an additional 50%.

Note: According to legend, Maron Curse was born from a broken toe of the God of Frost. Therefore, do not underestimate him!

"Count Ferra was rubbish compared to this boss!" After reading the attributes of Maron Curse, everyone sighed.

Wei Yan Er suddenly looked at Fatty Han and compared their current situation with the situation when they were battling Count Ferra. That little brat said, "As expected from the fatty, wretched ones will only get a half-baked [Vampire Inheritance]!"

Fatty Han filled his eyes with tears and said, "Come on... my [Inheritance] is also Class B, alright..."

"Brother fatty, don't you know that there are B+ and B-in the Classes as well?" Endless Starlight patted Fatty Han on his shoulder and said, "It's not that I want to look down on you, but the boss that we slew back in the final quest for your [Inheritance] was just weak! Of course, this boss would not be nearly as powerful as my 'King Kong'!"

"Little Yang... are there such different classes like B+ and B-for the [Inheritance,] even though they are both Class B?" As Fatty

Han saw that Endless Starlight was being so serious, he could not help but feel a little depressed. So he quickly asked Zhang Yang to find out.

Zhang Yang shook his head as he smiled, then he said, "I have never heard of it before!"

"You pr\*ck! How dare you make fun of me!" Fatty Han got angry immediately as he saw Starlight laughing.

Zhang Yang equipped his [Party Summon Order] and summoned other 9 healers from Morning Town over to their location. Then, he rearranged the structure of the party.

Previously, they had managed to hold off the assaults of the Vampire Count Ferra, because Zhang Yang had support from the special effect of [Titan Chest Plate]. That equipment provided a recovery of 75% HP to him. However, the amount of HP recovery had been reduced to 20%. On the other hand, this boss had a much higher damage output compared to the previous one. Judging by numbers alone, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart would never be able to heal him up quickly enough.

Therefore, Zhang Yang brought along some members who already had [Flying Mounts]. Then, he also summoned some Healers with very good equipment, however, without [Flying Mounts] to support them in battle.

Currently, the party had a total of 42 players. 2 of them were Tankers, 13 of them were Healers, and 27 of them were DPS

players.

"This should do the trick. We should be able to heal Zhang Yang up with so many Healers." Fatty Han did not have much confidence.

"We won't know till we try!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and then said, "The challenging part of this boss battle will be the boss's {Frosty Edge}. We will be staying within the effective range of the {Frost Aura} all the while, during the battle. Our Movement Speed will surely be reduced. Most of us will surely be frozen as well. We wouldn't be able to dodge that, and we will be exposed to a high chance of receiving Critical Damage! Therefore, everyone, get your own Anti Status Restriction Skills ready. Only use them to unfreeze yourself when you're struck by the {Frosty Edge}!"

"Ranged players, maintain a distance of about 10 meters, between each of you. That can prevent the {Frosty Edge} from hitting multiple targets in one shot. As for the Melee players, we have no choice but to go head on. You know what to do!"

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and said, "Now, move out!"

He activated his {God of War Transformation}. His wings spread out, as usual, looking like a god with all the seven-colors of the rainbow emanating from him.

However, Fatty Han did not activate his {Vampire Transformation}.

It was an insurance for them. Just in case the party fails to kill the boss in 2 hours, Fatty Han could still transform and take over as a tank in Zhang Yang's place. Although he was a Hunter, with his {Vampire Transformation}, Fatty Han should be able to take more hits than anyone else. As long as he could buy enough time for the special effect of {Glare of the Death God} to kick in, it would become possible for the party to kill the boss!

"This is not a place for mortals like you to be! Get lost!" Maron Curse let out a thunderous voice that rocked the entire place. Every breath he released turned into ice and frost. Grains of ice particles formed above the players and rained down upon them like a rain of hail.

The boss swung his hand and palmed at Zhang Yang like a martial artist.

Although Zhang Yang could move swiftly in {God of War Form}, his Movement Speed had been reduced by 50% the moment he enters the effective range of the {Frost Aura}. So, he had to take the hit. It would not have been possible for him to dodge the attack, even if he was not affected by the Movement Speed Reduction effect.

Zhang Yang did not hesitate at all as he took that opportunity to throw the {Glare of the Death God} at the boss. Even though the Level Gap Suppression was punishing them now, {Glare of the Death God} would still ignore Defense and Damage Immunity

effects! This Skill could really be deemed as the best 'boss-killer' in the entire game!

A dark skull formed on the head of the boss... the Skill was a success!

Everyone was crying in tears of joy as they were worried about it being resisted. It was a nerve-wracking moment for them to wait and see if the Skill would be resisted or not! The party quickly got into the positions that they were meant to be as they unleashed their assaults on the boss. Waves of fierce assaults rained upon the boss without any moment of pause.

The only thing that mattered in order to trigger the special effect of the {Glare of the Death God} was the rate of attacks. The damage did not apply anymore when it all comes down to that! With more players attacking the boss, the {Glare of the Death God} would be triggered more frequently. The HP of the boss was reduced by 10% in just 5 seconds! It was a good start for Zhang Yang and his party.

"You have angered me, mortals!" Maron Curse let out a raging roar and pointed one of his fingers at Wei Yan Er. A cloud of ice suddenly appeared, on top of the little brat. The next thing that happened was ice arrows raining down upon the little brat!

The little brat was shocked, but she managed to react just in time as she urged on her [Winged Tiger] to run. Although her Movement Speed had been reduced by 50%, the Movement Speed of her [Flying Mount] was much faster than the Movement Speed of a player. Furthermore, the ice arrows only covered 10 square meters of space. Wei Yan Er was only struck once before she got

out from the effective range of the ice arrows.

As the Melee-type players were more concentrated in one spot, Wei Yan Er was not the only one who got struck by the ice arrows. Sun Xin Yu was standing within the range of the assault as well. Fortunately, the central point of the attack was the little brat, so Sun Xin Yu managed to get out of the range right before the ice arrows hit her.

The battle had just begun. Although the equipment on everyone had improved significantly ever since they took on Vampire Count Ferra, the total amount of damage they could deal to the boss after each passing second was still far from enough. It could be described as pitifully low! This was all thanks to the Level Gap Suppression function of the game! On the other hand, the boss could deal about 110,000 damage to Zhang Yang with just a normal slam! If the Level Gap Suppression function would trigger 5 times of damage, the damage that the boss could deal on Zhang Yang would reach up to 300,000 damage!

That was not a Critical Hit! It would become even worse than that if the boss strikes Zhang Yang with a Critical Hit!

The boss also had {Frost Ring} which could freeze all targets within the effective range of the Skill. If Zhang Yang could not unfreeze himself in time, the worst case scenario was that he would be receiving a total of 600,000 damage in a single hit from the boss! Without the support of an {Inheritance Transformation}, any Tanker would be instantly killed!

Of course, that was possible, because of the Level Gap

Suppression function of the game. Furthermore, that amount of damage would only be possible if the Level Gap Suppression function of the game had triggered 5 times the regular damage. It would not be possible for the boss to deal such high damage under normal circumstances!

The 13 Healers were healing Zhang Yang with their might. After all, Zhang Yang had over 7,000,000 HP. They did not have to worry about over healing Zhang Yang at all. All they were required to do was to heal until they ran out of MP. When that happens, they would just rest while waiting for their MP to recover, as they would fully utilize the rule of the 5-second gap to recover their MP bars.

That was possible because Zhang Yang had a long HP bar. He would be able to last for 30 seconds against the boss, even if there was no one there to heal him. In other words, the healers could take half a minute break whenever they had healed Zhang Yang back to his full health state. That gave the healers a greater margin of error as they heal Zhang Yang.

Even though Zhang Yang was supported with so many Healers from the rear, this boss was a real tough son of the b\*tch to kill! The boss was constantly activating {Frosty Edge}, giving the party a hard time. Everyone was forced to move around dodging deadly ice spikes that were showering down on them while they were within the effective range of the Skill.

Healers were required to stay still when they were casting their spells --- if they were mounted on a [Mount], their [Mounts] would have to stay still as well. Therefore, when everyone was forced to

move around a lot, none of the Healers could heal Zhang Yang efficiently! It was already hard enough to heal Zhang Yang without any interruptions!

The special effect of [Titan Chest plate] had also been nerfed a lot. However, it could still recover 20% of Zhang Yang's HP. That would be about 1,500,000 HP out of his total 7,000,000 HP. Although he could only heal himself once every two-and-a-half minutes, he could heal himself by 10,000HP per second. That amount of healing was equally powerful as Fantasy Sweetheart's healing! However, it would still be a little weaker compared to the healing capabilities of Han Ying Xue.

In a nutshell, the situation was under control at the moment.

"My people, reveal yourselves, and fight for me!" 3 minutes into the battle, Maron Curse roared into the sky. In an instant, the boss shattered into countless pieces of ice and scattered across the ground. Then, mini versions of Maron Curse spawned right from the shattered ice, one after another.

--- that must be the {Frost Spawn}!

[Frost Spawn] (Elite, Elemental)

Level: 145

HP: 1,000,000



Defense: 0

Attack: 20,415 - 28,415 (Determined as Physical Attack, but deal Frost Damage)

Skills: None

"Regroup! Regroup!" Zhang Yang quickly shouted out to all of his party members. The boss had vanished from the battlefield for the moment. The party did not have to worry about the threat posed by the {Frost Edge} anymore for now. They could gather in one spot and focus on their assaults on the Frost Spawns.

Upon activation of {Vanguard's Aggression}, Zhang Yang sent out a blue barrier out into his surroundings and shielded everyone within the barrier.

Currently, he had 18 EP ready to be dispatched. If he wanted to use {God of War Devastation}, he could cause 300% Melee Attack of Physical Damage upon the 19 monsters at the same instant. That would be about 300,000 damage on each of the monsters if none of his hits was a Critical Hit.

However, Zhang Yang was considering the limitation caused by the Level Gap Suppression function as well. With a Strength Attribute of 4,030, he could cause about 40,000 Chaos Damage to the targets as well. There would not be any limitation on that at all. On the other hand, he could dish out 6 blows of {God of War's Crushing Strike} with 18 EP. He would be causing a total of 240,000 damage to the targets!

After weighing the effectiveness of the two Skills, Zhang Yang decided to use {God of War's Crushing Strike} as it could deal much more damage than the other option. The basic attack of the {God of War Devastation} was around 300,000 damage. After being nerfed by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, the Skill would only deal around 150,000 damage.

Furthermore, the {God of War Devastation} could only hit 19 targets at the same time. There was a total of 42 monsters in the area. It was still far from enough.

In the end, Zhang Yang chose to use his {God of War's Crushing Strike}.

He raised the shield in his left hand up and smashed it hard on the ground. A beam of golden light poured into the ground and began to spread swiftly across the surrounding ground for a hundred meters. Boom! As the golden beam emerged through the surface of the ground, all targets within the hundred-meter range received 403,000 Chaos Damage!

Right after that, the aggro of the monsters went over to Zhang Yang in an instance. All 43 Frost Spawns were moving towards Zhang Yang.

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang struck out a conical-shaped blastwave towards the monsters and stunned every one of them. The replicated special

effect of his [Sword of Purging Devourer] was triggered without surprise. However, the effect only popped once. Sigh... if only the replicated special effect of this sword had not been nerfed by the official, this {Blast Wave} would have triggered the special effect multiple times. He would have been able to take out at least half of the HP of these monsters!

After giving some thought about it, it was true that the replicated special effect of his sword was too powerful, and was a legitimate bug!

Everyone did not wait for Zhang Yang's signal. They were launching their assaults as aggressively as they could at the monsters. Although everyone was also affected by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game, the monsters had 0 Defense. So, the damage everyone dealt with the monsters was a little higher compared to the amount of damage they were dealing with the boss. Furthermore, the Chaos Damage of the {God of War's Crushing Strike} could ignore the effect of Level Gap Suppression. With Zhang Yang as the main attacker, these elite Tier monsters were taken out with ease.

## Chapter 585: A Chopped-off

---

The next minute gave the party a moment to take a deep breath and rally up. They took the opportunity to use some [Bandages] and wait for their Skills to cooldown. The Magic-type players recovered quite an amount of MP during that period of time.

The third minute had passed. The corpses of Frost Spawns melted into puddles of water. Then, the water gathered around together and reformed the massive body of Maron Curse.

Everything went back to normal. Everyone was attacking the boss in their previous places.

"One Sword Stroke is about to get married!" Fatty Han suddenly said it out loud, "According to some rumors I just heard, the Imperial Sky had purchased tons of [Fire Crackers]. They are using the [Fire Crackers] in Greenfield City!"

One Sword Stroke was about to get married? With Luo Xin Yan?

Zhang Yang could not help himself, thinking that it was odd. It was not because he could not let go of Luo Xin Yan. After everything she did to him in his previous life, there was nothing left between them anymore. Zhang Yang could not fathom the decision that One Sword Stroke had just made. One Sword Stroke would still marry Luo Xin Yan even after finding out that she was a mistress of Liu Wei --- in truth, the two of them met when Liu Wei introduced the girl to everyone, including One Sword Stroke. That was how everything started. That was why One Sword Stroke

turned against Liu Wei. He even intended to marry the girl now? Could he already be doomed by love?

"Who's his wife then?" Everyone was a little curious. After all, One Sword Stroke was considered one of the celebrities in China Region. He was officially known as the second-most powerful Tanker in the entire game. The best Tanker was, of course, Zhang Yang.

"She's my wife's classmate!" When Fatty Han mentioned the words 'My wife', his eyes were glittering. He seemed to take great comfort in that.

"However, can Liu Wei accept such humiliation, then?" Well, the incident between One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei had been quite a hit on the forums. Most of the players who visited the forum would know the squabble between those two.

"What can he do if he cannot accept it? Can he bite?" Endless Starlight squinted with his mouth twitched.

Because of Zhang Yang, everyone was hostile towards Liu Wei. Most of them even hated him very much.

Lost Dream smiled coldly and said, "Obviously. You have not seen what powerful men can do when they are provoked!"

"Will it be very bad?" Daffodil Daydream was hoping that she could see the happy ending, no matter the person.

"That's really hard to say, for now!" Lost Dream shook his head, "When the strength of a family has reached a certain level, they will have many enemies. Their capabilities will be beyond your imagination! Furthermore, the worst, intolerable thing for men is having your girl cheat on you behind your back! I guess Liu Wei will never be able to let go!"

"Anyway, it has nothing to do with us! Let's focus on slaying the boss, then!" Hundred Shots put the topic to rest.

"Ha! It's boring if we only keep fighting the boss, you know!"

Under the large influence of the Level Gap Suppression effect, the damage that the entire party could deal on the boss was unacceptably low. Fortunately, the AoE attacks of Zhang Yang was powerful enough to take out all of the Frost Spawns. So, no one in the party had to suffer any damage at all. Or else, the party would have been wiped out by the elite Tier monsters.

One hour later, the boss only lost 42% of its HP. Zhang Yang and his party were still far away from victory.

Unfortunately for them, the second attempt of {Glare of the Death God} was resisted by the boss.

Truth to be told, this Skill had an extremely high chance of being resisted by higher Tiered bosses. However, everyone could not help sighing and sobbing constantly, because this was an extremely important battle for them. It would affect the movement of their

guild in the upcoming days! Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were working together in teasing Zhang Yang, as they kept saying that Zhang Yang should not leave his hands unwashed after taking a poop. That would leave a big mark on his own character. They even reminded Zhang Yang to help the elderly in crossing the roads whenever he could.

Fortunately, the party had come up with a Plan B before the battle. They would have Fatty Han activate his {Vampire Transformation} if they still could not take out the boss when Zhang Yang's {God of War Transformation} ends. They did not fall into despair. Everyone was focused on dealing damage to the boss.

Another hour had passed, only 25% HP remained on the boss. However, that was also the moment when the duration of the {God of War Transformation} was expiring!

"Fatty! Transform!" Zhang Yang shouted at Fatty Han, 10 seconds before his {God of War Transformation} faded.

"Roger!" Fatty Han quickly activated his {Vampire Transformation}. In an instant, a pair of gray bat wings spread out from his back. Two long fangs came right out from his mouth and his skin turned pale all of a sudden. Fatty Han looked like a dried-up corpse.

"Wow! Fatty Han looks really abnormal now!" Wei Yan Er laughed out loud.

"It's transformed! Transformed!" Fatty Han did not mind if

people call him fat. However, he could not accept people for making fun of him like that. So he was trying to argue with the little brat while releasing arrows towards the boss.

3, 2, 1!

That was the moment when {God of War Transformation} finally faded. Zhang Yang immediately activated {Shadow of the Void} and escaped into a void dimension. After he had removed himself from the aggro of the boss, Zhang Yang reappeared and joined the battle.

Other than Zhang Yang, Fatty Han was dealing the highest damage to the boss currently. So, the moment Zhang Yang disengaged from the battle, Fatty Han became first on the aggro list of the boss.

"Damn mortals! I'm going to crush you! Destroy you!" The Frost Lord turned to Fatty Han and gave fatty a good slam with his hand.

‘-161,080!’

An extremely high damage value popped up on top of Fatty Hang. He was so shocked that he began to panic and scream, "What the f\*ck! How is it possible that this boss is so much more ferocious than the boss that we encountered back in the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress!?"

"You idiot! That was just a Level 110 Violet-Platinum Tier boss



and this is a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss! What? Do you think you can compare that two side by side?"

"Hahaha! What a weak bunch of mortals!" The boss raised his palm again and smashed it straight onto Fatty Han.

‘-405,659!’

An even higher damage value was struck upon Fatty Han!

"You f\*cking fatty... are you made out of water, or what? How can the boss cause so much damage to you?!"

Fatty Han felt like weeping. Although his Defense was now several times higher after he activated his {Vampire Transformation}, he was only equipped with Leather-Armor. He only had 420 Defense, initially. Upon the 3 times boost on his Defense, he would only have over 1,260 Defense. That amount of Defense was not able to match the Defense that a Yellow-Gold Tier Shield could provide!

Meanwhile, Fatty Han only had 5% Passive Damage Immunity. His defense capability was not really different from his Defense before he activated his {Inheritance Transformation} Skill. The only thing that he could rely on was the boost on his HP. Upon that HP boost from his ‘transformation Skill’ and the boost from {Vitality Aura}, Fatty Han had over 1,736,000 HP.

He could only take on all the punishment from the boss head-on

by relying on his long HP bar. As long as he is not taken out by the boss in one or two hits, then the Healers from the rear could still heal him up! Fatty Han did not have any Skill that was similar to {Block} which could protect him from damage for a short period of time. Therefore, the healing capacity of the Healers became the main key to his survival in tanking against the boss.

Just because of that, the pressure on the Healers became unimaginably high. They had never thought that it was possible for the act of healing a Tanker to become so stressful! The 13 Healers busted their asses trying to heal up that fatty's ass. However, they could not keep up with the pace of the boss. So, the HP bar of Fatty Han was constantly reducing from 1,700,000 to 1,500,000, then from 1,500,000 down to 1,300,000 ...

If his HP bar ever falls lower than 400,000 HP, Fatty Han would risk being instantly killed by the boss with only one hit!

Just when things seemed to have become hopeless, the cooldown for {Glare of the Death God} was finally over! Zhang Yang prayed to his ancestors that the Skill would not be resisted by the boss before he threw it onto the boss.

Right after he cast the Skill onto the boss, a dark skull began to form on top of the boss!

The Skill was not resisted! Praise the lord!

Everyone was cheering, for victory was now possible!

‘-1,500,000!’

‘-1,500,000!’

High damage values began to pop right on top of the boss as the HP bar of the boss was reducing steeply!

"Holy molly! Every time when I look at this scenario, it always gets me pumped with hot blood!" Fatty Han was shooting with joy and excitement. Upon the activation of his {Vampire Transformation}, he had acquired a boost of 300% on his Attack. Every arrow he shot at the boss could cause about 70,000 damage! The amount of damage he could deal was so much higher than the amount of damage that Wei Yan Er could cause on the boss.

4 seconds later, the effect of {Glare of the Death God} had finally faded. The boss was only left with only 14% HP!

Now that the problem had been simplified, everyone only had to count on how long could Fatty Han last against the boss now!

Zhang Yang activated his {Indiscriminate} and gulped down a bottle of [Power Potion (Grade 10 Transmutation)]. Then, he struck out at the boss with his {Killing Cleave}!

‘-23,311!’

It was an unlucky attempt. Zhang Yang had only caused about 20% of his initial damage.

"Haih... there is not a sense of accomplishment at all from battling a boss which has a Level Gap Suppression over us. What can that little amount of damage really do to the boss?" He shook his head while giving out a heavy sigh.

"That's true! That few thousand points of damage.. no... only a few hundred sometimes! Those numbers are why I'm depressed!" Lost Dream shook his head as well.

"However, this boss is not that powerful. At least his AoE attacks are not intimidating, or whatsoever!" Zhang Yang concluded.

Endless Starlight rolled his eyes at Zhang Yang said, "Boss, how can you say that! Even with you and Fatty Han transformed, we are still getting our butts kicked by the boss! What are you thinking?!"

Zhang Yang continued to shake his head, then he said, "If the boss has an even more powerful AoE attack, we would not have survived it just now. We would have to rely on healing to stay alive. Or worse, we would have to depend on our numbers and switch between batches of parties! It wouldn't have been possible for a party with less than 50 players to take down the boss if that's the case!"

"Haha! Judging from what you just said, this [Inheritance] of Lost Dream should be just like mine! It should also be a 'shrunk' one, eh?" Fatty Han could not help but feel happy, as he finally found someone to 'go along' with him.

"Urgh... the boss of this quest is still much harder to take on than the boss of your [Inheritance] quest." Zhang Yang said.

Even though their equipment had improved tremendously and they had two players with [Inheritances] to support them in battle, it was still much more difficult for them to kill this boss. Judging by the looks of it, this [Inheritance] should be more powerful than the [Vampire Inheritance].

Lost Dream could not help himself but sigh heavily. After all the trouble that he put himself through, he could only get a Class B [Inheritance] that would be slightly more powerful than the [Vampire Inheritance] that Fatty Han had. What a sad case!

As the HP amount of the boss had dropped below 20%, everyone had entered their own 'Slaughter Mode' as they unleashed their 'killing-skills' on the boss. Although the Level Gap Suppression still existed throughout the entire boss battle, the HP bar of Maron Curse was reduced rapidly at a constant pace! It was only a brief moment later when the boss was only left with 10% of its HP.

However, the circumstances were unfavorable for Fatty Han. His HP had dropped down to about 600,000 HP. The worst part was that the Healers could not heal him back up at all!

"F\*cking fatty! Use your {Bat Form}! Now!" Zhang Yang said.

Fatty Han would risk himself to be killed instantly by one single hit from the boss the moment his total amount of HP is lower than 400,000 HP.

"Roger!" Fatty Han replied. After that, his big fat body began to split into 10 little bats and charged towards the boss. Those little bats began to suck the HP off the boss to recover Fatty Han's HP!

"What black sorcery is this?!" Maron Curse roared in rage as it began to slam its body with its own hands. It smacked the bats one at a time, trying to get rid of the bats.

However, the boss could only smack one bat every two seconds. So, it took the boss 20 seconds to smack all 10 bats from his body. By then, the bats had more than enough time to retrieve quite a substantial amount of HP for the fatty. After all the bats were taken out, Fatty Han reappeared on the battlefield out of thin air. His HP had recovered back to 100%!

After all, {Bat Form} was the ultimate Skill for Vampires to recover their health! Fatty Han could only use it once in every 30 minutes. Of course, it would be powerful!

8%, 6%, 4%!

Now, victory was imminent. Tens of minutes later, the Frost Lord collapsed onto the ground and dropped tons of loots across the ground.

# Chapter 586: Lost of Control over the Progress of the Dungeon

---

After the boss died, Lost Dream was the only one who was excited. Others were just calm.

Well, the boss was Level 150. So basically, even if the equipment the boss dropped had the special attribute that reduces 20 levels on the Required Level, it would require players to be Level 130 to be able to equip them. Although the equipment was all good and powerful, none of them were up to that level yet. So, none of them would be able to equip any of the equipment just yet. It would only be an eyesore in the inventory.

On the other hand, Lost Dream had found and picked up the 'Frost Essence' that his [Inheritance] required. With that quest item, Lost Dream was just a few minor steps away from getting his [Snowman Inheritance]. He would only be required to run some errands and slay some mini-bosses for the remaining quests.

However, the equipment that was dropped by a Level 150 Ethereal Tier boss would really make players drool. These were some powerful and unique equipment! Although they could not equip them so soon, they would be able to feast upon the powerful equipment with their eyes for the moment.

The boss had dropped a total of 4 equipment. Two were Mythical Tier while the other two were Ethereal Tier! The gang naturally ignored the Mythical Tier equipment, as the Required Level to equip them was Level 130! By then, this equipment would be less powerful than they should be when compared to other Ethereal

Tier Level 150 equipment. They were more eager to see what the two Ethereal Tier equipment had to offer.

Everyone moved their heads over a little to take a closer look at the two Ethereal Tier equipment. Of course, they were going to look at the 'products' after struggling for half a day, trying to bring down a boss.

One of the two equipment was a silver-gray shortsword while the other one was a necklace on fire. Would the necklace set the player on fire when the player equips it?

Wei Yan Er picked up the short sword and pasted the attributes onto the party channel.

[Half Moon Frosty Axe] (Ethereal, One-Handed)

Attack: 5,350 - 7,350

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 2,268

Equip: When the target is struck, there is a certain rate that the target will be heavily damaged, reducing its attack by 10%. Lasts for 10 seconds. The effect can also be applied to Boss-type monsters. However, the effects cannot stack.



{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces 20 levels on the Required Level.

Note: This is a Weapon of God that was forged by the ancients. Even if you are far away from it, you can still feel the amazing power that is embedded within this weapon!

"This is obviously a Long Sword! Why is it called as an Axe? Isn't this like saying that a deer is a horse?" Wei Yan Er squinted.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "I can equip two-handed weapons. So I won't be needing this axe. Endless Starlight, or whoever who is a Thief, who wants it?"

"I want it!"

"Me too!"

This time around, it wasn't just the regular party members. Zhang Yang had also brought along the other members of his guild. Some even had [Flying Mounts], while some of them were Thief Class players. Since everyone had contributed to killing the boss, everyone had the right to claim any of the loots. Therefore, they had to compare their accumulated guild points in order to decide who could get the weapon.

When it all came down to comparing accumulated guild points, Endless Starlight would have the upper hand as he had accumulated quite some guild points back there. Without Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream fighting for the weapon, he managed to triumph over the others and kept the weapon for himself. The Special Effect of this weapon could reduce the damage of bosses by 10%. That was way better than increasing 10% Passive Damage Immunity of a Tanker. After all, bosses usually had AoE attacks.

The next item was the necklace.

[Wild-Fiery Necklace] (Ethereal, Necklace)

Vitality: +1,167

Strength: +396

Agility: +396

Equip: Increases Maximum HP by 790 points.

Equip: Increases both damage dealt and healing efficiency by 5.6%.

Equip: Increases Damage Absorption by 340 points.

Use: Afflict Burning Effect to oneself and all targets within the

range of 10 meters, causing 20,000 damage to everyone, including oneself in each second. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 2 hours.

{Unidentified}

Required Level: 150

Special: Reduces 20 levels of the Required Level.

Note: [Wild-Fiery Necklace] was once the treasure of the Fiery Flame Demon King, Shakla. Ever since his defeat at the hands of Maron Curse, the [Wild-Fiery Necklace] has been in the possession of Maron Curse as one of its victory loots! Now, it shall belong to you!

All Physical Class players were very attracted to the accessory the moment they saw its attributes.

This necklace could trigger a deadly AoE attack to targets if supported by Healers. Whoever who equips it could unleash the deadly effect onto the enemies whenever the player is surrounded by many enemies.

Lost Dream made it clear that he was not going to fight for that equipment from the beginning. As he was content with acquiring the quest item for his [Inheritance] quest, he would like to let others have the joy of getting that equipment. After a session of auctioning, the necklace was taken by the little brat. She put it on immediately, but there was no effect at all, because she had not

reached the Required Level yet.

"Do I look pretty with this on?" Wei Yan Er began to show off her new 'jewelry'. The little brat had a pair of clear eyes and white teeth. She looked elegant and pleasant enough as she was. Upon putting the shiny red necklace on, the little brat looked even fairer and prettier. However, it would be a bad idea to praise the little brat. She would fly to the moon! Zhang Yang replied her coldly, "Hmm, not that bad at least."

"Your taste is awful!" Wei Yan Er humphed.

The other two Mythical Tier equipment had also found their owners. However, their owners had to reach Level 150 in order to equip them. That would mean that they would have to wait for a long time more.

Upon completion of the quest, everyone began to tear their [Teleportation Scrolls] and left. Meanwhile, Lost Dream persistently went on with his remaining quests to get his Class B [Inheritance]. After all, he was just a few steps away from getting the [Snowman Inheritance]. So he would like to get it done as soon as possible. By then, there would be 3 players with [Inheritances] in Lone Desert Smoke. That should give them enough Strength to take down the remaining bosses back in the Hardcore Mode of Dragon Throat Fortress.

Because the {Inheritance Transformation} Skills of Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were under cooldown at the moment, the party could not continue on slaying the final bosses for the Inheritance quests of Hundred Shots and Galileo. So, they had to wait for

another 3 days before they could carry on with the task. They needed their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills to support them in order to kill those extremely powerful bosses.

Lost Dream completed the remaining of his Inheritance quests swiftly. It only took him two days to clear out the remaining quests and to become the third player in the Lone Desert Smoke with an [Inheritance]!

[Frost Armor (Passive)]: Reduce received damage by 5%. When struck by Melee attacks, can reduce the Movement Speed of the target by 50%. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Frost Strength (Passive)]: Increases your damage by 40%, permanently.

[Frost Transformation]: Transforms into a snowman. Maximum HP increased by 20 times. Defense increased by 3 times. There is a 70% chance of being immune against Magic Attacks. Attack increased by 3 times. During your transformation period, you earn 1 Energy Point (EP) every second. You need EP in order to activate some of your special Skills. {Frost Transformation} can only last for 2 hours. Cooldown: 72 hours.

[Frostbite]: Add the power of {Frost Strength} to your weapon. Upon hitting your target, you can cause additional 100% Frost Damage to the target. {Frostbite} will consume 1 EP in each second. The Skill will last until you deactivate it or your EP bar is depleted. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

After reading the Inheritance Skills of Lost Dream, everyone was thrilled.

[Vampire Inheritance] and [Snowman Inheritance] were both Class B [Inheritances]. Therefore, the normal enhancement that these [Inheritances] could provide to players were basically similar. Both of them could increase 40% damage and 5% of Passive Damage Immunity. However, [Snowman Inheritance] had an additional attribute that would reduce the Movement Speed of Melee attackers. Although it was not a ridiculously powerful Skill, one additional special effect is always better than having none at all. After all, the Skill was passive and it was 'free' to use!

More importantly, upon activating the {Inheritance Transformation}, the [Vampire Inheritance] focused on HP recovery while the [Snowman Inheritance] focused on boosting Attack. {Frostbite} could provide an additional 100 seconds of damage enhancement if the Skill is to be activated while the EP bar is full. So players would have to be wise in determining whichever was more important based on the situation in a battle.

Upon using two {Inheritance Transformation} on other quests, Lone Desert Smoke was now far behind in clearing the dungeon.

Crimson Rage, Nihilim, Imperial Sky and the other top Tier guilds had pushed down another boss on their own. They ended the week with the score of 11/15. Judging by the looks of this, the 'First Clear' of the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress would be claimed before the next dungeon reset or the following one.

Zhang Yang could not fathom it at first. Why were all of the top Tier guilds in this life so ferocious and efficient?

After giving it some thoughts, he finally understood why --- Battle Companions!

The biggest difference between his past life and this life of his was the Battle Companion System that he had brought out from the deepest part of the game. Underestimating the Battle Companion system was an error for him. Although a large number of players could only get themselves a Gray-Silver Tier Battle Companion, the bosses in Dragon Throat Fortress was capable of dropping exclusive equipment for the Battle Companions.

The Hard Mode and the Hardcore Mode of a dungeon did not share the same dungeon reset time. Players could have cleared the Hard Mode of the dungeon repeatedly to farm for some fine equipment for their battle companions before they went on to the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon. Just look at the Lone Desert Smoke alone. After a certain amount of time, the Battle Companions of every single member had managed to equip Yellow-Gold Tier and Violet-Platinum Tier items.

The dungeon was basically similar to the arena. Players could not mount their [Mounts]. However, the system did not forbid them from bringing their Battle Companion along to the dungeons! Dragon Throat Fortress was a 50-player dungeon. With 50 players bringing 50 Battle Companions along into the dungeon, the capability of the players in healing, attacking, tanking was almost doubled.

The players had also lost count on the number of times their party had been wiped out by the boss, when the HP bars of the boss was down to 4% to 5%. They were this close to bringing down the boss. With Battle Companions joining into battle, many impossible circumstances had turned possible!

Zhang Yang took a deep breath. He realized that the Battle Companion System had undoubtedly increased the rate of conquering dungeons. The existence of Battle Companions in a battle might even change the method and ways of killing the boss! That being said, his experience from his previous life might no longer be feasible in this life!

The ironic part of this incident was, Zhang Yang brought it all upon himself!

However, Zhang Yang had confidence that he would overcome any obstacles set in his way. It did not really matter much.

After carrying out a deep discussion among themselves, the Lone Desert Smoke finally decided to focus on clearing the Hardcore Mode of Dragon Throat Fortress.

This dungeon could be considered as the first important dungeon in the Chaos Realms. This was also the first time when all players from all eight different regions were fighting for the 'First Clear' title of a dungeon. Everyone would hope that their guild is the one that claims the title! Rewards like Skill Points no longer matter much. This had become a contest of dignity and honor!



It was similar to watching the Olympic games. Although you may not have heard of the contestant's name before, it would get you high, hoping that the contestant would win by the end of the battle, hoisting up China's National flag! After all, everyone was from the same country. Of course, they would cheer for their compatriots.

Such was the power of patriotism.

Upon the dungeon's reset, Zhang Yang gathered his best members. Lone Desert Smoke was finally going all out with the best party formation possible, in order to clear the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress. After all, that fortress had been blocking all players from progressing further for more than 2 months!

The party was very familiar with the first 10 bosses, as they had encountered them more than just several times. Even without Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and the other core members of the guild, the party would have slain them with ease. Now that the strongest lineup for Lone Desert Smoke had been assembled, they were clearing their way through the stages like a hot knife cutting through a butter! It did not take them long to reach the 11th boss of the dungeon.

# Chapter 587: Final Assault

---

Without having to activate any of their {Inheritance Transformation} Skill, the party managed to progress without much problem. The strength and toughness of a boss were not measured proportionately to the number of {Inheritance Transformation} Skills required in order for players to defeat the boss. Most of the time, players were required to implement tactics that were more complex. Players would need to move around frequently while maintaining high damage to the boss. If players could not take out the boss within 10 minutes, the boss would enter its 'Hysterical Drive' state and wipe out the entire party.

However, with Sun Xin Yu, Daffodil Daydream and other core members of the guild joining in, the party no longer had to worry about their firepower. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang could be deemed as the most capable Tanker in the entire game. Even though his {God of War Shield} had over 1 hour of cooldown, he could still use the Skill for 10 minutes. That would be enough for him to hold the boss while the others reduce the boss to dust.

Having been wiped out a couple of times, everyone on the party became familiar with the behavior of the bosses. In this attempt, they used that to their advantage as they moved around to dodge the attacks from the boss. By the end of it, they succeeded slaying the boss and caught up to the progress of other guilds.

However, the party did not stop there. Instead of resting, they continued to push on. Upon clearing the monsters, they arrived before the 12th boss as they brought the fight to the boss.

The Lone Desert Smoke was unstoppable. They took down the 12th boss and the 13th boss in a row, over the course of one night! Furthermore, right before Zhang Yang disbanded the party in the morning, Zhang Yang asked Lost Dream to activate his {Snowman Inheritance} to tank against the 14th boss head-on. With fortune favoring their side, they took out the boss without much of a problem and put a stop on their progress with a score of 14/15. They were only one boss away from securing the 'First Clear' of the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress!

Crimson Rage and the other guilds broke out in cold sweat, thinking that Lone Desert Smoke would take down the entire dungeon without stopping! Other guilds were only at ease after knowing that Zhang Yang had disbanded his party members for a break. So, they continued to push on with their own progress on the dungeon.

Not wanting to be left out, some guilds broke through their own limits in a desperate outburst of superhuman effort and succeeded in catching up to where Lone Desert Smoke was at in the dungeon. On the other hand, other guilds were totally broken. They could not even clear the 11th boss. Many of them had laid down their arms in hopelessness.

However, the final boss of the dungeon 'Argent. Hammer of Battle Hymn' had put a complete stop to the dungeon progress of every single guild.

During their attempt to take down the boss, many players had activated their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills, but yet, they cried in defeat under the aggressive assaults of the boss. Well, the

boss made a clear point that {Inheritance Transformations} was not a solution for everything. Even though [Inheritances] could greatly enhance the ability of a player, but one player could only do so much when confronting a boss. It would not be easy to carry the burden of an entire team! Furthermore, Dragon Throat Fortress was a 50-player scale dungeon. The boss was designed to withstand the assaults of 50 players at the same time without any problem at all. It would be naive to think that soloing the boss is possible!

Of course, if it was a boss from a 5-player scale dungeon, then a player with Class B {Inheritance Transformation} would be powerful enough to solo the boss.

The day passed. All office workers returned home and had their dinner. After resting for a while and loitering about, they logged into the game again.

Zhang Yang gathered his party members up once again and continued to clear the dungeon. They were ready to face the final boss of the dungeon.

Currently, there were at least 20 guilds challenging the boss. Everyone tried their best to slay the boss, and tension was building up in every passing second. There was no telling which guild would be the one who would come up top in this contest and claim the 'First Clear' title for this dungeon. The system could make the announcement any minute now!

However, Argent was very powerful indeed. He was worthy of being the final boss of the Hardcore Mode of the dungeon. Even after players had activated their {Inheritance Transformation},

they had yet to find a way to take down the boss. The fact that the boss was still standing firmly on his post had proven that this boss was extremely difficult to kill.

After spending more than an hour clearing out the monsters, Zhang Yang and his party arrived before the great Orc President, Argent for the first time.

It was a Red-Skinned Orc as tall as 4 meters. His body was gigantic and his muscles bulged out. He held a halberd that was much longer than he was, in his right hand. The boss looked incredibly intimidating as he sat on a throne with pride.

[President Argent. Hammer of Battle Hymn] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 115

HP: 300,000,000

Defense: 3,060

Attack: 30,286 - 42,286

Skills:

[Wind Walk]: enters a state of invisibility and clears out everything from the aggro list. Increases Movement Speed by

100%, increasing the next damage dealt by 100%. The effect can only last for 1 minute, or until the user performs an action other than moving around.

[Storm Blades]: Swings the weapon in hand and causes damage to all targets within the range of Melee Attack in every second. The damage dealt will be based on the Attack of the weapon held. Lasts for 10 seconds.

[Berserker's Strike]: Unleashes a raging strike upon the target and cause a damage of 200% Melee Damage to the target. Will be used right after {Wind Walk}.

[Hysterical Drive]: When the battle exceeds 10 minutes, Argent will enter into a state of {Hysterical Drive}. Increases Attack by 10 times. Increases Movement Speed by 10 times.

[Demonic Decay Aura]: Causes 10,000 Shadow Damage to all targets within the radius of 40 meters once every 3 seconds.

Note: This is the President of the Dragon Throat Fortress. He is the conqueror of both blood and fire!

As the boss would enter his {Hysterical Drive} mode after 10 minutes, the party must take out the boss within 10 minutes or so. Meanwhile, the boss had over 300,000,000 HP. According to a party with 40 DPS players, each of the DPS players would need to deal up to 12,500 damage every second in order to kill the boss within the time frame.

Theoretically speaking, that amount of damage was not really that difficult. Players would have their Battle Companions to aid them in dealing more damage than they could do alone. However, the aggro list of the boss would be emptied out the moment he activates {Wind Walk}. Upon activating {Wind Walk}, the boss would pick a target randomly and strike the target with {Berserker's Strike} right after revealing himself. That strike could deal up to a total of 170,000 damage theoretically.

Other than Tankers, players of other Classes would be instantly killed!

In other words, whenever the boss activates {Wind Walk}, someone would definitely die! The longer the battle is prolonged, more players would die. By the end of that, there might not be enough DPS players left to deal enough damage to the boss! When 10 minutes pass, the boss would have entered his {Hysterical Drive}! By then, the boss could take out 90% of the players with the first hit from his {Demonic Decay Aura}!

Therefore, the main problem in this boss battle was the {Wind Walk}. Once the boss has killed too many DPS players, it would become impossible for Zhang Yang and his party to take him out within 10 minutes. Even then, players with {Inheritance Transformations} would not be capable of handling a boss that was 10 times stronger than before!

All {Inheritance Transformations} had over 72 hours of cooldown period. In other words, Zhang Yang and his party would have to try again 3 days later if they ever fail this time. Without any doubt, they stood no chance against the boss without their {Inheritance

## Transformation} Skills.

Mountain Mover preferred to play safe, so he suggested, "The {Frost Transformation} will only be completely cooled down in another half a day. Should we wait first? I mean, if we can combine the power of all 3 {Inheritance Transformations} altogether, we should stand a better chance of taking down the boss!"

If Mountain Mover had said that a few days ago, Zhang Yang would have agreed with him. He would still believe that the Hardcore Mode for Dragon Throat Fortress would be too tough for others to handle for the moment. However, there was a new, uncertain variable in the game, in this life. The game had Battle Companions now. Initially, only 50 players could challenge the dungeon. However, Battle Companions were not counted as players. They were simply a form of support to the players. Therefore, when 50 players charge into a dungeon with their Battle Companions by their sides, it would be as good as 100 players charging into the dungeon at the same time. It would be much easier for others to clear the dungeon than it was in Zhang Yang's previous life!

Initially, players had to forego the dungeon and farm better equipment with better Tiers before they could turn back to face the boss. They would need at least Mythical Tier equipment in order to clear the dungeon entirely. However, things became different when Zhang Yang unlocked the Battle Companion System to the game. They would only need to get a set of Violet-Platinum Tier equipment and a Battle Companion before they could clear the dungeon.



In these few days, the large-scale guilds were able to prove that point by progressing swiftly on clearing the dungeon.

Zhang Yang shook his head slowly and said, "At a time like this, any guild could just take down the 'First Clear' of the dungeon. We mustn't take that risk! Although this boss is really a tough one to kill, we do not have to move around all the time. All we need to do is to focus on dealing damage to him. So, let's settle the boss once and for all! "

Upon activating his {God of War Transformation}, Zhang Yang's Attack would be boosted up to 100,000 points! That amount of Attack was able to cover the Attack power of 7 DPS players! Meanwhile, the Attack power of Fatty Han should still be able to cover the Attack Power of 4 to 5 DPS players with ease, even though he was not as powerful as Zhang Yang. Furthermore, the total amount of HP on Zhang Yang would reach up to more than 7,000,000 HP after he activated his {God of War Transformation}. Even if the boss enters his 'berserk' mode, Zhang Yang should still be able to hold the boss off for quite some time. As long as the remaining HP of the boss is not too much when the boss goes berserk, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han should still be able to take out the boss without much of a problem.

"Make sure you guys maintain a distance between yourselves. All Melee combatants, take note of this. The moment you see the boss using {Storm Blades}, don't hesitate! Just run!" Zhang Yang activated his {God of War Transformation,} as they must kill to boss in about 10 minutes or hell would break loose. Unfortunately, the God of War EP could not boost the amount of damage he could deal to his targets. Things would have been a lot easier if his {God of War Devastation} could generate more hits for every additional

EP he had on him.

"I've transformed!"

With a flutter in his pair of wings, Zhang Yang threw his first attack at the boss as usual. {Spear of Obliteration}! A shadow of a blade landed right on the boss. Blood was spilled from the Red-Skinned Orc.

"Intruders!" Argent let out a raging roar as he bent his knees. Then, the boss charged over to Zhang Yang like an arrow that pierced through the sky. The moment he arrived in front of Zhang Yang, Argent raised up his giant axe and smashed it straight down on Zhang Yang. The blade of the giant axe was actually blazing up, due to the powerful friction! The sound of it was astounding!

{Block}!

Zhang Yang raised up his shield to engage. 'Tang!' A loud clash was heard as Zhang Yang landed on the ground, falling to one knee with his shield raised up above him! Fortunately for him, this was a Mythical Tier shield. Although the shield took a solid strike from the boss, it only got one white scratch on the surface of it. On the other hand, the sharp blade of the axe was a little rolled up.

‘-28,807!’

Now that Zhang Yang got a boost of 590% on his damage, the reflective damage of his {Block} could deal up to 30,000 damage!

Initially, he could only deal 4,030 reflective damage.

Zhang Yang was smiling, satisfied with it. Then, he began to fight back with five layers of {Cripple Defense}.

With the effect of Level 8 {Eagle Eye}, Zhang Yang could ignore 85% Defense of the boss. Even he does not use {Cripple Defense} on the boss, his damage on the boss would still be unaffected by it. However, the others would not be able to penetrate the Defense of the boss. Therefore, Zhang Yang threw the five layers of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss in order to increase the amount of damage dealt on the boss by his entire party.

After all, this was a dungeon designed for 50 players. If it was a 5-player scale dungeon, Zhang Yang would be able to solo the boss after activating his {God of War Transformation}.

All other DPS players had charged forward and unleashed their worst on the boss. After all, the party only had 10 minutes to take down the boss. Either they would be wiped out by the boss for prolonging the battle longer than 10 minutes, or slay the boss and claim victory for killing the boss within 10 minutes!

Though the boss could deal an average of 36,000 damage in every hit, Zhang Yang had achieved 26,200 Defense at the moment. Normal attacks could only deal about 4,000 damage on average. Therefore, there was no need for the Healers to pay attention to him. They were only required to heal up the other party members.

Truth to be told, Zhang Yang could have taken down the boss all

by himself if it was not because of that 10-minute time frame. Without the boss turning 'berserk', it would be easy for him to take the boss on without any problem at all. It would only be a matter of time.

"My god... Isn't our guild master a little too oppressive? The boss could only deal about 3,000 damage on him!"

"I've heard rumors. They say that the main Tanker of Sunset Amber was almost killed instantly after receiving one of those {Berserker's Strike} hit!"

"Haha! Are you serious? Their Tanker can't be that noob, right?"

While everyone was praising and surprised, the boss battle had finally commenced for real. Everyone went into their positions and gulped down a bottle of [Power Potion]. After that, they gave everything they had in dealing the highest damage possible on the boss.

Without the Level Gap Suppression function in the picture, the party was performing a terrifying amount of damage. Zhang Yang had also thrown {Glare of the Death God} over onto the boss --- Resisted!

What a sad case...

However, the Skill itself was a cheat. It was understandable for it to be frequently resisted. Furthermore, with the current Strength

of his party, it was not entirely impossible for them to take down the boss within 10 minutes.

The moment the boss battle had begun, the effect of {Demonic Decay Aura} kicked in. The Skill inflicted everyone with Shadow Damage once in every 3 seconds. The Healers had their hands full.

After all, the pressure on the Healers was tremendously heavy in such battles. However, because Zhang Yang did not require any healing attention, the Healers had one player less to worry about. Furthermore, Zhang Yang was a Tanker, the player that needed healing the most. That had lifted a lot of stress off the Healers. Therefore, having 7 Healers on the party seemed to become more than enough. However, the battle had just begun not long ago. It would be better to have more reinforcements than not enough reinforcements.

20 seconds later, Zhang Yang swung his sword at the boss as usual. However, the boss suddenly vanished and Zhang Yang only struck air! The boss seemed to have vanished like how Thieves usually do! However, players could still strike at Thieves in Stealth Mode. The boss seemed to have entered into another dimension. Nobody was able to hit it.

{Wind Walk}!

Zhang Yang got anxious. He kept turning around, observing every inch of his surroundings. Just half a second later, the boss suddenly reappeared right behind one of the Spellcasters. With a leaping slash, he plunged that gigantic axe of his right onto that Spellcaster.

Daffodil Daydream would have reacted in time. She could have activated her {Ice Barrier} to nullify the attack. However, not everyone had the reflexes of a Top 10 Spellcaster. As the Spellcaster had hesitated for that one moment, the axe crunched straight into the Spellcaster's head.

‘-143,576!’

The Spellcaster was instantly killed!

Zhang Yang threw another {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss and got the aggro of the boss back onto him. He flapped his wings and charged straight at the boss.

Truth to be told, for that one moment when the boss reappeared, Zhang Yang could have used his {Sacrifice} on that poor Spellcaster. He could have saved the Spellcaster in time if he had not wanted the Spellcaster to save himself by using his {Ice Barrier}.

Furthermore, {Sacrifice} had 1-minute cooldown. Zhang Yang hoped that he could use {Sacrifice} on classes who did not have their own life-saving skills. For instance, Wei Yan Er. Although the little brat could deal a substantial amount of damage to her targets, but if she ever gets targeted by the boss, she would definitely be as good as dead without Zhang Yang's {Sacrifice}.

Another 20 seconds had passed. The boss had vanished once again with his {Wind Walk} and reappeared right behind Sun Xin

Yu. However, before the blade of the axe could reach her, Sun Xin Yu activated her {Vanish}.

That was some top class skill!

Spellcaster only had to activate their {Ice Barrier} and stand still to stay alive. However, a Thief like Sun Xin Yu would need to grasp the moment down to a window of 0.01 seconds in order to activate the I-frame of her skill!

The battle continued on. The boss was activating {Wind Walk} at a constant pace. He would use it once in every 20 seconds and instantly kill one player at a time.

Against such a powerful Skill, Zhang Yang seemed to be helpless against it.

The boss only required 0.1 seconds to vanish and reappear with a fatal blow! Meanwhile, Zhang Yang had no idea on where the boss would reappear. He would need to turn around frantically to look for the boss. If the boss happened to appear right within his sight, then Zhang Yang would have been able to activate {Sacrifice} on the boss's target. If that wasn't the case, then Zhang Yang would be powerless against the boss.

1 minute, 2 minutes, 3 minutes ... the amount of HP remained on the boss was reducing constantly. However, the number of party members was plummeting as well. The boss could take out one player each time he activated his {Berserker's Strike}. On the other hand, the {Storm Blades} of the boss was extremely deadly as well!

Any Melee combatants who were a little too slow in running away would die after receiving 2 to 3 hits from the {Storm Blades}.

9 minutes, 9 minutes 50 seconds!

Only 8 members remained on the part, and the boss still had over 7% HP left!



# Chapter 588: Victory!

---

"Give it all you got! Don't hold back!"

Both the dead and the living were screaming and yelling like madmen.

10 minutes passed!

"You imbeciles! Feel my wrath!" Argent let out a raging roar. Green veins began to pop up on the surface of Agent's red skin thorough his entire body. The green veins spread across his skin like spider webs. It made the boss looked hideous and ferocious at the same time. Anyone would have a chill up their spines when they look at the boss!

Boom!

The boss clashed his axe against the [Sword of Purging Devourer] and sent Zhang Yang flying. At the same time, his {Demonic Decay Aura} was causing 100,000 Shadow Damage to the eight players who were all still alive. However, that first tick of Shadow Damage had taken out 5 players at once, leaving only Zhang Yang, Fatty Han and Endless Starlight alive.

"Guild master! Brother fatty! We're counting on you guys!" Everyone was cheering for the two.

After all, only players who have activated their {Inheritance

Transformation} would be able to survive the damage of the {Demonic Decay Aura}.

Endless Starlight felt gutted, and protested, "I'm still alive too!"

"So what if you're alive! You can't hurt him either way!"

Endless Starlight filled his eyes and cheeks with tears. When the second tick of the {Demonic Decay Aura} struck, Endless Starlight could only face the truth and collapse on the ground. Without anyone healing him, he was already as good as dead. So, he joined the dead and cheered for the remaining two.

‘-293,402!’

The boss swung hard at Zhang Yang and caused about 300,000 damage! Even though Zhang Yang had a very long HP bar, that was an amount of damage that took away approximately 5% of his entire HP bar!

Just when the situation seemed bad enough, the boss activated {Wind Walk} and disappeared! The next split-second, the boss reappeared right behind Fatty Han! With a leaping smash, he smashed the giant axe at Fatty Han.

Unfortunately, Zhang Yang did not have time to use his {Sacrifice} again. So he could only watch Fatty Han being struck by that heavy smash helplessly.

‘-1,402,086!’

Fatty Han received a substantial amount of damage and he was almost killed instantly. He panicked and activated his {Bat Form} immediately right after. Upon splitting into 10 small bats, the bats flew over to the boss with the attempted to recover some HP for Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang was standing right next to the Fatty Han when that happened. In an instant, he activated his {Killing Cleave} and gave the boss a good, solid hit!

‘-399,922!’

A shockingly high damage value popped right on top of the boss! That powerful hit had managed to grab hold of the aggro once again. With that, Zhang Yang managed to buy Fatty Han sometime for him to suck some blood from the boss.

However, 2 seconds later, the damage wave from the {Demonic Decay Aura} was triggered again, causing a damage of ‘-100,000!’ on the 10 bats, killing all of them in an instant. The {Bat Form} was interrupted and Fatty Han had to reappear.

However, things did not go as badly as expected. Each of the bats managed to suck off 2% HP for Fatty Han. So, Fatty Han had recovered 20% of his HP, leaving him with about 500,000 HP at the moment. Although that amount of HP would not be enough to take one hit from the {Berserker’s Strike}, it would be sufficient for Fatty Han to survive a few more seconds of the {Demonic Decay

Aura}.

Another 20 seconds had passed, Argent vanished, thanks to his {Wind Walk} and reappeared right behind Fatty Han once again. With a powerful leaping smash, the boss swung his giant axe at the neck of Fatty Han!

{Sacrifice}!

Just in the nick of time, Zhang Yang threw his {Sacrifice} on Fatty Han right before the sharp edge of the axe could decapitate him. He had protected Fatty Han from death!

Switch!

‘-936,668!’

Zhang Yang had over 26,200 Defense attribute. However, that amount of Defense was far from enough to sustain the basic Attack of the boss that had already exceeded 1,000,000 damage! Fortunately for him, Zhang Yang had reserved his {God of War Shield} for the boss’ ‘berserk’ stage. Upon activating it, Zhang Yang gained an addition of 20% Passive Damage Immunity. That was how he had managed to reduce the damage received to below 1,000,000 damage!

"Little Yang, you’ve done it again! You saved my \*ss! Unfortunately, my heart belongs to someone else already. We can’t be together anymore!" Fatty Han just had to open his big mouth.

"So tell me, brother fatty. Are you saying that your heart belongs to me now? Unfortunately for you, I only love you like my own brother! So, I can't accept your love!" Endless Starlight was no much better than the wretched fatty. The moment he heard Fatty Han spouting nonsense, he joined in.

"Guildmaster! Do your best!" the other party members decided to ignore those two wretched men as they continued to cheer for Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang resolutely activated his {God of War Devastation}. A value of 300,000 damage popped right on top of the boss. That amount of damage was almost as much as the damage dealt by his {Killing Cleave}! The boss roared in pain as he swung his giant axe around, attempting to land a hit on Zhang Yang.

The wretched fatty continued to fire his arrows at the boss. Unfortunately for them, the {Demonic Decay Aura} was too much for them. Their Battle Companions had been sent back into the Battle Companion Slots due to that reason. Their [Mounts] had long succumbed to the merciless assault. The only ones left were the two of them, and Zhang Yang's {Shadow Clones}. They were still hanging on, trying to deal as much damage as they could on the boss.

Unfortunately, the boss would only target players upon using his {Wind Walk}. Zhang Yang could not activate his {Sacrifice} or {Vanguard's Aggression}. He could only pray that the boss would pick him over that wretched fatty.

Half a second later, the boss reappeared! However, the boss reappeared behind --- Fatty Han!

Poor fatty.

Argent took his head off with a mighty swing.

‘-1,389,022!’

"Ugh ---" Fatty Han's body went limp. Even though he had transformed, but no one, not even him, would be able to survive the powerful strike from the boss that was already berserk!

"We are so close! We are about to clear this!"

"Victory is just in front of us!"

"We are number one in the entire world!"

"Lone Desert Smoke is the best!"

"Guildmaster! Just one more! One more hit!"

Nobody bothered consoling Fatty Han. Not when the boss was left with only 1% HP at the moment!

Zhang Yang let out an intimidating battle cry. The attacks from

the boss, fuelled by his {Hysterical Drive} were too much for Zhang Yang to handle. Zhang Yang was forced to activate his {Shield Wall} and {Radiance of the God of War}! He had no time to hesitate at all. Currently, the boss was only left with 1% HP, which was only about 2,000,000 HP!

No time to lose! Going all out with no regrets!

{Horizontal Sweep}! {Destructive Smash}! {Frost Strike}!

Zhang Yang had unleashed all of his Skills at a high damage output. All of his 'Shadow Clones' were also repeating his attacks, using all of the Skills he activated as well! Even though the 'Shadow Clones' could only deal 10% of the damage that Zhang Yang could deal, every little bit counted at this stage of the battle! After all, that 10% damage of his {God of War Transformation} was no small matter!

Suddenly, Zhang Yang could feel a heat starting up in his right hand. That strange feeling rushed straight up to his chest again. A golden dragon emerged from his [Sword of Purging Devourer] and charged straight at the boss! Everything happened so quickly that Zhang Yang could not react at all!

{Rising Dragon Strike}!

‘-1,024,444!’

It felt so awesome!

"Argh!" The boss let out a miserable roar as his last chunk of HP was emptied out by the {Rising Dragon Strike}. The boss was thrown to the sky, 3 feet high and collapsed straight on the ground heavily. The crimson-red eyes started reverting to their original color --- only death could reverse the corruption of the demons.

‘Ding! You and your team have acquired the Dragon Throat Fortress (Hardcore Mode) First Clear Title! As the leader of the party, please key in the name of your party. Your name will be published in the list of the First Clear title, allowing the world to praise you!’

That moment onwards, the Server notification began to boom across Zhang Yang’s ears. The key-in interface appeared right in front of him. After putting the obligatory advertisement slogan, the news was announced repeatedly on the server.

‘Server Announcement: Lone Desert Smoke has succeeded in acquiring the Dragon Throat Fortress (Hardcore Mode) First Clear Title, their great deeds will be published on the list of the Hardcore Mode First Clear title. Please cheer for them!’

This time, the list of Hardcore Mode First Clear title did not have a remark that specifically mentioned ‘China Region’. That could only mean, it was the only ‘First Clear’ title of all eight Regions! This was the first ‘First Clear’ that involved the entire Server!

"YEAH!" the party cheered.



"We won!" every member of the Lone Desert Smoke was cheering in unison.

Yes, that's right. Lone Desert Smoke has won the title on behalf of the entire China Region!

As the announcements rang out, all China players were feeling proud. They could push their chests up while walking on the streets, especially when they see players from other Regions. The first 'First Clear' title of a 'Hardcore Mode' in the entire world had been claimed by China Region! How cool is that?

Those who were killed during the boss battle began to run back to their dead bodies. After everyone was resurrected, they gathered around to look at the loots. Zhang Yang put Mountain Mover in-charge of distributing the loot among the party members. Meanwhile, he dug his own pockets out and gave all guild members that took part in clearing the dungeon a bonus of 100,000 dollars each. He even clarified that he would have given the money out, even if they did not get the 'First Clear' title.

It took them approximately two months to clear the dungeon, from the first boss to the final boss. There were more than 100 guild members of Lone Desert Smoke involved in clearing the dungeon. Although he only gave each of them 100,000 dollars as a reward, it totaled up to 10,000,000 dollars!

However, that amount of money was just an insignificant amount to him. With his current wealth, he could just easily give that amount of money out like it was nothing. Furthermore, this was the first 'First Clear' title involving all 8 Regions. That title

meant something special! So it would not be a waste for him to spend such money. After all, they had struck an impression upon the entire world! Lone Desert Smoke was even more famous now. Naturally, the brand of 'Silky Soft' would become even more renowned!

That aside, it seemed that the overseas expansion plan of Silky Soft Holdings was going to proceed without a hitch, after all!

Zhang Yang added the Skill Point that he acquired from the system reward to his {Shadow Clone}. He could summon two Shadow Clones at the same time, now. That would mean his damage efficiency could be increased by 20% for two minutes. It was a notable rise in power!

However, each map in the Chaos Realm spanned over a large gap. The next minimum level upon entering the next dungeon would be higher than before. Now that they had already cleared the map with a level gap of between Level 100 and Level 120, it would mean that the players would need to grind up to level 120 before they could enter the next dungeon. Of course, they would only need to do that if they want to challenge the map without any restrictions by the Level Gap Suppression function of the game. The next dungeon would be a Level 120 dungeon. Furthermore, that dungeon would be another large-scaled 50-man dungeon. Therefore, Zhang Yang would have to wait for quite some time before he could acquire Skill Points by clearing a dungeon.

Acquiring the First Clear for Dragon Throat Fortress was something special. Even the officials were trying to make a big deal out of it. They specially made an exclusive documentary out of it!

They listed out the names of those who acquired the ‘First Clear’ title for the dungeon from Normal Mode to the Hard Mode, and from the Hard Mode to the Hardcore Mode. They even listed out the names of guilds and the bosses killed by them. Nihilum and Crimson Rage were able to get much attention from the public.

Of course, by the end of the day, the Lone Desert Smoke was the center of the topic. The officials had even sent their own reporters to interview all the core players of Lone Desert Smoke! They even made the interviews live on their own channel for others to watch.

Fatty Han was ‘tuned’ up the moment he saw the reporter was a bombshell with two big and round honkas right on her chest. His eyes glittered all the way as he spoke. Instead of answering the questions, he became the one asking the questions! The wretched fatty had even asked about measurements of the reporter’s chest, waist, and hips. Well, the bombshell was giggling all the way, only arching her back, pushing her boobies further out at him.

The consequences for doing that in a live stream was very clear to Fatty Han. He had to face the ‘female tiger’ back at home. As for his ‘argument’... well... everything was crystal clear on the live stream. No matter what he said, he could not be saved.

Truth to be told, although this wretched fatty is easily attracted to beautiful women, he would not dare to do it. He would just wag his tongue about, without truly taking it all the way. Therefore, the ‘drama’ between that wretched fatty and the ‘female tiger’ was only full of sound and fury but had little action. The two of them went back to being happily ever after in no time at all. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er who were expecting a ‘spectacular’ drama that

would find its place in soap opera, were very disappointed to see it end so uneventfully.

The contest of acquiring the ‘First Clear’ of the dungeon was put to rest. All guilds began to turn their attention towards grinding their levels again while trying to snatch some boss kills and acquiring high Tier [Inheritances] to build their Strength. They were getting ready to strike for the second world-level ‘First Clear’ of a dungeon.

# Chapter 589: Crown of the Living Frost

---

Lone Desert Smoke included, every guild in the entire game was busy grinding their levels. Most of them had entered the Chaos Realm in search of the [Inheritance]. Those who were still below Level 100 were trying even harder to get their levels up in an attempt to reach the required level to enter the Chaos Realm. They had yet to feast their eyes on the vast and new world. Furthermore, most of them wanted to join in their own forces against other forces from other Regions.

As each Region had their very own 'Proprietary Map', it should be enough for players from each Region to grind their levels without much problem. Unless they were required to run an errand in order to complete a quest, players had no reason to set foot on the map of others. Therefore, the quarrels and wars between players of different Regions were not very intense as of now. A few small-scale party battles broke around the borders, but nothing big had taken place yet.

In a nutshell, everyone from all eight different regions was very focused on grinding their levels. The situation would only change when the players are ready to enter a new map. By then, war would become inevitable as players from different regions would want to secure new territories, leveling areas and resource points for their own regions.

Over the next month, Zhang Yang aided Hundred Shots, Galileo and Endless Starlight in acquiring their Class B [Inheritances].

Zhang Yang and his party members were forced to rely on the

success rate of the {Glare of the Death God}. The Level Gap Suppression function of the game had surely increased the difficulty of slaying these high-level bosses. Furthermore, these three bosses were much tougher and much more powerful than the Vampire Count Ferra and Frost Lord Maron Curse. To depend on such an unpredictable factor like the {Glard of the Death God} was not a very reliable option. The party was wiped out several times in each of the boss battles before they could finally slay the bosses!

Other than that, the party had to wait for 3 days after each failed attempt, due to the cooldown of their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills. They could only transform once again, 3 days after their previous activation of their {Inheritance Transformation}. Therefore, it took the party about one month before they could finally slay all three bosses and get the tasks done.

They could still rely on luck when taking on the final bosses of Class B [Inheritance] quests. However, luck would do them no good at all if they were to confront the final boss of a Class A [Inheritance] quest. Without any [Forbidden Scrolls] on hand, even after Zhang Yang, Lost Dream, Endless Starlight and Fatty Han activate their {Inheritance Transformations}, they could not even see a glimmer of hope at slaying the boss.

It would be a waste of time to even consider challenging the final boss of a Class S [Inheritance] quest. So, everyone in the party could only focus on getting themselves up to Level 120 before thinking about that.

In just a blink of an eye, it was already the end of November. The

League Championship was coming to a beautiful end as the official finalized the final scores. Most of the parties had put their very best for the final sprint. The situation was extremely intense.

The current scores for the S Class League Championship were as follow:

1. Silky Soft Battle Team (Lone Desert Smoke): 65 Points.
2. Sky and Ocean Electronics Battle Team (Imperial Sky): 58 Points.
3. Crimson Rage Battle Team (Crimson Rage): 57 Points.
4. Hundred Towers Battle Team (Sunset Amber): 55 Points.
5. Shun Feng Battle Team (Breaking Dawn): 45 Points

There were still 7 rounds of Championship battles that yet to be carried out. The Silky Soft Battle Team had basically secured the Number One in the League Championship. However, the competition between the second, third and fourth places were very intense. Nobody would be able to tell who the first runner-up would be.

After all, the first in place and the second in place for the S Class League Championship would be competing against each other for the title as the 'Number One in the entire World' during the finale of the World League Championship!

Number one in the entire world!

The prize of 5,000,000 dollars reward was not the only tempting reward that drove these players to strive for the ‘Number One in the entire world’ title. There was also the honor and glory! Every Region had sent two Battle Teams to join the World League Championship in hopes of acquiring such honor. Every player was hoping that their own regions would be the one to obtain this highest form of honor.

Zhang Yang had reached Level 117. He planned to reach Level 120 before the World League Championship begins. By then, he should be able to help Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er acquire their [Inheritances].

Although players were not allowed to use their {Inheritance Transformation} Skills, they still had the major passive boosts that came with [Inheritances]. Players without [Inheritances] would still suffer disadvantages far beyond what they could imagine if they were to engage players with [Inheritance]. Players with [Inheritances] also had a high resistance to ‘Status Restriction Skills’!

Status Restriction Skills were essential during a one-on-one battle. Meanwhile, there was a total of 7 one-on-one battles each player was required to participate in. Battling opponents without being able to use Status Restriction Skills effectively on them would prove to be fatal!



Therefore, Zhang Yang was focusing on grinding his own level up, while urging all his guild members not to let up for a second. Everyone should grind for Level 120 to eliminate that annoying Level Gap Suppression function of the game. Without that annoying function, Zhang Yang would be able to bring along his party members and possibly earn two more players with Class S [Inheritances] and one more player with a Class A [Inheritance] for Lone Desert Smoke.

Atop Thunderhawk, Zhang Yang now hovered above a land of ruins. He had focused on grinding his level up and sending his [Herb Foraging Familiar] to pick some high quality [Herbs] for him. By doing so, he could balance out his heavy consumption of ingredients. Well, Zhang Yang had lost count on how many [Potions] Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue had taken from him. If this goes on without having his [Herb Foraging Familiar] helping him to restock so efficiently, Zhang Yang would have to pick up [Herbs] all day long, without having any time to grind his own level!

Camping at one site to grind would be a little more efficient than taking quests, running around to complete them. However, slaying the same types of monsters in the same area repeatedly would both be physically and mentally tiring. Completing a quest would be much more interesting and fun.

Originally, this was an elegant palace where civilization flourished at its prime. Unfortunately, the palace was now left in ruins. There were innumerable broken beams among the ruins and there was not a single room left intact. Zhang Yang could see the partitions made by the walls clearly as he flew around in the sky. This place had become inhabited by the Spectres. There were Spectral monsters dressed like maidservants of the palace

wandering about in the entire area.

Zhang Yang had received a quest that required him to collect 10 pieces of [Flawless Gemstones] from the monsters in this area. After seeing the monsters, Zhang Yang descended down to the ground in excitement. Felice had also transformed into her Thunderhawk form, as she seemed to share his eagerness, "Big brother, should Felice charge in and begin the battle?"

This little girl was in fact, rather brutal. Whenever they engaged in a battle, she would terrify Zhang Yang with her violence and ferocity. In fact, she was actually quite similar to Wei Yan Er! Felice was truly related to the Goddess of War. Anyone could see that she was hooked on battles!

"Alright, go ahead!"

Zhang Yang nodded and gave his permission to Felice. With such an aggressive Battle Companion, he would really earn a substantial amount of experience points within a short period of time! Compared to that Messick who always fled when his life is at stake, Felice was so much better!

‘-39,502!’

Felice launched a {Fire Missile} at one of the Spectre maidservants and caused a nice amount of damage to the monster. That hit took out 3% of the monster's HP bar.

[Wandering Maidservant] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Magic Attack: 6,478 - 7,478

Skills:

[Shadow Strike]: Strikes the target with Shadow Energy, causing 200% Magic Attack of Shadow Damage to the target. Chanting time: 2 seconds.

[Screech of Death]: Terrifies a target and causes the target to flinch in terror, causing the target to scurry away like a rat to its hole. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Note: These Spectral maidservants have been wandering around for decades, or even centuries. They are loyal to their masters. They will strike down any unwanted guests down with no mercy. Protecting the princess has always been their single, indomitable goal! That was also the main reason why they have become Spectres.

"Intruders of the Princess's imperial burial site shall be

eliminated at once!" the Spectral maidservant let out a screeching roar as she turned the ignited flames in her empty sockets towards Felice. At the same time, the monster had already activated her {Screech of Death}!

Right after that, Felice began to fly around as if she had lost control of herself. A terrifying skull appeared right on top of her head. She had been afflicted with the Terror Effect.

The Spectral maidservant began to chant her {Shadow Strike} right after that. It seemed that this monster was good at chaining her Skills. Restricting the target followed by the chanting of a longer, more lethal spell was surely an effective way of battle. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang was not a bystander. He patted Thunderhawk and charged towards the maidservant. With a powerful swing of his shield, the monster struck in the face so heavily that it took a few steps back.

If the chanting progress could be interrupted, the monster was better off not chanting anything in front of Zhang Yang. After all, Zhang Yang could easily interrupt the chanting progress with one 'Supporting Attack'.

After a series of bashing and smashing, the Spectral Maidservant collapsed onto the ground and dropped a few [Inscribed Clothes] and a few Silver Coins. There was no sign of any quest items that Zhang Yang needed.

Zhang Yang did pay it much heed. He did not expect any monster to just drop a quest item. Since the Palace Ruins was rather vast and the number of monsters was as many as the hairs on an ox,

Zhang Yang decided to take his time collecting quest items. Killing the monsters would bring him a lot of experience points. So, he carried on at leisure.

Only one [Flawless Gemstone] would drop upon killing about 5 monsters. Zhang Yang would need to kill approximately 100 Wandering Maidservants in order to acquire 20 pieces of [Flawless Gemstones]. It took him a while before he collected enough [Flawless Gemstones]. Zhang Yang patted Thunderhawk and both of them made their way back over the indented path of the valley to hand in the quest items to the NPC.

It was a goblin that given Zhang Yang the quest. His name was Lincols. The moment when he saw Zhang Yang coming back to him with those gemstones for the quest, he immediately revealed a greedy expression as he quickly shoved all gemstones into his backpack. Then he said, "Hehe! For an ugly human, you did pretty well back there! My friend, are you interested in having a big go with me?"

‘Ding! You have completed a quest: Flawless Gemstones. You received a reward: 3,000,000 experience points.’

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "A big go? Tell me about it, how big exactly?"

Lincols hopped onto a large rock and patted Zhang Yang's shoulder, then he said, "Have you ever heard of the Princess Helena?"

"Nope!"

"What a sad case... she was deemed as the greatest beauty that had ever walked beneath the sun, among you mortals! According to rumors, her smile could make the great eagles forget that they ever had wings! Even the crabs will forget how to breathe under the water! Unfortunately, a plague came over the land and robbed that beautiful woman of her life!" Lincols said it with a regretful face.

"Hey, goblin! Drop the act! You only feel pity for the treasure that was buried together with her!" Zhang Yang immediately saw through the real desires of that greedy little goblin.

"Ugly human! You have humiliated the pride of us goblins! I want a duel with you!" Lincols jumped 3 feet up and leaped around like a monkey in front of Zhang Yang.

"Fine... fine... however, I'm just one man. I cannot possibly take so many things from there!" Zhang Yang raised his hands up in a 'you-got-me, do-as-you-wish' gesture.

Lincols calmed down almost immediately. He obviously chose the gold coins over his pride! After all, what Zhang Yang was about to bring him could be everything that a goblin could dream of! He rubbed his bald dome and said, "Human, I need you to take Helena's [Crown of the Living Frost]. That is the truly valuable thing that is worth a few cities!"

‘Ding! Lincols has a quest for you: Crown of the Living Frost.

Would you accept it?’

Accept!

"Hey, human! Why are you still staring at the sky? Get going already! Time is gold, you dumb \*ss!" Lincols snapped all of a sudden.

That f\*cking goblin!

Zhang Yang quickly pulled Felice away from a potential act of murder and the two of them went up the back of Thunderhawk. The little lady was that close to waging war between the humans and the goblins.

[Crown of the Living Frost] (Difficulty: Rank-B)

Description: Lincols wants you to enter the Palace Ruins and locate the whereabouts of Helena’s mausoleum. When you do, find a way in the place and find the [Crown of the Living Frost]! According to the great goblin Lincols, the location of the royal mausoleum should be in the northwest corner of the palace. "Hey, human! It’s very simple, isn’t it? Quickly! Time is gold! You dumb \*ss!"

Completion: Acquired [Crown of the Living Frost] 0/1

# Chapter 590: Princess Helena

---

The moment he returned to the Palace Ruins, Zhang Yang went straight up to the northwest corner of the palace and scouted about. He tried to pinpoint the exact location of the royal mausoleum.

It was not difficult at all. Zhang Yang had already located the mausoleum by a garden full of flowers and trees. He landed in the garden and saw that the tombstone built by the mausoleum clearly had Helena's name right on it. It was truly the resting ground of Princess Helena.

However, the moment Zhang Yang landed, he was 'welcomed' by 10 Maidservants. They broke out of the ground all of a sudden and surrounded Zhang Yang, Felice, and Thunderhawk.

"Argh ---" Upon hearing a deafening screech, Zhang Yang immediately lost control of his own body and began to run around, trying to escape.

--- he was afflicted by the negative effect of {Screech of Death}!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his {Warrior's Will} to break free of the control. With a swing of his sword, he caused approximately 30,000 damage to the Maidservant that had tried to make a clown out of him. When that hit landed solidly on the monster, his Rage Bar was filled to the brim. With a {Horizontal Sweep}, he caused another two sets of damage to each of the monsters. '-50,000!', '60,000!'. He was lucky to have triggered the special effect of his



[Sword of Purging Devourer], causing massive damage to the 10 monsters.

"Argh!" another {Screech of Death} was directed at Zhang Yang. He could not help but run around in terror.

Holly molly! If these 10 monsters were intelligent enough to repeat their {Screech of Deaths} into a series of chained attacks, Zhang Yang would have to suffer in terror for 100 seconds without pause! Furthermore, if the cooldown of this Skill was frequent enough, Zhang Yang would really be in serious trouble. He might end up being deafened to death!

Without any other means of countering, Zhang Yang activated his [Heart of the Death Knight] to cancel out the Terror Effect. At the same instant, he activated his {Shadow Clone}. With that Skill activated, there were three 'Zhang Yangs', one Felice and one Thunderhawk battling 10 Maidservants. He quickly activated his {Shadow of the Void} to clear out all aggro and the Skill effect.

When the {Shadow Clone} was activated, two Shadow Clones were summoned out. They would replicate everything, including Zhang Yang's status. That included the aggro values on him as well. However, even though his Shadow Clones would cause damage to the monsters, their Skills would not carry out their special effects. Therefore, when Zhang Yang activated his {Shadow of the Void} to clear the aggro on himself, the two Shadow Clone could not follow Zhang Yang into the void dimension. They retained their aggro values.

Therefore, these two Shadow Clones were now the primary

targets of the monsters!

"Argh!" "Argh!" the two Shadow Clones began to run around like idiots, upon being afflicted by the negative effect of {Screech of Death}.

Zhang Yang finally found a gap to catch his breath. He pointed the tip of his sword towards one of the Maidservants as Felice and Thunderhawk rallied to him. The three of them focused their attacks on one monster at a time. Monsters with Status Restriction Skill were truly annoying. They would get even more annoying as their numbers grow. When there are too many of them, even the strongest players would succumb to blows that they are restricted from answering! In this case, it would be the Terror Effect of their {Screeching of Death}.

In order to break the continuous chain of Terror Effects, Zhang Yang should take out a few of the monsters first, and the chained series of the Status Restriction Effect should be broken. Or else, he would never be able to break himself free again.

The remaining 9 monsters were focusing their attacks on the two Shadow Clones. Due to the stunt that Zhang Yang pulled with his {Shadow of the Void} earlier on, the aggro of the monsters were still fixed on the two Shadow Clones of Zhang Yang. The monsters were so focused on spamming their {Shadow Strike} and {Screech of Death} on the Shadow Clones, in an attempt to afflict them with the Status Restriction Effects.

However, even though the Attack power of these Shadow Clones were only 10% of Zhang Yang's initial Attack power, they were just

as durable as the real thing. Their HP bars were equal to Zhang Yang's. Therefore, the monsters could not take out the two Shadow Clones immediately. Furthermore, the two Shadow Clones were sharing the load. On other words, half number of the monsters were attacking one Shadow Clone while the remaining monsters were attacking the other Shadow Clone. So the monsters were no longer be able to chain up the Status Restriction Effect of their {Screech of Death}. Furthermore, the two Shadow Clones were able to cause quite some damage to the monsters. Although they could not cause as much damage as Zhang Yang and Felice, it should not be underestimated!

The firepower of Zhang Yang, Felice, and Thunderhawk altogether was extremely powerful. After approximately half a minute, the first Spectral maidservant had let out a miserable cry and had turned into a stream of white light. Zhang Yang lured and kited the second monster over before the three of them focused on attacking the monster. In just another brief moment, they had taken out the second and the third monster.

Two minutes later, the duration of the two Shadow Clones was over. The clones then dispersed into wisps of black smoke and dissipated into thin air. However, there were still 6 maidservants remaining. Furthermore, the monsters had just activated their {Screech of Death} on the Shadow Clones. They were without those skills for a time being.

Another minute passed, and the monsters were once again able to use their Skills with the Terror Effect. However, there were only four of them left. Zhang Yang shrugged the effects off with his {Warrior's Will} and [Warrior's Honor]. All 10 of them were soon killed.

Phew!

He let out a breath of relief. If it weren't for his newly acquired Skill {Shadow Clone}, Zhang Yang might have been in serious trouble back there! Unless he sends Felice over to get the attention of the monsters, Zhang Yang might have been forced to activate his {God of War Transformation} against these measly 10 monsters just to survive!

That was the difference between having a party and going in alone during a tough battle!

Zhang Yang would not have minded going up against 10 monsters all by himself if the monsters did not have Skills that could tie him down with Status Restriction Effects. However, with Skills that could hinder him like this, the monsters suddenly had an absolute advantage over him as they could just repeatedly restrict him until he was dead, even with his power!

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh. He had almost suffered a major setback due to his own carelessness!

After reflecting upon his own mistake, Zhang Yang walked up to the entrance of the mausoleum. He targeted the metal lock and started attacking as aggressively as he could. After a flurry of attacks, the metal lock was broken.

Zhang Yang pushed the stone door of the mausoleum open. The door squeaked open, and a spooky pathway lay before him.

The torches on two walls by the sides burst into flames. The entire tunnel was lit up. Zhang Yang could see that the path before him was paved with white jade, and the walls were made of granite. Everything seemed really grand.

Zhang Yang took a step. Felice and Thunderhawk followed him closely. They were very careful with every step that they took.

However, there was no sign of any deadly trap or switches. Zhang Yang went through the path and found himself before a translucent, jade coffin where a woman was lying in the middle of it. Surprisingly, the body was not rotten at all. Instead, the woman looked as if she was still alive. She looked like she merely got the daylights knocked out of her!

Around the jade coffin, there were many chests that had been wide open. They were all filled to the brim with jewelry! Unfortunately, this jewelry would be worth nothing in the game.

Zhang Yang glanced across the entire room. His eyes were magnetized to a glittering crown that radiated with the light of seven colors! It was right on top of the woman's head.

With no other method of doing it in the polite manner, Zhang Yang decided to pop open the jade coffin to get the item.

Zhang Yang put both of his hands right on top of the coffin. Unexpectedly, he did not have to exert any strength in order to open the cover of the coffin. It was just like opening a chest. A

progress bar appeared right on top of the coffin.

30 seconds later, the progress bar was completely filled. The cover of the coffin was automatically opened up. Zhang Yang quickly reached his hands to the crown around the head of the woman's corpse.

With care and patience, he placed his hands on the crown. Just as he was about to lift the crown up from the head, suddenly, the eyes of the dead woman opened up wide and she suddenly grabbed Zhang Yang's wrist with one of her hands!

"Son of the ---!"

It was not really a rare thing to see reanimated corpses and zombies in the game. However, having a corpse move and grab hold of you like that was another matter entirely! Zhang Yang was so frightened that his heart almost popped out! His wrist felt icy cold and numb. Felice was also shocked by his reaction, as she stared at him with her eyes wide open. Thunderhawk was so frightened to the point that its feathers stood up on ends!

A true horror movie experience!

The lady corpse swung her arm and Zhang Yang was thrown across the room like a rag doll. Then, he crashed into the wall of the room and stars began to spin around his head. He lay on the ground dizzily.

After struggling to get up for a brief moment. Zhang Yang saw that the lady corpse had sat up and was looking around to the left and right in confusion. She seemed to have been displaced in time and space.

[Helena, Princess of Garano Kingdom] (Ethereal, Spectre)

Level: 130

HP: 39,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Melee Attack: 71,546 - 85,546

Skills:

[Royalty's Supremity Aura]: Being oppressed by royalty, targets within the area of 40 X 40 meters will suffer a reduction of attack by 50%.

[Chaos Strike]: Attacks the target continuously. Each hit causes 100% Physical Damage to the target. The user can attack from 2 times up to 10 times. The number of hits will occur randomly.

[Thousand Shadow Slash]: Strikes out with shadows of blade in all eight directions. Each shadow of blade causes 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage and pushes the target 3 meters

backward. Range: 50 meters.

[Spectre Regeneration]: Recovers 1% HP every 30 seconds. Can be activated during a battle.

Note: Helena was the Princess of the Garano Kingdom in life. She was a rare beauty. She had a long line of suitors. According to rumors, the line was so long that it could have spanned the Chaos Realm thrice! Even the beautiful female elves would be ashamed of themselves when they lay eyes on her.

Now, this are the Skills that a powerful boss should have! Nobody could dodge these AoE attacks. Furthermore, her Attack value was really high. She could even kill a Tanker instantly! Therefore, the only way of standing against her would be to sacrifice as many players as possible until the boss was defeated!

Zhang Yang started thinking about it. The only weakness that Helena had was her slightly low HP value! He could just activate his {God of War Transformation} and stand a chance at killing the boss now. However, this was only a B-rank quest. An easy quest would not send players up against the most powerful boss in the entire map.

Furthermore, Helena did not seem to be attacking. Something was up.

Zhang Yang signaled at Felice not to do anything stupid with a half-raised arm. Then he called out to Helena with a respectful voice, "Your Highness ---"



"Who are you? Why am I here? What is this place?" Helena was very confused as she went on asking all her questions at once. Her charming face was twisted with confusion.

"Your Highness, please take a deep breath and calm yourself first. We can take it slow and talk about it."

Helena took a deep breath. Her face became calm in just a second. It proved that she was an experienced lady of the court. The moment she calmed down, her intellects were restored. After taking a quick look around, she said softly, "From what I see here, this is a tomb! Just now, I was crawling out from a jade coffin... I remember... I was infected with a deadly plague. The doctor said those who are infected would be as good as dead! If that was true, it means that I... I'm already dead!"

Very good, it seemed that Zhang Yang did not have to waste his breath trying to explain everything to her.

This is an intelligent being. She could already accept her death and her Spectral nature within 3 seconds! However, her eyes suddenly turned angry as she looked at Zhang Yang and asked, "Are you a tomb raider?"

It was definitely a logical assumption. Truth to be told, Zhang Yang had almost become one himself, thanks to the stupid Goblin. However, he was not stupid enough to admit that.

Zhang Yang quickly shook his head. He spoke in a just manner,

"Your Highness, please don't get me wrong. I'm an Adventurer from White Jade Castle. It would be impossible for me to be a filthy tomb raider! Truth be told, I was sent here by Queen Serena herself to investigate the cause of the plague!"

"Queen Serena? Queen?" Helena tensed up a little upon hearing the word queen, "When did a Queen appear on these lands? What year is it now?"

"It's the year 10,086!"

"WHAT?!" Helena was shocked, "So it has been so long since I died! 21 years! It's been 21 years!"

Looks like this princess is quite 'young'.

Zhang Yang did not say anything after she stopped talking. He did not want to do anything to aggravate the matter. After all, she might just lose herself and vent it all out on him! Zhang Yang would not want to waste his {God of War Transformation} for a stupid reason.

Fortunately, Princess Helena was a calm and wise lady. She managed to calm herself down very quickly each time. She walked quickly towards the door, as she wanted to take a look outside the mausoleum. Zhang Yang followed her closely. The Crown of the Living Frost was still on top of her head, so there was no point for Zhang Yang to remain in the room.

After walking out from the mausoleum, Helena raised her head and looked into the sky. Then, she let out a roar that shook the air. Her voice was heard across the distant land as well.

From afar, countless Spectral Maidservants came towards her. The number of the monsters was so abundant that Zhang Yang felt a chill going up his spine. He would definitely be as good as dead if he ever gets targeted by so many monsters. The only solution on his mind now was to hop onto Thunderhawk and fly as far away as possible!

"Your Highness!"

"Princess Helena!"

Even though these Spectral Maidservants were just low Tier monsters like the skeleton soldiers, they were approaching Princess Helena. After all, it was their loyalty to her that had made them this way.

"Everyone ---" When Princess Helena saw that her maidservants had been turned into Spectres and were walking towards her like an army of the walking dead, she was instantly struck by grief and rage. She took a deep breath again and turned to Zhang Yang. Then she said, "Adventurer, I should have sentenced you to death the moment you trespassed my tomb! But now, I will give you a chance to redeem yourself! Go forth and inquire about a certain person's whereabouts for me! His name is Banct Roland! Find out where he is and get as much information as you can for me!"

‘Ding! Princess Helena has a quest for you: Search for News. Do you accept?’

Since he had nothing in his hand at the moment, Zhang Yang nodded and accepted the quest. Then he said, "Your Highness, Zhan Yu is willing to serve you!"

However, it would not be easy at all to search for someone's whereabouts in the entire Chaos Realm. It might be even worse than finding a needle in a haystack! So Zhang Yang quickly asked, "Your Highness, who is this Banct Roland? It would be very hard to find a person just by name."

Helena hesitated for a moment, and said tentatively, "He is my lover... back then ... he made a promise to me. I have been waiting for his return here ever since! Even after the plague, I did not ever leave! But he never returned to me! I need to know... did something happen to him or did he abandoned me? Did he disappoint me? Our love? I need to know! Truth be told, I can leave this place to search for him myself, but .... look at them... I must find a way out for them! They are my people!"

Zhang Yang could not help but admire the princess. She would put her people before herself! He saluted her and said, "Your Highness! Rest assured that I shall locate Banct Roland for you! I shall not fail!"

Spectres only come to being if they had strong emotions or attachments to something. It would cause their soul unrest. What Helena could not let go was her love for this man. It was really hard to imagine what would happen if this Banct Roland betrayed

her. This princess would surely unleash all her resentment, and the only God knows how many people would die just to calm her wrath!

"He used to live in Castle Anjar, located in the Juval Mountains of Grandu Ice Ridge. You can start by taking a look there."

"Yes, Your Highness."

Zhang Yang hopped onto his Thunderhawk. With a flash of deep blue lightning, Zhang Yang blasted off to the skies.

# Chapter 591: Castle Anjar

---

Grandu Ice Ridge was originally the territory of Japan-Korea Region. However, ever since Winst Castle had fallen into the hands of Zhang Yang, those maps had been under his 'control'. So, Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to Morning Town. Then he used the Teleportation Circle of Morning Town to reach Winst Castle within seconds. It saved a lot of time traveling. Well, he was very happy about that. The Teleportation Circle of the Territory came handy after all.

If the players of Japan-Korea Region were to know that Zhang Yang was using their Territory Gateway only for his own convenience, they would be punching their own teeth out --- you son of the b\*tch! Using it to your own convenience, while disposing the convenience of hundred millions of players from Japan-Korea Region? Humiliating them completely? They would want to bite this China pig to death, literally!

Once he was at Winst Castle, Zhang Yang flew into the sky once again. The speed of Thunderhawk was surely one of the best among all [Flying Mounts] at the current stage of the game. With just a lightning-blue flash, it could disappear from one's sight.

Zhang Yang did not try to put up a pageantry. After all, the place was the territory of the Japan-Korea Region. He was there only to complete his quest, not to look for trouble this time. If he is to be discovered by the players from that region, then he would not be able to avoid a fierce battle. Although Zhang Yang did not mind killing those players to earn some points, he would not want to risk compromising his quest.

So, that was that. Zhang Yang decided to focus on his current quest.

After a smooth and windy ride, he arrived at the Juval Mountains. After scouting the place a few times over, he discovered a tall and rugged castle among the mountains.

It seemed that the castle was already there for some time. The walls were dilapidated and thick with moss. Zhang Yang could not help but wonder if these walls were to face an oppressive army, how long would the walls last under the bombardment of the catapults? However, it was a huge castle. It was the total size of several small towns combined. It was rare to see such a large castle these days.

Zhang Yang did not land in the castle compound straight away. Instead, he chose to land by the entrance of the castle. He would like to go in like a guest instead of an intruder. So he paid the entrance fee upon entering the castle --- entering the territory by intrusion would only be provocative. If he was to do that in White Jade Castle, the Dragon Knights of the White Jade Empire would have pursued him to the ends of the earth!

Although there was no sign of any Dragon Knight in this castle, Zhang Yang did not intend to take an unnecessary risk. He came here for his quest, not to look for trouble. Furthermore, this was another stronghold of the Japan-Korea Region. It would be better for him to stay as low profile as possible.

Zhang Yang summoned Whitey out from his inventory. This big, adorable, silly bear had not breathed fresh air for quite a while. So it kept nuzzling Zhang Yang's leg with its head, trying to act in a pettishly charming manner. Zhang Yang could not help but chuckle.

The castle was merrier than expected. The place was crowded with people. There were merchants and sellers shouting on the two sides of the streets trying to get people to look at their goods. Zhang Yang was walking on the street with Whitey. They went up to a cloth merchant in an attempt to get some information. Firstly, he spent two gold coins for a few pieces of cloth and silk. After that, only did Zhang Yang dare to ask, "Boss, do you know anyone by the name of Banct Roland?"

"Count Roland The Third? Of course! Of course! He was the Baron of our Castle Anjar! Of course, I would know that!"

"Was?"

"Yes! How could you not know that Count Roland the Third had been dead for a decade now? Ever since he passed away, his son Tinct Roland had inherited his legacy as the new Baron. Now, the castle is under the supervision of the Countess Amansari, the wife of Tinct Roland!"

Zhang Yang could not help but frown. Banct Roland did not just abandon Helena's love, but he also had a wife and child? The question was, did he already have a wife and a child before Helena was infected by the plague or after Helena was infected by the plague?



If it was the former, this Banct must have been a selfish and heartless son of the b\*tch! He was toying with Helena's feelings all this while! If that Spectral princess ever finds out about this, the world would burn. She would definitely lead a massive army to burn and slaughter the people of this castle!

Actually... that was not such a bad thing, after all!

Zhang Yang could not help but widen his eyes in joy at the thought of it. It would not matter even if the drama ended in bloodshed and misery across the place. Everything in the game was virtual, after all! Furthermore, if the massive army of the Spectres were to cross the border, the players of Japan-Korea Region would be having a 'great' time.

Although Helena was just an Ethereal Tier boss, her Skills were powerful! Just like Queen Serena, even though her {Sword of Life and Death} was weaker by a few notches than expected, her AoE still had a huge range! Players would be wiped out before they can reach her!

With her {Thousand Shadow Slash}, Princess Helena could strike out with shadows of blades in all eight directions. Each shadow of the blade could cause up to 100% Melee Attack of Physical Damage and pushes the target 3 meters backward. More importantly, her Skill could reach all targets within a 50-meter range from her! By activating her {Thousand Shadow Slash} once, she could take out 80% of the players at the current stage of the game! Even if everyone happened to be mounted, 90% players would still die if she struck out twice with her {Thousand Shadow Slash}!

That would be great. These days, the Japan-Korea players have been destroying the Winst Castle more frequently than ever. Zhang Yang had to spend a large sum of money to repair the Territory repeatedly. Each repair would cost him about hundreds of thousands of dollars, sometimes, it even went up to millions! It was costing him a fortune!

Well, it's about time to teach them some manners!

However, when Zhang Yang brought up his quest list, he realized that the quest 'Search for News' was not completed yet. In other words, the information that he had acquired up to this point was not enough. There might still be some clues at Banct Roland's grave --- Zhang Yang hoped that the man had not turned into a Spectre and frighten him like how the princess did back there!

Zhang Yang continued to ask, "Boss, do you happen to know where Banct Roland's grave is? I would like to pay my respects to him."

"It should be in the ancestral hall of the Rolands. It's located in the middle of the castle, alright. But that is a restricted area. You can't go there! Oh, right! What's your relationship with our late Count? Could you be one of his illegitimate children as well?" Tsk tsk tsk! Our late Count Roland just loved sprinkling his 'seeds' all over the 'place'! Hehehe!" the cloth merchant let out a sinister laugh.

Zhang Yang put the clothes that he bought into his inventory and

went off towards the deeper part of the castle with Whitey.

Although he could not vanish or use stealth like how Thieves usually do, he did have {Burrow}. Zhang Yang could just sneak through the guards and all other defenses.

"China pig!"

Just when Zhang yang was ready to move forward with Whitey, he suddenly spotted two players with red-labeled names. The kind of red that almost seemed to be black. It was not the color that players would have after killing other players. If they did kill some players, their names would be bright red. However, this dark red color indicated that these players were from an opposing region.

One of the players had hidden their personal information while the other did not --- The Chaos Realm did not belong to any of the Regions. Although there were eight different Territory Gateways across the entire realm, those gateways were just a spot for players to take a break in. Basically, the gateways did not permanently belong to any one region. Therefore, the information of players would not be forcefully revealed to others. However, enemy players could still see which region the players were from.

"Kill him!" One of them was a Thief, while the other was a Berserker. After exchanging affirmations, the two of them charged at Zhang Yang.

The moment weapons were unsheathed, the merchants at the roadsides began to scream and run in terror. The situation

erupted.

Zhang Yang hopped off Whitey's back and charged at the Berserker. He stunned the Berserker with his {Charge} before the Berserker could activate his. Then he slashed at the Berserker and laughed out loud. Blood splattered across the ground and the Berserker received a damage of '-29,873!'. That was one-third of the Berserker's HP bar!

On the next moment. Zhang Yang swung him [Sword of Purging Devourer] through the air as he spun on his heels. More blood was spilled! He had struck the invisible Thief and had knocked the Thief right out from his Stealth Mode. '-88,974!' That swing was no ordinary attack. Zhang Yang had activated his {God of War Devastation} which caused 3 times the damage of his initial Melee damage. The Thief who did not reveal his player information was instantly killed by that hit!

"Nanda Kore!"

The Berserker with the name 'Tienwu Ichiro' turned ghastly pale. He took in a cold breath and shouted in a shaky voice, "You're Zhan Yu!"

'A Shield-wielder with incredibly high damage!' That was the impression of players from Japan-Korea Region on Zhang Yang. Because Zhang Yang was wearing a helmet which covered most of his face, it would be very difficult to recognize a player without the player's information revealed. So, the only way of guessing was by the way the player acted.

Huh? How could he have guessed that so accurately?

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Ding ding! Correct! Sadly, no rewards for you!"

The one-second global shared cooldown passed, Zhang Yang activated his {Horizontal Sweep} and caused '-61,229!' damage to Tienwu Ichiro, sending him straight to the Graveyard.

Without wasting any more time, Zhang Yang quickly fled the scene.

Zhang Yang knew that the players of Japan-Korea region wanted him dead, to eat his flesh and drink his blood! If they find out that he was all alone in their territory, they would definitely gather their men and attempt to surround him. Unless Zhang Yang activates his {God of War Transformation}, he would not stand a chance against hundreds or thousands of players at the same time.

Furthermore, judging from the hate that these players had for him, they would come in numbers of up to tens of thousands!

Without any hesitation at all, he quickly rode Whitey and charged towards the deeper site of the castle. In just a brief moment, he arrived at the front of an imposing manor. There were 10 fully armored guards guarding by the entrance of the manor. Right on top of the manor, there was a label. 'The Count's Manor'. The words were crystal clear as f\*ck!

So, Zhang Yang quickly kept Whitey back to his inventory and activated {Burrow} to begin his infiltration. He dug into the solid-jade ground. Then he made his way into the manor like a fish in water.

The manor was like a country among countries. It was huge! It took quite a while before Zhang Yang could finally locate the whereabouts of the ancestral hall.

The Chinese people call it an Ancestral hall. The place was an underground tomb site. Zhang Yang went straight through a metal door and entered the mausoleum of Roland. Fortunately, the place was not too vast. The room was only hundreds of meter-square wide. There were tomb slots on all four walls of the room. Each of the tomb 'shelves' contained a coffin. There was also a plate that displayed the name of the coffin's occupant.

Zhang Yang looked around for a bit. After just a while, he found the label of 'Banct Roland'. He pulled the coffin out effortlessly. Screech!

Zhang Yang prayed hard that this corpse would not suddenly come back to life like the last one.

He reached out for the cover of the coffin and a progress bar appeared right on top of the coffin. 30 seconds later, the cover of the coffin automatically opened by itself. Creak --- the atmosphere in the room was creepy and spooky at the same time, thanks to the dim light and the sound the echoed throughout the large hall.

"Urgh ---"

The moment the lid of the coffin slid open, a dried up corpse sat up! His face was emaciated, and he was making some strange, spooky sounds like a zombie.

Pak!

Zhang Yang immediately smacked the man in the face with his shield! F\*ck you! Stop scaring people already!

The dried body was immediately smacked back into the coffin.

[Banct Roland] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 100/20,800

Note: Third In Line, Count Roland. He was once a great Spellcaster. But now, he is a barely living husk of a man.

He was not yet dead!

Zhang Yang could not help but feel shocked. How could a living man be in a coffin in such a manner?

He helped Banct out of the coffin and said, "Hey, give me a cough if you're not yet dead!"

"Who... are you..." Banct tried to speak.

"I'm an Adventurer. I'm here by the orders of Princess Helena. I was tasked to look for a man named Banct Roland!"

"Helena!" the lifeless eyes of Banct suddenly flashed, as if he had regained some vigor. It was as if the light of life had been shone upon him for a moment. "Isn't... isn't she dead already?"



## Chapter 592: The Reason for His Past

---

"She could never let go of the feelings of the past. That was why, even after death, she had returned in the form of a spectre." Zhang Yang sat down next to the coffins and said, "Tell me your story, Count Roland. Why are you not dead but hiding in the coffin?"

Banct Roland started to shed tears. The man should be only around 40 years of age. Yet, his complexion and appearance made him look like an 80-year-old. Surprisingly, the man still carried a little of that gentleman's aura. Banct kept quiet for a moment. After sobbing for a bit, he muttered, "I was engaged before I knew Helena."

Zhang Yang listened to his story and found that it was rather a dull plotline. Banct had met Helena even though he was already engaged to someone else. When he saw her beauty, he fell for her and tried his best to court her. Back then, the man was in his prime. A man of youth that could entice even the coldest of hearts such as Helena. Banct was not engaged with the woman because he loved her. Hence, on the pretense of going off to solve a family matter, Banct left Helena. He promised Helena that when he returns, he will ask for her hand in marriage. Banct lied to Helena because he was afraid that she might accept the truth. As such, Banct left Helena and promised to return in three months' time.

Banct sought to cancel his engagement with Amansari. However, in a fit of rage, Amansari had poisoned him and had him locked up. Back then, Both Banct's parents had passed away due to illness. Hence, the Baron of the castle had fallen to his ownership. However, the real power lay in the hands of Amansari's family. The main purpose of Amansari poisoning Banct was to have her

family to fully take in the Roland's family's fortune.

Amansari had made a public announcement about Banct. In the announcement, she claimed that Banct had been inflicted with a disease that had caused him to be paralyzed from head to toe. She had proclaimed her marriage to Banct as an act of true love and decided to take over the inheritance of the Roland family. In the end, Banct was kept in the coffin and pronounced dead.

On the other hand, Helena, who was still waiting for her love to come back to her side had been inflicted with a deadly disease which ended up killing her as she stood by her promise and waited for Banct's arrival even when the disease spread to her land.

Zhang Yang scratched his head and pondered. "There's another Roland out there who is still alive. If he your son?"

"....Yes." said Banct. "She forced herself on me!"

Is that even possible!? Oh, wait...perhaps it is. With women like Sun Xin Yu and Han Ying Xue on the loose, so why would not there be someone like Amansari?

Banct explained further. "For the past several years, I have been tortured by her. She even blackmailed me with the life of my son! If I am to take my own life, she would send him to my side after my death! The child is innocent! I could not bear the responsibility of another person's life, much less my own son!"

The way he spoke, as if he was a saint!

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Search for News!’

Zhang Yang had completed the quest and could now return to Helena’s side.

"Young man, return to Helena. Tell her that I am sorry. I have failed her." Banct closed his eyes and cried a river.

"Hmph! Are you sorry for me then?" The voice of a woman was heard and a beautiful woman, endowed with grandeur and royalty stepped out of the shadows. Her hair was golden blonde, and her skin was as fair as the color of milk. The highest of standards of a western woman.

[Countess Amansari] (Mythical, Humanoid)

Level: 130

HP: 39,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Magic Attack: 41,464 – 51,464

Skills:

[Flare]: Blasts flames in all directions, dealing 50,000 Fire damage to all targets within 40 meters.

[Explosive Flame]: Deals 200% magic Fire damage to a target. Range: 40 meters. Channeling: 2 seconds.

[Flame Shield]: Creates a shield made of fire. Protects the caster for 1 minute or after absorbing 1,000,000 damage. Attackers will receive 10,000 Fire damage on every attack received.

Note: Anjar Castle's puppet master.

The NPC Count Amansari had a green name tag; so killing her would do Zhang Yang no good.

Banct widened his eyes and cried, "You swine! You have imprisoned me for 20 years! You have taken the castle! What else do you want to take from me!?"

"Everything. You're the man who abandoned the engagement and sought for a new woman!" Amansari glared at Banct.

Banct quickly acted before Amansari could do anything to Zhang Yang. He drew a circle in the air with his scrawny fingers and created a white portal. With an invisible force, Banct shoved Zhang Yang into the portal. "Young man! You have to escape! You must tell Helena that she is the only woman that I will ever love!"

Zhang Yang was suddenly thrown into a cutscene. He could not control his character and fell into the portal. With a bright flash, Zhang Yang reappeared outside the castle. He could still hear the ringing bellows of Amansari in his ear.

"There! The China pig is there! Get him!"

Zhang Yang turned his head to the side and saw nine players rushing to his direction on mounts. The news of Zhang Yang wandering in the Japan-Korea region had spread like mushrooms sprouting after a rain. Zhang Yang was still a little dizzy after going through the portal. However, he quickly jumped on his mount and made his way back to the mainland. The nine players who were rushing over and calling Zhang Yang with profanities had only just spotted him then. Things changed when Zhang Yang stood still and waited for them to get closer to him instead. A stance where only the strong could do. Right then, the nine players had noticed it and exchanged a worried look before running away in the opposite direction.

Zhang Yang laughed out of habit. Although he knew that his name had already spread across the land and along with it, the sense of alert and fear came with his character itself. It was proven when they turned tail and ran, even when there were nine of them and only one Zhang Yang.

Finally, the days when he can be left alone has arrived!

If Zhang Yang wanted to chase them, he could. Violet Thunderbird's tier was Mythical. It could easily chase down Violet-Platinum, and Yellow-Gold flying mounts. Among all nine of them,

only one player had a flying mount while the rest only had the normal type. None of them could escape the grasp of death if Zhang Yang wanted them dead!

But then again, why should he let them get away? He could kill them and let them spread his murderous power after they revive themselves.

Zhang Yang leaped onto the Thunderhawk and shot towards a Spellcaster. Zhang Yang grabbed his sword and was ready to pull it out, however, before he could draw his blade, the opponent had activated {Ice Barrier} and gained 10 seconds of invincibility.

What a letdown. Never mind, next target. Zhang Yang banked sharply in the air and zoomed towards a Hunter. He sliced downward and dealt over 28,000 damage to the Hunter. The first attack had already removed 1/3 of his HP. Zhang Yang lifted his sword up high and struck the Hunter's chest with {Destructive Smash}, piercing the Hunter's chest, all the way through. Felice dropped down to the ground and thrust her spear into the same man.

The poor hunter only had over 100,000 HP, even when he was mounted on his battle mount. It had only taken 2 attacks from Zhang Yang and Felice to die instantly.

Zhang Yang flung his sword forcefully and sliced the Hunter's body in half. The force of it sent the mangled body into the air and splattered onto the ground. The scene of which horrified the other players to such an extent that they picked up the pace even further.

Zhang Yang did not even need to push the Thunderhawk. Like a wraith, Zhang Yang appeared behind the fleeing players and beheaded one of them effortlessly. At his current strength, unless his opponent was Sun Xin Yu or One Sword Stroke, no one could be on par with him!

Zhang Yang proceeded to kill a total of 5 players before he stopped. Zhang Yang turned tail and fled! There was a large army of players coming from the castle's direction towards him!

He would not need to flee if he uses the Transformation skill of the God of War. With the number of player exceeding by the thousands, he might get his own head beheaded!

If Zhang Yang wanted the player dead, no one could escape the reaper of death. That has been established. On the other way around, if he wanted to run, no one could chase after him! As his character gradually became smaller and smaller, the players that were chasing after him had no choice but to scream his name out in agony.

Zhang Yang flew further and made sure the players could not be seen before landing on the ground. He then tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and appeared in Morning Town. The next thing he should do is to visit Princess Helena to finish the quest. Based on the quest lore and the relationship between Princess Helena and Banct, the quest might end up having Princess Helena to rescue her lover from the castle itself! Perhaps, she could be a handy assistant!

It would be good to borrow her strength to kill as many Japan-Korea region players before they disperse!

Zhang Yang flew out of Morning Town and made it to the rundown palace ruins after 3 hours.

"Little Yang! Did you impregnate a girl in the Japan-Korea region? I just picked up a kill-on-sight order on the forums!" Fatty Han started rumbling.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Nay. I was over there to do a quest and some of them tried to kill me. If they had not disturbed me, I would have left them alone!"

"Haha! Good one bro! But, you could have been a better bro if you have called me over! How could not you invite me for a fight?! Especially when the opponents are the Japanese and Koreans!"

"F\*ck you! Grandu Ice Ridge is so close to you! You could visit the place anytime you want to!"

As they were happily chatting, Endless Starlight suddenly cried out in the conversation room. "Something's happened! Something's happened!"

"What? Is the sky falling down? Even if the sky falls down, I'll be there to catch it!" said Fatty Han proudly.

"Haha! That would really be s sight to see, then!" said Endless



Starlight anxiously.

"What's really happening?" asked Zhang Yang.

"Everyone knows that One Sword Stroke got married yesterday, yes? But when the newlyweds left the church, both of them were abducted by a group of thugs! One Sword Stroke was tied up and castrated! His new wife was gang-raped by more than 10 men! The video has even been uploaded to the internet! It's even in the 7 pm news!"

Zhang Yang did not need to even think twice to know that it was all Liu Wei's bidding.

In his previous life, he had even dared to fire a gun in the middle of a famous hotel room. Hiring thugs to do his bidding was but an everyday thing to him! Since it was a crime that did not involve killing, naturally Liu Wei had many means and methods of making things happen without sully his own hands!

Zhang Yang knew that Liu Wei would not sit back and do nothing when One Sword Stroke had stolen his "property", but he had never expected that Liu Wei would be brutal to that extent. Castrating One Sword Stroke was a public warning to everyone that some women were just not up for grabs! As for Luo Xin Yang's naked public disgrace, it was a warning that no woman can shame him publicly. If anyone were to repeat the same mistake, the same treatment will befall them as well.

"That bastard, Liu Wei!" Fatty Han spat a mouthful. Even though

they had no evidence to tie the crime to Liu Wei, everyone could have guessed it.

"How is that Liu Wei is still breathing right now!?" said Daffodil Daydream.

"What is the current situation?"

"What else is there? Everything is still under investigation!" Endless Starlight shrugged. "My guess, this whole mess would blow off with the wind eventually."

Lost Dream shook his head. "I'm sure that the investigation would never find a direct link to Liu Wei. At most, the police will find a few small fries. Unless the investigative power goes all out, the only evidence they'll find would be Liu Wei's sh\*t!"

# Chapter 593: Saving Banct

---

The only response to Liu Wei's cruel act was to just insult and curse behind his back. There was literally nothing that anyone could do. If scolding could solve most problems, having a debate would solve any world's problem.

Zhang Yang had other things to do at the moment and put the thought about Liu Wei behind his head. Zhang Yang was riding to the castle and by the time he arrived, the ruins were not as bad when he left the place. Even though it was not fully rebuilt, the roof of the palace had been remade.

Zhang Yang wandered around the palace and found the princess standing on a broken balcony. The sun was setting then and the sky was dyed in red. The princess was gazing into the horizon. She looked like her thoughts were somewhere as far as the bird in the sky. The soft wind blew, gently caressing her hair and dress.

She turned to Zhang Yang and walked back into the room. "Do you have news for me, adventurer?" she asked anxiously.

"Yes." Zhang Yang walked closer and told everything that had happened to Banct Roland.

Helena took the news about Banct poisoning and imprisonment rather calmly. In the end, she walked back to the balcony to ponder a while. There was a conflict in her mind which was obviously betrayed by her facial expressions. Right then, when Zhang Yang was about to approach her to ask of her next move,

she turned to Zhang Yang and looked him in the eye. There was a heroic aura that rose from her eyes. The aura grew stronger and when she got closer to Zhang Yang, the bricks around immediately turned into fine grains. Excited, anxious, and agitated, Helena roared. "I understand! I understand everything now! I will save him!"

Thank god that was her response.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: Searching for News. Obtained 3,000,000 Experience Points!’

"My princess. Please allow this lowly adventurer to join you in your rescue mission!" Zhang Yang lowered his head and kneeled.

"I allow it!" Princess Helena stood stoically and roared.

‘Ding! Princess Helena has a quest for you: Saving Banct Roland. Will you accept it?’

Accept!

[Saving Banct Roland] (Difficulty Level: S)

Description: You have decided to join hands with Princess Helena to charge into Anjar Castle to rescue Banct Roland. Warrior, you must keep both eyes open at all time. Countess Amansari had control over the entire castle. The hostiles you are about to face will be a devastating army!

Completion: Secured Banct Roland 0/1

Princess Helena did not own a flying mount. Back then, Zhang Yang had Serena when she was still a princess, riding along with him. Now, he had Princess Helena sit behind him! Perhaps it was fortunate that the Thunderhawk was a Mythical tier mount. If it was any lower tiered, the princess might have just trampled over the poor bird! They had to resort using a mount to travel since the [Teleportation Scroll] would not work on an NPC. It would have been much faster to travel from Morning Town to Anjar than where they were.

The two of them flew quickly and arrived at the Grandu Ice Ridge. Since the place was at the borders of Japan-Korea region, many players from that region were wandering around the map. Even though Zhang Yang's appearance was not recognizable from that distance, Princess Helena was standing out a little too much. Plus, the word "Mythical" was hanging on her name tag like a beacon on a starless night.

It did not take long before groups of players chased after Zhang Yang like sharks. All of them were staring at them with the eyes of a hungry ghost. It was difficult enough to find a Mythical boss anywhere around the world. How could anyone let go of an opportunity when a boss is miraculously flying over their territory?

Still, it was impossible for anyone to chase after Zhang Yang since his flying mount was zooming across the sky like an F22 jet. Half an hour later, the Thunderhawk arrived at the top of Anjar

Castle. This time, Zhang Yang ignored the no flight rule and descended down straight towards the tombs.

"Insolent fool!" Four castle guards armed themselves and chased after Zhang Yang.

"Hmph!" Helena scoffed with disdain and glared at the guards with such a strong killing intent that even Zhang Yang could feel it. A bright phantom sword formed around the guards and started cutting them up.

Helena's attack was not strong enough to instantly kill the guards. The damage dealt to them was only around 80,000 which only sent them staggering back momentarily.

"Kill!" With a strong sense of duty, the guards rallied themselves and came back at them.

This time, Helena had focused her thoughts on killing the guards and demonstrated the power of a Mythical boss. Her feat was not that of a second-rate boss like the Vampire King. The princess cast another phantom sword and dealt more than 80,000 AoE damage. The sword she cast could attack targets as far as 50 meters away, and also possess a strong knockback property. Zhang Yang was glad that he did not have to fight her. Any class fighting this boss would surely be frustrated!

Though they received some damage from the guards from time to time, the damage dealt to her was so low that it was merely an ant's bite, since she had a HP as long as 40,000,000. On the other

hand, she did had the skill {Spectre Regeneration} which could restore 1% of her HP every 30 seconds. A measly attack from the guards required only 1 second to allow her to recover completely.

‘Intruder!’

"There’s a killer on the loose!"

Cries and roars of guards and soldiers echoed throughout the castle.

Zhang Yang thought of an idea and decided to linger a little longer around. He wanted to lure more Japan-Korea Region players around and kill them with Princess Helena’s super skill! Even though her HP was not particularly long, Zhang Yang was sure that he could at least create some trouble for the players while Helena slaughters them all.

Lo and behold, players from Japan and Korea arrived on their flying mounts. When they saw Helena battling with the elite guards of the castle, their hopes rose and they cheered. "The NPCs are fighting the boss! It’s time for us, the real fighters to show them a good battle!"

The player approached closer and immediately unsummoned their mounts. They were obedient players who were scared of being killed for breaking the rules of the castle!

{Thousand Shadow Slash}!

Helena thrust her sword into the sky and created a phantom sword. With a swift swing of her own physical blade, the ethereal phantom sword cut through the field horizontally, damaging many players and pushing them back by 3 meters.

As expected for a powerful Mythical tier boss. They were, after all, the dominant entities in the Level 100 – Level 130 maps!

Helena jumped off the Thunderhawk and swiftly dashed towards a guard. Zhang Yang could not believe his eyes when he saw the princess executing her skill, {Chaos Strike}. The movements of the sword were so quick that she had left afterimages of herself slicing about!

‘-78,642!’

‘-82,442!’

‘-83,445!’

...

The damaged chained on and on by more than 80,000 per strike and killed the guard instantly.

The scene of the princess dancing around and killing the guards almost in a split second had left the players shivering in fear. If the



princess could deal such high damage to an elite guard, it would be much higher to them! Without an Inheritance Transformation skill, nobody would be able to stand against her.

"Stubborn fools!" cried Helena. From her perspective, all who had attacked her were those who had been sent to stop her from saving Banct. The sole reason for Helena to rise again as a Spectre was the purity of her love for Banct. Those who place themselves between Helena and her goals will be executed without a second thought!

{Thousand Shadow Slash}!

{Thousand Shadow Slash}!

{Thousand Shadow Slash}!

...

What that makes a boss so strong would be the ridiculous cooldown rate of their super skills. Their skill could be used at will without the need of obeying the rules of the game system! Helena danced around, slashing her blade about, on and on. The skill {Thousand Shadow Slash} was used every 2 seconds on average. The powerful damage output was so strong and fast that even Zhang Yang would think twice before having her as an enemy.

"Eh!? Isn't that Zhan Yu!?" Finally, someone recognized Zhang Yang.

"You're right! It's really him! F\*ck that guy! He thinks that he can hide behind a boss! I can smell him even from a mile away!"

"Kill the bastard!"

Zhang Yang stopped trying to avoid eye contact any longer. He was now public enemy number 1 in the eyes of the Japanese and Korean players. The hatred directed to him was as if he had just killed the prime minister of their country.

There were some players that got hot-headed and charged at him. However, their actions had only caused them to be the next target for Helena. With only one use of {Thousand Shadow Slash}, the player's HP was reduced by half.

Zhang Yang laughed at their pathetic attempt to attack him. He then unequipped the shield and raised a middle finger up high in the sky to allow all players see his gesture.

When the hatred towards him was already boiling up like a kettle, the middle finger gesture had turned them into steam. Like a kettle, the players started cursing and insulting Zhang Yang. No matter what flowery language they used, based on the intonation and pitch, Zhang Yang could have guessed that they were synonyms for "screw you!".

"Don't think too highly of yourself!" A player stood out. Zhang Yang turned over to the source of the voice and noticed that the person was expanding in size. The muscle around his body began

to turn into stone. Gradually, his entire character had turned into a moving stone sculpture! With a loud deafening voice, the player cried out, "I will kite the boss away. You guys take down that Zhan Yu!"

"It's Ganwu Martial's main tank! Uldaht!" Someone else recognized the player and cheered happily. "The man has a C class Inheritance, the Rocky Stone Inheritance! It is the best counter for all physical attack bosses!"

BUMP! BUMP!

Each step he took after he had activated the Transformation skill made the earth rumble.

As compared to the A class and S class Inheritances, Zhang Yang had a better understanding of B class and C class Inheritances. In his past life, he had never once able to get along with players of higher tiers. As a result, the company he mingled around were most players with only B class and C class Inheritances. The Rocky Stone Inheritance was almost similar to that of the Petrification Inheritance. The only difference was the Rocky Stone Inheritance would receive 50% extra damage from taking a magic attack. Hence, it was marked as a faulty Inheritance and thus ranked at C class.

Princess Helena unleashed a flurry of attack using {Thousand Shadow Slash} and only managed to force Uldaht to move a few steps back unlike other players. Furthermore, the damage he had received was only over 40,000! After using the Transformation skill, his HP had been boosted up to 900,000!

"Hahahah!" Uldaht laughed and pounded his chest like a gorilla. Sparks could be seen flying about as he did it. The tank then stomped the ground and hurled a {Spear of Obliteration} at Helena. Sadly, his skill was for naught. The battle had been going on for a while and the princess's aggro was fixed mainly on the NPC guards.

Zhang Yang smirked and called for Felice. "Felice! Could you do me a favor and attack that stone man?"

"Yes! Big brother! Felice will do her best!" Although Felice was no longer a little girl, she was still as spirited when it comes to battle, just like the Wei Yan Er. She quickly morphed into her Dragonhawk form and blasted Uldaht with a {Fire Missile}.

With Zhang Yang's micromanagement, he had led the Thunderhawk to send a blast of {Thunder Ball} towards Uldaht.

When Uldaht had activated his Transformation skill, Zhang Yang would find some trouble dealing damage to the tank. Hence, he had exploited the weakness of the Inheritance and attacked with both Felice and the Thunderhawk magic attack! His weakness had only turned them both extremely strong! No healers would dare to go near to heal Uldaht when the princess' {Thousand Shadow Slash} could reach as far as 50 meters! No Spellcaster or other paper-soft class would survive her attack!

Now that both Felice and the Thunderhawk had attacked Uldaht vigourously, he would not stand for long.

"Allow me to help you!" cried another player. It was a player donning a white robe. He too activated his Transformation skill and created a doppelganger behind him. The player then rushed over to Uldaht. When the player raised his staff, his doppelganger mirrored his actions and chanted a spell together.

That was the Doppelganger Inheritance! An Inheritance that could create a mirror image, 10 times the HP bonus, double the Defense, and a 10% chance to nullify a magic attack! However, the Inheritance did not provide any damage boost since the doppelganger was already a damage boost. Although the Inheritance had not provided any permanent damage or healing rate bonus, a C class Inheritance as such would always provide a 35% reduced damage or a 35% increased healing rate. It was like 2.7 healers healing Uldaht at the same time. At the current stage of the game, it would take an immense effort of a guild to obtain one C class Inheritance! Naturally, the player's equipment would not be weak! The healer who had just jumped into the fight was able to delay Uldaht HP from dropping like an open faucet, even when Felice and the Thunderhawk were attacking him rapidly! However, it was only a delay, his HP was still dropping down, but at a slower rate, allowing him to last slightly longer.

After a few skills, Uldaht was finally able to gain the aggro of Helena. He then quickly kited the boss away and created more distance between her and Zhang Yang. Since the boss would be affected by the aggro system and Zhang Yang could not, Zhang Yang only needed to follow the boss, leaving the tank's effect for naught!

Zhang Yang set his eyes on Uldaht and was surprised to see that

the man's Defensive ability was indeed strong. However, he could change the tide of the fight, simply by attacking him with a {Destructive Smash} to reduce his healing rate by 75%!

Now that Uldaht had been inflicted with the debuff of {Destructive Smash}, Uldaht had no way of preserving his HP. He was only able to hold on for now because of the new healer. As such, his HP started plummeting.

More healers came to his rescue. However, with Helena's merciless {Thousand Shadow Slash} attacks, no healer was able to last longer than 5 seconds after taking 2 skills from the attack.

To properly fight the boss, they would have to form a perfect healer formation where a bunch of healers stand 30 meters away from the boss and another party of healers stand 60 meters away to heal the healers. However, since everyone here practiced the "every man for himself strategy", no one could form a proper party and was killed by the boss.

Uldaht may have activated the Transformation skill, and a C class Inheritance had increased his HP by 10 fold, and he may have over 900,000 HP, but it was not able to endure the continuous attacks from Zhang Yang, the boss, Felice, and the Thunderhawk. With the {Destructive Smash} debuff on him, the poor tank turned into a pile of stones in less than a minute.

Technically, Zhang Yang had predicted that even with or without a player with Uldaht coming in to tank the boss, killing everyone in the castle would be a matter of time! Especially when she was spamming her OP skill - the {Thousand Shadow Slash}! All players

from Japan and Korea had to turn tail and run back to their mama!

It was extremely frustrating!

How could one fight a fair match when a player would receive 80,000 AoE damage just by standing there!? They could not even put up a fight! However, if they do not, they would have to allow the bastard, Zhang Yang, to enter their own territory!

# Chapter 594: Standing Guard

---

How could the Japanese and Korean players stand aside and allow the invader to waltz in at will!? That man was the player who snatched their Territory! The same man who had caused them huge shame! Look at him! The man had even shoved his finger up and showed the world a middle finger! How could one remain calm when 1,000 players are being overwhelmed by one man and a boss?!

Eventually, rage had clouded their judgment, making them jump into the fight. Sadly, their rage was immediately repaid with Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash}, turning them into a pile of diced meat. Furthermore, the players who receive a single attack, either from Zhang Yang, the Thunderhawk, or Felice, will suffer the experience point loss penalty and the chance to lose equipment and items in their inventory.

"Stop rushing in, morons! He's provoking us!"

Atop on the castle walls, there was a group of players who had remained where they were. Instead, they were simply observing how Zhang Yang killed everyone without putting much effort.

Zhang Yang had purposefully entered the Japan-Korea territory and provoked the players there to kill, and not that many have turned up when scaled to the magnitude of an entire Region. No one would be willing to engage in an all-out war against a single player. Right then, the current priority was to grind their levels. All of the players of Japan-Korea region had 5 levels reduced since they had lost all their main cities during the Ancient Creature war.



Many of players who had managed to get into the Chaos Realm had been immediately kicked out. No one would be willing to fall for Zhang Yang's trickery in delaying their grinding. Hence, with that sentiment in mind, the players who had gathered in Anjar Castle barely amounted to one thousand.

Technically, 1,000 men would be more than to kill Zhang Yang over and over, since some of them possessed Inheritances. The problem then was that no one had expected Zhang Yang to call in a boss to do the killing. A Mythical tier boss with the power to spam instant-kill skills would be an impossible target without the help of a [Forbidden Scroll]. Either that or a sea of 10,000 players!

After all the players in Anjar Castle were killed at least once, they felt the sense of defeat and called for reinforcements all over the nation. As such, the entire region was provoked and started expressing their disdain all over their own channels. No sooner later, the disdain, the disgruntlement, morphed itself into an intense rage. Insults and scolding gradually turned into threats. If he was to continue his foolish and selfish acts, he will be hunted down!

Zhang Yang merely shrugged. All of the threats were nothing but keyboard warriors.

On the other hand, it was not like Zhang Yang was the aggressor in here. He was doing his own business! It was the boss, the Mythical tier boss that had "enticed" them! The players that were attacking him must be thinking of killing it to obtain her precious drops. Helena was, after all, a Level 130 Mythical who could drop equipment with lowered Level Requirements! Skill books!

Inheritance Fragments! There's just so much temptation that no one could let it go!

The princess was a walking treasure chest!

"Hmm." The same group of players who were standing far from the fight scoffed as they saw many more ignorant players arriving at Anjar Castle.

"We gotta thank that China dude for bringing us a boss," cried the newcomers.

The initial players who had been fighting since the beginning had to withdraw from the fight and flee as far as they could. Before reinforcements arrive, they would have to stay alive. It was not possible to get even close to the boss with just a thousand players. Something like her would take as much as 10,000 players!

Helena sheathed her sword. There was nothing but dead bodies around her. Her aggro list was now empty. She brushed off a speck of dirt that was on her dress. It was impressive, that with all the slashing about, there was not even a single drop of blood on her dress!

She stood there, with a pair of beautiful, dazed eyes, as if she was in a trance. The dress flapped gently in the quiet battlefield. The fabric of her royal dress was plastered against her skin, emphasizing her slender body. It was truly a sight to behold that could bewitch any living man.

Zhang Yang was not there to witness that pretty portrait, he was busy searching for the entrance to the tomb. When he found it, he cried out, "Princess. Over here!"

As Zhang Yang voice rang loudly, Helena's eyes regained focus. She turned her head around only to turn away coldly. She scoffed at the bodies of both players and NPCs and moved towards the tomb.

With haste, the two of them hurried through the staircase towards the interior of the tomb. There, Zhang Yang pulled a wall off and exhumed Banct Roland. Right then, Banct had already passed on. Helena wanted to cry, but there were no tears for her to shed. As a spectre, she could not shed tears.

"He's dead..." Helena's voice cracked as she could not hold in her pain. "If not for those people out there...I-could've—I should've—ARGH! I HATE THIS! WHY!?" She buried her face in the chest of Banct. No matter how much pain she felt, she could not shed a single tear. "I WILL KILL THEM ALL!"

Looks like, thanks to their doing, Princess Helena had declared all Japanese and Korean players as her enemies.

Zhang Yang gave her some time to mourn the death of Banct. When her cries soothed down a little, Zhang Yang pats her shoulder and said, "My princess, Mr. Roland had been suffering in a state of being poisoned. Perhaps, death was a good thing for him. He is no longer in pain."

Helena adjusted her hair and stared down at Banct's still face. Right then, there was a conflict in her eyes which Zhang Yang knew very well.

Without looking at Zhang Yang, she spoke softly. "Warrior. I will now turn this man into a Spectre. Warrior, I have but one request for you. Please guard me. The process is extremely delicate. I cannot be disturbed, or both Banct and I will be trapped in the limbo of darkness!"

Zhang Yang saluted the princess and said, "Princess. Zhan Yu is here to serve. I will protect you and the one you love!"

"I leave my life to you."

Helena smiled as she gently caressed Banct's wrinkled face. "Wait for me, my love."

Helena lay her hands on Banct's chest. She focused her thoughts and a green, emerald light started radiating out of her chest. The aura grew bigger and connected both Helena's chest to Banct's at where their hearts were. Helena grunted in pain as both of them hovered above the ground. The green light grew bigger into a large orb and encased the two of them.

Zhang Yang eyes were locked on them for the entire time. When both of them were engulfed by the light, Helena's character disappeared. The ball of light replaced their bodies.

## [Defensive Barrier] (Summoned)

Level: 130

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 0

Note; A weak barrier created at the very last minute. The barrier must not fall, or both Helena and Banct will be trapped in the void.

Zhang Yang sucked in a deep breath and braced himself for what that is to come next. The quest had been set to an S level difficulty. Hence, a Mythical tier boss might even make its appearance. There was a high possibility that the boss would be the Countess Amansari. Zhang Yang guessed that he would have to kill the countess to proceed with the quest. That is, if the barrier does not fall first.

Right then, Zhang Yang was faced with another huge problem. A boss would be rather easy to handle due to their robotic manner of movement. The real threat to Zhang Yang would be the players of Japan-Korean region. They had been held back by Princess Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash}. However, Zhang Yang was sure that some smart players would have noticed Princess Helena disappearance and would act accordingly. When they attack, they attack Zhang Yang and bring down the barrier!

Zhang Yang feared to bring in Han Ying Xue. It would be too

dangerous. Alone, Zhang Yang could escape any time he wants with {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void}. If he had a party with him, he couldn't simply leave them behind to fend for themselves.

Zhang Yang thought about it for a bit. He had his last trump card, the God of War Transformation skill that would give him 2 hours of valuable time.

"Kill the intruders!" The voice of Amansari rang, and a portal appeared in midair. A group of 10 elite tier guards stepped out of it. 7 of them attacked Zhang Yang and the rest moved towards the barrier.

Zhang Yang rushed over to the three guards that were approaching the barrier and stunned one of them with {Charge}. He then cleaved another guard for over 28,000 damage and struck the ground with {Thunder Strike} to slow all three of them down.

Zhang Yang's {Thunder Strike} skill had been enhanced to reduce movement speeds by 90%! Previously, before Zhang Yang had obtained the {Superior Thunder Strike}, his enemies that are struck would already be moving like snails. Now, after the skill upgrade, the guards were moving so slowly that even a caterpillar could edge out ahead of them!

Zhang Yang smirked. He turned behind and blasted the other seven guards with {Horizontal Sweep}.

Zhang Yang relaxed when the guards reacted accordingly to the aggro system. After attacking, the monsters will not attack the

barrier until Zhang Yang, their aggro target is killed. Felice and Thunderhawk joined the fight promptly, unleashing both AoE skills and single target skills. Flashes of the blue lightning and red flames illuminated the entire tomb.

Zhang Yang adjusted himself and controlled the position of the guards, stunning all 10 guards with {Blast Waves}. After that, he waited for {Thunder Strike} to be ready and struck the ground at the moment the guards regained their control. All them of them were slowed down again, and Zhang Yang kited them away from the barrier.

Right then, {Thunder Strike} could inflict a 90% reduced movement speed debuff. Even though the target would regenerate 10% movement speed every second after being struck, {Thunder Strike} only had a 5-second cooldown, allowing the user to strike again, when they have only recovered 60% of their original movement speed.

It took around 2 minutes for Zhang Yang, Felice, and the Thunderhawk to kill all 10 guards.

"Useless buggers! Can't even kill a single man! Do not force me to do this myself!" the voice of Amansari ranged again and out came 20 heavily armored guards.

Clang! Each step the guards moved made their heavy armor plating clank together. The uniformed movements of all the guards were extremely organized. All at the same time, they unsheathed their swords and prepared for a battle.

Zhang Yang frowned but relaxed immediately when he realized that all the guards were melee attackers.

Zhang Yang slid across the ground with {Charge} and crashed into the organized formation of the guards. With a quick stomp, Zhang Yang inflicted all the guards with {Thunder Strike} and slowed everyone down.

Like any AoE skill, the more enemies, the better the effects!

If Zhang Yang only used {Thunder Strike}, {Blast Wave}, and {Horizontal Sweep}, and take 2 minutes to kill a 1,000,000 HP monster, he still only take 2 minutes to kill 5, 10, or even 20 of them! Such is the power of AoE skills. This is why many players preferred to kite monsters and kill them in groups instead of one by one.

However, {Horizontal Sweep} was not a penetrative type attack. Depending on the size of the monsters, there will always be a limit to the number of monsters that would be inflicted by the attack. Even if the number of monsters increases, the skill would only strike a few monsters at a time. Hence, instead of 2 minutes, Zhang Yang might take 3 minutes to kill 20 guards!

"A bunch of useless, good-for-nothing scums! Kill the man already!" out came the voice of Amansari from the portal.

"Yes! Countess Amansari!" The voices that replied her was a group of cheerful females. As such, 20 female wearing white robes



waltzed out of the portal. The women were roughly the age of 20 and wore long white dresses that revealed parts of their thighs and waists! If they wanted to, the whole world would be able to see their huhas if they took larger strides!

The dresses they wore had deep V cuttings that covered part of their hooters! Their entire abdomens and bellybuttons were completely exposed!

Zhang Yang's eyes automatically started drifting, but he frowned a little, as he could not take the battle seriously. This is a fight, goddamit! Not a fashion show!

[Personal Attendant] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 125

HP: 1,250,000

Defense: 1,300

Magic Attack: 6,478 – 7,478

Skills:

[Frost Arrow]: Conjures an icy shard to pierce a target, dealing 200% magic Frost damage to a target. Reduce the target's movement speed by 50%. Last for 5 seconds. Channeling: 2

seconds. Range: 30 meters.

Note: Countess Amansari's personal attendees. Loyal to her and only her. No man would even try to talk to them!

# Chapter 595: A Fierce Fight with the Japanese and Koreans

---

20 magic attackers!

Zhang Yang caved in and resorted to using the God of War Transformation. A bright radiant light blasted out as a pair of light wings protruded out of Zhang Yang's back. With a light flap, Zhang Yang zoomed towards the ladies.

"Kill the intruder!" cried the spellcasters. The women quickly sidestepped to dodge the attack and quickly cast {Frost Arrows}.

{Blast Wave}!

WHAM!

Zhang Yang leaped backward and swung his sword hard, creating a powerful blast of air that stunned all 20 enemies. Felice and the Thunderhawk had not needed to withdraw, so they simply continued attacking the monsters.

Unlike melee attackers, ranged attackers would always try to remain a distance from their attackers. Hence, after they recovered from the stun, each woman ran in a different direction. Some of them were still fixed at their positions and could only attack from where they stood.

‘-7,080!’

Resist!

Resist!

‘-7,562!’

...

A sky full of {Frost Arrows} landed on Zhang Yang but only some of them had dealt damage, the rest of the arrows disintegrated immediately when it touched Zhang Yang's character. In the Transformation status, Zhang Yang had a 40% chance to nullify magic attacks, hence with his boosted long HP, 7,000 magic damage was nothing but an ant's bite for him.

(Author's Note: The previous setting of 90% chance to nullify magic attacks for S class Inheritance was too OP. Hence, all magic nullifications will be reduced to balance it out. S classes will have 40% chance magic nullification, A classes 30%, B classes 20%, and C classes 10%)

Once the monsters had spread all over the place, Zhang Yang killing efficiency had dropped dramatically. However, note that he had already activated the God of War Inheritance. With 5 times the attack power and {God of War Crushing Strike}, it was a massacre! Zhang Yang had taken less than a minute to kill all 20 "hostess".

Zhang Yang killing power during then could be on par with Princess Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash}.

"Useless! Utter garbage!" cried Countess Amansari's voice from the portal. "Must I do everything on my own!?"

As such, the glamorous countess came out of the portal. Upon her arrival at the tomb, the portal pulsed violently and shattered apart like a mirror being struck by a stone.

Zhang Yang quickly examined the boss' properties again to recall her skills.

[Flare]: Blast flames in all directions, dealing 50,000 Fire damage to all targets within 40 meters.

[Explosive Flame]: Deals 200% magic Fire damage to a target. Range: 40 meters. Channeling: 2 seconds.

[Flame Shield]: Creates a shield made of fire. Protects the caster for 1 minute or after absorbing 1,000,000 damage. Attackers will receive 10,000 Fire damage for every attack received.

Zhang Yang summed it up quickly and concluded that he cannot allow the boss to remain in the vicinity of the barrier.

Although {Explosive Flame} was a single target skill, it was something he could take head-on. {Flame Shield} is a spiky defensive skill. It was not a problem. However, the skill {Flare} was

the problem. It was an AoE skill that could deal 50,000 damage in all directions, 40 meters from her. If the battle is to be held in the tomb, the skill would directly damage the barrier. It would take only 20 hits for the barrier to be destroyed!

Zhang Yang spread his wings far and wide and zoomed towards the boss. With a quick turn, Zhang Yang tossed a {Spear of Obliteration}.

"Pathetic!" cried the boss as she gave chase.

Zhang Yang moved towards the entrance of the tomb and kited the boss to the exit of the tomb. Once there, he zoomed towards her and gave a slash. He positioned himself between Amansari and the entrance of the tomb.

Amansari charged towards Zhang Yang. In retaliation, Zhang Yang had not flown upwards, instead, he brandished his sword and blasted out waves of attack.

{Horizontal Sweep}! {Destructive Smash}! {Frost Strike}!

Leaving only afterimages, the sword flew around as Zhang Yang controlled the movement of the sword in his hands masterfully. He wanted to try and mimic the speed of Princess Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash}. However, there was still a limit to his own Dexterity and the speed of which he could it move around. Even so, splashes of blood poured out of the boss and tainted the sky.

"D\*mn you! D\*mn you!" The countess was enraged. She then cast a {Flame Shield} and chanted {Explosive Flame}. Since the boss' skill cannot be interrupted, the boss did not need to keep a distance from Zhang Yang like a player does. The only thing that was probably going on in her mind was to kill Zhang Yang as fast as she could.

"Is Zhan Yu alone?!"

From the corner of the buildings, a few Japan-Korea region players were lurking about. They gathered their courage and moved closer to spectate the battle. After they ensured that Helena was no longer in the fight, everyone cheered and entered the battle to attack Zhang Yang.

All ranged attackers stood at 30 meters away from Zhang Yang and attacked. As for the melee attackers, they shot to the sky and formed a formation to attack Zhang Yang in a group.

"We will let this f\*cker has a taste of his own medicine!"

"Someone! Go and guard the graveyard! Don't let him revive there and get away!"

"That's right! Even if his level remains, we can still get all his equipment and item!"

Zhang Yang could not believe what he just heard. Did they really think that they could fight him, let alone kill him when he is in his

God of War "mode"?

Zhang Yang waited until the melee attackers got closer to him and activated {Shadow Clone}! At the same time, he cast {Crushing Strike}!

By then, his God of War EP was at 12 points. Zhang Yang had only attacked the boss with his normal attack. He had, instead, used the 12 EP on the players. On average, his attack power was already beyond 100,000. The end result of the {Crushing Strike} would be 300%! A total of 300,000 damage!

By then, if no one had their own Transformation skills activated, everyone would be instantly killed! When the bright light flashed by, 12 players who were the closest to Zhang Yang were killed instantly. They had no idea what even happened!

Sadly, the clones produced by the skill could not carry the equipment special effect. Hence, the attacks dealt to the boss was exactly 10% of Zhang Yang's original damage.

Take note that the damage dealt by Zhang Yang could only be seen by him! There were three Zhang Yangs on the field, now. Players around started to feel a sudden fear creeping into their souls! One Zhang Yang was already a problem, but there were three now!

"It's fake! It's a mirror image!" someone cried. "The fake ones shouldn't be as durable! Kill them!"



All ranged attackers then adjusted their crosshairs and aimed at all three Zhang Yangs. However, all three Zhang Yangs had the same 7,000,000 HP!

How do you explain that!?

During the God of War Transformation effect, Zhang Yang would have 40% magic attack nullification chance. His physical attack Defense would be extremely high, even when compared to his usual standards. With the extra 20% damage reduction skill, the damage reduction was far greater than the Level Suppression of a boss!

How does one kill God of War Zhang Yang when regular Zhang Yang is already freaking hard to kill!? There's three of them, for God's sake!

"What is that Inheritance?! The Doppelganger Inheritance?"

"No way! It's even stronger than the Mirror Image Inheritance! He has made 2 copies of himself!"

Not many knew of the {Shadow Clone} skill and had wrongly guessed Zhang Yang's Inheritance. The truth was that the skill {Shadow Clone} was a reward gained from the main story quest that Zhang Yang had accepted when he was only Level 10! Perhaps, it was yet another one-of-a-kind skill!

Zhang Yang scoffed and left them to their misguided

assumptions. The battle continued on with a strong fervor. On one hand, Zhang Yang was fighting the boss, on the other, he had hurled {Spear of Obliterations} with every chance he got. Now that he had gained a power boost, every hit of his {Spear of Obliteration} was 98,311 – 113,988. Unless Zhang Yang's target was mounted on a Yellow-Gold tier mount or higher, they would be killed instantly.

Felice and the Thunderhawk remained in the tomb with the barrier on Zhang Yang's command. They had been asked to stand guard over the barrier to alert Zhang Yang if any intruders manage to infiltrate the entrance. That, or the possibility of a player having a skill similar to {Burrow}.

BOOM!

Amansari cast {Flare} continuously onto Zhang Yang. The damage dealt to him was roughly around 36,000 damage. However, there was still a 40% chance of her attacks being nullified! Every time her flames were extinguished by Zhang Yang, she would shriek out in frustration and cast another {Flare} at an increased power and size.

Zhang Yang could not be bothered by it. Or rather, he could not find a single f\*ck to give. Zhang Yang only needed to make sure that he remains between the boss and the entrance. As such, the space given to the other players to attack him was extremely limited. With both a high magical attack nullification chance and extremely powerful Defensive abilities, it would be extremely difficult to hurt him.

"Wretched one! I curse you! Curse you to hell!" Amansari bellowed like a deranged woman. Although she had the {Flame Shield} to provide herself a temporary HP extension, the skill had a long 1-minute cooldown. Under Zhang Yang's heavy barrage, the shield could only last as long as 10 seconds before it is removed.

While the battle between the boss and Zhang Yang was going on strongly, players of Japan-Korea regions were so embarrassed and frustrated that they could have just raged quit the game! Zhang Yang was practically surrounded by a thousand players, yet they could do no damage to him! It's a shame that no man could bear if word spreads out!

Right then, the reinforcements had arrived. From 1,000 players, their numbers rose up to 2,000. Slowly and steadily, the numbers had even increased to 7,000! Amongst the 7,000 players, many of them possessed Inheritance. They had immediately activated their Transformation skills and charged towards Zhang Yang at great speed.

"Zhan Yu! Today is the day you will die!"

"I'll tear you up! Limb from limb!"

The fuss and panic one man could bring to an entire server already brought them great shame. It was a shame that would not be redeemed, even with Zhang Yang's death! However, if they could not kill him, the shame of it would be so bad that it would even affect their name in real life! It was a national pride!

Zhang Yang merely scoffed at the sight of the players. {Shadow Clone} would only last for another 10 seconds. Right then, players had not even managed to detect the real Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang focused on the task of killing Amansari first. The reason was to allow Helena to rejoin him in battle to kill all the players who had butted into his quest!

The poor Amansari was a Mythical tier boss, and her skill {Flare} was as strong as {Thousand Shadow Slash}. Since Zhang Yang just alone, the skill was completely wasted on him! On the other hand, {Explosive Flame} could deal as much as 80,000 damage to Zhang Yang, but it could not be compared to Helena's {Chaos Strike}!

Even though the boss had 39,000,000 HP and the one-minute long cooldown {Flame Shield}, Zhang Yang's super-powered DPS of over 100,000 was bringing down Amansari's HP like an unstoppable avalanche!

"Zhan Yu! It seems that you're bullying your way around as usual. I shall have you taste your own medicine!" A familiar male voice roared from the side. Zhang Yang glared from the corner of his eyes and saw the source of the voice. It was Musashi Ousama.

"Don't think that we are pushovers!" cried Shuro Ousama, who was standing not far away from Musashi Ousama. One by one, more and more players arrived by their side and unleashed their Transformation skills.

All of the players of the Japan-Korea region had suffered the Level -5 penalty from the Ancient Creature war. It was a huge, negative impact on them all! The reduction of levels have delayed

the players in finding Inheritances! Even though it had been a month, most of them had not yet still regained their levels from the penalty! Inheritances were still very scarce in this region!

Only 7 players in the entire crowd possessed Inheritances!

## Chapter 596: A Change of Stream

---

Seven Inheritance players, one boss against one Zhang Yang, and not a single d\*mn was given. He merely threw a disdainful glare at them and focused on the boss. The boss cannot be underestimated. Even though Zhang Yang was in his super-powered mode, he had to end the fight as soon as possible.

"Zhan Yu! Enough with your insolence!" Musashi Ousama screamed angrily. He raised a palm up and twisted his arm in dramatic fashion, conjuring a tornado which zoomed towards Zhang Yang.

The tornado skill was Musashi Ousama's Inheritance skill. It could deal massive damage, and spins the target in the air before disappearing, which will cause the target to fall and receive heavy fall damage. Although Zhang Yang could avoid the fall damage since he could fly, the tornado would still send him spinning in the air uncontrollably. Technically, the tornado skill's movement speed was slow and was much more suited for large crowds. Musashi Ousama used the skill because he had assumed that Zhang Yang would not move away from the entrance of the tomb and would take the skill head on.

Zhang Yang noticed the incoming tornado and raised an eyebrow. He was disappointed that Musashi Ousama would even think of using a skill like that against him. Zhang Yang calculated the trajectory of the tornado and the E.T.A of it. When the tornado was about to touch him, Zhang Yang simply moved around, circling the boss, and came back to his original position without a scratch.

Shuro Ousama did not stop there. When Zhang Yang was about to return to his position, he sneaked behind the tornado, planning to strike Zhang Yang without him noticing. However, Zhang Yang was circling around the boss, so, when he made a 360 degrees turn, he coincidentally ended up behind Shuro Ousama. Zhang Yang cranked up his muscles and put his entire weight behind the shield and slammed Shuro Ousama in his face. The shield bash was so powerful that even though it did not inflict any HP damage, it still caused Shuro Ousama's neck to snap backward. Like a gymnast performing a backflip, Shuro Ousama was sent flying, some of his teeth crushed into pieces. Half of his face was bulging out like a fat pig.

Zhang Yang snickered and returned to his original position to continue his fight with the boss.

"ARGH! I will kill you!" cried Shuro Ousama. The player was a Berserker class. He should have more strength than a Guardian, but his equipment was simply not up to par with Zhang Yang's. Thus, he was forcefully "knocked back" by Zhang Yang's Supporting Attack.

Shuro Ousama got to his feet and roared to the high heavens. The ground cracked opened and out came a large, 3-meter tall white skeletal soldier. The skeletal soldier did not approach Zhang Yang, rather, it moved towards the dead bodies of the players around.

[Skeletal Infector] (Summoned)

Level: 103

HP: 200,000

Defense: 1,100

Attack Power: 6,853 – 8,853

Skills:

[Corpse Infection]: Infects a corpse and bring it back to life. Limited to Humanoid corpses 10 meters around the caster. Cooldown: 2 minutes.

In the beginning, there was only one. The summoned unit was not a threat, especially when it only had 200,000 HP. However, the unit was extremely useful in a full-scale war when there are plenty of bodies lying around! Although the summoned unit had a low time duration, it would form a large army of skeletons. When the death toll increases, so would the number of skeletons.

Zhang Yang was bound to the entrance of the tomb. Even a monkey would know that he was defending something inside. Hence, all of them changed their strategy, their new aim was to infiltrate the tomb!

Zhang Yang threw a {Spear of Obliteration} towards the Skeletal Infector and had dealt damage equivalent to slightly over half of his HP, failing to kill it. The Infector moved to the dead body of a



player and spat a black cloud at it. The darkness entered the body which made it expand, eventually blowing up in a bloody scene of exploding guts and innards. A new Skeletal Infector was born and joined the fight.

Shuro Ousama laughed evilly and even licked his lips. "Yes... That's right. More skeletons! Make more skeletons for me!"

The numbers shot up exponentially from 3 to 8, to 27 monsters. Due to the sheer number of dead players around, an army of Skeletal Infectors was born easily.

"Have no fear! Just charge in and kill! I will turn you into attackers even after you die!" cried Shuro Ousama proudly as he omitted the crucial word, "Undead" attacker.

It was extremely easy to counter such a pushing strategy. All he had to do was to rush over to Shuro Ousama and kill him! With the summoner, all the summoned unit will perish along with him. The problem then, was that Zhang Yang could not move away from the spot! He could only watch the skeletal monsters rise in numbers! Still, even if there were a million of them there, Zhang Yang's immense defensive power, even in his normal mode, would reduce their attack down to 1. How could they attack him when his Defense is so much stronger than their attack power!?

Zhang Yang was obviously calm, while Shuro Ousama was cheering and jumping with joy. Zhang Yang chuckled at his monkey-like behavior and turned back to the boss.

50%...40%...30%...

As Zhang Yang was hacking away Amansari's HP down, the players around could not do anything since they were an ally of Amansari. They could not even heal her, as she was a green-tag NPC! The system only allowed players to heal NPC from their own major cities. For example, players from all over China could heal NPCs of White Jade Castle but could not heal NPCs from Morning Town. It was beyond their jurisdiction.

Hence, players around could only stare in dismay as their territory boss crept closer to death. They could not even butt in to attack her! Killing a friendly NPC would not provide any experience points or loot.

When Shuro Ousama was satisfied with the number of Infectors that he had "made", he ordered all of them to attack Zhang Yang. A sea of skeletons rushed over and got between the boss and him. As many thin, brittle skeletal arms smacked him, the only sensation Zhang Yang felt was a tiny bump. As if someone was using a cotton bud to gently prod him. When Shuro Ousama saw this, he stopped cheering. It was already too late for him to realize that Zhang Yang was completely out of his league. Zhang Yang's level was not something that a normal monster could harm!

Zhang Yang's skills {Shield Wall}, {God of War Radiance}, and {Rearm} were all used to initiate the counterattack.

20%...12%...10%...

Zhang Yang thrust his hands out and cast {Glare of the Death God}. A black smoke appeared on Amansari's character and formed into a grinning skull.

Success!

Zhang Yang then summoned Devastator. He went all out; throwing {Horizontal Sweep}, {Frost Strike}, {Destructive Smash}, {Force Strike}, and a few strikes of {Cripple Defense} to fill up the time. Since all skills shared a global cooldown, he had made sure to deal a normal attack in the gaps. Hence, in 10 seconds, he had only managed to deal 13 attacks. Devastator had also contributed 10 hits, which totaled up to 23 hits. Among the 23 hits, only 4 hits had triggered the {Glare of the Death God} effect. It was rather unfortunate, but he had wasted 6 strikes.

Although the Devastator was destroyed by the players in a matter of minutes, Zhang Yang was not bothered by it. All he needed Devastator to do was to increase the attack count for the skill {Glare of the Death God} to proc.

7%...5%...3%...

Death was certain for Amansari, and players of Japan-Korea region were going crazy. Their numbers had shot up to tens of thousands by then, but all they could do was to stare blindly and awkwardly at Zhang Yang killing the boss. Even though he had positioned himself well, it was still something no single man could pull off!

It was a huge shame to them! Zhang Yang had not even taken note of the players around and entered their territory boldly, taken their boss, and battled on their grounds! Whoever who could handle the shame and disgrace can become a god!

"Kill!"

The players made a last-ditch attempt and charged towards Zhang Yang.

3%...2%...1%...

"I-I grah! No!" Amansari was killed by Zhang Yang and exploded with loot. Those were Mythical equipment! Players who had charged in were instantly distracted by the drops and stared at them. Amansari was a friendly NPC to him, so, even if they had struck her, the loot that dropped from her cannot be picked up by them. Zhang Yang blasted few players aside and proceeded to pick up all the loots.

It was a tough battle for Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang was not afraid of physical attacks, come one or a million of monsters, he would take them and return their attack ten fold. However, magic attacks such as {Fire Missile} and {Frost Arrow} were threats to him. Even though their individual damage was not particularly high, one hundred of them would kill him nonetheless! Hence, after he had picked all the loots, Zhang Yang rushed into the tomb.

"Chase him!"

Players noticed his immediate withdrawal from the battle and followed in as if they had just gained the advantage. Only Dusk Phoenix had ever forced him to flee before, and that was already an achievement. Even though they did not know why he fled, they claimed the credit and chased after him.

"You've done well. Zhan Yu. I was right to put my trust in you!" Zhang Yang could hear the voice of Helena echoing in his ears when he was close enough.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Saving Banct Roland. Obtained 10,000,000 Experience Points! Defensive Barrier HP: 1,000,000. Score: Perfect!'

'Ding! You have obtained a reward: Helena's Charm!'

[Helena's Charm] (Mythical, Accessory)

Equip: Increases your attack and healing rate by 5%.

Equip: Grants a 1% chance to create a Life Orb upon receiving an attack. A maximum of 10 Life Orbs can be created. In non-combat status, all Life Orbs will disappear after 30 seconds.

Use: Consumes all Life Orbs and heals you by 30,000 HP per Life Orb. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

Note: The charm was made with the power of an ancient magician. You can sense a powerful magic just by holding it in your hands.

Zhang Yang nodded his head, pleased.

Zhang Yang replaced the accessory [Heart of the Death Knight] with [Helena's Charm]. The accessory [Heart of the Death Knight] had been nerfed greatly and would only give Zhang Yang a split-second Invincibility, and nothing more. It was time to replace it.

Thud. Thud.

Two footsteps were heard. Helena tenderly supported the handsome, restored Banct Roland out of the barrier and the two shared an intimate moment.

[Banct Roland] (Mythical, Spectre)

Level: 130

HP: 39,000,000

Defense: 5,560

Magic Attack: 41,464 – 51,464

Skills:

[Corruption Arrow]: Launches arrows with the power of corruption in all direction 40 meters from the caster to deal 50,000 Shadow Damage.

[Crippling Pain]: Tortures a target, dealing 200% magical attack, Shadow damage and reduces the target's attack power by 20%. Channeling: 3 seconds. Range: 30 meters.

[Soul Offering]: Burns own soul and sacrifice the caster's 10% HP to restore 30% of Helena's HP. Grants Helena "Berserk" and increases all her attacks by 100%.

Note: Once a famous and powerful magician in the land. Although he was turned into a Spectre, his knowledge and power remain. His mortal body may have perished, but his love for Helena burns brightly with an undying will.

Another Mythical tier boss!

Zhang Yang was delighted. With two Mythical tier bosses and him, and his S class Inheritance, he could wipe out all the players in the map till they cry back to their mummy's arms.

"Congratulations to Princess Helena and Mr. Roland. May the fire of your love burn for all eternity!" Zhang Yang wished them from the bottom of his heart.

"You have my most sincere gratitude, warrior!" Banct lowered his head to thank him.

"Come, my love. We must leave this place!" said Helena.

Banct nodded and said, "People think that I have been long dead. I plan to keep it that way."

"Kill!!!" Echoes of players' roar come into the tombs and a few had even shown up.

"Hm? More Insolent fools." Helena glared and unsheathed her sword. Banct gently held her face before letting go. The woman exchanged a loving stare before her eyes were filled with intense killing intent. She rushed over to the players and unleashed a barrage of {Thousand Shadow Slash}. All of the players who entered the tombs were instantly killed by her.

"WHAT!?" None of them had expected Helena to still be alive. Before they could run out of the tombs, they were killed by Helena. Silence crept back into the tomb when all players were killed mercilessly.

Helena took the lead while Zhang Yang and Banct followed behind, unobstructed. With haste, all of them made it out of the



underground tomb.

The moment Zhang Yang stepped out, players saw him. However, before they rushed in, they noticed both Helena and Banct. The new boss' skill was strong. Any smart person could see that they should not attack Helena first since the skill would heal and provide a 100% attack boost. The correct strategy to kill both bosses would be to separate them both. One tank would need to kite Helena away while all other DPSers would have to kill Banct as quickly as they can.

The problem was that Zhang Yang was protecting them! What kind of strategy could help them then!?

"Two bosses!? Haha! Awesome!"

"Kill them both! Get their loot!"

"Hah! Zhan Yu as well! Kill them all!"

The players who were late to the scene had not seen Helena's prowess in battle. Hence, they rushed in without thinking much and attacked.

"Hmph." Helena scoffed and brandished her sword. With lightning speed that surpassed anyone in the world, she unleashed her {Thousand Shadow Slash} continuously, killing all who dared attack her.

The Spectre Princess was just like Queen Serena. When they wished someone to die, not even fate could prevent that. Her attacks were quick and ruthless. She could instantly turn a player who was standing still into perfectly diced cubes of human flesh with {Chaos Strike}.

"Swarm them!" cried Shuro Ousama. Many players had fallen to Helena, and the number of Skeletal Infectors had increased exponentially. With such numbers, even ants could take down an elephant. Using that strategy, Shuro Ousama was hoping that his army of the undead would kill both bosses by slowly hacking away at their HP.

Clak Clak Clak Clak...

All the Skeletal Infector marched towards Helena and Banct. However, when Helena noticed their arrival, she lowered her sword and glared at the army. A sudden bright light flashed across her eyes. At the same time, her mouth muttered something in an inaudible and foreign language. It was subtle but the effect was obvious. All of the Skeletal Infectors stopped their movements and bowed down to Princess Helena as if they were her own soldiers and Princess Helena was their true ruler. None of them even stopped to listen to Shuro Ousama's command!

The day of revolution has arrived!

Shuro Ousama's jaw touched the ground.

# Chapter 597: Scared

---

Shuro Ousama had spent the whole time creating an army of Infectors but all of a sudden, all of them had turned against him. He quickly turned tail and ran. All of the Skeletal Infector had turned around to attack him.

He had never expected his own ultimate skill to be used against him. The first slap in his face was that all the Skeletal Infectors could not do any damage to Zhang Yang. The second slap, and the hardest one, was that he had just given the boss an army of Skeletal Infectors for free! By the looks of how the Infectors had bowed respectfully to the boss, they would most likely be used against him!

Princess Helena made another inaudible and incomprehensible muttering, causing all the Skeletal Infectors to turn around and glare at the Japan-Korea region players. Their original hollow eye sockets burned brightly with the green-emerald flames of the Spectre!

Thousands of Skeletal Infectors marched outside the tomb and laid waste to all the players.

"Oi! What are you doing Shuro Ousama!"

"Wrong side! Wrong side! Friendly fire!"

"F\*ck you! You're worse than a stupid pig!"

Even though the numbers of Skeletal Infector were only by the thousands, the few tens of thousands of players in the castle were getting the goosebumps. Abyssal Skeletal Inheritance was the Inheritance that Shuro Ousama had. Even though it was only a C class Inheritance, given enough time, the cumulative damage of the entire army of Skeletons would be extremely powerful. Hence, when the Skeletal Infector was turned to Princess Helena's side, it was terrifying.

Shuro Ousama had to keep his mouth shut, even though he was enraged and ashamed. How could he have predicted that Helena would have the power to subdue his own army of skeletal soldiers!? Still, if you were part of these attacking players, you would surely be cursing him as his army washes you away!

Technically, the skeletal soldiers were not that hard to deal with. Zhang Yang could easily deal 70 to 80% damage with a single strike of {God of War Crushing Strike}. However, unlike Zhang Yang, players with no Inheritance Transformation skills would find them troublesome. The main problem was their numbers, not their attack. Together, they stood strong, like an army of ants gobbling up an elephant. Plus, they looked extremely disgusting, with innards dangling out of their rotten jaws.

After all the Skeletal Infectors had marched out of the tombs, it was Princess Helena's turn to shine. She walked out of the archway and revealed herself to the world. Her blades were unsheathed and {Thousand Shadow Slash} was unleashed onto the players. Banct followed closely to her and fired {Corruption Arrows}. Even though Banct's power was not as devastating as Princess Helena's {Thousand Shadow Slash}, it definitely helped finish off any player

who somehow survives. Both of their aligned attacks can instantly kill all non-tank players effortlessly.

Zhang Yang was still in the archway, leaning against the pillar and laughed at the scene of pathetic players attempting to land a hit on Princess Helena. After a good laugh, Zhang Yang showed his presence in the battlefield by striking the floor with {Crushing Strike}, dealing blasts of light from the earth to deal more than 30,000 damage to everyone. Sadly, without the little annoying brat's {Strength Aura} 12% Strength bonus, his damage would not reach above 40,000. No matter, his attack was extremely useful, since the AoE was 100 meters wide! As long as he lands a hit on everyone, it would work wonders!

With haste, the two bosses and Zhang Yang had immediately gained the upper hand in the battle. Plus, with the thousands of Skeletal Infectors "assisting" the fight, the Japan-Korea region players stood no chance!

Naturally, being the easiest to kill, many Skeletal Infectors were destroyed. However, now that Princess Helena had taken over the controls of the Infectors, the dead players were being converted to more Skeletal Infectors to replenish the army! In the end, the players came to a final decision.

"FALL BACK! FALL BACK!"

The active time limit of the Skeletal Infectors was 2 minutes. Many of them knew about it. However, due to the unfavorable conditions of the battle, the players decided to fall back and leave the field to prevent further deaths until the time limit. After that,

all of the Skeletal Infectors should fall apart, and players would have it slightly easier. It was not worth dying to those pathetic Skeletal Infectors and wasting their money on repair fees.

After several hundred more players died during the retreat, the battlefield was now barren. From afar, all the Japanese and Korean players recuperated. The number of Skeletal Infectors had returned to Princess Helena's side and had organized themselves in a neat formation. With Princess Serena, Banct, and Zhang Yang as the central point, the Skeletal Infector formed a defensive formation, positioning themselves to protect the central point from all attacks from all directions.

No one could expect someone like Zhang Yang to bring out a boss like that into the castle and wreak havoc.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud at the useless attempt of the Japanese and Korean's provocations to challenge him to a one on one duel. He flew upwards and hovered slightly above the castle's peak and bellowed in the public channel.

"Fellow players of the Japan-Korea region, if you do not wish to continue our friendly match, I will now humbly take my leave!"

"F\*CK OFF THEN!"

"Give us back our territory!"

"One day, we will have our revenge! We will dominate all of

China's major cities!"

"Kill all the Chinese dogs!"

Knowing that they could not hurt him, they could only shout empty threats to him, hoping to scare him away.

Zhang Yang spotted the group of players who were screaming the loudest and decided to teach them a lesson. He spread his wings out and zoomed towards them. With a quick slash of his blade, he dealt more than 200,000 damage in one hit and instantly emptied out the field of noisemakers.

There was another group of players behind the first that he had obliterated. They had intended to help, but seeing how the others had been instantly killed by Zhang Yang, they had no choice but to run away. Zhang Yang flew to them and activated "Crushing Strike" to deal 30,000 damage with 20 bright blasts of lights. All that was left behind were the dead bodies of players, and three surviving players with little to no HP left. Zhang Yang shot to them and landed a series of skills to end their lives.

Initially, the noisy chattering went on and on. However, after Zhang Yang terminated a group of players, the ranting stopped immediately.

Anyone could be a legendary killer if they get their hands on a strong Inheritance. However, getting their hands on one would be another matter. Only strong players like Zhang Yang, an entity of a Death God could obtain such an Inheritance and become

something even stronger. He was not some random strong player that could be killed with numbers. The group of players that Zhang Yang had just killed was the noisiest bunch. Zhang Yang was weeding out the noisy chickens. It caused a domino effect that had sent a message to all players around. Everyone was silenced immediately. Someone as powerful as Zhang Yang could immediately snipe the general of a million soldiers by flying straight into the formation without the need to fight.

The group that Zhang Yang had just killed had dropped a few Yellow-Gold equipment and one Violet-Platinum equipment. While everyone was watching, Zhang Yang flew down to the ground and picked the equipment casually. Everyone was furious, however, there was nothing that they could do. They did not even dare make a squeak, fearing that they might be his next targets.

"Zhan Yu! We must make haste!" cried Helena.

"Yes. My princess!" Zhang Yang smirked to the other players who had retreated and flew back to the bosses.

Before leaving, Banct turned back to the castle and stared at a particular window on the far side of the castle. There was a glint of longing and regret. Zhang Yang patted his shoulder and gave him a smile. Banct recollected his composure and nodded to Zhang Yang before taking hold of Helena's hands. Banct then conjured a shadowy portal.

"Let's go." Princess Helena voice tone was extremely soft and soothing when she spoke to Banct. Banct nodded and smiled at her as the two undead lovers crossed the portal, leaving Zhang Yang



still on the other side.

Before he left, Zhang Yang turned back only to find the Japanese and Korean players about to jump at him. Zhang Yang smiled, said nothing, and went into the portal.

If he were to say anything at all, the public channel would be flooded with more insults and curses. However, his gesture, his actions had spoken of his intentions. He was completely looking down at them! When a victor had won a meaningless battle, he would be so disappointed that he would not even give a demeaning speech. That was a psychological attack that would break anyone!

When Banct Roland was a dying, he could still conjure a portal that led Zhang Yang out of Anjar Castle. Now that he had been reborn and gained the status of a Mythical tier boss, his powers had been upgraded. The portal that he conjured had led all of them straight to Tibanya Wasteland's, right at the palace ruins.

"Adventurer. I can't thank you enough for what you have done for us," said Banct as he held Princess Helena's hands. Princess Helena smiled as she stared at Banct lovingly. Zhang Yang felt a strong sense of dismay. Now that he had worked so hard with these two Spectre bosses, it would not be right to bring a team to kill them!

Zhang Yang felt the need to leave them alone.

"I bid you farewell Mr. Banct. Princess Helena." Zhang Yang bowed and left the two long lost lovers alone. Zhang Yang's God of

War Transformation was still active and there was still time before it ends. Zhang Yang took this opportunity to hunt for monsters to grind some levels.

As he killed a few strong monsters, Zhang Yang took the time to review some of the items that he had collected from Amansari. She was a Level 130 Mythical tier boss. Her loot should be of some standard.

The boss had dropped a total of two Mythical tier equipment and two Violet-Platinum equipment. There was also one skill book and one Amateur tier Aura Stone. Zhang Yang had not bothered to look at the Violet-Platinum tier equipment. Before he examined the other items, Zhang Yang used the Aura Stone and leveled his {Vitality Aura} to Level 7. At Level 7, the {Vitality Aura} would provide a staggering 28% Vitality boost. His maximum HP was now 7,996,800. His normal HP should be 199,920!

Fortunately, the skill book he found was a Warrior class!

[Superior Cripple Defense (Passive)]: Reduces 5 seconds from the cooldown time of {Killing Cleave} with every successful hit of {Cripple Defense}.

The skill {Killing Cleave} can only be used when a target's HP is below 20%. After the patch, the skill's Rage cost had been readjusted to make it even easily accessible. Not only could it be used to deal an explosive amount damage, it would help a player fully utilize the Rage points efficiently.

Since {Killing Cleave} had a 30 seconds cooldown time, it would be extremely difficult to be used in PvP battles or boss fights. Hence, with the skill {Superior Cripple Defense} upgrade, granting a 5 seconds reduction in cooldown time with every hit of {Cripple Defense}, {Killing Cleave} could immediately be used when Zhang Yang lands 5 strikes of {Cripple Defense}. Take note that there will be a 5 seconds global cooldown duration. Still, even though Zhang Yang had gained this upgrade to {Cripple Defense} it did not mean that he should be prioritizing {Cripple Defense} instead of other skills like {Horizontal Sweep}, or {Destructive Smash}.

{Cripple Defense} could be used to compensate an attack when {Horizontal Sweep} or {Destructive Smash} was in cooldown. Since the skill was, technically free for him, be it a 5 second or 10-second reduction in cooldown, it was a buff that should be utilized.

Among the two Mythical tier equipment, one was a Sacred Knight class, but the other was applicable to him.

Zhang Yang trained a little more and when the Transformation skill ended, Zhang Yang went to White Jade Castle and had the two items Identified.

[Silent Destroyer Glove] (Mythical, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +160

Vitality: +1,376

Strength: +646

Dexterity: +281

{Level 4 Socket}

Equip: Increases 2,750 maximum HP.

Equip: Increases 5% attack and healing rate.

Equip: Absorbs 545 damage when attacked.

Level Requirement: 130

Special: Level Requirement reduced by 20 Levels.

After the glove was Identified, Zhang Yang went ahead and socketed a [Level 4 Strength Gem Stone]. All in all, the Attack Boost Zhang Yang had gained from all his equipment was 100%. It was another huge jump in power!

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 117

HP: 215,120 (Vitality Aura)

Defense: 5,320

Attack: 30,512 – 35,056 (15,256 – 17,528 X 200%)

Damage Absorption: 4,472

Zhang Yang smiled at the thought of posting those stats to all his friends. They would surely be jealous!

## Chapter 598: Helping Out

---

The news of Zhang Yang "invasion" of Grandu Ice Ridge spread all around, which led to the retaliation of the Japanese and Korean players where they infiltrated Tibanya Wastelands to have their revenge. They only sent five players, however, all of them possess Inheritances. Although all of them were only C class Inheritance holders, all five of them had activated their Transformation skills. Their combined power was strong. An average C class Inheritance player could easily fight 10 players with no Inheritance. With five of them grouped together, that power would be multiplied. One of them was a healer, hence, their fighting endurance was made stronger and could take on a hundred non-inheritance players at a time.

This only happened due to the high resistance rate of status affecting skills. That, and the ridiculously high HP and Attack power of the Inheritance players, granting them an absolute advantage in the battle.

The small team of players had returned to their own region after killing a few hundred China players. They had to turn back as their Transformation time limit had ended and the numbers of Chinese players were who were gathering up were already getting out of hand. After they had safely returned to their own bases, they had sent a warning to all of China, saying that if Zhang Yang were to return to the Japan-Korea region to mess around, they would repeat their attack again.

Zhang Yang had no intention to reveal what he did in Anjar Castle. However, Chinese players could not stop wondering about it. Like a prick in his head, they kept bugging Zhang Yang about it.

Eventually, Zhang Yang got so annoyed that he had released the recordings of him taking down a thousand players in Anjar Castle, along with Princess Helena and Banct. After the recordings threatened to crash the forum servers, Japan and Korea were once again the laughing stock.

The scene where players had to run away from Zhang Yang was so embarrassing that players who were featured in the video had to hide their faces.

Due to the selfish acts of the small party, they had caused entire Japan and Korea to face much scorn. Now, they had been marked as the "villains". In a fit of rage, all the players in Japan and Korea vowed to have their revenge. A few days later, they had launched an attack and triggered a regional war.

The two neighboring regions had always been at each other throats. Even a tiny cinder could easily turn into a glowing amber which would grow into a raging fire. Now, their conflict was brewing wildly and had escalated to another level. From small parties, it grew larger into a town of players. It did not stop there, in the end, guilds after guilds had contacted each other to form a temporary alliance in order to fight a regional war.

...

The incident of Once Sword Stroke being castrated had proved to be non-fiction, as the man himself had come out to reveal the truth. Several days after the incident, members of Imperial Sky had posted their support and testimony of One Sword Stroke desire to continue playing. Instead, he vowed to stand strong and

refused to bow to the threat of others.

As such, Fatty One made a joke about it. Now that One Sword Stroke had lost his manhood, he had no means of "standing". Instead of laughs, his joke had earned the ire of about everyone on the forums and they accused him of being a "rude mother\*cker".

The act of One Sword Stroke revealing the truth had gained many positive comments and support from the crowd. It could be seen, when Imperial Sky had received many guild applications in the forums itself. The guild and One Sword Stroke had gained massive popularity over a short period of time which boosted Imperial Sky's name all over China.

As for the real perpetrator of the incident that had befallen on One Sword Stroke, many players had indulged themselves in solving the crime. When it comes to keyboard warriors, their research power, and social connections can never be underestimated. Within a few days, many had already solved the "accident" that occurred between One Sword Stroke, Liu Wei, and Luo Xin Yan. Due to the standard stigma of rich people and the poor victimized players, the crowd had laid down their biased judgment which resulted in One Sword Stroke and Luo Xin Yan being the victims, and the perpetrator being none other than rich Liu Wei.

The actual truth of One Sword Stroke and Luo Xin Yu having an affair had turned into a myth. While the myth where One Sword Stroke and Luo Xin Yan were old loving couple had turned into the truth. Liu Wei on the other hand, was marked to be the villain in their romantic yet tragic love story. Both men had to fight for love



and above all the conformity, One Sword Stroke rose victorious, however, little did he know that Liu Wei would resort to such actions.

Zhang Yang laughed bitterly at the twisted story. Still, he was greatly impressed by the power of the masses. When one speaks a myth, it will be a myth. When a thousand voices repeat a myth, it would be the truth. That is the danger of the ignorant herd.

All in all, Imperial Sky remained strong, One Sword Stroke did not falter. They had, on the other hand, used the heat of the crowd to raise up to Lone Desert Smoke's level of popularity. Their feat was something Zhang Yang would clap his hands for, as encouragement instead of inciting disdain.

Zhang Yang spent his free time shopping for random stuff. One fine day, he received Snow Seeker's private message.

"Guild master Zhan Yu! I could use a hand!"

The two guilds were on friendly terms with each other, due to the close cooperation between Silky Soft Holdings and Crimson Cosmetics Holdings. Due to their close relationship with each other, the guilds had worked together on more than one major occasion.

Crimson Rage was a guild that consisted of only female players. On the other hand, Lone Desert Smoke had a large majority of male players. When the ladies needed a hand, the boys in Lone Desert Smoke would stick their tongues out and wag their tails

obediently to help them. Hundred Shots was greatly disgruntled. He had once said that Lone Desert Smoke was becoming Crimson Rage's sub-guild!

"What could I do you for?" said Zhang Yang casually.

"Oh, just fighting a boss. Nothing much, " said Snow Seeker in the same manner.

Nothing much? If it was "nothing much" she would not have called him, then!

Zhang Yang chuckled and replied, "I'm kinda busy right now. Why don't I send over Endless Starlight and Fatty Han to help you out? Both of them have Inheritances. Any boss fight should be made easy then. Chow~"

The two buggers would jump at the opportunity of being knights when a maiden is in distress. If any fair maiden called out their names, adding the prefix "brother", along with a bit of flirting, the two world-class, open-closeted perverts would waggle their tails and help them. Zhang Yang would not need to even call them to begin with! Those two perverts could sniff out a damsel in distress!

Snow Seeker coughed pointedly and said, "Well, I suppose that guild master Zhan Yu is a true gentleman. Could you perhaps, lend me your personal assistance?"

Zhang Yang sighed. "Speak, what boss is it?"

"Hm. It's a Level 150 Mythical tier boss." Snow Seeker finally revealed her hand.

Zhang Yang was a little surprised. "Did you guys get yourselves a B class Inheritance? Or, could it perhaps be an A class?"

Zhang Yang knew that they would not kill a Level 150 Mythical tier boss for its drops. The equipment dropped by a Level 150 Mythical tier boss cannot be worn by players yet! Hence, it should be an Inheritance quest.

"It's a B class Inheritance. It's called the Demon Summoner Inheritance." Snow Seeker hid nothing from him.

"Woah! You've hit the jackpot there!" Zhang Yang exclaimed.

In his previous life, he had clashed with a player that had the Demon Summoner Inheritance. The Inheritance was limited to only the Priest class and Spellcaster class. The Inheritance could provide a strong offensive support to any Cloth Armor class wearer, making it a powerful B class Inheritance.

Not too long from now, the S class Professional League competition would be held fairly soon. China's first team would inevitably be Silky Soft Battle Team, while the second battle team had not yet been decided. Two days ago, Crimson Rage Battle Team had managed to hold the second place battle team position for China, since One Sword Stroke was still absent from the game. However, knowing that One Sword Stroke had voiced out his

resolve, Crimson Rage Battle Team position as China's second team was now threatened.

However, their positions would be stabilized if they add in a player with a B class Inheritance. Even though the usage of Inheritance Transformation skills is not permitted in the Professional League, a player with an Inheritance would still hold the upper hand in PvP combat. The passive permanent attack boost will be active, skills obtained from the Inheritance could be used to counter the status effecting skills of the non-Inheritance players!

The Inheritance Demon Summoner provides the caster with a strong Demon bodyguard. It could be brought into battle, even in the Professional League. Zhang Yang had never once fought the player in a Professional League and felt fortunate for it.

"So...Will you lend a hand?" asked Snow Seeker sweetly.

Zhang Yang laughed at her attempt to coax him and asked, "Well...I don't know...But! If guild master Snow offers me a [Forbidden Scroll], I could still consider it.'

Snow Seeker scoffed loudly. The communicator that they were using had a video projection of each other, hence, Zhang Yang could see her expression when she sulked and shook her head. "Guild master Zhan Yu! If I had a [Forbidden Scroll], I wouldn't have asked for your help!"

Zhang Yang was merely playing with her. Both guilds were

strong allies and since Snow Seeker had purposely voiced out her request for assistance, Zhang Yang had no particular reason to say no. Zhang Yang merely teased her for a bit more and finally agreed to help out unconditionally. He had promised to assemble a few strong members of the guild to help out Crimson Rage in dispatching the boss.

Zhang Yang recruited Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, and five other players who had Inheritances. Along with Crimson Rage's team, they traveled to a volcano. Since Snow Seeker had requested for players with Inheritance, Zhang Yang had not recruited Sun Xin Yu, and the other girls of his core party since they wouldn't be able to do much, thanks to the level gap.

On the other hand, Crimson Rage had gone all out. They had sortied close to 5,000 players who were above Level 100. The team of babes chattered along happily, causing both Fatty Han and Endless Starlight to sway with the flow. However, when the two perverts tried to flirt with the gang of girls, they got in for the shock of their lives. The girls of Crimson Rage were not ordinary bashful girls who would shy away when a man gets close to them. No, they were very different, they would be the ones harassing the man. In the end, they were so frightened of their unusual behavior that they hid behind Zhang Yang, fearing that the girls might jump on them and eat them up! Zhang Yang merely laughed at their comical act.

The place they were traveling to was called Molten Earth Peak, a Level 120 to Level 150 map. Once the massive army entered the map, players who were just over Level 100 became huge monster magnets. It could not be helped. Crimson Rage had only requested Zhang Yang to help them with the boss, mostly due to {Glare of the

Death God}, but Snow Seeker knew it had a low success rate. Hence, Crimson Rage had sortied their entire guild's attack force to increase their chances of defeating the boss.

Even though she knew that Zhang Yang would not mind repeating the boss fight if they happen to fail, Snow Seeker would not want to trouble him unnecessarily.

Now that they had so many players around, the level suppression system would not matter. With thousands of them attacking at once, normal monsters would surely be killed in a matter of seconds. An elite tier monster would last slightly longer.

Three hours of killing their way to the top, the army of female soldiers reached the peak of the huge volcanic mountain. There, they met their objective. An exile Demon General!

It looked just like a Western Demon. It was 6 meters tall, with a body dyed in blood, twin bullhorns that protruded out of its forehead, a pair of bat wings, the legs of a goat, and a huge scythe in its strong muscular hands. From afar, it sat on the ground cross-legged, thinking.

[Hachilles, The Banished Demon General] (Mythical, Demon)

Level: 150

HP: 300,000,000

Defense: 8,87-

Melee Attack:  $1266 + 9,356 = 169,367$

Skill:

[Mana Burn]: Randomly chooses a target to inflict 150,000 Shadow Damage. If the target possesses Mana Points, the target takes MP damage by a maximum of 70,000 MP. For each Mana points burned, the target will receive an extra 2 Shadow Damage. Range: 40 meters.

[Shadow Cleave]: Casts a cone-shaped blast in front of him and deals 100% melee physical damage. Stuns all targets for 5 seconds. Ignores targets that are stunned. The effect can be dispelled.

[Meteor Reign]: Summons a meteor from the sky and strikes three locations, dealing 50,000 Fire Damage each. Lasts for 5 seconds. Range: 50 meters.

[Devilish Tenacity]: Restores 1% of his HP every 30 seconds. Restoration amount will not be affected by any status effects.

Note: Hachilles was once a famous figure in the demon army. However, he had an affair with the Demon Leader Karxerxex and was caught red-handed. Hence, he was exiled to the mortal realm.

# Chapter 599: The Myth Assaults

---

This entity...should be the character of an important story. Or was...

The strongest ranked characters among the demons would be the Demon Leaders like Rougelier, or the Fallen Wind Ranger Calina, who were all Celestial tier bosses. Any bosses lower than the Demon Leader's position would be the Demon Brigadier Generals followed by Demon Generals.

Hachilles was only banished, exiled after he had made a move on the wife of his higher-ups. From a certain perspective, this character should be extremely tough, since he had not be subjected to execution! Either Hachilles himself was too strong to be killed, or the higher-ups had been lenient enough to spare his life. Either way around, the Demons are not to be messed with.

Still, speculations would not help in games. There was no way to judge a character's strength until one fights him. However, in a situation where you are playing an ultra reality MMORPG, you could judge a person's strength just by looking at his or her status profile or flavor text. The demon's AoE attack power was already insanely strong. Or better yet, his normal single target skill would kill a player in a matter of a second! If he kills one player every 2 seconds, he could possibly kill 1,800 players in just an hour. That would only be his single target skill alone! Such a boss would definitely possess a strong AoE killing skill! Queen Serena has her Meteor Sword, Princess Helena has her {Thousand Shadow Slash}, what would stop this demon general from having a skill of mass destruction!?



A proper analysis would show you that Hachilles has two AoE skills, the {Meteor Reign} and the {Shadow Cleave}. {Shadow Cleave} is a skill that could be easily avoided by standing away from his front. On the other hand, to compensate for that limited AoE, Hachilles possess the {Meteor Reign} which randomly strikes a large area! The problem was that the true area and timing of the attack would not be known.

The icing on the cake would be the boss' {Devilish Tenacity}. With 300,000,000 HP, the demon could heal 1% or 100,000 HP every 30 seconds. To put it in simpler words, if the entire army of players could not fork out more than 100,000 damage every 30 seconds, defeating the boss would be an impossible task. You can stand there and swing away for an entire year, and the boss would still be doing his own thing without even noticing your presence!

Zhang Yang frowned. This calls for extreme improvisations. The boss' skill had rendered his usual "grinding" strategy useless. That, and the skill - {Glare of the Death God}. He would barely manage it if the entire team devotes their resources only on staying alive!

Even if they could somehow stay alive and deal as much damage as they could, the boss' Level was still much higher than theirs. With the level suppression gap system in place, both the players' output damage and damage taken will be affected greatly. Paired with the boss' ability to restore his own HP, it would take a miracle to kill him.

That was the reason why Zhang Yang and his merry friends had not managed to take down any S class and A class Inheritance

bosses. All of them had HP recovery skills which would grind the players down instead of the other way round.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He had not expected Hachilles to own such a bothersome skill.

Snow Seeker walked over to Zhang Yang and pats his shoulder. "It's up to you now, guild master Zhan Yu. We'll be counting on you."

Snow Seeker's sudden intimate mannerism greatly emphasized her mature-lady beauty. The way she winked her eyes at Zhang Yang made Endless Starlight and Fatty Han drool all over the floor.

"Ayy boi, bring it out then yeah! Stick em hard! Stick em rough!" Perfume Water teased them with her boisterous, tomboyish attitude. She had even winked playfully and glanced at Zhang Yang's crotch. The other girl players around giggled as she did.

Zhang Yang continued to sigh heavily. Fatty Han got agitated and spoke out, "Perfumed Water, little Yang's is only medium sized! Would you dare feast your eyes on my cannons?!"

White Orchid immediately scoffed. "Actions speak louder than words. I dare you to strip down right now and show it to us!"

"Yeah! Show it! Show it!"

"Strip! Strip! Strip!"

Right then, the girl squad cheered on and moved closer to Fatty Han menacingly.

Fatty Han's attempt to incite shame on the girls had backfired in his own face. Feeling overwhelmed, Fatty Han hid his crotch with his hands and hid behind Zhang Yang. Fatty Han was terrified of them. It was as if they would pounce on him and tear his clothes to pieces. Endless Starlight, who was quiet the whole time, patted himself on the back. Fortunately, he had held his silence, or he would be harassed by the girls, again!

Just as the party was making preparations to fight the boss. Zhang Yang shouted at the top of his lungs. "STOP! WE HAVE COMPANY!"

"Who is it?" Snow Seeker rushed to his side and asked.

"The Myth. Liu, mother\*cking, Wei," said Zhang Yang slowly, word by word.

From a great distance that was barely visible to the naked eye, a cloud of dust moved closer to their general direction. Countless mounts were galloping towards them, leaving a trail of dust clouds so big and wide that it resembled a small army. In the sky, there were also players flying in the sky thanks to their mounts, leading the army towards the not-so-tall-mountain.

Within a few minutes, the dust settled and the army stood before them. With a loud deafening shriek, a large bug with a sharp

prickly body landed in front of the group of players. The large bug was a housefly. A 4 meter tall, disgusting, putrid housefly.

Sitting on the repulsive fly was the same disgusting player. Not that his appearance was disgusting, but the man that was sitting on it himself, everything from his voice, his eyes, his thoughts, were disgusting on a whole other level. It was Liu Wei, or Heaven's Pride.

"Look what the cat dragged in. It's Snow Seeker guild master!" Liu Wei looked down at her with eyes that spoke of indecency at the utmost level. Like a spider with only two eyes, the man laid his sight on the woman's curves and traced every bend and arch that was on her body.

"What a coincidence! The gods must have a liking for me, for I must thank them for allowing me to meet you here, guild master Snow. Perhaps, we should talk to each other more often, face to face," said Liu Wei with a sinister grin.

Snow Seeker smiled coldly and replied him with professional courtesy. "I have to apologize for not being too familiar with Heaven's Pride. I beg your pardon, however, we, Crimson Rage are currently in the progress of an activity. If you may excuse us, we shall be on our way.

"In that case, I will take that offer and allow you to be on your way. We, The Myth are here to defeat the boss right there." Liu Wei had failed notice it initially, but he had spotted Zhang Yang who was only standing next to Snow Seeker. Zhang Yang met his glare with his own and saw a glint of deep hatred in his eyes.

Despite having vengeance towards the man, he had kept his mouth quiet and kept his composure. The case in Shanghai where he was thrown in prison for three days had made Liu Wei realize that Zhang Yang was a man with dangerous connections. He was not a man to be trifled with.

Snow Seeker immediately frowned when Liu Wei revealed his intentions. Anger burst out but was quickly hidden away with a poker face. "Guild master Heaven's Pride. We, Crimson Rage were the first to be here. The boss is a target for elimination for a certain quest that we have. I urge you to maintain a certain level of courtesy and allow us, Crimson Rage to have this kill."

"Now that is what I call an interesting offer. As long as guild master Snow agrees to answer to only Heaven's Pride, putting Crimson Rage to be under the command of The Myth. Get a room, lock the doors, and we will talk business." A shield bearing Knight rode out to the front and stood beside Liu Wei, spouting those words.

When the Knight spoke, players around Liu Wei had started to chuckle as they laid their lustful eyes on all the female players of Crimson Rage. It does not take a master in rocket science to know that they were having indecent thoughts.

Perfumed Water and the other female players fumed. Their faces burnt with fiery rage. They may tease and play with the Crimson Rage members, but no one will disgrace their Snow Seeker like that in public.

"I'd say, someone, is too lonely and dry! I urge you to run back

home and jerk off to your own mom's photo!"

"What a shame! Your father should have ejaculated to the floor when he prodded your mom! That's where all the good ones went, you're a leftover!"

"I have not lain with a man in half a year, and I would not even think of getting it on with 2 inch long dudes like you!"

All sorts of insults and dirty jokes were bombarded at the guys of The Myth. These women were not to be messed with, especially when even open closet perverts like Fatty Han and Endless Starlight would be terrified of them!

Liu Wei kept his composure like a professional. However, no matter how much he tried to hide it, Zhang Yang could still see the twitches of anger in his poker face. The girls of Crimson Rage had insulted him and his forefathers before him, his mother and her mother before her to the point where his entire family line had been shot down to the bottom of the society.

"Snow Seeker guild master!" Liu Wei suppressed his urge to strike as he raised his voice. "I'll be frank here. I need an item from the boss to complete an Inheritance quest. Might I suggest a perfect solution to this mayhem? Perhaps we could cooperate with each other. The Myth demands nothing but the quest item only. As compensation, we will hand over all the other drops to Crimson Rage."

Zhang Yang widened his eyes in shock. Could it be that Liu Wei

was also after the Demon Summoner Inheritance Keepsake? Zhang Yang could not help but worry. He was sure that the Inheritance Liu Wei possessed in his past life was the B class Inheritance Fiery Phoenix Inheritance.

Snow Seeker had grown tired of his false pretense and waved him off. "Coincidentally, we are also after the boss for an Inheritance quest. I have nothing to offer but apologies. I insist that Heaven's Pride guild master allow us Crimson Rage to have the first kill. The Myth should wait for the next boss spawn to complete your quest."

"Hmph! Why should we wait! You're the ones who should wait since you brought the idea up!" cried another player who had jumped to the front. He noticed that Liu Wei was in a pinch. He knew that Liu Wei wanted to get to Snow Seeker's good side, yet could not bear to let the boss go. As a good underling, the player must step up to defend their boss when he is backed to a corner.

As such, Liu Wei raised an eyebrow and gave him an approving look.

"Nonsense! An open-world boss is there for all to kill! If there's no agreement here, let's kill for it! The winners take all!" Mellow Venom rudely interject and glared at the men of The Myth with killing intention.

"You wanna go!?"

"Bring it on, woman! Like I care about you!"

Both sides started trading insults and provocations. By the looks of it, a war was unavoidable. Both Fatty Han and Endless Starlight, who have been silently watching since the beginning were feeling a little left out.

Snow Seeker, on the other hand, sighed heavily at the behavior of her own members. If asked, she would confess that it was her fault for not taking care of them "properly". After all, they were a guild of 100% female members. Any form of maiden-demeanor had been dropped. No need to be "lady-like", faking their behavior for the likes of men. They were in a virtual reality after all. No one will know their real identities. Those that had expressed the most barbaric, savage attitudes were the white collar workers who were stressed out at work. It would be impossible to pinpoint the same person based on their appearance and behavior in the game.

Liu Wei dropped a cold stare. "Snow Seeker guild master. Do you want to have a war?"

Fatty Han finally gathered his courage and voiced out his opinion. "Liu Wei. You're such a pussy, you know that? The ladies here are ready to strike on call and you're standing, there asking for permission to even take a piss! Could it be, that you too, have been castrated? Don't you have the balls to start a war on your own?!"

"Aww Yeah! Good one! Fatty bro!"

"Woohoo! I never knew that Fatty Bro is so manly! I'll even consider having you in bed with me!"



"Fatty bro! Let's do it after the boss fight!"

All the female players cheered for Fatty Han, which left Liu Wei in an even worse situation. With a solemn expression, Liu Wei turned to Zhang Yang, "Are you going to fight me again?!"

Zhang Yang shrugged and replied without looking him in the eye. "That, I say, would be an interesting event, wouldn't it?"

Liu Wei scoffed and waved his hands. The army of players behind him fell back to create distance between the two guilds. A war was going to happen, no matter what.

Zhang Yang quickly switched to his party channel. "Do not use your Inheritance Transformation skills! We still have a boss to fight later! Spread it out!"

"Understood!"

"Time to kill some boys for dinner, babes!" cried the girls of Crimson Rage.

They say there is a calm before a storm, a moment of peace before war. Whoever said that had never been in a female army! The atmosphere was so noisy that Zhang Yang had trouble paying attention to the actions of Liu Wei in the distance.

Liu Wei retreated to a safe distance and prepared himself. While Crimson Rage was still noisily raging on, The Myth was completely quiet. With a wave of his hands, Liu Wei signaled the advancement and thousands of players rushed onwards.

The Myth was a guild of elite players who had broken off from Imperial Sky. Using his semi-perpetual source of money, Liu Wei had bought a majority of professional players from Imperial Sky, forming The Myth with strong players. Crimson Rage was a famous top guild in the whole of China, so The Myth could be on the same level as them, only in terms of strength but not popularity.

The two sides clashed with each other, turning the quiet field into a sea of blood and bodies.

Zhang Yang, Endless Starlight, Lost Dream, and the other Lone Desert Smoke Inheritance holders joined the fight. Even though they had not activated their Transformation skills, their overall power and defense were above what normal players could take on. A small party of six Inheritance holders would be like a spearhead piercing through the thick mass of bodies, leaving nothing but dead players in their wake.

Under Snow Seeker's personal orders, a group healers, consisting of 20 Priests and Sacred Knights tailed behind Zhang Yang's party to keep them healed at all times. Zhang Yang was sure that his party would do just fine, however, from Snow Seeker's perspective, they were her precious guests and must be kept alive at all times. If they were to be killed and lose their experience points as a result, or worse, drop an equipment, Snow Seeker

would never again request for Zhang Yang's help!

Zhang Yang's current move was to aim at their leader. To kill a nest of bandits, kill their ringleader first. Zhang Yang aimed to take down Liu Wei before all others. Hence, with him taking the lead, Zhang Yang leaped into the air and zoomed towards Liu Wei on his Thunderhawk. "Don't follow me. Stay on the ground and kill them!"

With {Burrow} and {Shadow of the Void}, Zhang Yang would never die even, if he was surrounded. He had made sure that no one would follow him in his crazy suicidal act since they did not possess any means of escape. Not even Lost Dream, who had {Vanish}.

"Zhang Yang. Are you here to kill yourself?" Liu Wei cried out when he saw Zhang Yang coming for him. Raising his voice, he cried to his army of players, "KILL THE MAN!"

Even though he had made sure that his voice could reach the sky, no one moved a muscle. Naturally, the man was infuriated. "Are you planning to betray me?" He snarled.

"Master Heaven's Pride. It's not that!" someone came to the front and explained promptly.

Zhan Yu is too high in the sky! He's out of range!"

Liu Wei scoffed and stretched his neck to observe Zhang Yang'

position in the sky. He did not dare to lower his guard even though Zhang Yang was alone. After all, Zhang Yang was famous in China and even in Japan and Korea! From the commotions back in the Anjar Castle, Liu Wei knew that Zhang Yang was someone strong, even though he despised the man.

High in the sky, Zhang Yang was lost in his own thoughts. How is he going to reach that man? He then summoned Felice out and patted her head before asking her to kill Liu Wei. "Felice, could you be a dear and help big brother kill that bad guy there?" said Zhang Yang as he pointed at Liu Wei.

"Yes!" Felice squeaked in delight. "Felice would be happy to kill that bad guy!"

Liu Wei nearly spazzed out. How was that proper treatment to a child!? However, before he could react, Zhang Yang had shot down like a thunderbolt and appeared 2 inches from his face before burying his sword in his chest.

‘-34,792!’

The attack had dealt an overwhelming damage that cost him more than one-third of his HP.

Liu Wei jumped backward and instantly activated {Ice Barrier}. Even though Liu Wei was fully equipped with Violet-Platinum equipment, his maximum HP was only over 60,000, and barely grazing 100,000 HP, even though he was on his battle mount. A few strikes more and Zhang Yang would have killed him.

Zhang Yang laughed and soared back to the airspace, 40 meters above Liu Wei. There, he circled around for a few moments to allow Liu Wei's {Ice Barrier} to expire. 10 seconds was all Liu Wei had, after that, nothing is going save him from death.

"Those with flying mounts, get up to the sky and f\*ck him up now!" cried Liu Wei as he started running to his bodyguards. "Anyone who can kill Zhan Yu will receive 100,000 dollars as a reward!"

They say that money can buy anything. In this case, a lot of money can buy a man's courage. More than 20 players got on their flying mount and chased after Zhang Yang.

# Chapter 600: Chokehold

---

Zhang Yang smirked at their weak attempts of attacking him. Hence, to give them their fill of bloodthirst, Zhang Yang moved towards the incoming attack group and cut down the first player closest to him. Fresh blood splattered across the airspace.

"Use {Breaking Shot}!"

One of the Hunters fired an arrow which struck Zhang Yang on his head, successfully stunning him.

It was an extremely lucky shot. For a non-Inheritance player, it would be extremely tough to land a status effect skill on a player with Inheritance, due to their high resistance to status effects skills. If Zhang Yang were to activate his Transformation skill, the chances would be even lower.

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang forcefully dispelled the stun effect on him and plunged his sword at the hunter with the skill {God of War Devastation}. The skill immediately killed the Hunter. Instead of waiting to be revived, the Hunter had immediately released his soul from his body and chose to revive at the graveyard. The now lifeless body slid off Zhang Yang's sword and fell off its mount to the ground. The body struck the ground hard and became a human pancake.

Many other players behind the Hunter stopped and turned

around as quickly as they came. Even though they had the advantage of numbers, Zhang Yang's brutality left a frightening impression of Zhang Yang. No would want to be each other's cannon fodder just to kill him! Why would they put their lives on the front line and be killed when other players behind would only benefit from their death!

With such a thought in mind, the melee fighters decided to fall back, allowing the ranged attackers to attack from afar.

Liu Wei saw the retreating players and bellowed angrily, "What are you scums doing!? Kill the f\*cker! What am I paying you for? Hiding behind your mothers' skirts?!"

Zhang Yang laughed and rode the Thunderhawk towards a Thief class player who was clearly running away from him. With quick, agile movements, Zhang Yang slashed the player on his right and maneuvered to his left and laid down another sword attack.

Naturally, the player was shocked to see him appearing on his right and left. There was nothing the Thief player could do because of the battle mount restriction! Mounting a battle mount had its advantages. One of the most profound benefits would be to increase the HP limit of a player. They would also gain a fair bit of DPS. However, during mounting, there exist restrictions on certain skills. For example, Zhang Yang was unable to use the skill {Thunder Strike} since it required him to stomp the ground and allow the electricity to travel through the ground!

As for the restrictions for Thieves, they would be unable to use the skill {Vanish}!

The main threat of a Thief to other players was their hidden presence on the battlefield, striking down foes without them realizing it. However, what do you call a Thief without the ability to remove his presence from the battlefield?

The skill {Vanish} could not be used during a player was mounted on a battle mount. However, if a player does use it forcefully, he will be forced off the mount. He would vanish instantly like normal, along with the mount. However, the Thief player that Zhang Yang was attacking was currently airborne! If he forced his mount back into his inventory, he would plummet straight down to the ground! If the fall damage does not kill him first, he would be rendered visible by taking damage all the same. It would only make him an easy target to kill.

Hence, Zhang Yang had prioritized Hunter and Thief classes first. At the very least, the skill {Blur} could still be used during mounting. The Thief that Zhang Yang was attacking had swift reactions. Just as Zhang Yang was about to land a third strike, he activated {Blur} and gained an enhanced evasion rate. His skill had been level up to Level 10, granting him 95% evasion rate, which was almost the same as gaining a 95% damage reduction ability.

Zhang Yang scoffed and left him alone. Naturally, he would not waste any skill on a Thief player who has activated {Blur}. The only thing that would strike him would be the unblockable, undodgeable -{Killing Cleave}.

Turning away from the Thief the Thief, Zhang Yang rode the Thunderhawk and zoomed in and out around the fleeing players



of The Myth. Felice kept herself preoccupied. Since Liu Wei had gained invincibility from his {Ice Barrier}, she left Liu Wei alone for the moment and targeted the players in the sky. The little girl's attack was strong enough to kill non-tank players in three to four hits, as each of her {Fire Missile} could deal close 40,000 damage.

"Kill that firebird!" cried one of the random players on the ground.

"F\*ck! What is going on?! Doesn't Zhang Yang own a blue bird pet? How is there another flaming bird in the sky?!"

Zhang Yang's weaving around them had truly made them annoyed. Since they could not target Zhang Yang, they turned to Felice instead. Since they were afraid of Zhang Yang, they headed towards Felice, since her attacks were not as crazy and unpredictable as Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang sighed at their behavior. Targeting the weak first, typical.

Little did they know that Felice has over 170,000 HP. Even though her Defense in her Dragonhawk form was not high, her magic defense was at 4,830. Sacrificing her physical defense, she had gained strong magic defense. Naturally, it still placed Felice in a dangerous position. As such, Zhang Yang did not ignore the danger she was in. With a quick dive attack, Zhang Yang shot down to an area with the highest concentration of players and blasted {Horizontal Sweep} to attack 3 players at the same time. One of them was even a Critical hit which dealt over 130,000 damage, instantly killing the fellow.

"Someone get over here and hold off Zhang Yang! The f\*cker's

attack is too strong!"

"F\*cking ignore the pet! Come and gank Zhan Yu! Kill him and the pet will disappear! Don't be a f\*cking pussy and get your \*ss over here! He is alone! We can kill him with just 20 of us!"

"Kill him! Don't be scared!"

Since the beginning of the so-called war, the players had finally realized the true method of defeating Zhang Yang. However, their reaction rate was so slow that it made Liu Wei felt like Stephen Hawking. Does it really take a genius to understand that with numbers, they could take on a single player?!

Zhang Yang braced for the oncoming players head on. With his current devastating attack power, and his Strength value was far higher than any players then, Zhang Yang trampled over player after player like a tank! He wasted no time and struck players with his shield at every global cooldown second! Most of them had greatly swollen faces, while the magic class players could barely cast anything at all!

"Uphm!""ARGH!""Owgh!"

Cries of pains and grunting could be heard from all over the battlefield as Zhang Yang attacked like a raging tank that was on blast of NO2! Leaving behind a trail of dead bodies, Zhang Yang had made great progress in weeding out the players from behind enemy lines. However, there was a drawback, Zhang Yang had taken many attacks and had his HP was down to less than 50%!

Thanks to his powerful equipment, Zhang Yang had been able to withstand for so long being attacked by more than 20 players at the same time! If someone else had taken his place, he or she would have been killed for god knows how many times!

Even though Zhang Yang was still taking damage, it was now far lesser. The number of players in the sky had dropped exponentially. Zhang Yang continued hacking away, until there was only three of them left in the airspace, not including Zhang Yang, Felice, and the Thunderhawk. The three The Myth players looked at each other, exchanged worried looks, and fled as fast as they could to the ground.

Zhang Yang laughed and did not chase after them. It was not wise to chase a few stray dogs into a pound of hundreds of players who were ready to strike him down. Zhang Yang noticed that the {Ice Barrier} on Liu Wei had expired and he bellowed at him. "Oh Master Liu, it will be your turn next to visit the afterlife. Please wait patiently for your turn!"

With intense madness and rage, Liu Wei narrowed his eyebrows. However, there was an odd aura emanating from his character. Liu Wei's principle was that he may lose to a person, but never the war itself. He smiled coldly and refuted Zhang Yang. "I can wait for my death. The question is, could you?"

Less than two minutes ago, Zhang Yang's sudden charge towards the enemy line had thrown Liu Wei off his guard. However, even though it was only brief, he had made preparations for a counterattack! There was no reason to be afraid of him!

Liu Wei clapped his hands once and 12 Guardian players emerged behind him and formed a perfect line. Each of them had equipment that gave off a Violet, metallic muster. Without a doubt, they were all wearing a full set of Violet-Platinum armor, even though they were not particularly high level.

What was he planning?

Zhang Yang squeezed his brains and finally found the reason behind the odd formation.

Guardians have a skill called {Sacrifice} which could be used to divert all incoming damage on someone else to oneself for 5 seconds. To put oneself on the front line and protect the teammates is the job of a Guardian, as the name itself suggests.

Liu Wei probably wanted all 12 Guardians to create a 60 seconds {Sacrifice} chain cast. Since each skill could only last for 5 seconds, 12 of them could create a perfect 60-second protection without breaking the chain!

It would be troublesome for as long as the Guardians remain alive, so would Liu Wei! This tactic was not of Liu Wei's original creation. Zhang Yang recalled that in his past life, a guild had used this formation to kill a boss, using a number of Guardians to spam {Sacrifice} to protect the main tank. However, that was an event in his past life. Chronologically, it would only happen in about half a year from now!

Perhaps, Liu Wei was the mastermind behind it!

"Hahaha! Come and get me! If you dare!" Liu Wei laughed maniacally! All 12 Guardians then spread out while keeping Liu Wei in range. They were all spread out to make sure that Zhang Yang would not strike them all at the same time. All of their attention was focused on Liu Wei alone. It seems like that they had practiced this formation countless of times. At most, they could cast {Sacrifice} on Liu Wei at the very last second before an attack would land on Liu Wei. Back then, when Zhang Yang had managed to land a hit on him, the Guardians were not present, since no one would expect a player to charge behind enemy lines to attack their leader.

To place one's attention solely on protecting a person was extremely taxing. It was something that would not last perpetually.

When Liu Wei noticed Zhang Yang wavering reaction, he laughed and provoked him to come down to challenge him. At the same time, the players behind the Guardians prepared to attack him the moment he gets within range.

"Hmph." Zhang Yang scoffed. "I must say, don't make me force you to beg me to kill you!"

"Zhan Yu! Even if you're China's number 1 tank, you couldn't possibly take on us all!"

"What are you playing at? Faltering in the face of Heaven's

Pride?"

"Zhan Yu! Come down and bow to Heaven's Pride! Beg for his mercy and he might give you a bone to gnaw on!"

More and more players started throwing all sort of insults, provocations, and even false accusations!

Liu Wei laughed, seeing that Zhang Yang was still in the air. "What can you possibly do now!?"

Zhang Yang focused his thought and immediately came up with a plan. With quick reflexes, Zhang Yang dived down towards Liu Wei.

"F\*cking prick!"

"Kill him!"

Everyone roared and charged towards him. Spellcasters still needed to channel their magic while Hunters had already released a volley of arrows at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang flipped a medal on his chest and activated the {Medal of Bravery} effect!

DING! DING! DING!

A glowing metallic barrier appeared in front of him and reflected all arrows that struck it, and they fell to the ground in pieces.

Liu Wei was startled. The first {Sacrifice} had already been cast on Liu Wei. With a confident stare, Liu Wei chuckled. "Zhang Yang, don't think that you will walk away from this. Not even you would have an unlimited Invincibility effect skill!"

"Haha! I don't need such a thing! All I need is 10 seconds.!" Zhang Yang slid across the ground and rushed over to Liu Wei. With a quick thrust of his right arm, Zhang Yang grabbed hold of Liu Wei's neck and pulled him up. Spellcaster had little to no Strength value since they were, after all, a class that prioritized in Intelligence!

Zhang Yang jumped up and on his Thunderhawk. Carrying one extra player on its back was not a problem for a Mythical tier mount! As such, with his arms around Liu Wei's neck, they rose as high as 40 meters in the air.

Everyone on the ground stared in disbelief. Did Zhang Yang just kidnap Liu Wei? Is that even possible!?

# Table of Contents

[MMORPG: Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 501: Han Ying Xue's Battle Companion](#)

[Chapter 502: The Gargoyle King](#)

[Chapter 503: Bewitchment and Disarmament](#)

[Chapter 504: Nine Head Hydra Geopolo](#)

[Chapter 505: The Last Target, Fire Element King Laguana](#)

[Chapter 506: One More Round with Dusk Phoenix](#)

[Chapter 507: Completed Quest](#)

[Chapter 508: The God of War Inheritance](#)

[Chapter 509: Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu](#)

[Chapter 510: Class Balancing](#)

[Chapter 511: The God of War Transformation](#)

[Chapter 512: Magical Fruit of Ying and Yang](#)

[Chapter 513: Winged Monkey King Chakra](#)

[Chapter 514: Battle Against the Winged Monkey](#)

[Chapter 515: Heaven Shaker](#)

[Chapter 516: The Japan-Korea Region's Counterattack](#)

[Chapter 517: An Easy Obliteration](#)

[Chapter 518: Aiding Fatty Han](#)

[Chapter 519: The Vampire Count Ferra](#)

[Chapter 520: A Fierce Battle with an Ethereal Boss](#)

[Chapter 521: 'First Clear' of Ethereal Tier Boss](#)

[Chapter 522: The Vampire Inheritance](#)

[Chapter 523: Wei Yan Er goes to University!](#)

[Chapter 524: Please, Save My Son!](#)

[Chapter 525: Level 4 Guild Upgrade Order](#)

[Chapter 526: Land of Savages](#)

[Chapter 527: Slaughtering the Indians](#)

[Chapter 528: The Hidden Properties of a Battle Companion](#)

[Chapter 529: Attribute Growth Star Points](#)

[Chapter 530: The Harpy Queen](#)

[Chapter 531: The Messenger Man](#)

[Chapter 532: Violet Thunderhawk](#)

[Chapter 533: Assault of the Japan-Korea Region](#)



[Chapter 534: The Empire Helps Back](#)  
[Chapter 535: 1 vs 30,000 \(1\)](#)  
[Chapter 536: 1 vs 30,000 \(2\)](#)  
[Chapter 537: 1 vs 30,000 \(3\)](#)  
[Chapter 538: 1 vs 30,000 \(4\)](#)  
[Chapter 539: Wrap Up](#)  
[Chapter 540: The War's Post Mortem](#)  
[Chapter 541: A Conflict of Interests](#)  
[Chapter 542: Slow-acting poison](#)  
[Chapter 543: Heavily Fortified Goblin Campsite](#)  
[Chapter 544: The Appearance of the First Player with a Class A Inheritance](#)  
[Chapter 545: The Return of Dusk Phoenix](#)  
[Chapter 546: The Blood Spider Queen](#)  
[Chapter 547: Abominating Guillotine Axe](#)  
[Chapter 548: Breaking the Second Seal](#)  
[Chapter 549: The Bliss in the Pool](#)  
[Chapter 550: A Malicious Invite](#)  
[Chapter 551: Disguise vs Disguise](#)  
[Chapter 552: One Sided Victory](#)  
[Chapter 553: A Tiny Debt](#)  
[Chapter 554: The Pirate's Treasure Map](#)  
[Chapter 555: Baroque Island](#)  
[Chapter 556: Lion's Pride](#)  
[Chapter 557: Mountain Rat](#)  
[Chapter 558: The 12 Chinese Zodiacs](#)  
[Chapter 559: The Pirate's Old Lair](#)  
[Chapter 560: Snowman Snow](#)  
[Chapter 561: Crimson Flame of the 'Blazing Flame'](#)  
[Chapter 562: 'Light-Speed' Light](#)  
[Chapter 563: Blackbeard Ditch](#)  
[Chapter 564: Ferocious Battle with Blackbeard](#)  
[Chapter 565: Darkness Inheritance](#)  
[Chapter 566: Ancient Creatures](#)  
[Chapter 567: The Legendary Quest](#)  
[Chapter 568: Sword of Purging Devourer, a Shock to the World](#)  
[Chapter 569: Frenzied Attacks](#)  
[Chapter 570: All Out Attack](#)  
[Chapter 571: Fallback](#)  
[Chapter 572: The Melancholic of Sword of Light](#)

[Chapter 573: Sharing the Loots](#)  
[Chapter 574: Reinforcement](#)  
[Chapter 575: Preventing Future Trouble](#)  
[Chapter 576: Queen of Blades](#)  
[Chapter 577: To Whom It Belongs](#)  
[Chapter 578: Certain Defeat](#)  
[Chapter 579: Shadow Dancer Inheritance](#)  
[Chapter 580: The Devastating Assault of the God of War](#)  
[Chapter 581: Shadow Clone](#)  
[Chapter 582: Warlord Hachir](#)  
[Chapter 583: Two in a Row!](#)  
[Chapter 584: Frost Lord Maron Curse](#)  
[Chapter 585: A Chopped-off](#)  
[Chapter 586: Lost of Control over the Progress of the Dungeon](#)  
[Chapter 587: Final Assault](#)  
[Chapter 588: Victory!](#)  
[Chapter 589: Crown of the Living Frost](#)  
[Chapter 590: Princess Helena](#)  
[Chapter 591: Castle Anjar](#)  
[Chapter 592: The Reason for His Past](#)  
[Chapter 593: Saving Banct](#)  
[Chapter 594: Standing Guard](#)  
[Chapter 595: A Fierce Fight with the Japanese and Koreans](#)  
[Chapter 596: A Change of Stream](#)  
[Chapter 597: Scared](#)  
[Chapter 598: Helping Out](#)  
[Chapter 599: The Myth Assaults](#)  
[Chapter 600: Chokehold](#)